

1914

DA  
400  
C59  
1888  
v.6

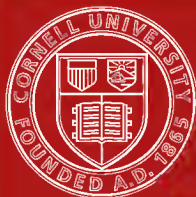
**Cornell University Library**  
BOUGHT WITH THE INCOME  
FROM THE  
SAGE ENDOWMENT FUND  
THE GIFT OF  
**Henry W. Sage**  
1891

A.258944 7/21/11

OLIN LIBRARY-CIRCULATION

1357





## Cornell University Library

The original of this book is in  
the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in  
the United States on the use of the text.



CLARENDON'S  
HISTORY OF THE REBELLION AND  
CIVIL WARS IN ENGLAND.

*MACRAY.*

London  
HENRY FROWDE



OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS WAREHOUSE  
AMEN CORNER, E.C.

THE  
HISTORY OF THE REBELLION  
AND  
CIVIL WARS IN ENGLAND

BEGUN IN THE YEAR 1641,

BY

EDWARD, EARL OF CLARENDON.

RE-EDITED FROM

A FRESH COLLATION OF THE ORIGINAL MS. IN THE BODLEIAN LIBRARY,

WITH MARGINAL DATES AND OCCASIONAL NOTES,

BY

W. DUNN MACRAY, M.A., F.S.A.

In Six Volumes.

VOL. VI.

(Books XV and XVI, and Index.)

**Oxford**

AT THE CLARENDON PRESS

M DCCC LXXXVIII

Fs

M

A 258944

A TRUE HISTORICAL NARRATION  
OF THE  
REBELLION AND CIVIL WARS IN  
ENGLAND.

---

BOOK XV.

1. <sup>1</sup>THE King remained at Cullen above two years, contend-1655  
ing with the rigour of his fortune with great temper and mag-  
nanimity, whilst all the princes of Europe seemed to contend  
amongst themselves who should most eminently forget and  
neglect him, and whilst Cromwell exercised all imaginable  
tyranny over those nations who had not been sensible enough  
of the blessings they enjoyed under his majesty's [father's]  
peaceable and mild government; so that he might have enjoyed  
some of that comfort and pleasure which Velleius Paterculus  
says that Marius and Carthage had when his banishment re-  
duced him to end his life in the ruins of that city, as he did;  
*cum Marius aspiciens<sup>2</sup> Carthaginem, illa intuens Marium, alter  
alteri possent esse solatio<sup>3</sup>*; whilst he refreshed himself with  
the memory of his greatness when he overthrew that great  
and famous city, and she, again, delighted to behold her de-  
stroyer expelled from his country, which he had served so  
eminently, and forced, forsaken of all men, to end his life and  
to be buried in her ashes. If the King's nature could have  
been delighted with such reflections, he might have had

<sup>1</sup> [*Life*, p. 509.]

<sup>2</sup> ['aspiciente,' MS.]

<sup>3</sup> [Lib. ii. c. 19.]

1655 argument abundant, in seeing Scotland, which first threw off wantonly its own peace and plenty, and infected the other two kingdoms with its rebellion, now reduced and governed by a rod of iron, vanquished and subdued by those to whom they had taught the science of rebellion, and with whom they had joined, by specious pretences and vows and horrible perjuries, to subdue and destroy their own natural prince, and dissolve the government they had been subject to since they were a people; in seeing the pride and insolence of that nation, which had used to practise such ill manners towards their kings, suppressed, contemned, and subdued by those who had been instructed by them how to use their arms, and exposed to slavery under the discipline and castigation of men who were not born gentlemen, but bred up in the trades and professions of the common people. These men governed in their houses, and prescribed new laws to them to live by, which they had never been accustomed to, and which they were compelled to obey, upon penalty of their lives and estates; whilst their adored idol, Presbytery, (which had pulled off the crown from the head of the King,) was trod under foot, laughed at and contemned; and their preachers, who threatened their princes with their rude thunder of excommunication, disputed with, scoffed at, and controlled by, artificers, and corrected by the strokes and blows of a corporal; and all this subjection supported at their own charge, and their fierce governors paid by them out of their own estates.

2. He beheld Ireland, that began its rebellion with inhuman massacres and butcheries of their peaceable and innocent neighbours, after the other of Scotland was suppressed, or so compounded that the blessing of peace had again covered the three nations, if this sottish people had not, without any provocation, but of their own folly and barbarity, with that bloody prologue engaged again the three kingdoms in a raging and devouring war; so that though Scotland blew the first trumpet, it was Ireland that drew the first blood; and if they had not at that time rebelled, and in that manner, it is very probable all the miseries which afterwards befell the King and his dominions

had been prevented. These unhappy people, when they saw 1655 that they could not make war, but were beaten as often as encountered, would not yet make peace; or if they did, they no sooner made it than broke it, with all the circumstances of treachery and perjury that can make any foul action the most odious. And after they had again, for their last preservation, returned to their obedience to the King, and put themselves again under his protection, they quickly repented of their loyalty, offered themselves to the sovereignty of a foreign prince; and when they had seen their natural King murdered by his rebels for want of that assistance which they might have given him, and chose rather to depend on the clemency of the usurper, and so drove from them the governor and government of their King: [I say,] his majesty saw now these miserable people grovelling at the feet of their proud conquerors, reduced to the highest desolation, and even to the point of extirpation. The blood they had wantonly and savagely spilt in the beginning of the rebellion, they now saw plentifully revenged in streams of their own blood from one end of the kingdom to the other; whilst those persons who first contrived the rebellion, and could never be reached by the King, and they who caused every peace to be broken which had been made with his majesty, with all the possible affronts to his royal dignity and authority, after they had endeavoured by all the treacherous offices against the royal power to reconcile themselves to their new masters, were every day taken and infamously put to death by their authority who usurped the government; who sold, as hath been said before<sup>1</sup>, above one hundred thousand of them to the service of foreign princes, under whom they perished for want of bread, and without regard; so that there is not an account in history of any nation, the Jews only excepted, that hath ever been reduced to a more complete misery and contempt than the Irish were in the view of his majesty at this time. And it was the more extraordinary, in that it was without the pity of any, all the world looking upon them as deserving the fate they underwent.

<sup>1</sup> [book xii. § 148.]

1655 3. England, that seemed to glory in the conquest of those two kingdoms, and to reign peaceably over them, yielded a prospect, too, full of variety. Though the King's heart was even broken with the daily information he received of the ruin and destruction that his faithful and loyal party underwent and the butchery that was frequently acted upon them, and the extreme tyranny the usurper exercised over the whole nation was grievous to him, yet he could not be equally afflicted to see those who had been the first authors of the public calamity to be now so much sharers in it, that they were no more masters of their estates than they were whom they had first caused to be spoiled, and that themselves were brought and exposed upon those scaffolds which they had caused to be erected for others; that no part of the new government was in any of their hands which had pulled down the old; and that after monarchy had been made so odious to the people, the whole wealth of the nation was become at the disposal of one man; and that those lords without whose monstrous assistance the sceptre could never have been wrested out of the hands of the King were now numbered and marshalled with the dregs of the people: in a word, that Cromwell was not so jealous of any as of those who had raised him, and contrived and proposed nothing more to himself than to suppress those, or to drive them out of the kingdom, who had been the principal means to suppress the royal authority, and to drive the royal family and all that adhered to it into banishment.

4. This prospect the King had of the three kingdoms which had revolted from him during his residence at Cullen; and with those manifestations of God's vengeance upon those ingrateful nations, of which he had a most tender and compassionate feeling, he was not without some glimmering light to discern an approach of that recompense which the divine justice usually assigns to those who patiently attend his vindication.

5. Cromwell, whose great heart was solicitous to extend the terror of his name into foreign countries, by which method he thought to render the rough and stubborn humours of his own people, which vexed him exceedingly, more obsequious to him,



had in the beginning of the year 1655<sup>1</sup>, after his dissolution of 1655 his stubborn Parliament, sent two very great fleets to sea.

6. The one under Penn; consisting of about thirty ships of war, with which there were likewise embarked a land army, consisting of four or five thousand foot, and two troops of horse, under the command of general Venables, a gentleman of a good family in Cheshire, who had served long in the army in the condition of a colonel, and was then called out of Ireland to serve in this expedition. Both these superior officers were well affected to the King's service, and were not fond of the enterprise they were to conduct, the nature of which they yet knew nothing of. They did by several ways, without any communication with each other, (which they had not confidence to engage in,) send to the King that if he were ready with any force from abroad, or secure of possessing any port within, they would, that is, either of them would, engage, with the power that was under their charge, to declare for his majesty. If this had been upon a joint and mutual confidence in each other, and that both fleet and land forces, though the body of horse was small, would at the same time erect the King's standard, it might have been the foundation of some hopeful expectation. But neither of them daring to trust the other, the King could not presume upon any port, without which neither had promised to engage; nor make, out of the distinct overtures (however he might hope to unite them), such a probable attempt, after the miscarriage of so many, as to embark his friends in. And so he wished them to prosecute the voyage to which they were designed, from which he was not without hope of some benefit to himself, (for it was evident Cromwell meant to make some enemy, which probably might give his majesty some friend,) and to reserve their affections for his majesty till a more proper season to discover them. The other fleet was not inferior in naval strength and power, but was without a land army; and that was committed to the command of Blake; in whom they had all confidence.

7. Neither fleet knew what the other or what itself was to

<sup>1</sup> [in the end of 1654.]

1655 do, till they came to such a point, where they were to open their commissions; and Cromwell had communicated his purpose for either to so very few, that for many months after they were both at sea nobody knew to what they were designed. Though the intercourse between Cromwell and the cardinal was maintained with many civilities and some confidence, yet there was nothing of a treaty signed; he resolving, (as he professed,) to give his friendship to that Crown that should best deserve it: and without doubt both Crowns were amused with his preparation, and solicitous to know where the storm would fall.

8. Spain, that had hitherto kept don Alonso de Cardinas there [in England,] after he had so many years resided there as ambassador to the late King, believing they were less faulty in that than if they should send another originally to Cromwell, now thought it necessary to omit no occasion to endear themselves to him; and therefore they sent the marquis of Leda with  
 1655  
 May. a splendid train, as extraordinary ambassador, to congratulate all his successes, and to offer him the entire friendship of the Catholic King. The marquis, who was a wise and a jealous man, found by his reception, and Cromwell's reservation in all his audiences and the approaches he could make, that there was no room left for his master; and so, after a month spent there, he returned to look to his government in Flanders, with an expectation that as soon as any news came of the fleets, they should hear of some acts of hostility upon the subjects of Spain; and did all he could to awaken all the ministers of that King to the same apprehension and expectation.

1654. 9. The two fleets set out from the coast of England about the same time<sup>1</sup>; that under Blake made its course directly to the Mediterranean, being bound in the first place to suppress the insolence of those of Argiers and Tunis, who had infested the English merchants, and were grown powerful in those seas. When he should have performed that service, he was to open another commission which would inform him what course he was to steer. The other fleet under Penn was bound directly to the Barbados, where they were to open their commissions,

<sup>1</sup> [Blake's fleet sailed in October, 1654; Penn's left Portsmouth, Dec. 24.]

and to deliver letters to that governor. There they found that 1654  
 they were to take in new men for the land army, and then to  
 prosecute their course directly to the island of Hispaniola. The  
 governor had orders to supply new men for the expedition ;  
 and there were ships ready for their transportation, there being  
 a marvellous alacrity in the planters of those Leeward islands,  
 which were oppressed with inhabitants, to seek their fortune  
 farther from home. So that after a shorter stay at the Barbados  
 than they had reason to expect had they not found two frigates,  
 which Cromwell had sent before to prepare all things ready,  
 and to put several shallops together which were brought ready  
 in quarters, making prize of about forty Dutch ships, belonging  
 to their new allies of Holland, for trading thither, (contrary to  
 the Act of Navigation,) about the end of March they set sail, 1655  
 with an addition of four or five thousand foot for the land army, March 31.  
 towards St. Christopher's ; where after as short stay they April 6.  
 received about fifteen hundred men more : so that Venables  
 had now under his command a body of above nine thousand  
 men, with one troop of horse more, which the planters of the  
 Barbados joined to him ; and, having a prosperous wind, they  
 came about the middle of April within view of Santo Domingo, April 11.  
 which is the chief city and port of the island of Hispaniola.

10. Their orders from Cromwell were very particular and  
 very positive, that they should land at such a place, which was  
 plainly enough described to them. But whether they did not  
 clearly understand it, or thought it not so convenient when they  
 were near enough to make a judgment of it, they did call a  
 council of war ; and it was there resolved that general Venables  
 should land in another place, which they conceived to be much  
 nearer the town than in truth it was, and from thence march  
 directly to it, there being another brigade of foot to be landed  
 at a less distance from the town, in a bay, that should join with  
 them. And join they did ; but [by] the march which Venables April 18.  
 had made, and in which he spent two days and a half, in the  
 woods and uneasy passages, and in the terrible heat of that Apr. 16-18.  
 country's sun, in which they found no water to drink, they were  
 so dispirited before they joined with their companions, that it

1655 was an ill presage of the misadventure that followed. The loss of that time in their advance had another very ill effect. For the inhabitants of the town, that, at the first appearance of such a fleet, the like whereof in any degree they had never seen before, had been seized upon by such a consternation that they despaired of making any resistance, when they saw their enemies proceed so slowly, and engaged in such a march as must tire and infinitely annoy them, recovered<sup>1</sup> their spirits, and prepared for their defence. So that when Venables, upon the conjunction with his other forces, and after having found some fresh water

April 18. to refresh his men, advanced towards the town, his forlorn hope found themselves charged by a party of horse, being<sup>2</sup> armed with long lances and other arms which they had not been accustomed to ; so, tired and dismayed with their march and heat, they bore the charge very ill, and were easily routed, and routed those which were behind them, and were in that disorder pursued till they came to their main body, upon sight whereof the Spaniards retired, without any loss, and having left the captain of the forlorn hope and above fifty of his company dead upon the place. The English retired back in great discomfort to the bay and the fresh water river they had found there ; where they stayed so long that the general thought his men not only enough refreshed but enough confirmed in their resolutions to redeem the shame of their last disorder, having<sup>3</sup> got guides, who undertook to conduct them a nearer way to the city, and that they should not go near a fort which the Spaniards had in a wood, from whence they had been infested. The common opinion, that the negroes, natives of those parts, are such enemies to the Spaniards that they are willing to betray them and do any mischief to them, might possibly incline the English to give credit to those guides. But they did conduct them

April 25. directly to the fort ; near which an ambuscade in the woods discharged a volley again upon the forlorn hope, and fell then in upon them with such fury that disordered the whole army ; which though it recovered the courage once more to make an

<sup>1</sup> ['they recovered,' MS.]<sup>2</sup> ['which being,' MS.]<sup>3</sup> ['and having,' MS.]

attempt upon that fort, it was again seized upon by a panic fear, 1655 which made them directly fly back to their bay, with the loss of April 27. above six hundred men, whereof their major general was one.

11. And this fright they never recovered, but within few days, after having undergone many distresses by the intolerable heat of the climate, and the negroes killing their men every day as they went into the woods to find meat, they were, within five or six days after the beginning of May, compelled to reembark May 3. themselves on board the fleet, with a thousand men less than had been landed, who had by several ways lost their lives there; for which they revenged themselves upon a neighbour island, called Jamaica, where they made another descent, took their May 10. city, and drove all the inhabitants into the woods. And here they left a good body of foot, consisting of three or four thousand men, under the command of a colonel, to fortify and plant in this island, a place fruitful in itself, and abounding in many good provisions, and a perpetual sharp thorn in the sides of the Spaniard, who received infinite damage from thence; they who were so easily frightened and beaten when they were in a great body upon the other island, making after incursions with small numbers into it from Jamaica, and sacking their towns, and returning with very rich booty. When Venables had put this island into as good order as he could, he returned with Penn into England<sup>1</sup>.

12. The other fleet, under the command of Blake, had better success, without any misadventures. And after he had reduced those of Argiers, (where he anchored in their very mole,) to sub- March 10. mit to such conditions for the time past and the time to come as he thought reasonable, he sailed to Tunis, which he found better fortified and more resolved; for the King from thence returned a very rude answer, contemning his strength, and undervaluing his menaces, and refusing to return either ship or prisoner that had been taken. Whereupon Blake put his fleet April 4. in order, and thundered with his great guns upon the town;

<sup>1</sup> [Penn set sail from Jamaica June 25, and arrived at Spithead, Aug. 31 (Thurloe's *S. P.*, iii. 752). He landed Sept. 3 at Portsmouth, and Venables on Sept. 9 (Heath's *Chronicle*, p. 376).]

1655 whilst he manned out several long boats, manned with stout mariners, who, at the same time, entered with very notable resolution into their harbour, and set fire to all the ships which were there, being nine men of war, which were burned to ashes; and this with the loss only of five and twenty of the English, and about eight and forty hurt; all the boats, with the rest of the men, returned safe to the ships. This was indeed an action of the highest conduct and courage, and made the name of the English very terrible and formidable in those seas.

13. The success of both fleets came to Cromwell's notice about the same time, but did not affect him alike. He had never such distempers, (for he had a great command over his passions,) as upon the miscarriage at Hispaniola. And as soon  
Sept. 20. as they came on shore he committed both Penn and Venables to the Tower, and could never be persuaded to trust either of them again, and could not in a long time speak temperately of that affair. However, he lost no time in cherishing his infant plantation in Jamaica; which many thought to be at too great a distance, and wished it might be recalled; but he would not hear of it, and sent presently a good squadron of ships, and a recruit of 1500 men to carry on that work, and resolved nothing more than to make a continual war from that place upon the Spaniard.

14. And now the rupture with Spain could be no longer concealed. And therefore he sent orders to Blake, that he should watch the return of the plate-fleet, and do what mischief he could upon the coast of Spain; and gave direction to his ships in the Downs to infest those of Flanders, which they had not yet done. What had been hitherto treated privately  
1656  
April 25. between him and the cardinal was now exposed to the light; and he sent Lock[h]art his ambassador into France, who was received with great solemnity, and was a man of great address in treaty, and had a marvellous credit and power with the  
1657  
March 23<sup>1</sup>. cardinal. He made an alliance with France; and Cromwell

<sup>1</sup> [The text of this treaty was published for the first time in its complete form in the Appendix (No. XXIV) to Guizot's *Hist. d'O. Cromwell.*]

undertook to send over an army of six thousand<sup>1</sup> foot, to be <sup>1655</sup> commanded by their own superior officer, who was to receive orders only from marshal Turyn; and when Dunkirk and Mardike should be taken, they were to be put into Cromwell's hands. There were other more secret articles, which will be mentioned.

15. Flanders had notice of this their new enemy from England, before they heard anything from Spain that might better enable them to contend with them; and don Alonso remained still in London, without notice of what was done, till the affair of Jamaica was upon the Exchange, and fraternities entered into there for the better carrying on that plantation. Nor was he willing to believe it then, till Cromwell sent to him to leave the <sup>1655</sup> kingdom; which he did very unwillingly, when there was no <sup>Oct. 23.</sup> remedy, and was transported into Flanders, to increase the <sup>Oct. 27.</sup> jealousies and discontents which were already too great and uneasy there. The prince of Condé, whose troops and vigour [were<sup>2</sup>] the preservation and life of that country, was very ill satisfied with the formality and phlegm of the arch-duke, and with the unactivity and wariness of the conte of Fuensaldagña, who he thought omitted many opportunities.

16. The arch-duke was weary of the title of governor of the Low Countries and general of the army, when the power was in truth in Fuensaldagña, and nothing to be done without his approbation; and, having by frequent complaints to Madrid endeavoured in vain to vindicate his authority, had implored his dismissal. And Fuensaldagña himself was as ill satisfied as the other two, and, knowing well the defects of the Court as well as the poverty of Madrid, thought the defence of Flanders consisted most in preserving the army by being on the defensive part; and therefore, and to gratify the coldness of his own constitution, he did by no means approve the frequent enterprises and restless spirit of the prince of Condé, which spent their men: and he thought the great charge in supporting the state and dignity of the arch-duke was not recompensed by any benefit from his service, besides the irreconcilableness<sup>3</sup> with the

<sup>1</sup> [12,000.]

<sup>2</sup> ['was,' MS.]

<sup>3</sup> ['irreconciliableness,' MS.]

1650 arch-duke by his having compelled him, by the authority of the King, to dismiss the count of Swasscnburgh, whom he loved of all the world; so that he was likewise weary of his post, and desired his deliverance from Madrid.

17. And the Council there thought it necessary to gratify them both, and to remove both the arch-duke and the conde; May. honourably to dismiss the former, to return to his own residence in Germany, and to bring don Juan de Austria, the natural son of the King, who had passed through many employments with reputation, and was at that time general in Italy, to undertake the government of Flanders, with such restrictions as the King Feb.<sup>1</sup> thought fit; and at the same time that the conde of Fuensaldagña should immediately enter upon the government of Milan, which had been exercised for the last six years by the marquis Caracena, who was now to govern the army in Flanders under don Juan; and that the marquis, who had the most disadvantage by this promotion, might be the better pleased, they gave him such an addition of authority as could not but breed ill blood in don Juan; as it fell out afterwards. And this counsel was taken, and to be executed in this conjuncture, when France and Cromwell were ready to invade Flanders with two powerful armies, when it was, upon the matter, under no command.

18. The King was yet at Cullen; and no sooner heard of the war that Cromwell had begun upon Spain but he concluded that the Spaniard would not be unwilling to enter into some correspondence with him, at least that his fears were over of offending Cromwell. And therefore he sent privately to the arch-duke Nov. 5<sup>2</sup> and to Fuensaldagña to offer them his conjunction. Don Alonso was likewise there, and the long experience he had in England, and the quality he still held, made his judgment in those affairs to be most esteemed by them. And he, whether upon the conscience of his former behaviour, by which he had disoblighd both the former and the present King, or whether, by having lived long in a place where the King's interest was contemned,

<sup>1</sup> [*Calend. Clar. S. P.*, iii. 96. He quitted Flanders for Milan in June. Thurloe's *S. P.*, v. 117.]

<sup>2</sup> [*Calend. Clar. S. P.*, iii. 63.]



he did in truth believe that he could bring little advantage to them, had no mind to make any conjunction with him. Yet they saw one benefit which they might receive, if his majesty would draw off the Irish from the service of France; which they had reason to believe would be in his power, because he had formerly drawn off some regiments from Spain, whilst he remained in France. So that they were all of opinion that they would confer with any body the King should authorize to treat with them. Which when the King knew, he resolved to go to them himself, and left Cullen, attended only by two or three servants; and when he came near Bruxells, sent to advertise the arch-duke at what distance he was, and that he would see him *incognito*, in what place or manner he should think fit.

19. They either were or seemed to be much troubled that the King was come in person, and desired that he would by no means come to Bruxells, but that he would remain in a little vile dorp<sup>1</sup> about a league from Bruxells, where he was vilely accommodated. Thither the conde of Fuensaldagña and don Alonso came to him, and the arch-duke met him privately at another place; and he quickly discovered that don Alonso had a private intrigue with some officers of the army, who were enemies to Cromwell, upon whose interest he more depended than upon the King's, and offered it as great merit to his majesty if he could be able to persuade them to make a conjunction with the King. And this correspondence between him [don Alonso] and those Levellers was managed by an Irish Jesuit<sup>2</sup>, who by speaking Spanish had got himself to be mutually trusted by them. The King pressed them that he might remove his family to Bruxells, or into some place in Flanders, that it might be notorious that he was in alliance with his Catholic majesty, and then they should quickly see he had another kind of interest in England than what those men pretended to, upon whom they ought not to depend; and they would quickly find, if his majesty resided in that country, his influence upon the Irish who were in France.

20. They would by no means consent that his majesty should remain in Bruxells, as little at Antwerp, or indeed in any place

<sup>1</sup> [Vilvord. *Calend. Clar. S. P.*, iii. 100.]

<sup>2</sup> [Peter Talbot.]

1656 as taken notice of by the State to be there, which, they said, the King of Spain's honour would not permit, without shewing those respects to him that he might live in that grandeur as became a great king, which the present state of their affairs would not permit them to defray the charge of. But they intimated that if his majesty would choose to remove his family to Bruges, and remain there with them, so far *incognito* as not [to] expect any public expensive reception, they were sure he would find all respect from the inhabitants of that city. The King desired that some treaty might be signed between them; which was committed to the wisdom of don Alonso, who prepared it in as perfunctory a manner as was possible; by which the King was permitted to reside in Bruges, and nothing on the King of Spain's part undertaken, but that whenever the King could cause a good port town in England to declare for him, his Catholic majesty would assist him with a body of six thousand foot<sup>1</sup>, and with such a proportion of ammunition, and so many ships to transport that body thither; which was the proposition the Levellers had made; and don Alonso, by making it the contract with the King, thought this way to beget an intelligence between them and the royal party, of the power of which he had no esteem.

21. The King discerned that what they offered would be of no moment, nor could he make such confident propositions of advantage to Spain as might warrant him to insist upon large concessions. Besides, it was evident to him that the affairs in those provinces which remained under Spain were in so evil a posture, that if they should promise any great matters they would not be able to perform them. However, all that he desired was to have the reputation of a treaty between him and the King of Spain, under which he might draw his family from Cullen, and remain in Flanders, which was at a just distance from England, and expect other alterations. And so he readily accepted the treaty as it was drawn by don Alonso, and signed it, and declared that he would reside in the manner they proposed at Bruges. Whereupon, after seven or eight days' stay

<sup>1</sup> [4,000 foot and 4,000 horse. *Calend. Clar. S. P.*, iii. 110.]

in that inconvenient manner, the treaty was engrossed, and signed by the King, the arch-duke, and don Alonso, in April, or the end of March, 165[6]<sup>1</sup>; the expedition being advanced by the necessity of the departure of the arch-duke and the conde of Fuensaldagña, who began their journeys within two or three days after the signing the treaty<sup>2</sup>; don Juan and the marquis of Caracena being known to be on their way, and both, though not together, within few days' journey of Flanders.

22. The treaty, as it was signed, was sent by an express into Spain for the approbation and signature of his Catholic majesty. The King with his small train went to Bruges, and lodged in the house of a subject of his own, the lord Taragh, an Irishman, who had been born in that country, and inherited an estate by his mother. There the King stayed till a handsome accommodation was provided for him in that city, having sent to his brother the duke of Gloster, who remained yet at Cullen, to come to him, and that his family should all come from thence. So that by the time his majesty had returned again to Bruxells to congratulate don Juan's arrival, and spent three or four days there, he found himself as well settled with his family at Bruges as he had been at Cullen, where, when his family left it, there was not the least debt remained unsatisfied, which, in the low condition his majesty had been [in] and still was, gave reputation to his economy.

23. As upon the dissolution of the unruly Parliament Cromwell had sent out his two great fleets to propagate his fame abroad, presuming that by the conquest which the one would make in the West Indies he should have money enough to keep his army in obedience to him, and by the other's destroying or suppressing the Turks of Argiers and Tunis, which were indeed grown formidable to all merchants, he should raise his reputation in Christendom, and become very popular with all the merchants of England; so he did not in the mean time neglect

<sup>1</sup> ['1657,' MS.]

<sup>2</sup> [The archduke Leopold left Brussels on May 8, N.S., for Louvain, and met don Juan near Montaigne on the following day. *Calend. Clar. S. P.*, iii. 129; letter of Sir H. de Vic of May 12. Fuensaldagña left Antwerp on June 19.]

1656 to take all the ways he could devise to provide for his own security at home. Though he had brought the King's party so low that he had no apprehension of their power to raise an army against him, yet he discerned that by breaking their fortunes and estates he had not at all broken their spirits, and that by taking so many of their lives their numbers were not lessened, and that they would be still ready to throw themselves into any party that should declare against him; to which he knew there were enough inclined, who were no kinder to the other than himself.

24. But that which troubled him most was the distemper in his army, where he knew there were many troops more at the disposal of that party that would destroy him than at his own. It was once in his purpose to have drawn over a regiment of Swiss, upon pretence of sending them into Ireland, but in truth with intention to keep them a guard to his own person<sup>1</sup>; and to that purpose he sent a person to treat with colonel Balthazar, a man well known in the Protestant cantons; but this came to be discovered, and he had not confidence to proceed in it. He resolved therefore upon an expedient which should provide for all inconveniences, as well amongst the people as in the army.

1655  
Aug. 9<sup>a</sup>. He constituted out of the persons who he thought were most devoted to his person a body of major generals; that is, he assigned to such a single person so many counties, to be under his command as their major general: so that all England was put under the absolute power of twelve men, neither of them having any power in the jurisdiction of another, but every man in those counties which were committed to his charge had all that authority which was before scattered among committeemen, justices of peace, and several other officers.

25. The major general committed what persons he thought fit to suspect; took care to levy all moneys which were appointed by the Protector and his council to be collected for the public;

<sup>1</sup> [See *Calend. Clar. S. P.*, iii. 58, under date of Sept. 1655, and *pref.* p. viii.]

<sup>2</sup> [Thurloe's *S. P.*, iii. 701; *Cal. Dom. S. P.*, 1655, p. 275. The instructions, in which the title of major-generals was inserted, were passed Sept. 21; *ibid.*, p. 34.]

sequestered all who did not pay their decimation, or such other payments as they were made liable to; and no appeal against any of their acts but to the Protector himself. They had likewise a martial power, which was to list a body of horse and foot, who were to have such a salary constantly paid, and not to be called upon but upon emergent occasion, and then to attend so many days at their own charge; and if they stayed longer, they should be under the same pay with the army, but independent upon the officers thereof, and only to obey his major general. A horseman had eight pounds a year; for which he was to be ready with his horse if he were called upon; if he were not, he might intend his own affairs. And by this means he had a second army in view, powerful enough to control the first, if they at any time deserved to be suspected. But he discerned by degrees that these new magistrates grew too much in love with their own power; and, besides that they carried themselves like so many bassas with their bands of janizaries towards the people, and were extremely odious to them of all parties, they did really affect such an authority as might undermine his own greatness; yet for the present he thought not fit to control them, and seemed less to apprehend them.

26. When admiral Blake had subdued the Turks of Tunis and Argiers, and betaken himself to the coast of Spain, and by the attempt of Hispaniola and the possession of Jamaica the war was sufficiently declared against the Catholic King, Mountague, a young gentleman of a good family, who had been drawn into the party of Cromwell, and served under him as a colonel in his army with much courage, was sent with an addition of ships to join with Blake, and joined in commission of admiral and general Jan. 2. with him; Blake finding himself much indisposed in his health, and having desired that another might be sent to assist him, and to take care of the fleet if worse should befall him. Upon his arrival with the fleet, they lay long before Cadiz in expectation of the Indian fleet, and to keep in all ships from going out to give notice of their being there. After some months' attendance, they were at last compelled to remove their station, that they might get fresh water and some other provisions

1656 which they wanted, and so drew off to a convenient bay in Portugal, and left a squadron of ships to watch the Spanish fleet; which within a very short time after the remove of the fleet came upon the coast, and before they were discovered by the captain of the squadron, who was to the leeward, made their way so fast, that when he got to them, (though he was inferior Sept. 8, 9. to them in number,) they rather thought of saving their wealth by flight than of defending themselves; and so the admiral run on shore in the bay, and the vice-admiral, in which was the vice-king of Mexico with his wife and sons and daughters, was fired by themselves to prevent being taken; in which the poor gentleman himself, his wife, and his eldest daughter perished: his other daughters and his two sons, and near one hundred others, were saved by the English, who took the rear-admiral and two other ships very richly laden, which, together with the prisoners, were sent into England; the rest escaped into Gibraltar.

27. The ships which were sent for England arrived at Portsmouth; and though they might with less charge have continued their voyage by sea to London, Cromwell thought it would make more noise if all the bullion, which was of great value, was landed at Portsmouth; from whence it was brought by land Nov. 1. in many carts to London, and so carried through the city of London to the Tower, to be there coined, as it was within as short time as it could be despatched; and though it was in itself very considerable, they gave it out and reported it to be of much greater value than it was. But the loss to the Spaniard was very prodigious, though most of what was in the admiral was saved, and that only: and they saw the fleet still remaining before them, which was not like to miss the other fleet, which was shortly after expected, in spite of all advertisements which they were like to be able to send to it.

28. Cromwell now thought his reputation both abroad and at home so good that he might venture again upon calling of a Parliament, and by their countenance and concurrence suppress or compose those refractory spirits which crossed him in all places; and having first made such shrieves in all counties as he

thought would be like to contribute to his designs, by hindering 1656 such men to stand against whom he had a prejudice, at least by not returning them if they should be chosen, and by procuring such persons to be returned as would be most agreeable to him, of which there were choice in all counties, and having prepared all things to this purpose as well as he could, he sent out his writs to call a Parliament to meet at Westminster upon the seventeenth of September in the year 1656: when, upon the returns, he found that though in some places he had succeeded according to his wish, it was in others quite the contrary, and that very many members were returned who were men of the most notorious malignity against him. And therefore he resorted to his old security, to keep all manner of persons from entering into the House who did not first subscribe that they would act nothing prejudicial to the government as it was established under a Protector; which being tendered many members utterly refused, and returned into their countries, where they were not for the most part the worse welcome for insisting upon their privileges and freedom of Parliament.

29. The major part frankly submitted and subscribed, that they might have the better opportunity to do mischief. And so a Speaker was chosen<sup>1</sup>; and at first they proceeded so Sept. 17. unanimously, that he [the Protector] began to hope that he had gained his point. With very little or no contradiction, they passed an Act of renunciation of any title that Charles Steward Sept. 26<sup>2</sup>. (for so they had long called the King) or any of that family might pretend; and this all men were bound to subscribe. With as little opposition they passed another, whereby it was Oct. 9<sup>2</sup>. made high treason to attempt any thing against the life of the Protector. And then they passed several Acts for raising money by way of contribution in England, Scotland, and Ireland, in a greater proportion than had ever yet been raised. They granted tonnage and poundage to the Protector for his life, and passed several other acts for the raising of moneys; amongst<sup>1657</sup> April 29. them, one for obliging all persons to pay a full year's rent for June 20.

<sup>1</sup> [Sir Thomas Widdrington.]

<sup>2</sup> [The Protector's assent to these acts was given on Nov. 27.]

1657 all buildings which had been erected in and about London from before the beginning of the troubles; by all which ways vast sums of money were to be, and afterwards were, exacted and raised. And all these Acts they presented solemnly to his highness, to be confirmed by his royal authority; and he as  
 June 26. graciously confirmed them all, and told them, that as it had been the custom of the chief governors to acknowledge the care and kindness of the Commons upon such occasions, so he did very heartily and thankfully acknowledge their kindness.

30. But notwithstanding all this, he was far from being satisfied with the method of their proceeding; for there was nothing done to confirm his personal authority; and notwithstanding all that was done, they might, for ought appeared, remove him from being both Protector and general. There had been for some time jealousy between him and Lambert, who had been the principal adviser of the raising those major generals; and being one of them himself, and having the government of the five northern counties committed to him, he did desire to improve their authority, and to have it settled by authority of Parliament. But Cromwell, on the other hand, was well contented that they should be looked upon as a public grievance, and so taken away, rather upon the desire of Parliament than to appear to be out of his own inclination. But there yet appeared neither that design in Lambert, nor the other in Cromwell, nor [any<sup>1</sup>] difference between them.

31. The Protector himself seemed to desire nothing more than to have the authority they had formerly given him, at least that he had exercised from the time he was Protector, confirmed and ratified by Act of Parliament. And if it had been so, it had been much greater than any king ever enjoyed. But he had used to speak much, that it was pity the nobility should be totally suppressed, and that the government would be better if it passed another consultation besides that of the House of Commons. In matter of religion, he would often speak that there was much of good in the order of bishops, if the dross were scoured off. He courted very much many of the nobility,

<sup>1</sup> ['no,' MS.]



and used all the devices to dispose them to come to him, and they who did visit him were used with extraordinary respect by him; all which raised an opinion in many, that he did in truth himself affect to be king; which was the more confirmed when many of those who had nearest relation to him, and were most trusted by him, as soon as the Parliament had despatched those Acts which are mentioned before, and that complaints came from all parts against the major generals, inveighed sharply against the temper and composition of the government, as if it was not capable to settle the several distractions and satisfy the several interests of the nation; and by degrees proposed, in direct terms, that they might invest Cromwell with the title, rights, and dignity of the king; and then he [would know<sup>1</sup>] what he was to do towards the satisfaction of all parties, and how to govern those who would not be satisfied.

32. This proposition found a marvellous concurrence; and very many who used not to agree in any thing else were of one mind in this, and would presently vote him king. And it was observed that nobody was forwarder in that acclamation than some men who had always had the reputation of great fidelity to the King, and to wish his restoration: and it cannot be denied that very many of the King's party were so deceived in their judgments, as really to believe that the making Cromwell king for the present was the best expedient for the restoration of his majesty, and that the army and the whole nation would then have been united rather to restore the true than to admit a false sovereign, whose hypocrisy and tyranny being now detected and known would be the more detested.

33. But the more sober persons of the King's party, who made less noise, trembled at this overture, and believed that it was the only way utterly to destroy the King, and to pull up all future hopes of the royal family by the roots. They saw all men even already tired in their hopes; and that which was left of spirit in them was from the horror they had of the confusion of the present government; that very many who had sustained the King's quarrel in the beginning were dead; that the present

<sup>1</sup> ['knew,' MS.]

1657 King by his long absence out of the kingdom was known to very few; so that there was too much reason to fear that much of that affection that appeared under the notion of allegiance to the King was more directed to the monarchy than to the person, and that if Cromwell were once made king, and so the government ran again in the old channel, though those who were in love with a republic would possibly fall from him, he would receive abundant reparation of strength by the access of those who preferred the monarchy, and which probably would reconcile most men of estates to an absolute acquiescence, if not to an entire submission; that the nobility, being<sup>1</sup> excluded to a man, and deprived of all the rights and privilegia which were due to them by their birthright, and so enemies irreconcilable<sup>2</sup> to the government, would by this alteration find themselves in their right places, and be glad to adhere to the name of a king, how unlawful a one soever; and there was an Act of Parliament still in force, that was made in the eleventh year of king Harry the Seventh, which seemed to provide absolute indemnity to such submission. And there was without doubt at that time too much propension in too many of the nobility to ransom themselves at the charge of their lawful sovereign. And therefore they who made these prudent recollections used all the ways they could to prevent this design, and to divert any such vote in the House.

34. On the other side, Lambert, who was the second man of the army, and many other officers of account and interest, besides the country members, opposed this overture with great bitterness and indignation; and some of them said directly, that if, contrary to their oaths and engagements, and contrary to the end for obtaining whereof they had spent so much blood and treasure, they must at last return and submit to the old government, and live again under a king, they would choose much rather to obey the true and lawful heir to the Crown, who was descended from a long succession of kings who had managed the sceptre over the nation, than to submit to a person who at best was but their equal, and raised from the same degree of

<sup>1</sup> ['which being,' MS.]

<sup>2</sup> ['irreconciliable,' MS.]

which they all were by themselves, and by the trust they had 1657  
 reposed in him had raised himself above them. That which put  
 an end to the present debate was, (and which was as wonderful  
 as any thing,) that some of his own family, who had grown up  
 under him, and had their whole dependence upon him, as  
 Desborough, Fleetwood, Whaley, and others, as passionately  
 contradicted the motion as any of the other officers, and con-  
 fidently undertook to know that himself would never consent  
 to it, and therefore that it was very strange that any men should  
 importune the putting such a question before they knew that  
 he would accept it, except they took this way to destroy him.  
 And upon this, (for which the undertakers received no thanks)  
 the first debate was put off till farther consideration.

Feb. 23.

35. The debate was resumed again the next day with the  
 same warmth, the same persons still of the same opinion they  
 had been before; most of the officers of the army, as well [as]  
 they who were the great dependents upon and creatures of  
 Cromwell, as passionately opposed the making him king as  
 Lambert and the rest did, who looked to be successive protectors  
 after his decease; only it was observed that they who the day  
 before had undertaken that he himself would never endure it,  
 which had especially made the pause at that time, urged that  
 argument no more, but inveighed still against it as a monstrous  
 thing, and that which would infallibly ruin him. But most of  
 those of his privy council, and others nearest his trust, were as  
 violent and as positive for the declaring him king, and much  
 the major part of the House concurred in the same opinion<sup>1</sup>;  
 and notwithstanding all was said to the contrary, they appointed  
 a committee of six or seven<sup>2</sup> of the most eminent members of  
 the House to wait upon him, and to inform him of the very  
 earnest desire of the House that he would take upon him the  
 title of king; and if they should find any aversion in him, that  
 they should then enlarge in giving him those reasons which had  
 been offered in the House, and which had swayed the House to  
 that resolution, which they hoped would have the same influence  
 upon his highness.

Feb. 24.

March 25.

March 27.

<sup>1</sup> [by 123 against 62.]<sup>2</sup> [fifty-nine, *Journals*, vii. 514.]

- 1657 36. He gave them<sup>1</sup> audience in the Painted Chamber<sup>2</sup>, when  
 March 31. they made the bare overture to him as the desire of his Parli-  
 ament; at which he seemed surprised, and told them he wondered  
 how any such thing came into their minds; that it was neither fit  
 for them to offer, nor him to receive; that he was sure they  
 could discover no such ambition in him, and that his conscience  
 Apr. 3. would not give him leave ever to consent to own that title<sup>3</sup>.  
 They who were well prepared to expect such an answer told  
 him, that they hoped he would not so suddenly give a positive  
 denial to what the Parliament had desired upon such long and  
 mature deliberation; that they knew his modesty well, and  
 that he more affected to deserve the highest titles than to wear  
 them; that they were appointed to offer many reasons which  
 had induced the House to make this request to him; which  
 when he had vouchsafed to hear, they hoped the same impression  
 would be made upon him that had been made by them in the  
 House. He was too desirous to give the Parliament all the  
 satisfaction he could with a good conscience to refuse to hear  
 whatever they thought fit to say unto him, and so appointed  
 Apr. 7, 8. them another day to attend him in the same place; which they  
 accordingly did.
- Apr. 11, 13,  
 16, 20. 37. When they came to him again, they all successively enter-  
 tained him with long harangues, setting out the nature of the  
 English people, and the nature of the government to which they  
 had been accustomed, and under which they had flourished from  
 the time they had been a people: that though the extreme  
 sufferings they had undergone by corrupt ministers, under negli-  
 gent and tyrannical kings, had transported them to throw off  
 the government itself, as well as to inflict justice upon the  
 persons of the offenders, yet they found by experience that no  
 other government would so well fit the nation as that to which  
 it had been accustomed: that, notwithstanding the infinite pains  
 his highness had taken, and which had been crowned even with

<sup>1</sup> [the whole House.]      <sup>2</sup> [the Banqueting House; *Journals*, VII. 516.]

<sup>3</sup> [The speech of the Speaker, and Cromwell's reply, desiring time for  
 deliberation, are printed in Rutt's *Diary of Thomas Burton*, 1828, i.  
 397-416.]

miraculous success by the immediate blessing of divine Providence upon all his actions and all his counsels, there remained still a restless and unquiet spirit in men that threatened the public peace and quiet; and that it was most apparent, by the daily combinations and conspiracies against the present government, how just and gentle and mild soever, that the heart of the nation was devoted to the old form with which it was acquainted; and that it was love of that, not the affection to the young man who pretended a title to it and was known to nobody, which disposed so many to wish for the return of it: that the name and title of a Protector was never known to this kingdom, but in the hands of a subject during the reign of an infant sovereign, and therefore that the laws gave little respect to him, but were always executed in the name of the king, how young soever, and how unfit soever to govern: that whatsoever concerned the rights of any family, or any personal pretence, was well and safely over; the nation was united and of one mind in the rejection of the old line; there was no danger of it; but nobody could say that they were of one mind in the rejection of the old form of government, to which they were still most addicted: and therefore they besought him, out of his love and tenderness to the commonwealth, and for the preservation of the nation, which had got so much renown and glory under his conduct, that he would take that name and title which had ever presided over it, and by which as he would establish a firm peace at home, so he would find his fame and honour more improved abroad, and that those very princes and kings, who out of admiration of his virtue and noble actions had contracted a reverence for his person and an impatient desire of his friendship, would look upon him with much more veneration when they saw him clothed with the same majesty, and as much their equal in title as in merit, and would with much more alacrity renew the old alliances with England when they were renewed in the old form and under the old title, which would make them durable; since no foreign prince could presume to take upon him to judge of the right of succession, which had been frequently changed in all kingdoms, not only upon the expiration

1657 of a line but upon deprivation and deposition, in such manner as was most for the good and benefit of the people; of which there was a fresh instance in their own eyes in the kingdom of Portugal, where the duke of Braganza, without any other title than the election of the people, assumed the crown and title of king from the King of Spain, who had enjoyed it quietly, and without interruption, during three descents; and he was acknowledged as sovereign of that kingdom by the late King, who received his ambassadors accordingly.

38. Cromwell heard these and the like arguments with great attention, and wanted not his approbation to have concurred with them; he thanked them for the pains they had taken, to which he would not take upon him to give a present answer; that he would consider of all they had said to him, and resort to God for counsel; and then he would send for them, and acquaint them with his resolution. And so they parted, all men standing at gaze and in terrible suspense, according to their several hopes and fears, till they knew what he would determine. All the dispute was now within his own chamber. And there is no question the man was in great agony, and in his own mind he did heartily desire to be king, and thought it the only way to be safe. And it is confidently believed that upon some addresses he had formerly made to some principal noblemen of the kingdom, and some friendly expostulations he had by himself or some friend with them, why they reserved themselves and would have no communication or acquaintance with him, the answer from them all severally (for such discourse could be held but with one at once) was, that if he would make himself king they should easily know what they had to do, but they knew nothing of the submission and obedience which they were to pay to a Protector; and that these returns first disposed him to that ambition.

39. He was not terrified with the opposition that Lambert gave him, whom he now looked upon as a declared and mortal enemy, and one whom he must destroy that he might not be destroyed by him; nor did he much consider those other officers of the army who in the House concurred with Lambert, whose

interest he did not believe to be great; and if it were, he 1657 thought he should quickly reduce them as soon as Lambert should be disgraced, and his power taken from him. But he trembled at the obstinacy of those who he knew loved him, his brother Desborough, and the rest, who depended wholly upon him and his greatness, and who did not wish his power and authority less absolute than it was. And that these men should with that virulence withstand this promotion grieved him to the heart. He conferred with them severally, and endeavoured by all the ways he could to convert them. But they were all inexorable; and told him resolutely that they could do him no good if they should adhere to him, and therefore they were resolved for their own interest to leave him, and do the utmost they could against him, from the time he assumed that title.

40. It was reported that an officer of name, in the *éclaircissement* upon the subject, told him resolutely and vehemently that if ever he took the title of king upon him he would kill him. Certain it is that Cromwell was informed, and gave credit to it, that there were a number of men who bound themselves by oath to kill him within so many hours after he should accept that title. They who were very near him said that in this perplexity he revolved his former dream or apparition, that had first informed and promised him the high fortune to which he was already arrived, and which was generally spoken of even from the beginning of the troubles, and when he was not in a posture that promised such exaltation; and that he then observed, that it had only declared that he should be the greatest man in England, and should be 'near' to be king; which seemed to imply that he should be only *near*, and never actually attain the Crown. Upon the whole matter, after a wonderful distraction of mind, which was manifest in his countenance to all who then saw him, notwithstanding his science in dissimulation, his courage did fail him; and after he had spent some days very uneasily<sup>1</sup>, he sent for the committee May 8.

<sup>1</sup> [Details of the frequent conferences between Cromwell and a large Committee of the House of Commons, from Apr. 13 to May 5, are in Burton's *Diary*, ii. 1-105. The speeches are given in *Monarchy Asserted*; 1660.]

1657 of Parliament to attend him; and as his looks were marvelously discomposed, and discovered a mind full of trouble and irresolution, so his words were broken and disjointed, without method, and full of pauses; with frequent mention of God and his gracious dispensations, he concluded that he could not, with a good conscience, accept of the government under the title of a king.

41. Many were then of opinion that his genius at that time forsook him, and yielded to the King's spirit, and that his reign was near its expiration; and that if his own courage had not failed, he would easily have mastered all opposition; that there were many officers of the army who would not have left him, and who were for kingly government in their own affections; and that the greatest factions in religion rather promised themselves protection from a single person than from a Parliament or a new numerous council; that the first motion for the Feb. 23. making him king was made by one of the most wealthy aldermen of the city of London, and who served then for the city in Parliament<sup>1</sup>; which was an argument that that potent body stood well affected to that government, and would have joined with him in the defence of it. Others were as confident that he did very wisely to decline it, and that if he had accepted it he could not have lived many days after. The truth is, the danger was only in some present assassination, and desperate attempt upon his person, not from a revolt of the army from him, which no particular man had interest enough to corrupt. And he might have secured himself probably for some time from such an assault by not going abroad; and when such designs are long deferred, they are commonly discovered, as appeared afterwards in many conspiracies against his life.

42. His interest and power over the army was so great, that he had upon the sudden removed many of those officers who had the greatest names in the factions of religion, as Harrison, Rich, and others; who as soon as they were removed, and their regiments conferred on others, were<sup>2</sup> found to be of no signification, or to have influence upon any men. And it could have

<sup>1</sup> [Christopher Paok.]

<sup>2</sup> ['they were,' MS.]



been no hard matter for him, upon very few days' warning, to 1657 have so modelled and quartered his troops as to have secured him in any enterprise he would undertake. And it may be there were more men scandalized at his usurping more than the royal authority than would have been at his assumption of the royal title too. And therefore they who at that time exercised their thoughts with most sagacity, looked upon that refusal of his as an immediate act of Almighty God towards the King's restoration; and many of the soberest men of the nation confessed, after the King's return, that their dejected spirits were wonderfully raised, and their hopes revived, by that infatuation of his.

43. But his modesty, or his wisdom, in the refusing that supreme title seemed not to be attended with the least disadvantage to him. They who had most signally opposed it were so satisfied that the danger they most apprehended was over, that they cared not to cross any thing else that was proposed towards his greatness, which might be their own another day: and they who had carried on the other design, and thereby, as they thought, obliged him, resolved now to give him all the power which they knew he did desire, and leave it to his own time, when with less hesitation he might assume the title too. And so they voted<sup>1</sup> that he should enjoy the title May 19, 22. and authority which he had already; which they enlarged in many particulars, beyond what it was by the first Instrument of Government, by another instrument, which they called the *Humble Petition and Advice*, and in which they granted him not only that authority for his life but power by his last will and testament, and in the presence of such a number of witnesses, to make choice of and to declare his own successor; which power should never be granted to any other Protector than himself. And when they had digested<sup>2</sup> and agreed upon this writing, at the passing whereof Lambert chose rather to be absent than opposite, they sent to him for an audience; which May 23. he assigned them on the 25th day of May, 1657, in the Banqueting House<sup>3</sup>; where their speaker Wythrington presented May 25.

<sup>1</sup> [by 77 to 45 on May 19, and finally by 53 to 50 on May 22.]

<sup>2</sup> ['digested,' MS.]      <sup>3</sup> [the Painted Chamber; *Journals*, VII. 539.]

1657 and read the Petition and Advice of his Parliament, and desired his assent to it.

44. The contents and substance of it [were<sup>1</sup>,] that his highness Oliver Cromwell should, under the title of Protector, be pleased to execute the office of chief magistrate over England, Scotland, and Ireland, and the territories and dominions thereunto belonging, &c., and to govern according to all things in that Petition and Advice: and also, that he would in his lifetime appoint the person that should succeed him in the government: that he would call a Parliament, consisting of two Houses, once in a year at farthest: that those persons who are legally chosen by a free election of the people to serve in Parliament may not be excluded from doing their duties but by consent of that House whereof they are members: that none but those under the qualifications therein mentioned should be capable to serve as members in Parliament: that the power of the other House be limited as therein is prescribed: that the laws and statutes of the land be observed and kept; no laws altered, suspended, abrogated, or repealed, but by new laws made by Act of Parliament: that the yearly sum of a million of pounds sterling be settled for the maintenance of the navy and army, and three hundred thousand pounds for the support of the government, besides other temporary supplies, as the Commons in Parliament shall see the necessities of the nation to require: that the number of the Protector's council shall not exceed the number of one and twenty, whereof seven shall be a quorum: the chief officers of state, as chancellors, keepers of the great seal, &c. to be approved by Parliament: that his highness would encourage a godly ministry in these nations, and that such as do revile and disturb them in the worship of God may be punished according to law, and where laws are defective new ones are to be made: that the Protestant Christian religion, as it is contained in the Old and New Testament, be asserted and held forth for the public profession of these nations, and no other; and that a Confession of Faith be agreed upon, and recommended to the people of these nations, and

<sup>1</sup> ['was,' MS.]

none to be permitted, by words or writing, to revile or reproach 1657  
the said Confession of Faith.

45. After this Petition and Advice was distinctly read to him, after a long pause, and casting up his eyes, and other gestures of perplexity, he signed it; and he told them, that he came not thither that day as to a day of triumph, but with the most serious thoughts that ever he had in all his life, being to undertake one of the greatest burdens that ever was laid upon the back of any human creature; so that without the support of the Almighty he must necessarily sink under the weight of it, to the damage and prejudice of the nations committed to his charge: therefore he desired the help of the Parliament, and the help of all those who feared God, that by their help he might receive help and assistance from the hand of God, since nothing but his presence could enable him to discharge so great a trust. He told them, that this was but an introduction to the carrying on of the government of the three nations; and therefore he commended the supply of the rest that was yet wanting to the wisdom of the Parliament; and said, he could not doubt but the same spirit that had led the Parliament to this would easily suggest the rest to them; and that nothing should have induced him to have undertaken this intolerable burden to flesh and blood, but that he saw it was the Parliament's care to answer those ends for which they were engaged; calling God to witness that he would not have undergone it but that the Parliament had determined that it made clearly for the liberty and interest of the nation, and preservation of such as fear God; and if the nations were not thankful to them for their care, it would fall as a sin on their heads. He concluded with recommending some things to them, which, he said, would tend to reformation, by discountenancing vice and encouraging virtue; and so dismissed them to return to their House.

46. But now that they had performed all that he could expect from them, he resolved that he would do somewhat for himself, and that all the discourses which had passed of kingship should not pass away in the silence of this address, but

1657 that this exaltation should be attended with such a noise and solemnity as should make it very little inferior to the other. And therefore within few days after he sent a message to the Parliament<sup>1</sup>, that they would adjourn until such a time as the solemnity of his inauguration should be over; for the formality whereof they had not provided, nor indeed considered, as if enough had been done already: and for which he appointed the six and twentieth of June, and in the mean time assigned the care to several persons, that all things should be made ready for the magnificence of such a work.

June 26. 47. On the day appointed, West[minster] Hall was prepared, and adorned as sumptuously as it could be for a day of coronation. A throne was erected with a pavilion, and a chair of estate under it, to which Cromwell was conducted in an entry and attendance of his officers, military and civil, with as much state (and the sword carried before him) as can be imagined. When he was sate in his chair of state, and after a short speech, which was but the prologue of that by the Speaker of the Parliament, Wythrington, that this promotion might not be without any vote from the nobility, the Speaker, with the earl of Warwick and Whitlock, vested him with a rich purple velvet robe lined with ermines, the Speaker enlarging upon the majesty and the integrity of that robe. Then the Speaker presented him with a fair Bible of the largest edition, richly bound; then he, in the name of all the people, girded a sword about him; and, lastly, presented him a sceptre of gold, which he put into his hand, and made him a large discourse of those emblems of government and authority<sup>2</sup>. Upon the close of which, there being nothing wanting to a perfect formal coronation but a crown and an archbishop, he took his oath, administered to him by the Speaker, in these words:

'I do, in the presence and by the name of Almighty God, promise and swear, that to the uttermost of my power I will uphold and maintain the true reformed Protestant Christian religion, in the purity thereof, as it is contained in the holy Scriptures of the Old and New Testament, to the

<sup>1</sup> [He wrote on June 19 proposing that they should not adjourn until June 24 or 25, but the House sat continuously without any adjournment.]

<sup>2</sup> [*Merour. Polit.*, No. 370, pp. 7897-8.]

utmost of my power and understanding, and encourage the profession and 1657 professors of the same; and that to the utmost of my power I will endeavour, as chief magistrate of these three nations, the maintenance and preserving of the peace and safety and just rights and privileges of the people thereof, and shall in all things, according to my best knowledge and power, govern the people of these three nations according to law.'

49. After this there remained nothing but festivals, and proclamations of his power and authority to be made in the city of London, and with all imaginable haste throughout the three kingdoms of England, Scotland, and Ireland; which was done accordingly. And that he might entirely enjoy the sovereignty they had conferred upon him, without any new blasts and disputes, and might be vacant to the despatch of his domestic affairs, which he had modelled, and might well consider how to fill his other House with members fit for his purpose, he adjourned his Parliament till January next, as having done as much as was necessary for one session. And in this vacancy his greatness seemed to be very much established both at home and abroad, as if it could never be shaken. He caused all the officers of his army, and all commanders at sea, to subscribe and approve all that the Parliament had done, and to promise to observe and defend it.

50. He now sent for his eldest son Richard, who till this time had lived privately in the country, upon the fortune his wife<sup>1</sup> had brought him, in an ordinary village<sup>2</sup> in Hampshire, and brought him now to the court, and made him a privy Dec. 31. councillor, and caused him to be chosen chancellor of the uni- July 18. versity of Oxford. Notwithstanding all which, few people then believed that he intended to name him for his successor, he by his discourses often implying that he would name such a successor as was in all respects equal to the office: and so men guessed at this or that man, as they thought most like to be so esteemed by him. His second son Harry, who had the reputation of more vigour, he sent into Ireland, and made him Nov. 17. his lieutenant of that kingdom, that he might be sure to have no disturbance from thence.

<sup>1</sup> [Dorothy, daughter of Richard Major, married May 1, 1649.]

<sup>2</sup> [Hursley.]

1657 51. He had only two daughters unmarried: and one<sup>1</sup> of those he gave to the grandson and heir of the earl of Warwick, a man of a great estate, and throughly engaged in the war from the beginning; the other<sup>2</sup> was married to the lord viscount Falconbridge, the owner likewise of a very fair estate in Yorkshire, and descended of a family eminently loyal. And there were many reasons to believe that this young gentleman, being then of about three or four and twenty years of age, of great vigour and ambition, had many good purposes, which he thought that alliance might qualify and enable him to perform. These marriages were celebrated at Whitehall with all imaginable pomp and lustre; and it was observed that though the marriages were performed in public view according to the rites and ceremonies then in use, they were presently afterwards in private married by ministers ordained by bishops<sup>3</sup>, and according to the form in the Book of Common Prayer; and this with the privity of Cromwell, who pretended to yield to it in compliance with the importunity and folly of his daughters.

52. These domestic triumphs were confirmed and improved by the success of his arms abroad. Though the French had no mind to apply their forces upon Dunkirk, which they were obliged, when taken, to put into Cromwell's hands, and so marched to other places which they were to conquer to their own use, in which the six thousand English, under the command of Reynolds, attended them, and behaved themselves eminently well, and in good discipline; yet his ambassador Lockhart<sup>4</sup> made such lively instances with the cardinal, with complaints of their breach of faith, and some menaces that his master knew where to find a more punctual friend, that as  
 Aug. 7. soon as they had taken Mon[tm]edy the army marched into Flanders; and though the season of the year was too far spent to engage in a siege before Duunkirk, they sat down before

<sup>1</sup> [Frances, married to Mr. Robert Rich, Nov. 11, 1657.]

<sup>2</sup> [Mary, married Nov. 18, 1657, a week after her younger sister, Frances.]

<sup>3</sup> [by Dr. Hewitt.]

<sup>4</sup> ['Lockier,' MS.]

Mardike, which was looked upon as the most difficult part of 1657 the work, and which, being reduced, would facilitate the other <sup>Sept. 19<sup>1</sup>.</sup> very much: and that fort they took and delivered it into the <sup>Sept. 23<sup>1</sup>.</sup> hands of Reynolds, with an obligation that they would besiege Dunkirk the next year with the first attempt.

53. But that which made the noise indeed, and crowned his successes, was the victory his fleet, under the command of Mountague and Blake, had obtained over the Spaniard; which, in truth, with all its circumstances, was very wonderful, and will never be forgotten in Spain and the Canaries. That fleet had rode out all the winter storms before Cadiz and the coast of Portugal, after they had sent home those former ships which they had taken of the Indian fleet, and understood by the prisoners that the other fleet from Peru, which is always much richer than that of Mexico, was undoubtedly at sea, and would be on the coast by the beginning of the spring, if they received not advertisement of the presence of the English fleet; in which case they were most like to stay at the Canaries. The admirals concluded, that, notwithstanding all they had [done] or could do to block up Cadiz, one<sup>2</sup> way or other they would not be without that advertisement; and therefore resolved to sail with the whole fleet to the length of the Canaries, that if it were possible they might meet with the galleons before they came thither; and if they should be first got in thither, they would then consider what was to be done.

54. And with this resolution they stood for the Canaries, and about the middle of April came thither; and found that the galleons were got thither before them, and had placed themselves, as they thought, in safety. The smaller ships, being ten in number, lay in a semicircle moored along the shore, and the six great galleons, (the fleet consisted of sixteen good ships,) which could not come so near the shore, lay with their broadsides towards the offing. And besides this good posture in which all the ships lay, they were covered by a strong castle well furnished with guns; and there were six or seven small forts raised in the most advantageous places

<sup>1</sup> [*Mercur. Polit.*, No. 383, p. 1664.]

<sup>2</sup> ['that one,' MS.]

1657 of the bay, every one of them furnished with six good pieces of cannon; so that they were without the least apprehension of their security, or imagination that any men would be so desperate as to assault them upon such apparent disadvantage.

April 20. 55. When the English fleet came to the mouth of the bay of Santa Cruz, and the generals saw in what posture the Spaniards lay, and thought it impossible to bring off any of the galleons; however, they resolved to burn them, (which was by many thought to be equally impossible,) and sent captain Staneere with a squadron of the best ships to fall upon the galleons, which he did very resolutely; whilst other frigates entertained the forts and lesser breastworks with continual broadsides, to hinder their firing. And so the generals coming up with the whole fleet, after full four hours' fight, they drove the Spaniards from their ships, and possessed them; yet found that their work was not done, and that it was not only impossible to carry away the ships which they had taken, but that the wind that had brought them into the bay, and enabled them to conquer the enemy, would not serve to carry them out again, but that they lay exposed to all the cannon from the shore, which thundered upon them. However, they resolved to do what was in their power; and so, (discharging their broadsides upon the forts and land, where they did great execution,) they set fire to every ship, galleons and others, and burned every one of them; which they had no sooner done, but the wind turned, and carried the whole fleet, without loss of one ship, out of the bay, and put them safe to sea again.

56. The whole action was so miraculous, that all men who knew the place concluded that no sober men, with what courage soever endued, would ever undertake it; and they could hardly persuade themselves to believe what they had done; whilst the Spaniards comforted themselves with the belief that they were devils, and not men, which had destroyed them in such a manner. So much a strong resolution of bold and courageous men can bring to pass, that no resistance and advantage of ground can disappoint them. And it can hardly be imagined



how small loss the English sustained in this unparalleled 1657 action, no one ship being left behind, and the killed and wounded not exceeding two hundred men, when the slaughter on board the [Spanish] ships and on the shore was incredible.

57. The fleet after this, having been long abroad, found it necessary to return home. And this was the last service performed by Blake, who sickened in his return, and in the very entrance of the fleet into the Sound of Plimmoth he expired. Aug. 17. But he wanted no pomp when he was dead, Cromwell causing him to be brought up by land to London in all the state that could be; and then, according to the method of that time, to encourage his officers to be killed that they might be pompously buried, he was with all the solemnity possible, and at the charge of the public, interred in Harry the Seventh's chapel, Sept. 4. in the monument of the kings. He was a man of an ordinary extraction, yet left enough by his father to give him a good education, which his own inclination disposed him to receive in the university where he took the degree of a master of arts<sup>1</sup>, and was versed in books, for a man who intended not to be of any profession, having enough of his own to maintain him in the plenty he affected, and having then no appearance of ambition to be a better man than he was. He was of a melancholic and a sullen nature, and spent his time most with good fellows, who liked his morosity, and a freedom he used in inveighing against the license of the time and the power of the Court; and they who knew him inwardly discovered that he had an anti-monarchical spirit, when few men thought the government in any danger. When the troubles began, he quickly declared himself against the King; and having some command in Bristol, when it was first taken by prince Rupert and the marquis of Hartford, and being trusted with the command of a little fort upon the line, he refused to give it up after the governor had signed the articles of surrender, and kept it some hours after the prince was in the town, and killed some of the

<sup>1</sup> [Only of bachelor of arts, at Wadham college, Oxford, Feb. 17, 1617. A William Blake ('frater Roberti, q.') of the same college took the degree of M.A., July 7, 1625; Wood MS., Bodl. Libr., E. 29, f. 105.]

1657 soldiers; for which the prince resolved to hang him, if some friends had not interposed for him upon his want of experience in war, and prevailed with him to quit the place by very great importunity and with much difficulty. He then betook himself wholly to the sea, and quickly made himself signal there, and was the first man that declined the old track, and made it manifest that the science might be attained in less time than was imagined, and despised those rules which had been long in practice, to keep his ship and his men out of danger, which had been held in former times a point of great ability and circumspection, as if the principal art requisite in the captain of a ship had been to be sure to come home safe again. He was the first man who brought the ships to contemn castles on shore, which had been thought ever very formidable, and were discovered by him only to make a noise and to fright those who could rarely be hurt by them. He was the first that infused that proportion of courage into the seamen, by making them see by experience what mighty things they could do if they were resolved, and taught them to fight in fire as well as upon water; and though he hath been very well imitated and followed, he was the first that drew the copy of naval courage and bold and resolute achievement.

58. After all this lustre and glory, in which the Protector seemed to flourish, the season of the year threatened some tempest and foul weather. January brought the Parliament again together, and they did not re-assemble with the same temper and resignation in which they parted; and it quickly appeared how unsecure new institutions of government are; and when the contrivers of them have provided, as they think, against all mischievous contingencies, they find that they have unwarily left a gap open to let their destruction in upon them.

59. Cromwell thought he had sufficiently provided for his own security, and to restrain the insolence of the Commons, by having called the other House, which by the petition was to be done, and having filled it for the most part with officers of the army, and such other as he had good reason to be con-

fidest of. And so on the 20th of January, the day appointed 1658  
to meet, whereas, before, the Parliament used to attend him Jan. 20.  
in the Painted Chamber when he had anything to say to them,  
now, he came to the House of Lords, where his new creations  
were; and then he sent the gentleman usher of the black rod  
to call the Commons to him. And they being conducted to the  
bar of that House, he being placed in his chair under a cloth  
of state, began his speech in the old style, 'My Lords, and you,  
the knights, citizens, and burgesses of the House of Commons;'  
and then discoursed some particulars which he recommended to  
them, thanked them for their fair correspondence the last  
session, and assured them, if they would continue to prosecute  
his designs, they should be called the blessed of the Lord, and  
generations to come should bless them.

60. But as soon as the Commons came to their House, they  
caused the third article of the Petition and Advice to be read,  
by which it was provided that no members legally chosen should  
be excluded from the performance of their duty but by consent  
of that House of which they were members. Upon which they  
proceeded to the calling over their House, and re-admitted  
presently all those who had been excluded for refusing to sign  
that recognition of the Protector; and by this means near two  
hundred of the most inveterate enemies the Protector had come  
and sat in the House; whereof sir Harry Vane, Haslerigge, and  
many other signal men, were some, who had much the more  
credit and interest in the House for having been excluded for  
their fidelity to the commonwealth; many of those who had  
subscribed it valuing themselves for having thereby become  
instruments to introduce them again, who could never otherwise  
have come to be re-admitted.

61. As soon as these men came into the House, they began Jan. 22.  
to question the authority and jurisdiction of the other House:  
'It was true that the Petition and Advice had admitted that  
there should be such a House; but that it should be a House of  
Peers, that they should be called "My Lords," there was no pro-  
vision; nor did it appear what jurisdiction it should have: that  
it would be a very ridiculous thing if they should suffer those

1657 who were created by themselves, and sat only by their vote, should be better men than they, and have a negative voice to control their masters.' When they had enough vilified them, they questioned the Protector's authority to send writs to call them thither: 'Who gave him that authority to make peers? it had been the proper business of that House to have provided for all this; which it is probable they would have done at this meeting, if he had not presumptuously taken that sovereign power upon him.'

62. Cromwell was exceedingly surprised and perplexed with this new spirit, and found that he had been shortsighted in not having provided at the same time for the filling his House of Commons when he erected his other of Peers: for he had taken away those out of that House who were the boldest speakers, and best able to oppose this torrent, to institute this other House, without supplying those other places by men who could as well undergo the work of the other. However, he made one  
Jan. 25. effort more, and convened both Houses before him, and very magisterially, and in a dialect he had never used before, he reprehended them for presuming to question his authority. The other House, he said, were lords, and they should be lords; and commanded them to enter upon such business as might be for the benefit, not the distraction, of the commonwealth, which he would with God's help prevent. And when he found this animadversion did not reform them, but that they continued in their presumption, and every day improved their reproaches and contempt of him, he went to his House of Lords upon the [fourth<sup>1</sup>] of February; and sending for the Commons, after he [had] used many sharp expressions of indignation, he told them, that it concerned his interest, as much as the peace and tranquillity of the nation, to dissolve that Parliament, and therefore he did put an end to their sitting. And so that cloud was for the present dissipated that threatened so great a storm.

63. The Parliament being dissolved, Cromwell found himself at ease to prosecute his designs. After the taking of Mardike, Reynolds, who was commander in chief of that body of the

<sup>1</sup> ['20th,' MS.]

English in the service of France, endeavouring to give his 1658 friends in England a visit, was, together with some other officers who accompanied him, cast away, and drowned at sea; upon which, before the dissolution of the Parliament, Lockhart<sup>2</sup>, who was his [the Protector's] ambassador in France, was designed to take that charge upon him; and all things which were to be transported from England for the prosecution of the business in Flanders the next spring, were executed with the more care and punctuality, that there might be no room left for the cardinal to imagine that he [the Protector] was in any degree perplexed with the contradiction and ill humour of the Parliament.

64. And as soon as he was rid of that, he thought it was necessary to give some instances at home how little he feared those men, who were thought to be so much his rivals in power, and in the opinion of the army, that he durst not disoblige them. And therefore, after some sharp expostulations with Lambert, who was as positive in his own humour, he sent to him for his commission; which he sullenly gave up, when there was a general imagination that he would have refused to have delivered it. So he was deprived of his regiment, his authority in the army, and of being major general in the north, in an instant, without the least appearance of contradiction or murmur; and the officers he [Cromwell] substituted in the several places found all the obedience that had been paid to the other; and Lambert retired to his garden, as unvisited and untaken notice of as if he had never been in authority; which gave great reputation to the Protector, that he was entire master of his army.

65. He had observed throughout the Parliament that the major generals were extremely odious to the people, as they had been formidable to him. For whilst his party were prosecuting to have his authority confirmed to him, and that he might have the title of king conferred upon him, Lambert was as solicitous

<sup>1</sup> [*Calend. Dom. S. P.*, 1657-8, p. 213.]

<sup>2</sup> ['Lockier,' MS. Clarendon's ways of spelling this name are so various, viz. Lockyer, Lockard, Lockyard, &c., that to avoid confusion the ordinary form, Lockhart, has been left in the text throughout.]

<sup>3</sup> [*Calend. Dom. S. P.*, 1657-8, p. 41.]

1658 to have the major generals confirmed by Parliament, and to have their dependence only upon it; which, with the authority they had of listing men in a readiness, would have made their power and their strength in a short time to be equal to the other's. Now that was over, he [Cromwell] was content to continue their names, that they might still be formidable in the countries, but abridged them of all that power which might be inconvenient to him.

66. He took likewise an occasion, from an accident that happened, to amuse the people with the apprehension of plots at home to facilitate an invasion from abroad; and sending for  
 March 12. the lord mayor and aldermen to attend him, he made them a large discourse of the danger they were in of being surprised; that there was a design to seize upon the Tower, and at the same time that there should be a general insurrection in the city of the cavaliers and discontented party; whilst they remained so secure, that they had put their militia into no posture to be ready to preserve themselves in such an attempt, but, on the contrary, that they were so negligent in their discipline, that the marquis of Ormonde had lain securely in the city full three weeks without being discovered, who was sent over by the King to countenance a general insurrection; whilst the King himself, he said, had 10,000 men ready at Bridges [Bruges], with two and twenty ships, with which he meant to invade some other more northern part of the kingdom. He wished them to lose no time in putting their militia into a good posture, and [to] make very strict searches to discover what strangers were harboured within the walls of the city, and to keep good watches every night. And he caused double guards to be set about the Tower; and that they might see that there was more than ordinary cause for all this, he caused very many persons of all conditions, most of them such as were reasonably to be suspected to be of the King's party, to be surprised in the night in their beds, (for those circumstances made all that was done to be the more notorious,) and, after some short examination, to be sent to the Tower and to other prisons; for there was at the same time the same severity used in the several

counties. For the better explanation and understanding whereof, 1656 it will be necessary now that we return to Flanders.

67. Within little more than two months after the King's coming to Bruges, the little treaty which had been signed by the arch-duke with the King was sent ratified from Madrid by the King of Spain, with many great compliments; which the King was willing should be believed to be of extraordinary importance. After wonderful excuses for the lowness of their affairs in all places, which disabled them to perform those services which are due from and to a great king, they let his majesty know that the Catholic King had assigned so many crowns as amounted to six thousand guilders to be paid every month towards a royal aid, and half so much more for the support of the duke of Gloster; and that though the sum was very small, it was as much as their necessities would bear; and the smallness should be recompensed by the punctuality of the payment; the first payment being to be made about the middle of the next month; without taking notice that the King had been already in that country near three months, during which time he had not received the least present or assistance towards his support.

68. They were willing that the King should raise four regiments of foot, which should march with their army, until the King should find the season ripe to make an invasion with that other supply which they were bound by the treaty to give. But for the raising those four regiments there was not one penny allowed, or any other encouragement than little quarters to bring their men to, and, after their muster, the common allowance of bread. However, the King was glad of the opportunity to employ and dispose of many officers and soldiers, who flocked to him from the time of his first coming into Flanders. He resolved to raise one regiment of guards, the command whereof he gave to the lord Wentworth, which was to do duty in the army as common men, till his majesty should be in such a posture that they might be brought about his person. The marquis of Ormonde had a regiment in order to be commanded by his lieutenant colonel, that the Irish might be tempted to

1656 come over. The earl of Rochester would have a regiment, that such officers and soldiers might resort to who were desirous to serve under his command: and because the Scots had many officers about the Court who pretended that they could draw many of their countrymen to them, the King gave the fourth regiment to the lord Newborough, a nobleman of that kingdom, of great courage, and who had served his father and himself with very signal fidelity. And those four regiments were raised with more expedition than can be imagiued upon so little encouragement.

69. As soon as the treaty was confirmed, in truth from the time that his majesty came into Flanders, and that he resolved to make as entire a conjunction with the Spaniard as they would permit, he gave notice to the king of France that he would no longer receive that pension, which during the time he had remained at Cullen had been reasonably well paid; but after his coming into Flanders he never would receive any part of it.

70. The Spanish army was at this time before Condé, a place garrisoned by the French between Valenciennes and Cambray, which was invested now by don Juan, who, finding that the greatest part of the garrison consisted of Irish, and that there was in it a regiment commanded by Musker[r]y, a nephew of the marquis of Ormonde, thought<sup>1</sup> this a good season to manifest the dependence the Irish had upon the King, and therefore writ to his majesty at Bruges, and desired that he would send the marquis to the camp; which his majesty could not refuse, and the marquis was very willing to go thither. And at the same time the Chancellor [of the Exchequer] was sent to Sept. 26<sup>2</sup>. Bruxells, under pretence of soliciting the payment of the three first months which were assigned to the King, to confer with don Alonso de Cardenas, upon all such particulars as might be necessary to adjust some design for the winter upon England; don Juan and the marquis [of] Caracena referring all things which related to England to him, and [being<sup>3</sup>] very glad that

<sup>1</sup> ['he thought,' MS.]

<sup>2</sup> [*Calend. Clar. S. P.*, iii. 176.]

<sup>3</sup> ['were,' MS.]



the Chancellor went to Bruxells at the same time that the 1656 marquis went to the camp, that so a correspondence between them two might ascertain any thing that should be desired on either side.

71. Condé was reduced to straits by the time the marquis <sup>Aug. 3,</sup> came thither, who was received with much more civility by don <sup>N.S.<sup>1</sup></sup> Juan, at least by the marquis of Caracena, than any man who related to the King, or indeed than the King himself. The thing they desired of him was, that when the garrison should be reduced, which was then capitulating, he would prevail with those of the Irish nation, when they marched out, to enter into the Spanish service, that is, as they called it, to serve their own King: for they talked of nothing but going over in the winter into England; especially they desired that his nephew Musker[r]y, who had the reputation of a stout and an excellent officer, as in truth he was, would come over with his regiment, which was much the best, whatever the other would do. After the capitulation was signed, the marquis easily found opportunity <sup>Aug. 18.</sup> to confer with his nephew, and the other officers of the several regiments. When he had informed them of the King's pleasure, and that the entering in[*to*] the service of the Spaniard was for the present necessary in order to the King's, the other regiments made no scruple of it, and engaged as soon as they marched out to go whither they should be directed.

72. Only Musker[r]y expressly refused that either himself or any of his men should leave their colours till, according to his articles, they should march into France. He said it was not consistent with his honour to do otherwise. But he declared that as soon as he should come into France, he would leave his regiment in their quarters, and would himself ride to the Court and demand his pass, which by his contract with the cardinal was to be given to him whenever his own King should demand his service, and his regiment should likewise be permitted to march with him<sup>2</sup>. It was urged to him, that it was now in his own power to dispose of himself, which he might lawfully do, but that when he was found in France he would no more have

<sup>1</sup> [*Calend. Clar. S. P.*, iii. 155.]

<sup>2</sup> [*ibid.*, 163.]

1656 it in his power. He said, he was bound to ask his dismissal, and the cardinal was bound to give it: and when he had done his part, he was very confident the cardinal would not break his word with him; but if he should, he would get nothing by it, for he knew his men would follow him whithersoever he went; and therefore desired his uncle to satisfy himself, and to assure the King and don Juan that he would within six weeks return; and if he might have quarters assigned him, his regiment should be there within few days after him. It was in vain to press him farther, and the marquis telling don John that he believed he would keep his word, he was contented to part kindly with him, and had much a better esteem of him than of the other officers who came to him and brought over their men without any ceremony.

73. Musker[r]y marched away with the rest of the garrison; and as soon as he was in France he rode to Paris, where the cardinal then was, who received him with extraordinary grace; but when he asked his dismissal, and urged his capitulation, the cardinal, by all imaginable caresses, and promises of a pension, endeavoured to divert him from the inclination; told him that this was only to serve the Spaniard, and not his own King, who had no employment for him: that if he would stay in their service till the King had need of him, he would take care to send him and his regiment in a better condition to him than they were now in. When he could neither by promises nor reproaches divert him from quitting their service, he gave him a pass only for himself, and expressly refused to dismiss the regiment<sup>1</sup>, averring that he was not bound to it, because there could be no pretence that they could serve the King, who had no use of them nor wherewithal to pay them.

74. He took what he could get, his own pass, and made haste to the place where his regiment was; and after he had given such directions as he thought necessary, he came away only with two or three servants to Bruxells, and desired don Juan to assign him convenient quarters for his regiment, which he very willingly did; and he no sooner gave notice to them

<sup>1</sup> [*Calend. Clar. S. P.*, iii. 190.]

whither they should come, but they behaved themselves so, that 1656 by sixes and sevens his whole regiment, officers and soldiers, to the number of very near 800, came to the place assigned them, and brought their arms with them; which the Spaniard was amazed at, and ever after very much valued him, and took as much care for the preservation of that regiment as of any that was in their service.

75. When the marquis proposed any thing that concerned the King during the time he was in the army, they still writ to don Alonso to confer with the Chancellor about it; who found him in all respects so untractable, and so absolutely governed by an Irish Jesuit<sup>1</sup>, who filled his head with the hopes of the Levellers, that, after he had received the money that was assigned to the King, he returned to Bruges, as the marquis did from the army when the business of Condé was over.

76. It was well enough known, at least generally believed, from the time that the secret confidence began between Cromwell and the cardinal, and long before Lockhart appeared there as ambassador, that the cardinal had not only promised that the King should receive no assistance from thence, but that nobody who related to his service, or against whom any exceptions should be taken, should be permitted to reside in France; and that as the King had already been driven thence, so, that when the time should be ripe the duke of York would be likewise necessitated to leave that kingdom. And now upon the King's coming into Flanders, and upon the coming over of the six thousand English for the service of France, and the publication of the treaty, they did not much desire to keep that article secret which provided against the King's residing in that kingdom, and for the exclusion of the duke of York, and many other persons, by name, who attended upon the King, and some who had charges in the army. And the cardinal and the Queen, with some seeming regret, communicated it to the duke, as a thing they could not refuse, and infinitely lamented, with many professions of kindness and everlasting respect; and all this in

<sup>1</sup> [Peter Talbot.]

1656 confidence, and that he might know it some time before it was to be executed by his departure.

77. Amongst those who by that secret article [were <sup>1</sup>] to leave the French service, the earl of Bristol was one; whose name was, (as was generally believed) put into the article by the cardinal rather than by Cromwell. For the earl, having received very great obligations from the cardinal, thought his interest greater in the Queen than in truth it was, (according to his natural custom of deceiving himself,) and so in the other's disgrace and retirement had shewed himself less inclined to his return than he ought to have done; which the cardinal never forgave, yet treated him with the same familiarity as before, (which the earl took for pure friendship,) until the time came for the publishing this treaty, when the earl was lieutenant general of the army in Italy. And then he sent for him, and bewailed the condition that France was in, which obliged them to receive commands from Cromwell which were very uneasy to them; then told him that he could stay no longer in their service, and that they must be compelled to dismiss the duke of York himself; but then made infinite professions of kindness, and that they would part with him as with a man that had done them great service. The earl, who could always much better bear ill accidents than prevent them, believed that all proceeded from the malice of Cromwell, and quickly had the image of a better fortune in his fancy than that he was to quit; and so, setting his heart upon the getting as good a supply of money from them as he could, and the cardinal desiring to part fairly with him, he received such a present as enabled him to remove with a handsome equipage in servants and horses. And Aug.<sup>2</sup> so he came directly for Bruges to the King, to whom he had made himself in some degree gracious before his majesty left Paris. But his business there was only to present his duty to his majesty; where after he had stayed two or three days, he made his journey to the army to offer his service to don Juan, without so much as desiring any recommendation from the King.

<sup>1</sup> ['was,' MS.]

<sup>2</sup> [Calend. Clar. S. P., iii. 155.]

78. There was nothing more known than that the Spaniard 1656 had all the imaginable prejudice and hatred against the earl, both for the little kindness he had shewed towards them in England whilst he was Secretary of State, of which don Alonso was a faithful remembrancer, and for the more than ordinary animosity he had expressed against them from the time that he had been in the French service; which angered them the more, 1612 because he had been born in Spain. He had then likewise Oct. rendered himself particularly odious to Flanders, where he was proclaimed and detested in all the rhythms and songs of the country, for the savage outrages he had committed by fire and plunder two years before, when he made a winter incursion with his troops into that country, and committed greater waste than ever the French themselves had done when the forces were commanded by them. Upon all which, his friends dissuaded him at Bruges from going to the Spanish army, where he would receive very cold treatment. But he smiled at the advertisements, and told them that all the time he was in France he was out of his sphere; and that his own genius always disposed him to Spain, where he was now resolved to make his fortune. And with this confidence he left Bruges, and went to the army when it had newly taken Condé, where he found his reception such, Aug. 18. both from don Juan and the marquis of Caracena, as he had reason to expect; which did not at all deject him.

79. He was present when don Juan eat, and when he used to discourse of all things at large, and most willingly of scholastical points, if his confessor or other learned person was present. The earl always interposed in those discourses, with an admirable acuteness, which, besides his exactness in the Spanish language, made his parts wondered at by every body; and don Juan began to be very much pleased in his company, and the more because he was much given to the speculations in astrology, in which he found the earl so much more conversant than any man he had met with, that within a week after he had first seen him he desired the earl to compute his nativity. In a word, his presence grew to be very acceptable to him; which when the marquis Caracena discerned, he likewise treated him with more respect;

1656 in which he found likewise his account: for the earl having been lieutenant general of the French army under prince Thomas, in conjunction with the duke of Modena, against Milan<sup>1</sup>, the very year before, when the marquis Caracena was governor there, he could both discourse the several transactions there with the marquis, and knew how to take fit occasions both in his presence and absence to magnify his conduct in signal actions, which the marquis was very glad to see and hear that he did very frequently. And don Alonso himself, being sent for to the army to consult some affair, though he had all imaginable detestation of the earl, and had prepared as much prejudice towards him in don Juan and the marquis, when he found him in so much favour with both, he treated him likewise with more regard, and was well content to hear himself commended by him for understanding the affairs of England; which he desired don Juan and the marquis should believe him to do. So that before he had been a month in Flanders, he had perfectly reconciled himself to the Court and to the army, and suppressed and diverted all the prejudice that had been against him. And don Juan invited him to spend the winter with him at Bruxells.

80. There was another accident likewise fell out at this time, as if it had been produced by his own stars. The French had yet a garrison at a place called St. Gillin; which, being within four leagues of Bruxells, infested the whole country very much, and even put them into mutiny against the Court, because they would think of any other expedition before they had reduced that garrison; which was so strong that they had once attempted it and were obliged to desist. Half the garrison was Irish, under the command of Schombergh, an officer of the first rank. Some of the officers were nearly allied to Sir George Lane, who was secretary to the marquis of Ormonde, and had written to him to know whether the giving up that place would be a service to the King; and if it would, they would undertake it. The marquis sent his secretary to inform the earl of Bristol of it, who looked upon it as an opportunity sent from heaven to raise his fortune with the Spaniard. And he com-

<sup>1</sup> ['Millayne,' MS.]

municated it to don Juan as a matter in his own disposal, and <sup>1656</sup> to be conducted by persons who had a dependence upon him, but yet who intended it only as a service to the King. And so now he became intrusted between the King and don Juan; which he had from the beginning contrived to be; don Juan being very glad to find he had so much interest in the King, and the King well pleased that he had such credit with don Juan, of whose assistance in the next winter he thought he should have so much use; for all attempts upon England must be in the winter. In a word, this affair of St. Gillin was so acceptable to the Spaniards, their *campania* being ended without any other considerable action than the taking of Condé, that they foresaw a very sad year would succeed if they should enter into the field, where they were sure the French would be early, and leave St. Gillin behind them; and they should run more hazard if they began with the siege of that place; and therefore they authorized the earl to promise great rewards, in money and pensions, to those officers and soldiers who would contribute to the reduction of it. The matter was so well carried, that don Juan assembling his army together a little before Christmas, in a very great frost, and coming before the place, though Schombergh discovered the conspiracy and apprehended two or three of the officers, the soldiers which were upon the guard in some out-forts declaring themselves at the same time, and receiving the Spaniards, he was compelled to make conditions, <sup>1657</sup> and to give up the place, that he might have liberty to march <sup>March 23,</sup> away with the rest. <sup>N.S.</sup>

81. This service was of infinite importance to the Spaniard, and of no less detriment to the French, and consequently gave great reputation to the earl, who then came to the King at Bruges; and said all that he thought fit of don Juan to the King, and, amongst the rest, that don Juan advised his majesty to send some discreet person to Madrid, to solicit his affairs there; but that he did not think the person he had designed to send thither (who was De Vic, that had been long resident in Bruxells) would be acceptable there. This was only to introduce another person, who was dear to him, sir H. Bennett,

1657 who had been formerly his servant when he was Secretary of State, and bred by him, and was now secretary to the duke of York; but, upon the factions which were in that family, was so uneasy in his place that he desired to be in any other post, and was about this time come to the King, as a forerunner, to inform him of the duke of York's purpose to be speedily with him, being within few days to take his leave of the Court of France. Bennett had been long a person very acceptable to the King; and therefore his majesty readily consented that he should go to Madrid instead of De Vic: and so he returned with the earl to Bruxells, that he might be presented and made known to don Juan; from whom the earl doubted not to procure particular recommendation.

Sept. 4. 82. The time was now come that the duke of York found it necessary to leave Paris, and so came to the King to Bruges; where there were then all the visible hopes of the Crown of England together, and all the royal issue of the last King, the princess Henrietta only excepted; for, besides the King and his two brothers, the dukes of York and Gloster, the Princess Royal of Aurange made that her way from Paris into the Low Countries, and stayed there some days with her brother.

1658 Jan. 13. N.S. 83. And then it was that the King made the Chancellor of the Exchequer Lord High Chancellor of England, sir Edward Harbert, who was the last Keeper of the Great Seal, being lately dead at Paris<sup>1</sup>. And so the King put the Seal, which he had till then kept himself, into the hands of the Chancellor, which he received very unwillingly: but the King first put the marquis of Ormonde, with whom [his majesty<sup>2</sup>] knew he had an entire friendship, to dispose him to receive it; which when he could not do, (he giving him many reasons, besides his own unfitness, why there was no need of such an officer, or indeed any use of the Great Seal, till the King should come into England, and that his majesty found some case in being without such an officer, that he was not troubled with those

<sup>1</sup> [Buried at Paris in the Protestant burying-place in the suburbs, Jan. 3, N.S., 1658. *Calend. Dom. S. P.*, 1657-8, p. 232.]

<sup>2</sup> ['he,' MS.]



suits which he would be if the Seal were in the hands of a **1656** proper officer to be used, since every body would be then importuning the King for the grant of offices, honours, and lands, which would give him great vexation to refuse, and he would undergo great mischief by granting; the which when the marquis told the King,) his majesty himself went to the Chancellor's lodging, and took notice of what the marquis had told him, and said he would deal truly and freely with him; that the principal reason which he had alleged against receiving the Seal was the greatest reason that disposed him to confer it upon him. And thereupon he pulled letters out of his pocket, which he received lately from Paris, for the grant of several reversions in England of offices and of lands; one whereof was of the Queen's house and lands at Oatlands, to the same man who had purchased it from the State, who would willingly have paid a good sum of money to that person who was to procure such a confirmation of his title; the draught whereof was prepared at London, upon confidence that it would have the Seal presently put to it, which being in the King's own hand, none need, as they thought, to be privy to the secret. His majesty told him also of many other importunities with which he was every day disquieted, and that he saw no other remedy to give him ease than to put the Seal out of his own keeping into such hands as would not be importuned, and would help him to deny. And thereupon he conjured the Chancellor to receive that trust, with many gracious promises of his favour and protection. Whereupon, the earl of Bristol and Secretary Nicholas using likewise their persuasions, he submitted to the King's pleasure, who delivered the Seal to him in Council in the Jan. 13. Christmas time in the year 1657[-8]; which particular is only fit to be mentioned because many great affairs and some alterations accompanied, though not attended upon, it<sup>1</sup>.

84. After so long and so dark a retirement in Cullen, the King's very coming into Flanders raised the spirits of his

<sup>1</sup> [The words 'mentioned — it' are substituted for the following:— 'inserted in these memorials which concern his own life, and will easily be left out of the general history of that time.']

1668 friends in England. And when they were assured that there was a treaty signed between his majesty and the King of Spain, they made no doubt of an army sufficient to begin the business, and then that the general affections of the kingdom would finish it. And the King, who had hitherto restrained his friends from exposing themselves to unnecessary dangers, thought it now fit to encourage them to put themselves into such a posture that they might be ready to join with him when he appeared, which he hoped the Spaniard would enable him to do in the depth of winter. Several messengers were sent from thence to assure him that there was so universal a readiness there, that they could hardly be persuaded to stay to expect the King, but they would begin the work themselves: yet they complained much of the backwardness of those who were most trusted by the King, who again as much inveighed against the rashness and precipitation of the other, who would ruin themselves and all people who should join with them.

85. The King was much perplexed to discover this distemper amongst those who, being united, would find the work very hard; and though he preferred in his own opinion the judgment of those who were most wary, yet it concerned him to prevent the other from appearing in an unseasonable engagement; and therefore [he] sent to them, and conjured them to attempt nothing till he sent a person to them who, if they were ready, should have authority enough to persuade the rest to a conjunction with them, and should himself be fit to conduct them in any reasonable enterprise.

86. The marquis of Ormonde had frankly offered to the King that he would privately go into England, and confer with those who were most forward; and if he found that their counsels were discreetly laid, he would encourage them, and unite all the rest to them; and if matters were not ripe, he would compose them to be quiet; and there was no man in England affected to the King's service who would not be readily advised by him. The Chancellor would by no means consent to his journey, as an unreasonable adventure upon an improbable design, seeing no ground to imagine they could do any thing. But the

marquis exceedingly undervalued any imagination of danger; 1658 and it cannot be conceived with what security all men ventured every day, in the height of Cromwell's jealousy and vigilancy, to go into England, and to stay a month in London, and return again. The King consenting to the journey, the chief care was, that the marquis his absence from Bruges might not create jealousy and discourse whither he should be gone. Therefore it was for some time discoursed that the marquis of Ormonde was to go into Germany to the duke of Newburgh, (who was known to have affection for the King,) and that he should from thence bring with him two regiments for the service of his majesty.

87. These discourses being generally made and believed, the marquis took his leave publicly of the King, with his servants fit for such a journey, which continued the journey toward Germany; so that the letters from Cullen to all places gave an account of the marquis of Ormonde's being there; whilst he himself, with one only servant, and O'Neale, (who had inflamed him very much to that undertaking,) took the way of Holland, and hired a bark at S[c]hivilin, in which they embarked, and were safely landed in Essex; from whence without any trouble Feb. 2, they got to London, whilst the Parliament was still sitting. N.S.<sup>1</sup> When he was there, he found opportunity to speak with most of those of any condition upon whose advice and interest the King most depended, and against whose positive advice he would not suffer any thing to be attempted. That which troubled him most was to discover a jealousy, or rather an animosity, between many of those who equally wished the King's restoration, to that degree that they would neither confer nor correspond with each other. They who had the most experience and were of the greatest reputation, with those who would appear when any thing was to be done but would not expose themselves in meetings or correspondencies before, complained very much of the rashness of the other, who believed

<sup>1</sup> [Extract from a letter from Ormonde of Feb. 5, among the Clarendon MSS. Carte and others say that Ormonde went to England at the beginning of Jan.]

1658 any officer of the army who pretended discontent, and would presently desire them to communicate with such persons; and because they refused, (as they had reason,) the other laded them with reproaches, as having lost all affection and zeal for his majesty's service. They protested that they could not discover or believe that there was any such preparation in readiness, that it could be counsellable to appear in arms against a government so fortified and established as the Protector's seemed to be: that it was probable the Parliament might not comply with Cromwell's desires, and then there was such a discovery of malice between several persons of potent conditions that many advantages might be offered to the King's party; and if they would have the patience to attend the event, and till these factions should be engaged in blood, they might be sure to advance the King's interest in disposing of themselves; but if they should engage before such a time in any insurrection, or by seizing some insignificant town, all dissenting parties would be reconciled till they should all be ruined, though they would afterwards return to their old animosities. In a word, though they appeared very wary, they declared such a resignation to the King's pleasure, that, if the marquis were satisfied upon his conference with other men that the time was ripe for their appearance in arms, they would presently receive his orders, and do what he should require, how unsuccessfully soever.

88. On the other side, there were many younger men, who, having had no part in the former war, were impatient to shew their courage and affection to the King. And those men being acquainted with many of the old officers of the late King's army, who saw many of their old soldiers now in Cromwell's army, and found them to talk after their old manner, concluded they would all appear for the King as soon as they should see his colours flying. And these men, talking together, would often discourse how easy a thing it would be with two troops of horse to beat up such a quarter, or seize such a guard; and then these men consulted how to get those troops, and found men who had listed so many, which would be ready upon call.

There were always in these meetings some citizens, who under- 1658  
took for the affection of the city, and some of these made little  
doubt of seizing upon the Tower. And truly the putting many  
gentlemen's sons as apprentices into the city, since the be-  
ginning of the troubles, had made a great alteration, at least  
in the general talk of that people. It was upon this kind of  
materials that many honest men had built their hopes, and  
upon some assurances they had from officers of the army, who  
were as little worthy to be depended upon.

89. There was another particular which had principally con-  
tributed to this distemper, which, passing from hand to hand,  
had made men impatient to be in arms; which was, an opinion  
that the King was even ready to land with such an army that  
would be able to do his business. And this had been dispersed  
by some who had been sent expresses into Flanders, who,  
though they always lay concealed during the time they waited  
for their despatches from the King, yet found some friends and  
acquaintance about the Court, or in their way, who thought  
they did good service in making his majesty to be thought to  
be in a good condition, and so filled those people with such  
discourses as would make them most welcome when they  
returned.

90. When the marquis had taken a full survey of all that  
was to be depended upon, he conjured the warmer people to be  
quiet, and not to think of any action till they should be  
infallibly sure of the King's being landed, and confirmed the  
other in their wariness; and being informed that Cromwell  
knew of his being there, and made many searches for him, he  
thought it time to return. And so about the time that the  
Parliament was dissolved, he was conducted by Dr. Quarterman,  
who was the King's physician, through Sussex, and there em-  
barked, and safely transported into France; from whence he  
came well into Flanders. Feb. 28,  
N.S.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> [Original letter from Ormonde to Hyde among the Clarendon MSS.,  
dated March 1, in which he says that he arrived in France the previous  
night, after a dangerous passage. Carte places his return at the beginning  
of February.]

1658 91. This gave the occasion to Cromwell to make that dis-  
 § 66. course before mentioned to the mayor and aldermen of London, of the lord marquis of Ormonde having been three weeks in the city; of which he had received perfect intelligence from a hand that was not then in the least degree suspected, nor was then wicked enough to put him into his hand<sup>1</sup>, which he could as easily have done; of which more shall be said hereafter. But when he [the Protector] was well assured that the marquis was out of his reach, which vexed and grieved him exceedingly, he caused all persons, who he knew had, or he thought might have, spoken with him, to be apprehended. All prisons, as well in the country as the city, were filled with those who had been of the King's party, or he believed would be; and he thought this a necessary season to terrify his enemies of all conditions within the kingdom with spectacles which might mortify them.

92. In the preparations which had been made towards an insurrection, many persons in the country as well as in the city had received commissions for regiments of horse and foot; and amongst the rest one Mr. Stapely, a gentleman of a good extraction, and a good fortune in the county of Sussex, whose mother had been sister to the earl of Norwich, but his father had been in the number of the blackest offenders, and one of the King's judges. This son of his, and who possessed his estate, had taken great pains to mingle in the company of those who were known to have affection for the King, and upon all occasions made professions of a desire, for the expiation of his father's crime, to venture his life and his fortune for his majesty's restoration; and not only his fortune but his interest was considerable in that maritime county: so that many thought fit to cherish those inclinations in him, and to encourage him to hope that his fidelity might deserve to enjoy that estate which the treason of his father had forfeited.

93. There was a young gentleman, John Mordant, the younger son, and brother, of the earl of Peterborough, who, having been too young to be engaged in the late war, during which time he had his education in France and Italy, was now

<sup>1</sup> [Sir R. Willis.]

of age, of parts, and great vigour of mind, and newly married to 1658  
 a young beautiful lady<sup>1</sup>, of a very loyal spirit, and notable vivacity  
 of wit and humour, who concurred with him in all honourable  
 dedication of himself. He resolved to embrace all opportunities  
 to serve the King, and to dispose those upon whom he had  
 influence to take the same resolution; and being allied to the  
 marquis of Ormonde, he did by him inform his majesty of his  
 resolution, and his readiness to receive any commands from him.  
 This was many months before the marquis's journey into England.

94. Mr. Stapely was well known to Mr. Mordant, who had  
 represented his affections to the King, and how useful he might  
 be towards the possessing some place in Sussex, and his under-  
 taking that he would do so, by a letter to the King under his,  
 Mr. Stapely's, own hand: and thereupon Mr. Mordant desired  
 that his majesty would send a commission for the command of  
 a regiment of horse to him, which he would provide, and cause  
 to be ready against the season he should be required to appear:  
 which commission, with many others, [was<sup>2</sup>] sent to Mr. Mor-  
 dant; and he delivered it to Mr. Stapely, who was exceedingly  
 pleased with it, renewed all his vows and protestations, and it  
 is still believed he really meant all that he pretended. But he  
 had trusted some servant, who betrayed him; and being there-  
 upon sent for by Cromwell, his father's fast old friend, was by  
 him so cajoled, by promises and by threats, that he was not able  
 to withstand him; but believing that he knew all which he  
 asked him already, he concealed nothing that he knew himself,  
 informed him of those of the same country who were to join April 10.  
 with him, of whom some had likewise received commissions as  
 well as himself, and, in the end, he confessed that he had  
 received his commission from Mr. Mordant's own hand<sup>4</sup>. Before  
 this discovery Mr. Mordant had been sent for by Cromwell, and  
 very strictly examined whether he had seen the marquis of  
 Ormonde during his late being in London; which, though he  
 had done often, he very confidently and positively denied, being

<sup>1</sup> [Elizabeth Carey, grand-daughter of the first earl of Monmouth.]

<sup>2</sup> ['were,' MS.] <sup>3</sup> [Calend. Clar. S. P., iii. 388-9.]

<sup>4</sup> [From Dr. Hewitt's hand; Thurloe's S. P., vii. 66, cf. 86, 89.]

1658 well assured that it could not be proved, and that the marquis himself was in safety; upon which confident denial he was dismissed to return to his own lodging. But upon this discovery by Stapely he was within two days after sent for again, and committed close prisoner to the Tower; and new men were every day sent for, and committed in all quarters of the kingdoms; and within some time after, a high court of justice was erected for the trial of the prisoners, the crimes of none being yet discovered; which put all men who knew how liable they themselves were under a terrible consternation.

95. Before this high court of justice, of which John Lysle, who gave his vote in the King's blood, and continued an entire confident and instrument of Cromwell, was president, there  
 June 1. were first brought to be tried, John Mordant, sir Harry Slingsby, a gentleman of a very ancient family and of a very ample fortune in Yorkshire, and Dr. Hewett, an eminent preacher in London, and very orthodox, to whose church those of the King's party frequently resorted, and few but those. These three were totally unacquainted with each other; and though every one of them knew enough against themselves, they could not accuse one another, if they had been inclined to it. The first and the last could not doubt but that there would be evidence enough against them; and they had found means to correspond so much together, as to resolve that neither of them would plead to the impeachment, but demur to the jurisdiction of the court, and desire to have counsel assigned to argue against it in point of law; they being both sufficiently instructed how to urge law enough to make it evident that neither of them could be legally tried by that court, and that it was erected contrary to law. The first that was brought to trial, [Mordant], after his impeachment was read, by which he found that the delivery of the commission to Stapely would be principally insisted on, and he knew might too easily be proved, according to former resolution, refused<sup>1</sup> to plead *not guilty*, but insisted that by the law of the land he ought not to be tried by that court, for which he gave more reasons than they could

<sup>1</sup> ['he refused,' MS.]



answer, and then desired that his counsel might have liberty to 1658  
argue the point in law, which of course used to be granted in  
all legal courts. But he was told that he was better to bethink  
himself; that they were well satisfied in the legality of their  
court, and would not suffer the jurisdiction of it to be disputed;  
that the law of England had provided a sentence for such  
obstinate persons as refused to be tried by it, which was, that  
they should be condemned as mute; which would be his case, if he  
continued refractory: and so he was carried back to the Tower, to  
consider better what he would do the next day. Sir H. Slingsby  
was called [next,] and knowing nothing of or for the other  
resolution, he pleaded *not guilty*; and so was sent to the prison  
to be tried in his turn. Dr. Hewett, whose greatest crime was  
collecting and sending money to the King, besides having given  
money to some officers, refused to plead, as Mr. Mordant had  
done, and demanded that his counsel might be heard, and  
received the same answer and admonition that he had done, and  
was remitted again to the prison.

96. Those courts seldom consisted of fewer than twenty  
judges; amongst whom there were usually some who, out of  
generosity or for money, were inclined to do good offices to the  
prisoners who came before them, at least to communicate such  
secrets to them as might inform them what would be most  
pressed against them. And Mr. Mordant's lady had, by giving  
any money, procured some in the number to be very propitious  
to her husband; and in the evening of that day when the  
trial had been begun, she received two very important ad-  
vices from them. The one, that she should prevail with her  
husband to plead; and then his friends might do him some ser-  
vice; whereas if he insisted upon the point of law, he would  
infallibly suffer, and no man durst speak for him. The other,  
that they had not sufficient proof to condemn him upon any  
particular with which he stood charged, but only for the  
delivery of the commission to Stapely; and that there was to  
that point, besides Stapely, one colonel Malory, whose testimony  
was more valued than the other's. This Malory had the reputa-  
tion of an honest man, and loved Mr. Mordant very well, and

1658 was one of those who were principally trusted in the business of Sussex, and had been apprehended about the same [time] that Stapely was; and finding upon his first examination<sup>1</sup>, by the questions which were administered to him by Thurlow, that all was discovered, he unwarily confessed all that he knew concerning Mr. Mordant, having been himself the person principally employed between him and Stapely; and was brought in custody from the Tower to give in evidence against Mr. Mordant, with an intention, after he had done that good service, to proceed as strictly against him, though they promised him indemnity.

97. The lady, having clear information of this whole matter, could not find any way that night to advertise her husband that he should no more insist upon the want of jurisdiction in the court; for there was no possibility of speaking with or sending to him during the time of his trial. Therefore she laid aside the thoughts of that business till the morning, and spent the night in contriving how Malory might be prevailed with to make an escape; and was so dexterous and so fortunate, that a friend of his disposed the money she gave him so effectually, that the next morning, when he [Malory] was brought to the hall to be ready to give in his evidence, he found some way to withdraw from his guard, and when he was in the crowd he easily got abroad<sup>2</sup>.

98. She had as good fortune likewise to have a little note she writ concerning the other advice put into [her husband's<sup>3</sup>] hand as he passed to the bar; and having perused it, he departed from his former resolution; and after he had modestly urged the same again which he had done the day before, to spend time, and the president in more choler answering as he had done, he submitted to his trial, and behaved himself with courage, and easily evaded the greatest part of the evidence they had against him; nor could they find proof, what presumption soever there might be, that he

<sup>1</sup> [on his second examination before major gen. Goffe and Henry Scobell, 21 April. At his first examination on 14 April, he informed chiefly against Dr. Hewott, and did not mention Mordaunt. Thurlow's *S. P.*, vii. 74, 88.]

<sup>2</sup> [Thurlow's *S. P.*, vii. 220.]

<sup>3</sup> ['his,' MS.]

had spoken with the marquis of Ormonde; and he evaded many 1658  
 other particulars of his correspondence with the King with  
 notable address. That of the commission to Stapely was re-  
 served to the last; and the commission being produced, and  
 both the hand and the signet generally known, by reason of so  
 many of the like which had fallen into their hands at Worcester  
 and by many other accidents, Mr. Stapely was called to declare  
 where he had it; and seeing himself confronted by Mr. Mordant,  
 though he did, after many questions and reproaches from the  
 counsel that prosecuted, at last confess that he did receive it  
 from Mr. Mordant, he did it in so disorderly and confused a  
 manner, that it appeared that he had much rather not have said  
 it, and answered the questions Mr. Mordant asked him with  
 that confusion that his evidence could not be satisfactory to  
 any impartial judges. And then Malory was called for, but by  
 no search could be found; so that they could not by their own  
 rules defer their sentence. And it so fell out that the court  
 was divided, one half for the condemning him, and the other  
 half that he was not guilty; whereupon the determination de-  
 pended upon the single vote of the president, who made some  
 excuses for the justice he was about to do, and acknowledged  
 many obligations to the mother of the prisoner, and in contem-  
 plation thereof pronounced him innocent for aught appeared to June 2.  
 the court. There was not in Cromwell's time the like instance,  
 and scarce any other man escaped the judgment that was tried  
 before any high court of justice. And he was so offended at it,  
 that, contrary to all the forms used by themselves, he caused  
 him to be kept many months after in the Tower, whereas he  
 ought to have been released the same moment, and would  
 willingly have brought him to be tried again. For within a day June 4<sup>1</sup>.  
 or two after, Malory was retaken<sup>2</sup>, and they had likewise cor-  
 rupted a Frenchman, who had long served him, and was the  
 only servant whom he had made choice of (since he was to be

<sup>1</sup> [*Mercur. Polit.*, No. 419, p. 578; committed to the Tower June 5, Thurloe's *S. P.*, vii. 622.]

<sup>2</sup> [He was condemned to be executed on June 18, but was reprieved on June 17; *Mercur. Polit.*, No. 421, p. 621. He was still in the Tower in close confinement on Feb. 24, 1653; Thurloe's *S. P.*, vii. 622.]

1658 allowed but one) to attend him in the prison, and who had discovered enough to have taken away his life several ways. But the scandal was so great, and the case unheard of, that any man discharged upon a public trial should be again proceeded against upon new evidence for the same offence, that Cromwell himself thought not fit to undergo the reproach of it, but was in the end prevailed with to set him at liberty. And he was very few days at liberty before he embarked himself as frankly in the King's service as before, and with better success.

99. Sir Harry Slingsby and poor Dr. Hewett had worse fortune; and their blood was the more thirsted after for the other's indemnity; and the court was too severely reprehended, to commit the same fault again. The former had lain two years in prison in Hull, and was brought now up to the Tower, for fear they might not discover enough of any new plot to make so many formidable examples as the present conjuncture required. They had against him evidence enough, (besides his incorrigible fidelity to the Crown from the first assaulting it,) that he had contrived and contracted with some officers of Hull, about the time that the earl of Rochester had been in Yorkshire, two years before, for the delivery of one of the block-houses to him for the King's service<sup>1</sup>; nor did he care to defend himself against the accusation, but rather acknowledged and justified his affection, and owned his loyalty to the King, with very little compliment or ceremony to the present power. The other, Dr. Hewett, receiving no information of Mr. Mordant's declining the way formerly resolved upon, (which was not possible to convey to him in that instant, nobody being suffered to speak with him,) and being brought to the bar as soon as the other was removed from it, he persisted in the same resolution, and spake only against the illegality of the court; which upon better information, and before the judgment was pronounced against him, he desired to retract, and would have put himself upon his trial; but they then refused to admit him; and so sentence

June 2. of death was pronounced against them both, which they both  
June 8. underwent with great Christian courage.

<sup>1</sup> [in Feb.-Apr. of the same year, 1658. Thurloe's *S. P.*, vii. 121-3.]

100. Sir H. Slingsby, as is said before, was in the first rank 1658 of the gentlemen of Yorkshire, and was returned to serve as a member in the Parliament that continued so many years, where he sat till the troubles began; and having no relation to or dependence upon the Court, he was swayed only by his conscience to detest their violent and undutiful behaviour. He was a gentleman of a good understanding, but of a very melancholic nature, and of very few words; and when he could stay no longer with a good conscience in their counsels, in which he never concurred, he went into his country, and joined with the first who took up arms for the King. And when the war was ended, he remained still in his own house, prepared and disposed to run the fortune of the Crown in any other attempt: and having a good fortune and a general reputation, had a greater influence upon the people than they who talked more and louder, and was known to be irreconcilable<sup>1</sup> to the new government; and therefore was cut off, notwithstanding very great intercession to preserve him; for he was uncle to the lord Falconbridge, who engaged his wife and all his new allies to intercede for him, without effect. And when he was brought to die, he spent very little time in discourse, but told them he was to die for being an honest man, of which he was very glad.

101. Dr. Hewett was born a gentleman, and bred a scholar, and was a divine before the beginning of the troubles. He lived in Oxford and in the army till the end of the war, and continued afterwards to preach with great applause in a little church in London<sup>2</sup>, where by the affection of the parish he was admitted, since he was enough known to lie notoriously under the brand of malignity. When the lord Falconbridge married Cromwell's<sup>1657</sup> daughter (who had used secretly to frequent his church) after Nov. 18. the ceremony of the time, he was made choice of to marry them according to the order of the Church; which engaged both that lord and lady to use their utmost credit with the Protector to preserve his life; but he was inexorable, and desirous that the churchmen, upon whom he looked as his mortal enemies,

<sup>1</sup> ['irreconcilable,' MS.]

<sup>2</sup> [St. Gregory's.]

1658 should see what they were to trust to, if they stood in need of his mercy.

102. It was then believed that if he had pleaded he might have been quitted, since in truth he never had been with the King at Cullen or Bruges, with which he was charged in his impeachment. And they had blood enough in their power to pour out; for besides the two before mentioned, to whom they granted the favour to be beheaded, there were three others, colonel Ashton, Stacy, and Bettely, who were condemned by the same court, who were treated with more severity, and were hanged, drawn, and quartered, with the utmost rigour, in several great streets in the city<sup>1</sup>, to make the deeper impression upon the people, the two last being citizens. But all men appeared so nauseated with blood, and so tired with those abominable spectacles, that Cromwell thought it best to pardon the rest who were condemned, or rather to [reprieve<sup>2</sup>] them; amongst whom Malory was one, who was not at liberty till the King's return, and was more troubled for the weakness he had been guilty of than they were against whom he had trespassed.

103. Though the King and all who were faithful to him were exceedingly afflicted with this bloody proceeding, yet Cromwell did not seem to be the more confirmed in his tyranny. It is true the King's party was the more dispirited, but he [Cromwell] found another kind of enemy much more dangerous than that, and that knew better how to deal with him in his own way. They who were raised by him, and who had raised him, even the whole body of sectaries, Anabaptists, Independents, Quakers, declared an implacable hatred against him; and whilst they contrived how to raise a power to contend with him, they likewise entered into several conspiracies to assassinate him, which he exceedingly apprehended. They sent an address to the King by one of their party, a young gentleman of an honourable extraction and great parts<sup>3</sup>, by whom they made many extravagant propositions, and seemed to depend very much upon the

1656  
July.

<sup>1</sup> [Ashton in Tower Street on July 2, Betley in Cheapside the same day, and Stacy in Cornhill on July 4.]

<sup>2</sup> ['reproove,' MS.]

<sup>3</sup> [William Howard.]

death of Cromwell, and thereupon to compute their own power 1656 to serve the King; who gave such an answer only to them as might dispose them to hope for his favour if he received service July 14. from them, and to believe that he did not intend to persecute or trouble any men for their opinions if their actions were peaceable; which they pretended to affect.

104<sup>1</sup>. Since the spirit, humour, and language of that people, and in truth of that time, cannot be better described and represented than by that petition and address, which was never published, [and<sup>2</sup>] of which there remains no other copy in any hand than that original which was presented to the King, (it being too dangerous a thing for any man who remained in England to have any such transcript in his custody,) it will not be amiss in this place to insert that petition and address in the very words in which it was presented to his majesty, with the letter that accompanied it from that gentleman who is mentioned before, who was an Anabaptist of special trust amongst them, and who came not with the petition, but expected the King's pleasure upon the reception of it; it being sent by an officer who had served the King in an eminent command, and was now gracious amongst them without swerving in the least degree from his former principles and integrity: for that people always pretended a just esteem and value of all men who had faithfully adhered to the King, and lived soberly and virtuously. The address was in these words<sup>3</sup>:

105. *'To his most excellent majesty, Charles the Second, king of Great Britain, France, and Ireland, and the dominions thereunto belonging.*

*'The humble address of the subscribers, in the behalf of themselves, and many thousands more, your majesty's most humble and faithful subjects.*

*'May it please your majesty,*

106. *'When we sit down and recount the wonderful and unheard of dispensations of God amongst us, when we call to our remembrances the*

<sup>1</sup> [§ 104 is from the *Hist.*, p. 31.]

<sup>2</sup> ['nor,' MS.]

<sup>3</sup> [The address is not given in the MS. of the *Hist.*, but is here taken from a copy preserved amongst Clarendon's MSS., which is described in the *Calendar*, vol. iii. p. 145. There is a separate slip, with a copy, as it seems, of the full heading, which after the word 'faithful' proceeds thus—'though despised (because sometimes deluded) subjects, characterized by the name of Sectarists.']

1056 tragical actions and transactions of these late times, when we seriously consider the dark and mysterious effects of Providence, the unexpected disappointments of counsels, the strange and strong convulsions of State, the various and violent motions and commotions of the people, the many changings, turnings, and overturnings of governors and governments, which in the revolutions of a few years have been produced in this land of miracles, we cannot but be even swallowed up in astonishment, and are constrained to command an (unwilling) silence upon our (sometimes mutinous and over-inquiring) hearts, resolving all into the good-will and pleasure of that all-disposing One, whose wisdom is unsearchable, and whose ways are past finding out.

107. 'But although it is (and we hope ever will be) far from us, either peevishly or presumptuously to kick against the irresistible decrees of Heaven, and vainly to attempt by any faint and infirm designs of ours to give an interruption to that overruling divine hand, which steers, guides, governs and determines the affairs of the whole world, yet we cannot but judge it a duty highly incumbent upon us, to endeavour, as much as in us lies, to repair the breaches of our dear country. And since it is our lot (we may say our unhappiness) to be embarked in a shipwrecked commonwealth, (which like a poor weatherbeaten pinnace has for so long a time been tossed upon the waves and billows of faction, split upon the rocks of violence, and is now almost quite devoured in the quicksands of ambition,) what can we do more worthy of Englishmen, as we are by nation, or of Christians, as we are by profession, than every one of us to put our hand to an oar, and try if it be the will of our God that such weak instruments as we may be in any measure helpful to bring it at last into the safe and quiet harbour of justice and righteousness?

108. 'To this undertaking (though too great for us) we are apt to think ourselves so much the more strongly engaged by how much the more we are sensible, that as our sins have been the greatest causes, so our many follies and imprudences have not been the least means, of giving both birth and growth to those many miseries and calamities which we, together with three once most flourishing kingdoms, do at this day sadly groan under.

109. 'It is not (the Lord knows), it is not pleasing unto us, nor can we believe it will be grateful to your majesty, that we should recur to the beginnings, rise, and root of the late unhappy differences betwixt your royal father and the Parliament. In such a discourse as this, we may seem, perhaps, rather to go about to make the wounds bleed afresh than to endeavour the curing of them: yet, forasmuch as we do profess that we come not with corrosives but with balsams, and that our desire is not to hurt but heal, not to pour vinegar but oil into the wounds, we hope your majesty will give us leave to open them gently, that we may apply remedies the more aptly, and discover our own past errors the more clearly.

110. 'In what posture the affairs of these nations stood, before the noise of drums and trumpets disturbed that sweet harmony that was amongst us, is not unknown to your majesty. That we were blest with a long peace, and (together with it) with riches, wealth, plenty, and abundance of all things, the lovely companions and beautiful products of peace, must ever be acknowledged with thankfulness to God the author of it, and with a



grateful veneration of the memory of those princes, your father and grand- 1653  
father, by the propitious influence of whose care and wisdom we thus  
flourished. But as it is observed in natural bodies, idleness and fulness of  
diet do for the most part lay the foundation of those maladies, and secretly  
nourish those diseases, which can hardly be expelled by the assistance of  
the most skilful physician, and seldom without the use of the most loath-  
some medicines, nay, sometimes not without the hazardous trial of the  
most dangerous experiments; so did we find it, by sad experience, to be in  
this great body politic. It cannot be denied but the whole commonwealth  
was faint, the whole nation sick, the whole body out of order, every mem-  
ber thereof feeble, and every part thereof languishing. And in this so  
general and universal a distemper, that there should be no weakness nor  
infirmity, no unsoundness, in the head, cannot well be imagined. We are  
unwilling to enumerate particulars, the mention whereof would but renew  
old griefs; but in general we may say, (and we think it will gain the easy  
assent of all men,) that there were many errors, many defects, many  
excesses, many irregularities, many illegal and eccentric proceedings,  
(some of which were in matters of the highest and greatest concernments,)  
manifestly appearing as blots and etains upon the otherwise good govern-  
ment of the late King. That these proceeded from the pravity of his own  
disposition, or from principles of tyranny radicated and implanted in his  
own nature, we do not see how it can be asserted without apparent injury  
to the truth; it being confessed, even by his most peevish enemies, that he  
was a gentleman, as of the most strong and perfect intellectuals, so of the  
best and purest morals, of any prince that ever swayed the English sceptre.  
This the then Parliament being sensible of, and desirous out of a zeal they  
had to the honour of their sovereign to disperse and dispel those black  
clouds that were contracted about him, that he might shine the more  
gloriously in the beauty of his own lustre, thought themselves engaged in  
duty to endeavour to redeem and rescue him from the violent and strong  
impulses of his evil counsellors, who did captivate him at their pleasures to  
their own corrupt lusts, and did every day thrust him into actions preju-  
dicial to himself and destructive to the common good and safety of the  
people.

111. 'Upon this account, and to this, and no other, end, were we at first  
invited to take up arms; and though we have too great cause to conclude  
(from what we have since seen acted) that under those plausible and gilded  
pretences of liberty and reformation, there were secretly managed the  
hellish designs of wicked, vile, and ambitious persons, (whom, though then,  
and for a long time after, concealed, Providence and the series of things  
have since discovered to us,) yet we bless God, that we went out in the  
simplicity of our souls, aiming at nothing more but what was publicly  
owned in the face of the sun; and that we were so far from entertaining  
any thoughts of casting off our allegiance to his majesty, or extirpating his  
family, that we had not the least intentions of so much as abridging him  
of any of his just prerogatives, but only of restraining those excesses of  
government for the future which were nothing but the excrescences of a  
wanton power, and were more truly to be accounted the burthens than  
ornaments of his royal diadem.

1656 112. 'These things, sir, we are bold to make recital of to your majesty; not that we suppose your majesty to be ignorant of them, or that we take delight to derive the pedigree of our own and the nation's misfortunes; but, like poor wildered travellers, perceiving that we have lost our way, we are necessitated (though with tired and irksome steps) thus to walk the same ground over again, that we may discover where it was that we first turned aside, and may institute a more prosperous course in the progress of our journey. Thus far we can say we have gone right, keeping the road of honesty and sincerity, and having (as yet) done nothing but what we think we are able to justify, not by those weak and beggarly arguments, drawn either from success, (which is the same to the just and to the unjust,) or from the silence and satisfaction of a becalmed conscience, (which is more often the effect of blindness than virtue,) but from the sure, safe, sound, and unerring maxims of law, justice, reason, and righteousness.

113. 'In all the rest of our motions, ever since to this very day, we must confess we have been wandering, deviating, and roving up and down, this way and that way, through all the dangerous, uncouth, and untrodden paths of fanatic and enthusiastic notions, till now at last, but too late, we find ourselves intricated and involved in so many windings, labyrinths, and meanders of knavery, that nothing but a divine clue of thread handed to us from heaven can be sufficient to extricate us and restore us. We know not, we know not<sup>1</sup>, whether we have juster matter of shame or sorrow administered to us, when we take a reflexed view of our past actions, and consider into the commission of what crimes, impieties, wickednesses, and unheard of villainies, we have been led, cheated, cozened, and betrayed, by that grand impostor, that loathsome hypocrite, that detestable traitor, that prodigy of nature, that opprobrium of mankind, that landscape<sup>2</sup> of iniquity, that sink of sin, and that compendium of baseness, who now calls himself our Protector. What have we done, nay, what have we not done, which either hellish policy was able to contrive, or brutish power to execute? We have trampled underfoot all authorities; we have laid violeat hands upon our sovereign; we have ravished our parliaments; we have deflowered the virgin liberties of our nation; we have put a yoke (an heavy yoke) of iron upon the necks of our own countrymen; we have thrown down the walls and bulwarks of the people's safety; we have broken often-repeated oaths, vows, engagements, covenants, protestations; we have betrayed our trusts; we have violated our faiths; we have lifted up our hands to Heaven deceitfully; and that these our sins might want no aggravation to make them exceeding sinful, we have added hypocrisy to them all, and have not only, like that audacious strumpet, wiped our mouths, and boasted that we have done no evil<sup>3</sup>, but in the midst of all our abominations (such as are too bad to be named amongst the worst of heathens) we have not wanted impudence enough to say, Let the Lord be glorified, let Jesus Christ be exalted, let his kingdom be advanced, let the gospel be propagated, let the saints be dignified, let righteousness be established!

*Pudet hæc opprobria nobis*

*Aut dici potuissent, aut non potuissent refelli<sup>4</sup>.*

<sup>1</sup> [The repeated words are crossed out in the MS. copy.]

<sup>2</sup> ['lantskip,' MS.]    <sup>3</sup> [Prov. xxx. 20.]    <sup>4</sup> [Ovid, *Metam.* I. 658-9.]

114. 'Will not the Holy One of Israel visit? will not the Righteous One 1656 punish? will not he who is the true and faithful One be avenged for such things as these? will he not, nay has he not already, come forth as a swift witness against us? has he not whet his sword? has he not bent his bow? has he not prepared his quiver? has he not already begun to shoot his arrows at us? Who is so blind as not to see that the hand of the Almighty is upon us, and that his anger waxes hotter and hotter against us? How have our hopes been blasted! how have our expectations been disappointed! how have our ends been frustrated! All those pleasant gourds under which we were sometimes solacing and caressing ourselves, how are they perished in a moment! how are they withered in a night! how are they vanished, and come to nothing! Righteous is the Lord, and righteous are all his judgments. We have sown the wind, and we have reaped a whirlwind; we have sown faction, and we have reaped confusion; we have sown folly, and we have reaped deceit: when we looked for liberty, behold slavery! when we expected righteousness, behold oppression! when we sought for justice, behold a cry, a great and a lamentable cry throughout the whole nation!

115. 'Every man's hand is upon his loins, every one complaining, sighing, mourning, lamenting, and saying, I am pained, I am pained, pain and anguish and sorrow, and perplexity of spirit, has taken hold upon me, like the pains of a woman in travail. Surely we may take up the lamentation of the prophet concerning this the laud of our nativity: "How does England sit solitary! how is she become as a widow! she that was great amongst the nations, and princess among the provinces, how is she now become tributary! She weepeth sore in the night; her tears are on her cheeks; amongst all her lovers she hath none to comfort her; all her friends have dealt treacherously with her, they are become her enemies." She lifeth up her voice in the streets, she crieth aloud in the gates of the city, in the places of chief concourse she sitteth, and thus we hear her wailing and bemoaning her condition; "Is it nothing to you, all ye that pass by? behold, and see if there be any sorrow like unto my sorrow, which is done unto me, wherewith the Lord hath afflicted me in the day of his fierce anger. The yoke of my transgressions is bound by his hands, they are wreathed, and come up upon my neck; he hath made my strength to fall, the Lord hath delivered me into their hands from whom I am not able to rise up. The Lord hath trodden underfoot all my mighty men in the midst of me; he hath called an assembly to crush my young men; he hath trodden me as in a winepress; all that pass by clap their hands at me, they hiss, and wag their heads at me, saying, Is this the nation that men call the perfection of beauty, the joy of the whole earth? All mine enemies have opened their mouths against me, they hiss and gnash their teeth; they say, We have swallowed her up; certainly this is the day that we looked for, we have found, we have seen it."

116. 'How are our bowels troubled! how are our hearts saddened! how are our souls afflicted, whilst we hear the groans, whilst we see the desolation, of our dear country! It pitieth us, it pitieth us, that Sion should lie any longer in the dust! But, alas! what shall we do for her in this day of her great calamity? We were sometimes wise to pul down, but we

1656 (now) want art to build; we were ingenious to pluck up, but we have no skill to plant; we were strong to destroy, but we are weak to restore. Whither shall we go for help? or to whom shall we address ourselves for relief? If we say, We will have recourse to Parliaments, and they shall save us; behold, they are broken reeds, reeds shaken with the wind, they cannot save themselves. If we turn to the army, and say, They are bone of our bone and flesh of our flesh, it may be they will at last have pity upon us, and deliver us; behold, they are become as a rod of iron to bruise us, rather than a staff of strength to support us. If we go to him who had treacherously usurped, and does tyrannically exercise, an unjust power over us, and say to him, Free us from this yoke, for it oppresseth us, and from these burdens, for they are heavier than either we are, or our fathers ever were, able to bear; behold, in the pride and haughtiness of his spirit, he answers us, You are factious, you are factious; if your burthens are heavy, I will make them yet heavier; if I have hitherto chastised you with whips, I will henceforward chastise you with scorpions.

117. 'Thus do we fly, like partridges hunted, from hill to hill, and from mountain to mountain, but can find no rest; we look this way and that way, but there is none to save, none to deliver. At last we began to whisper, (and but to whisper only,) amongst ourselves, saying one to another, Why should we not return to our first husband? surely it will be better with us then than it is now. At the first starting of this question amongst us, many doubts, many fears, many jealousies, many suspicions, did arise within us. We were conscious to ourselves that we had dealt unkindly with him, that we had treacherously forsaken him, that we had defiled ourselves with other lovers, and that our filthiness was still upon our skirts: therefore were we apt to conclude, if we do return unto him, how can he receive us? or if he does receive us, how can he love us? how can he pardon the injuries we have done unto him? how can he forget the unkindness we have shewn unto him in the day of his distress?

118. 'We must confess (for we come not to deceive your majesty, but to speak the truth in simplicity) that these cowardly apprehensions did for a while make some strong impressions upon us, and had almost frightened us out of our newly conceived thoughts of duty and loyalty. But it was not long before they vanished, and gave place to the more noble and heroic considerations of common good, public safety, the honour, peace, welfare, and prosperity, of these nations; all which we are persuaded, and do find, (though by too late experience,) are as inseparably and as naturally bound up in your majesty as heat in fire or light in the sun. Contemning therefore and disdainig the mean and low thoughts of our own private safety, (which we have no cause to despair of, having to deal with so good and so gracious a prince,) we durst not allow of any longer debate about matters of personal concernment; but did think ourselves engaged in duty, honour, and conscience, to make this our humble address unto your majesty, and to leave ourselves at the feet of your mercy: yet, lest we should seem to be altogether negligent of that first good, though since dishonoured, cause, which God has so eminently owned us in, and to be unmindful of the security of those who (together with ourselves), being carried away with

the delusive and hypocritical pretences of wicked and ungodly men, have 1656 ignorantly (not maliciously) been drawn into a concurrence with those actions which may render them justly obnoxious to your majesty's indignation, we have presumed in all humility to offer unto your majesty these few propositions hereunto annexed; to which if your majesty shall be pleased graciously to condescend, we do solemnly protest in the presence of Almighty God, (before whose tribunal we know we must one day appear,) that we will hazard our lives, and all that is dear unto us, for the restoring and re-establishing your majesty in the throne of your fathers; and that we will never be wanting in a ready and willing compliance to your majesty's commands to approve ourselves

' Your majesty's

' most humble, most faithful, and most devoted

' subjects and servants,

' W. Howard.

John Wildman.

Ralph Jennings.

John Aumigeu.

Edward Penkaruan.

Randolph Hedworth.

John Hedworth.

Thomas —<sup>1</sup>.

John Sturcion.

Richard Reynolds.

119. 'The earnest desires of the subscribers, in all humility presented to your majesty in these following proposals, in order to an happy, speedy, and well grounded peace in these your majesty's dominions.

1. 'Forasmuch as the Parliament called and convened by the authority of his late majesty your royal father in the year 1640 was never legally dissolved, but did continue their sitting until the year 1648, at which time the army, violently and treasonably breaking in upon them, did and has ever since given a continued interruption to their session, by taking [away] the whole House of Lords, and secluding the greatest part of the House of Commons; it is therefore humbly desired, that (to the end we may be established upon the ancient basis and foundation of law) your majesty would be pleased by public proclamations, as soon as it shall be judged seasonable, to invite all those persons, as well Lords as Commons, who were then sitting, to return to their places; and that your majesty would own them (so convened and met together) to be the true and lawful Parliament of England.

2. 'That your majesty would concur with the Parliament in the ratification and confirmation of all those things granted and agreed unto by the late King your father, at the last and fatal treaty in the Isle of Wight; as also in the making and repealing of all such laws, acts, and statutes, as by the Parliament shall be judged expedient and necessary to be made and repealed for the better securing of the just and natural rights and liberties of the people, and for the obviating and preventing all dangerous and destructive excesses of government for the future.

3. 'Forasmuch as it cannot be [denied<sup>1</sup>] but that our Lord and Saviour

<sup>1</sup> [blank in MS.]

<sup>2</sup> ['desired,' MS.]

1656 Jesus Christ by his death and resurrection has purchased the liberties of his own people, and is thereby become their sole Lord and King, to whom, and to whom only, they owe obedience in things spiritual; we do therefore humbly beseech your majesty, that you would engage your royal word never to erect, nor suffer to be erected, any such tyrannical, Popish, and Antichristian hierarchy, (Episcopal, Presbyterian, or by what name soever it be called,) as shall assume a power over, or impose a yoke upon, the consciences of others; but that every one of your majesty's subjects may hereafter be left at liberty to worship God in such a way, form, and manner, as shall appear to them to be agreeable to the mind and will of Christ, revealed in his word, according to that proportion or measure of faith and knowledge which they have received.

4. 'Forasmuch as the exaction of tithes is a burden under which the whole nation groans in general, and the people of God in particular, we would therefore crave leave humbly to offer it to your majesty's consideration, that (if it be possible) some other way may be found out for the maintenance of that which is called the national ministry; and that those of the separated and congregated churches may not (as hitherto they have been, and still are,) be compelled to contribute thereunto.'

5. 'Forasmuch as in these times of license, confusion, and disorder, many honest, godly, and religious persons, by the crafty devices and cunning pretences of wicked men, have been ignorantly and blindly led either into the commission of or compliance with many vile, illegal, and abominable actions, whereof they are now ashamed; we do therefore most humbly implore your majesty, that an Act of amnesty and oblivion may be granted for the pardoning, acquitting, and discharging, all your majesty's long deceived and deluded subjects from the guilt and imputation of all crimes, treasons, and offences whatsoever, committed or done by them, or any of them, either against your majesty's father or yourself, since the beginning of these unhappy wars, excepting only such who do adhere to that ugly<sup>1</sup> tyrant who calls himself Protector, or who, in justification of his or any other interest, shall, after the publication of this Act of grace, continue and persevere in their disloyalty to your majesty.'

120. The gentleman who brought this address and these wild propositions, brought likewise with him a particular letter to the King from the gentleman that is before described; upon whose temper, ingenuity, and interest, the messenger principally depended, having had much acquaintance and conversation with him; who, though he was an Anabaptist, made himself merry with the extravagancy and madness of his companions, and told this gentleman that though the first address could not be prepared but with those demands which might satisfy the whole party, and comprehend all that was desired by any of them, yet

<sup>1</sup> ['oughly,' MS.]

if the King gave them such an encouragement as might dispose 1656 them to send some of the wisest of them to attend his majesty, he would be able, upon conference with them, to make them his instruments to reduce the rest to more moderate desires, when they should discern that they might have more protection and security from the King than from any other power that would assume the government. The letter was as followeth :

121. ' May it please your majesty,

' Time, the great discoverer of all things, has (at last) unmasked the disguised designs of this mysterious age, and made that obvious to the dull sense of fools which was before visible enough to the quicksighted prudence of wise men, viz. that liberty, religion, and reformation, (the wonted engines of politicians,) are but deceitful baits, by which the easily deluded multitude are tempted to a greedy pursuit of their own ruin. In the unhappy number of these fools, I must confess myself to have been one; who have nothing more now to boast of, but only that, as I was not the first was cheated, so I was not the last was undeceived; having long since, by peeping a little (now and then, as I had opportunity) under the vizard of the impostor, got such glimpses, though but imperfect ones, of his ugly<sup>1</sup> face, concealed under the painted pretences of sanctity, as made me conclude that the series of affairs, and the revolution of a few years, would convince this blinded generation of their errors, and make them affrightedly to start from him, as a prodigious piece of deformity, whom they adored and revered as the beautiful image of a deity.

122. ' Nor did this my expectation fail me. God, who glories in no attribute more than to be acknowledged the searcher of the inward parts, could no longer endure the bold affronts of this audacious hypocrite; but, (to the astonishment and confusion of all his idolatrous worshippers,) has, by the unsearchable wisdom of his deep-laid counsels, lighted such a candle into the dark dungeon of his soul, that there is none so blind who does not plainly read treachery, tyranny, perfidiousness, dissimulation, atheism, hypocrisy, and all manner of villainy, written in large characters on his heart; nor is there any one remaining who dares open his mouth in justification of him, for fear of incurring the deserved character of being a professed advocate for all wickedness, and a sworn enemy to all virtue.

123. ' This was no sooner brought forth, but presently I conceived hopes of being able in a short time to put in practice those thoughts of loyalty to your majesty, which had long had entertainment in my breast, but till now were forced to seek concealment under a seeming conformity to the iniquity of the times. A fit opportunity of giving birth to these designs was happily administered by the following occasion.

124. ' Great was the rage, and just the indignation, of the people, when they first found the authority of their Parliament swallowed up in the new name of a Protector; greater was their fury, (and upon better grounds,)

<sup>1</sup> ['oughly,' MS.]

1656 when they observed that under the silent, modest, and flattering, title of this Protector, was secretly assumed a power more absolute, more arbitrary, more unlimited, than ever was pretended to by any king. The pulpits straightways sound with declamations, the streets are filled with pasquils and libels, every one expresses a detestation of this innovation by public invectives, and all the nation with one accord seems at once to be inspired with one and the same resolution of endeavouring valiantly to redeem that liberty by arms and force which was treacherously stolen from them by deceit and fraud.

125. 'When they had for a while exercised themselves in tumultuary discourses, (the first effects of popular discontents,) at length they begin to contrive by what means to free themselves from the yoke that is upon them. In order hereunto, several of the chiefest of the malecontents enter into consultations amongst themselves, to which they were pleased to invite and admit me. Being taken into their counsels, and made privy to their debates, I thought it my work to acquaint myself fully with the tempers, inclinations, dispositions, and principles, of them; which (though all meeting and centering in an irreconcilable hatred and animosity against the usurper) I find so various in their ends, and so contrary in the means conducing to those ends, that they do naturally fall under the distinction of different parties. Some, drunk with enthusiasms and besotted with fanatic notions, do allow of none to have a share in government besides the saints; and these are called Christian Royalists, or Fifth Monarchy men. Others, violently opposing this as destructive to the liberty of the free-born people, strongly contend to have the nation governed by a continual succession of parliaments, consisting of equal representatives; and these style themselves Commonwealth's men. A third party there is, who, finding by the observation of these times that parliaments are better physic than food, seem to incline most to monarchy, if laid under such restrictions as might free the people from the fear of tyranny; and these are contented to suffer under the opprobrious name of Levellers. To these did I particularly apply myself, and, after some few days' conference with them in private by themselves apart, I was so happy in my endeavours as to prevail with some of them to lay aside those vain and idle prejudices, grounded rather upon passion than judgment, and to return, as their duty engaged them, to their obedience to your majesty. Having proceeded thus far, and gained as many of the chief of them (whom I knew to be leaders of the rest) as could safely be intrusted with a business of this nature, (the success whereof does principally depend upon the secret management of it,) I thought I had nothing more now to do but only to confirm and establish them (as well as I could) in this their infant allegiance, by engaging them so far in an humble address unto your majesty that they might not know how to make either a safe or honourable retreat.

126. 'I must leave it to the ingenuity of this worthy gentleman by whose hands it is conveyed, to make answer to any such objections as may perhaps be made by your majesty, either as to the matter or manner of it. This only I would put your majesty in mind of, that they are but young promelytes, and are to be driven *lento pede*, lest being urged at first too violently they should resist the more refractorily.



127. 'As to the quality of the persons, I cannot say they are either of 1656 great families or great estates. But this I am confident of, that (whether it be by their own virtue, or by the misfortune of [the] times, I will not determine.) they are such who may be more serviceable to your majesty in this juncture than those whose names swell much bigger than theirs with the addition of great titles. I durst not undertake to persuade your majesty to any thing, being ignorant by what maxims your counsels are governed; but this I shall crave leave to say, that I have often observed that a desperate game at chess has been recovered, after the loss of the nobility, only by playing the pawns well; and that the subscribers may not be of the same use to your majesty, if well managed, I cannot despair, especially at such a time as this, when there is scarce any thing but pawns left upon the board, and those few others that are left may justly be complained of in the words of Tacitus, *præsentia et tuta, quam vetera et periculosa, malunt omnes*<sup>1</sup>.

128. 'I have many things more to offer unto your majesty, but, fearing I have already given too bold a trouble, I shall defer the mention of them at present; intending, as soon as I hear how your majesty resents this overture, to wait upon your majesty in person, and then to communicate that *vira roce* which I cannot bring within the narrow compass of an address of this nature. In the mean time, if our services shall be judged useful to your majesty, I shall humbly desire some speedy course may be taken for the advance of £2000, as well for the answering the expectation of those whom I have already engaged as for the defraying of several other necessary expenses, which do, and will every day inevitably, come upon us in the prosecution of our design.

129. 'What more is expedient to be done by your majesty, in order to the encouragement and satisfaction of those gentlemen who already are, or hereafter may be, brought over to the assistance of your majesty's cause and interest, I shall commit to the care of this honourable person; who, being no stranger to the complexion and constitution of those with whom I have to deal, is able sufficiently to inform your majesty by what ways and means they may be laid under the strongest obligation to your majesty's service.

130. 'For my own part, as I do now aim at nothing more than only to give your majesty a small essay of my zeal for, and absolute devotion to, your majesty, so I have nothing more to beg of your majesty but that you would be pleased to account me,

'May it please your majesty,

'your majesty's most humble, most faithful, and most

'obedient (though most unworthy) subject and servant,

'W. Howard.'

131<sup>1</sup>. The King believed that these distempers might in some conjuncture be of use to him, and therefore returned the general answer that is mentioned before, and that he would be

<sup>1</sup> ['ceteri . . . tuta et præsentia quam vetera et periculosa mallent.' *Ann. I. 2.*]

<sup>2</sup> [This section is from the *Hist.*, p. 31.]

1656 willing to confer with some persons of that party, trusted by the rest, if they would come over to him; his majesty being then at Bruges<sup>1</sup>. Upon which that young gentleman came over thither to him, and remained some days there concealed. He was a person of very extraordinary parts, sharpness of wit, readiness and volubility of tongue, and yet an Anabaptist. He had been bred in the university of Cambridge, and afterwards in the inns of court; but being too young to have known the religion or the government of the precedent time, and his father having been engaged from the beginning against the King, he had sucked in the opinions that were most prevalent, and had been a soldier in Cromwell's life-guard of horse, when he was thought to be most resolved to establish a republic. But when that masque was pulled off, he detested him with that rage that he was of the combination with those who resolved to destroy him by what way soever, and was very intimate with Syndercome. He had a great confidence of the strength and power of that party, and confessed that their demands were extravagant, and such as the King could not grant; which, after they were once engaged in blood, he doubted not they would recede from, by the credit the wiser men had amongst them. He returned very well satisfied with the King, and did afterward correspond very faithfully with his professions, but left the King without any hope of other benefit from that party than by their increasing the faction and animosity against Cromwell; for it was manifest they expected a good sum of present money from the King, which could not be in his power to supply.

132<sup>2</sup>. In the mean time, the King found every day that the Spaniards so much despaired of his cause, that they had no mind to give him any assistance with which he might make an attempt upon England, and that, if they had been never so well disposed, they were not able to do it; and thereupon he resolved

<sup>1</sup> [A copy in the King's own hand of his reply to Howard, addressed under the name of W. Fisher, which is dated at Bruges, 14 July, 1656, is among the Clarendon MSS. See *Calend. Clar. S. P.*, iii. 146.]

<sup>2</sup> [*Life*, p. 544.]

that he would not in a country that was so great a scene of war live unactive and unconcerned; and so he sent to don Juan, that he would accompany him in the field the next *campania*, without expecting any ceremony, or putting him to any trouble. But they sent him a formal message, and employed the earl of Bristol, to excuse them from consenting, or admitting his proposition, and to dissuade his majesty from affecting so unreasonably exposing his person. They said that they could not answer it to his Catholic majesty, if they should permit his majesty, when his two brothers were already in the army, and known to affect danger so much as they did, likewise to engage his own royal person, which they positively protested against. And when they afterwards saw that it was not in their power to restrain him from adventures whilst he remained at Bruges, which was now become a frontier by the neighbourhood of Mardike, and that under pretence of visiting the duke of York, who lay then at Dunkirk to make some attempt in the winter upon that fort, his majesty, having notice what night they intended to assault it, went some days before to Dunkirk, and was present in that action, and so near that many were killed about him, and the marquis of Ormonde, who was next to him, had his horse killed under him, they were willing his majesty should remove to Bruxells, which they would never before consent to, and which was in many respects most grateful to him. And so in the spring, and before the armies were in motion, he left Bruges, where he had received, both from the bishop and the magistrates, all possible respect, there being at that time a Spaniard, Mark Ogniate, burgomaster, who, being born of an English mother, had all imaginable duty for the King, and, being a man of excellent parts and very dexterous in business, was very serviceable to his majesty, which he ever afterwards acknowledged; and about the end of February, in the year, by that account, 1658, he went to Bruxells, and never after returned to Bruges.

<sup>1</sup> [*Mercur. Polit.*, No. 387, pp. 54-5.]

<sup>2</sup> [Letter from the earl of Bristol to Ormonde of that date; Carte MS. xxx. f. 456.]

1658 133. He was no sooner come thither, but don Alonso renewed his advices and importunity that he would make a conjunction with the Levellers; and to that purpose prevailed with him to admit their agent, one Sexby, to confer with him<sup>1</sup>; which his majesty willingly consented to, presuming that he might be privy to the address that had been made to him by the same party; which he was not, though the other[a] well knew of his employment to the Spaniard, and had no mind to trust him to the King, at least not so soon. The man, [for<sup>2</sup>] an illiterate person, spake very well and properly, and used those words very well the true meaning and signification whereof he could not understand. He had been, in the beginning, a common soldier of Cromwell's troop, and afterwards was one of those Agitators who were made use of to control the Parliament; and had so great an interest in Cromwell that he was frequently his bedfellow, a familiarity he frequently admitted those to whom he employed in any great trust, and with whom he could not so freely converse as in those hours. He was very perfect in the history of Cromwell's dissimulations, and would describe his artifices to the life, and did very well understand the temper of the army and wonderfully undervalue the credit and interest of the King's party; and made such demands to the King, as if it were in his power, and his alone, to restore him; in which don Alonso concurred so totally, that when he saw that the King would not be advised by him, he sent his friend Sexby into Spain, to conclude there, and, upon the matter, wholly withdrew himself from so much as visiting the King. And there need not be any other character or description of the stupidity of that man, than that such a fellow, with the help of an Irish priest, should be able to cozen him, and make him to cozen his master, of ten thousand pistoles; for he received not less than that in Flanders, whatever else he

<sup>1</sup> [Sexby's negotiations with Spain and the King were before the time here spoken of; they extended from June 1655 to Dec. 1656. In the following year he was in England, and was committed to the Tower July 24, 1657, where he died Jan. 13, 1658. Many notices relating to him may be found in vol. iii. of *Calend. Clar. S. P.*]

<sup>2</sup> ['of,' MS.]

got by his journey to Madrid ; which did not use to be of small 1658 expense to the Spaniard.

134. Nothing that was to come could be more manifest, than it was to all discerning men that the first design the French army would undertake, when they should begin their *campania*, must be the siege of Dunkirk, without taking which, Mardike would do them little good : besides, their contract with Cromwell was no secret ; yet they [the Spaniards] totally neglected making provisions to defend it ; being persuaded, by some intelligence they always purchased at a great rate to deceive themselves, that the French would begin the *campania* with besieging Cambray. In the beginning of May the marquis de Leda, governor of Dunkirk, and the best officer they had in all respects, came to Bruxells, having sent several expresses thither to no purpose to solicit for supplies. He told them that his intelligence was infallible, that marshal Turyu was ready to march, and that the [French] King himself would be in the field to countenance the siege of Dunkirk, which he could not defend if he were not supplied with men, ammunition, and victual ; of all which he stood in great need, and of neither of which he could get supply ; they telling him that he would not be besieged, that they were sure the French meant to attempt Cambray, which they provided the best they could, and bad him be confident that if he were attacked they would relieve him with their army, and fight a battle before he should be in danger. And being able to procure no other answer, he returned, and came to take his leave of the King as he went out of the town, and complained very much to his majesty of their counsels, and deluding themselves with false intelligence. He said he was going to defend a town without men, without ammunition, and without victual, against a very strong and triumphant army ; that if he could have obtained supplies in any reasonable degree, he should have been able to have entertained them some time ; but in the condition he was in, he could only lose his life there, which he was resolved to do : and he spake as if he were very willing to do it, and was as good as his word.

1658 135. Within three or four days after his return, the French  
 May 15, army appeared before it; and then the Spaniard believed it,  
 N.S.<sup>1</sup> and made what haste they could to draw their army together,  
 which was very much dispersed, so that before they were upon  
 their march the French had perfected their circumvallation, and  
 rendered it impossible to put any succours into the town. So  
 June 3, that they now found it necessary indeed to hazard a battle,  
 N.S. which they had promised to do when they intended nothing  
 less. When they had taken a full view of the posture the  
 enemy was in, and were thereupon to choose their own ground,  
 upon which they would be found, don Juan and the marquis of  
 Caracena, (who agreed in nothing else,) resolved how the army  
 should be ranged; which the prince of Condé dissuaded them  
 from, and told them very exactly what the marshal Turyn would  
 do in that case, and that he would still maintain the siege, and  
 give them likewise battle upon the advantage of the ground;  
 whereas if they would place their army near another part of  
 the line, they should easily have communication with the town,  
 and compel the French to fight with more equal hazards.

136. It might very reasonably be said of the prince of Condé  
 and marshal Turyn, what a good Roman historian<sup>2</sup> said hereto-  
 fore of Jugurth[a] and Marius, that, *in iisdem castris didicere*  
*quæ postea in contrariis fecere*; they had in the same armies  
 learned that discipline and those stratagems which they after-  
 wards practised against each other in enemy armies; and it  
 was a wonderful and a pleasant thing to see and observe, in  
 attacks or in marches, with what foresight either of them would  
 declare what the other would do: as the prince of Condé, when  
 the armies marched near, and the Spaniards would not alter  
 their formal lazy pace, nor their rest at noon, would in choler  
 tell them, 'If we do not make great haste to possess such a  
 pass,' (which they never thought of,) 'marshal Turyn will take  
 it, though it be much farther from him;' and would then,  
 when they considered not what he said, advance with his own  
 troops and possess the place, even when the French were come

<sup>1</sup> [Larroy, *Hist. de Louis XIV.*, 1721, iii. 34, 41.]

<sup>2</sup> [Voll. Patroculus, *Hist. Rom.* ii. 9, 'in iisdem—facerent.']

in view; and by such seasonable foresights saved the Spanish 1658 army from many distresses. And marshal Turyn had the same caution, and governed himself as the prince of Condé was in the rear [or<sup>1</sup>] van of the army, and, upon the matter, only considered where he was, and ordered his marches accordingly; of which there was a very memorable instance two years<sup>2</sup> before, when the Spanish army had besieged Arras, and when the duke of York was present with marshal Turyn. The Spaniards had made themselves so very strong, that when the French army came thither, they found that they could not compel them to fight, and that the town must be lost if they did not force the line. Marshal Turyn, accompanied with the duke of York, who would never be absent upon those occasions, and some of the principal officers, spent two or three days in viewing the line round, and observing and informing himself of all that was to be known, riding so near the line very frequently that some of his company were killed within much less than musket shot.

In the end, he called some of the principal officers, and said he would that day at noon assault the line at a place which he shewed to them; which the officers wondered at, and said it was the strongest part of the line, and that they had observed to him that the whole line on the other side was very much weaker: to which the marshal replied, 'You do not know who keeps that line; we shall do no good there; monsieur le prince never sleeps, and that is his post; but I will tell you what will fall out on the other side;' for he had himself marched in the Spanish army, and very well understood the customs of it. He told them then, that it would be very long before the soldiers upon the line or the adjacent guard would believe that they were in earnest and that they would in truth at that time of the day assault them, but would think that they meant only to give them an alarm, which they were never warm in receiving: that when they [the Spaniards] were convinced that they [the French] were in earnest, in which time they should be got near their line, they would send to the count of Fuensaldagña, who was then asleep, and his servants would

1654  
Aug. 25,  
N. S.

<sup>1</sup> ['and,' MS.]

<sup>2</sup> [four years.]

1658 not be persuaded to waken him in a moment. He would then send for his horse, and ride up to the line; which when he saw, he would with some haste repair to the archduke's tent, who was likewise at his *siesto*, and when he was awaked they would consult what was to be done; by which time, [the marshal] said, they should have done. And they did enter the line accordingly, and found by the prisoners that every thing had fallen out as the marshal foretold. And so the siege was raised, the Spaniards fled without making any resistance, left their cannon, bag and baggage, behind them: only the prince [of Condé] was in so good order upon the first alarm, that, when he heard of the confusion they were in, he drew off with his cannon, and lost nothing that belonged to him, and marched with all his men to a place of safety.

June 14,  
N. S. 137. Notwithstanding the advice which the prince of Condé had given, don Juan was positive in his first resolution. And the prince, not without great indignation, consented, and drew up his troops in the place they desired; and quickly [saw<sup>1</sup>] all come to pass that he had foretold. The country was most enclosed, so that the horse could not fight but in small bodies. The English foot under Lockhart charged the Spanish foot, and after a reasonable resistance broke and routed them; after which there was not much resistance on that side, the Spanish horse doing no better than their foot. The King's foot were placed by themselves upon a little rising ground, and were charged by the French horse after the Spanish foot were beaten. Some of them, and the greater part, marched off by the favour of the enclosures, there not being above two hundred taken prisoners. The dukes of York and Gloster charged several times on horseback, and in the end, having gotten some troops to go with them, charged the English, (though they were glad to see them behave themselves so well,) and with great difficulty, and some blows of muskets, got safe off. But there was a rumour spread in the French army that the duke of York was taken prisoner by the English, some men undertaking that they saw him in their hands: whereupon many of the officers

<sup>1</sup> ['foresaw,' MS.]



and gentlemen resolved to set him at liberty, and rode up to 1658 the body of English, and looked upon all their prisoners, and found they were misinformed; which if they had not been, they would undoubtedly, at any hazard or danger, have enlarged him; so great an affection that nation owned to have for his highness.

138. The day being thus lost, with a greater rout and confusion than loss of men, don Juan and the marquis of Caracena, who behaved themselves in their own persons with courage enough, were contented to think better of the prince of Condé's advice, by which they preserved the best part of the army, and retired to Ipres and Furne[s], and the duke of York to Newport, that they might defend the rest when Dunkirk should be taken; which was the present business of marshal Turyn; who found the marquis de Leda resolved to defend it, notwithstanding the defeat of the army: and therefore he betook himself again to that work, as soon as the [Spanish] army was retired into fastness. The marquis de Leda, when he saw there was no more hope of relief from don Juan, which whilst he expected he was wary in the hazard of his men, now<sup>1</sup> was resolved to try what he could do for himself; and so, with as strong a party as he could make, he made a desperate sally upon the enemy, which, though he disordered, was quickly so seconded that they drove him back into the town with great loss, after himself had received his death's wound, which followed within three days after. And then the officers sent to treat, which he would not consent to whilst he lived. The marquis was a much greater loss than the town, which the master of the field will be always master of in two months' time at most. But in truth [the death of] the marquis was an irreparable damage, being a very wise man, of great experience, great wisdom, and great piety; insomuch as he had an intention to have taken orders in the Church, to which he was most devoted.

June 23.  
N. S.

139. Those in the town had fair conditions to march to St. Omer's, that they might not join with the relics of their army.

<sup>1</sup> ['but now,' MS.]

1658 And the King of France, being by this time come to the camp with the cardinal, entered the town, and took possession of it himself; which as soon as he had done, he delivered it into the hands of Lockhart, whom Cromwell had made governor of it. And so the treaty was performed between them; and the King went presently to Calice, and from thence sent the duke of Crequy, together with Mancini, nephew to the cardinal, to London<sup>3</sup>, to visit Cromwell; who likewise sent his son-[in-law,] the lord Falconbridge, to Calice, to congratulate with the King for their joint prosperity. And so the mutual professions were renewed between them, with new obligations never to make peace without each other's consent.

June 25, N.S.<sup>1</sup>

May 20, N.S.<sup>2</sup>

June 8, N.S.<sup>4</sup>

140. When don Juan removed from Bruxells and the army marched into the field, the King renewed his desire that he might likewise go with them, but was refused with the same passion he had been before; and thereupon resolved that he would not stay alone in Bruxells whilst all the world was in action, but thought of some more private place, where he might take the summer air, and refresh himself during that season. And he was the more confirmed in this upon the news of the defeat of the army near Dunkirk, and the loss of that place. And so he removed to a village called Hochstrade, where there were very good houses, capable to have received a greater train than belonged to his Court. Thither the King went about the month of August, the village lying upon the skirts of the States' dominions in Brabant, and within five or six miles of Breda, and sometimes he made journeys *incognito* to see places where he had not been before.

141<sup>5</sup>. There a man might have observed the great difference of the condition which the subjects in the States' dominions,

<sup>1</sup> [*Mercur. Polit.*, No. 421, p. 620; June 26, Larrey, iii. 48. A letter written by Lockhart when in Dunkirk, and dated June 2, N.S., which is printed in Thurloe's *S. P.*, vii. 143, must be so dated by a mistake for July 2; but the date is distinctly written in the original MS.]

<sup>2</sup> [Larrey, iii. 36.]

<sup>3</sup> [They arrived in London on June 1<sup>st</sup>, and had audience the next day.]

<sup>4</sup> [Falconbridge left London May 26, O.S.]

<sup>5</sup> [*Hist.*, p. 31.]

even in the sight and view of the other, enjoy, above what their 1656 neighbours of the Spanish territories are acquainted with. Hochstrade is an open village, belonging to the count of that name, and hath enjoyed very ample privileges, the owner thereof being one of the greatest nobles in the duchy of Brabant. It is pleasantly seated, many very good houses, and the extent of the manor large, and of a great revenue. But by reason that it is always a horse-quarter in the winter season, who use great license, it is so poor that those good houses have only walls; so that the people had not furniture to supply those rooms which were for accommodation of those who attended the King, though they were sure to be very well paid, and therefore used all the means they could to procure it. But there appeared poverty in the faces and looks of the people, good grounds without any stock, and in a word, nothing that looked well but the houses, and those empty within. On the other side of a line that is drawn, (for a man may set one foot in the dominion that is reserved to the King of Spain, and the other in that which is assigned to the Hollander,) the houses, though not standing so thick, nor so beautiful without, clean, neat, and well furnished within; very good linen and some plate in every house; the people fat, well clothed, and with looks very well pleased; all the grounds and land fully stocked with all kind of cattle, and, as if it were the land of Goshen, the appearance of nothing but wealth and fertility, encompassed by wonderful barrenness and unconceivable poverty. And they on the Holland side, that lies equally open and undefended, can see the Spanish troops exercise all license upon their poor neighbours of Hochstrade; and yet the most dissolute amongst them dare not step into their quarters to take a hen, or commit the least trespass: so strictly the articles of the peace are observed.

142<sup>1</sup>. Whilst the King spent his time in this manner, about the middle of September, the duke of York, who remained still with the troops at Newport to defend that place, as don Juan and the rest remained about Furnes and Bruges, sent an express

Sept. 16,  
N. S.

<sup>1</sup> [*Life*, p. 547.]

1658 to the King to let him know that the letters from England, and some passengers, reported confidently that Cromwell was dead; [which<sup>1</sup>], there having been no news of his sickness, was not at first easy to be believed. But every day brought confirmation of it; so that his majesty thought fit to give over his country life, and returned again to Bruxells, that he might be ready to make use of any advantage which in that conjuncture, upon so wonderful an alteration, he might reasonably expect.

143. It had been observed in England, that though from the dissolution of the last Parliament all things seemed to succeed at home and abroad to his wish, and his power and greatness to be better established than ever it had been, yet Cromwell never had the same serenity of mind he had been used to, after he had refused the crown, but was out of countenance, and chagrin<sup>2</sup>, as if he were conscious of not having been true to himself, and much more apprehensive of danger to his person than he had used to be; insomuch as he was not so easy of access, nor so much seen abroad, and seemed to be in some disorder when his eyes found any stranger in the room, upon whom they were still fixed. When he intended to go to Hampton Court, which was his principal delight and diversion, it was never known till he was in the coach which way he would go; and was still hemmed in by his guards before and behind; and the coach in which he went was always thronged as full as it could be with his servants, who were armed; and he never returned the same way he went; and rarely lodged two nights together in one chamber, but had many furnished and prepared, to which his own key conveyed him, and those he would have with him, when he had a mind to go to bed: which made his fears the more taken notice of and public, because he had never been accustomed to those precautions.

144. It is very true he knew of many combinations to assassinate him, by those who he knew wished the King no good. And when he had discovered the design of Sindercome, who was a very stout man, and one who had been much in his favour, and who had twice or thrice by wonderful and unexpected

<sup>1</sup> ['whilst,' MS.]

<sup>2</sup> ['shaggringe,' MS.]

accidents been disappointed in the minute he made sure to kill 1658  
 him, and [had] caused him to be apprehended, his behaviour was  
 so resolute in his examination and trial as if he thought he  
 should still be able to do it; and it was manifest that he had <sup>1657</sup>  
 many more associates, who were undiscovered, and as resolute <sup>Feb. 9.</sup>  
 as himself; and though he got him condemned to die, the fellow's  
 carriage and words were such, as if he knew well how to avoid  
 the judgment; which made Cromwell believe that a party in the  
 army would attempt his rescue; whereupon he gave strict charge  
 that he should be carefully looked to in the Tower, and three or  
 four of the guard always with him day and night. And at the  
 day for his execution, those troops he was most confident of were <sup>Feb. 11.</sup>  
 upon the Tower-hill, where the gallows were erected. But when  
 the guard called him to arise in the morning, they found him  
 dead in his bed; which gave trouble exceedingly to Cromwell;  
 for besides that he hoped at his death, that, to avoid the utmost  
 rigour of it, he would have confessed many of his confederates,  
 he now found himself under the reproach of having caused him  
 to be poisoned, as not daring to bring him to public justice.  
 Nor could he suppress that scandal, though it did appear, upon  
 examination, that the night before, when he [Sindercome] was  
 going to bed in the presence of his guard, his sister came to take  
 her leave of him; and whilst they spake together at the bedside,  
 he rubbed his nose with his hand, of which they then took no  
 notice; and she going away, he put off his clothes, and leaped  
 into his bed with some snuffing in his nose, and said, this was the  
 last bed he should ever go into; and seemed to turn to sleep,  
 and never in the whole night made the least noise or motion,  
 save that he sneezed once. When the physicians and surgeons  
 opened his head, they found he had snuffed up through his  
 nostrils some very well prepared poison, that in an instant  
 curdled all the blood in that region, which presently suffocated  
 him. The man was drawn by a horse to the gallows where he  
 should have hanged, and buried under it, with a stake driven  
 through him, as is usual in the case of self-murderers: yet this  
 accident perplexed Cromwell very much; and though he was  
 without the particular discovery which he expected, he made a

1658 general discovery by it that he was more odious in his army than he believed he had been.

1658 145. He seemed to be much afflicted at the death of his  
 April 18. friend the earl of Warwick, with whom he had a fast friendship, though neither their humours or their natures were like<sup>1</sup>. And the heir of that house, who had married his youngest daughter, died about the same time<sup>2</sup>; so that all his relation to, or confidence in, that family was at an end, the other branches of it abhorring his alliance. His domestic delights were lessened every day; and he plainly discovered that his son Falconbridge his heart was set upon an interest destructive to his, and grew to hate him perfectly. But that which broke his peace was the  
 Aug. 6. death of his daughter Claypole, who had been always his greatest joy, and who had in her sickness, which was of a nature the physicians knew not how to deal with, had several conferences with him which exceedingly perplexed him. And though nobody was near enough to hear the particulars, yet her often mentioning, in the pains she endured, the blood her father had spilt, made people conclude that she had presented his worst actions to his consideration. And though he never made the least show of remorse for any of those actions, it is very certain that either what she said or her death affected him wonderfully.

146. Whatever it was, about the middle of August he was seized on by a common tertian ague, from which he believed a little ease and divertisement at Hampton Court would have freed him. But the fits grew stronger, and his spirits much  
 Aug. 24. abated; so that he returned again to Whitehall; when his physicians began to think him in danger, though the preachers, who prayed always about him, and told God Almighty what great things he had done for him, and how much more need he had still of his service, declared, as from God, that he should recover; and he himself did not think he should die, till even the time that his spirits failed him; and then declared to them

<sup>1</sup> ['not like,' MS.]

<sup>2</sup> [Robert, grandson of the above-mentioned earl, married the Protector's daughter Frances, Nov. 11, 1657, but died Feb. 16 following.]

that he did appoint his son to succeed him, his eldest son 1658 Richard; and so expired upon the third day of September, (a day Sept. 3. he thought always very propitious to him, and on which he had triumphed for several victories<sup>1</sup>), 1658; a day very memorable for the greatest storm of wind that had ever been known, for some hours before and after his death, which overthrew trees, houses, and made great wrecks at sea, and was so universal, that there [were] terrible effects of it both in France and Flanders, where all people trembled at it; besides the wrecks all along the coast, many boats having been cast away in the very rivers; and within few days after, that circumstance of his death that accompanied that storm was known.

[ 147. He was one of those men *quos vituperare ne inimici quidem possunt nisi ut simul laudent*; [for he could never have done half that mischief without great parts of courage and industry and judgment.] And [he must have had a wonderful understanding in the natures and humours of men, and as great a dexterity in the applying them, who from a private and obscure birth, (though of a good family,) without interest of estate, alliance or friendships, could raise himself to such a height] and compound and knead such opposite and contradictory tempers, humours, and interests, into a consistence that contributed to his designs and to their own destruction; whilst himself grew insensibly powerful enough to cut off those by whom he had climbed, in the instant that they projected to demolish their own building. What Velleius Paterculus said of Cinna may very justly be said of him, *Ausum eum quæ nemo auderet bonus; perfecisse quæ a nullo nisi fortissimo perfici possent*<sup>2</sup>. [Without doubt, no man with more wickedness ever attempted any thing, or brought to pass what he desired more wickedly, more in the face and contempt of religion and moral honesty]; yet [wickedness as great as his could never have accomplished those trophies without the assistance of a great spirit, an admirable circumspection and sagacity, and a most magnanimous resolution.]

148. [When he appeared first in the Parliament, he seemed to

<sup>1</sup> [Dunbar and Worcester.]

<sup>2</sup> [lib. ii. cap. 24.]

1658 have a person in no degree gracious, no ornament of discourse, none of those talents which use to reconcile the affections of the standers by : yet as he grew into place and authority, his parts seemed to be renew[ed], as if he had concealed faculties till he had occasion to use them; and when he was to act the part of a great man, he did it without any indecency through the want of custom.

149<sup>r</sup> After he was confirmed and invested Protector by *The humble Petition and Advice*, he consulted with very few upon any action of importance, nor communicated any enterprise he resolved upon with more than those who were to have principal parts in the execution of it; nor to them sooner than was absolutely necessary. What he once resolved, in which he was not rash, he would not be dissuaded from, nor endure any contradiction of his power and authority, but extorted obedience from them who were not willing to yield it.

150. When he had laid some very extraordinary tax upon the city, one Cony, an eminent fanatic, and one who had heretofore served him very notably, positively refused to pay his part, and loudly dissuaded others from submitting to it, as an imposition notoriously against the law and the propriety of the subject, which all honest men were bound to defend. Cromwell sent for him, and cajoled him with the memory of the old kindness and friendship that had been between them, and that of all men he did not expect this opposition from him, in a matter that was so necessary for the good of the commonwealth. But it was always his fortune to meet with the most rude and obstinate behaviour from those who had formerly been absolutely governed by him, and they commonly put him in mind of some expressions and saying of his own in cases of the like nature; so this man remembered him how great an enemy he had expressed himself to such grievances, and declared that all who submitted to them and paid illegal taxes were more to blame, and greater enemies to their country, than they who imposed them, and that the tyranny of princes could never be grievous but by the tameness and stupidity of the people. When Cromwell saw that he could

<sup>1</sup> [*Hist.*, p. 33.]



not convert him, he told him that he had a will as stubborn as 1658 his, and he would try which of them two should be master; and thereupon, with some terms of reproach and contempt, he committed the man to prison; whose courage was nothing abated by it; but as soon as the term came, he brought his *habeas corpus* in the King's Bench, which they then called the Upper Bench. 1655  
May 13. Maynard, who was of counsel with the prisoner, demanded his liberty with great confidence, both upon the illegality of the commitment, and the illegality of the imposition, as being laid without any lawful authority. The judges could not maintain or defend either, but enough declared what their sentence would be; and therefore the Protector's Attorney required a farther day to answer what had been urged. Before that day, Maynard was committed to the Tower<sup>1</sup>, for presuming May 18. to question or make doubt of his authority; and the judges were sent for, and severely reprehended for suffering that license; and when they with all humility mentioned the law and *Magna Charta*, Cromwell told them, their *magna farta* should not control his actions, which he knew were for the safety of the commonwealth. He asked them who made them judges; [whether<sup>2</sup>] they had any authority to sit there but what he gave them; and that if his authority were at an end, they knew well enough what would become of themselves; and therefore advised them to be more tender of that which could only preserve them, and so dismissed them with caution, that they should not suffer the lawyers to prate what it would not become them to hear.

151. Thus he subdued a spirit that had been often troublesome to the most sovereign power, and made Westminster Hall as obedient and subservient to his commands as any of the rest of his quarters. In all other matters which did not concern the life of his jurisdiction, he seemed to have great reverence for the law, and rarely interposed between party and party. And as he proceeded with this kind of indignation and haughtiness with those who were refractory and dared to contend with his

<sup>1</sup> [together with Cony's other counsel, serj. Thos. Twysden, and Wadham Windham. *Calend. Dom. S. P.* 1655 (1881), p. 168.]

<sup>2</sup> ['where,' MS.]

1658 greatness, so towards those who complied with his good pleasure, and courted his protection, he used a wonderful civility, generosity, and bounty.

152<sup>1</sup>. To reduce three nations, which perfectly hated him, to an entire obedience to all his dictates; to awe and govern those nations by an army that was ind devoted to him and wished his ruin; was an instance of a very prodigious address. But his greatness at home was but a shadow of the glory he had abroad. It was hard to discover which feared him most, France, Spain, or the Low Countries, where his friendship was current at the value he put upon it. And as they did all sacrifice their honour and their interest to his pleasure, so there is nothing he could have demanded that either of them would have denied him. To manifest which, there need only two instances. The first is, when those of the Valley of Lucerne had unwarily rebelled against the duke of Savoy, which gave occasion to the Pope and the neighbour princes of Italy to call and solicit for their extirpation, which their prince positively resolved upon, Cromwell<sup>2</sup> sent his agent<sup>3</sup> to the duke of Savoy, (a prince with whom he had no correspondence or commerce,) and so engaged the cardinal, and even terrified the Pope himself, without so much as doing any grace to the English Catholics, (nothing being more usual than his saying that his ships in the Mediterranean should visit Civita Vieca, and that the sound of his cannon should be heard in Rome,) that the duke of Savoy thought it necessary to restore all that he had taken from them, and did renew all those privileges they had formerly enjoyed and newly forfeited.

1655  
May 26.  
July 29<sup>3</sup>.

153. The other instance of his authority was yet greater, and more incredible. In the city of Nismes, which is one of the fairest in the province of Languedock, and where those of the [reformed] Religion do most abound, there was a great faction at that season when the consuls (who are the chief magistrates) were to be chosen. Those of the Religion had the confidence to set up one of themselves for that magistracy; which they of the Roman religion resolved to oppose with all their power. The dissension between them made so much

<sup>1</sup> [*Life*, p. 549.]

<sup>2</sup> [Samuel Morland.]

<sup>3</sup> [Eplst. Jo. Milton.]

noise, that the intendant of the province, who is the supreme 1658  
minister in all civil affairs throughout the whole province,  
went thither to prevent any disorder that might happen. When  
the day of the election came, those of the Religion possessed 1658.  
themselves with many armed men of the town-house, where Jan. 1  
the election was to be made. The magistrates sent to know  
what their meaning was; to which they answered, they were  
there to give their voices for the choice of the new consuls,  
and to be sure that the election should be fairly made. The  
bishop of the city, the intendant of the province, with all the  
officers of the church, and the present magistrates of the town,  
went together in their robes to be present at the election,  
without any suspicion that there would be any force used.  
When they came near the gate of the town-house, which was  
shut, and they supposed would be opened when they came,  
they within poured out a volley of musket-shot upon them,  
by which the dean of the church and two or three of the  
magistrates of the town were killed upon the place, and very  
many others wounded, whereof some died shortly after. In  
this confusion, the magistrates put themselves into as good  
a posture to defend themselves as they could, without any  
purpose of offending the other, till they should be better pro-  
vided; in order to which they sent an express to the Court  
with a plain relation of the whole matter of fact, and that  
there appeared to be no manner of combination with those  
of the Religion in other places of the province, but that it  
was an insolence in those of the place, upon their presumption  
of their great numbers, which were little inferior to those of  
the Catholics. The Court was glad of the occasion, and re-  
solved that this provocation, in which other places were not  
involved, and which nobody could excuse, should warrant all  
kind of severity in that city, even to the pulling down their  
temples, and expelling many of them for ever out of the city;  
which, with the execution and forfeiture of many of the prin-  
cipal persons, would be a general mortification to all of the  
Religion in France, with whom they were heartily offended.

<sup>1</sup> [See Thurloe's *S. P.*, vi. 727.]

1658 And a part of the army was forthwith ordered to march towards Nismes, to see this executed with the utmost rigour.

154. Those of the Religion in the town were quickly sensible into what condition they had brought themselves, and sent with all possible submission to the magistrates to excuse themselves, and to impute what had been done to the rashness of particular men, who had no order for what they did. The magistrates answered, that they were glad they were sensible of their miscarriage; but they could say nothing upon the subject till the King's pleasure should be known, to whom they had sent a full relation of all that had passed. The other very well knew what the King's pleasure would be, and forthwith sent an express, one Moulins, a Scotchman, who had lived many years in that place and in Montpellier, to Cromwell, to desire his protection and interposition. The express made so much haste, and found so good a reception the first hour he came, that Cromwell, after he had received the whole account, bade him refresh himself after so long a journey, and he would take such care of his business, that by the time he came to Paris he should find it despatched; and that night sent away another messenger to his ambassador Lockhart, who by the time Moulins came thither had so far prevailed with the cardinal, that orders were sent to stop the troops which were upon their march towards Nismes; and within few days after, Moulins returned with a full pardon and amnesty from the King, under the Great Seal of France, so fully confirmed with all circumstances, that there was never farther mention made of it, but all things passed as if there had never been any such thing. So that nobody can wonder that his memory remains still in those parts, and with those people, in great veneration.

155. He would never suffer himself to be denied any thing he ever asked of the cardinal, alleging that the people would not be otherwise satisfied; which he [the cardinal] bore very heavily, and complained of to those with whom he would be free. One day he visited madam Turyn and when he took his leave of her, she, according to her custom, besought him

to continue gracious to the churches. Whereupon the cardinal 1658 told her that he knew not how to behave himself; if he advised the King to punish and suppress their insolence, Cromwell threatened them to join with the Spaniard; and if he shewed any favour to them, at Rome they accounted him an heretic.

[ 156. He was not a man of blood, and totally declined Machiavell's method, which prescribes upon any alteration of a government, as a thing absolutely necessary, to cut off all the heads of those, and extirpate their families, who are friends to the old [one.] And it was confidently reported, that in the council of officers it was more than once proposed that there might be a general massacre of all the royal party, as the only expedient to secure the government, but Cromwell would never consent to it; it may be, out of too much contempt of his enemies. In a word, as he had all the wickednesses against which damnation is denounced and for which hell-fire is prepared, so he had some virtues which have caused the memory of some men in all ages to be celebrated; and he will be looked upon by posterity as a brave bad man.]

THE END OF THE FIFTEENTH BOOK.

## BOOK XVI.

1658 1. <sup>1</sup> CONTRARY to all expectation both at home and abroad, this earthquake was attended with no signal alteration. It was believed that Lambert would be in the head of the army, and that Munk in Scotland would never submit to that subordination. Besides the expectation the King had from the general affection of the kingdom, he had fair promises from men of interest in the kingdom and of command in the army, who professed to prepare for such a conjuncture; and that the disorders arising from hence might dispose Lockhart to depend upon the best title seemed a reasonable expectation: but nothing of this fell out. Never monarch, after he had inherited a crown by many descents, died with more silence, nor with less alteration; the same or a greater calm in the kingdom than had been before.

Sept. 4. 2. The next morning after the death of Oliver, Richard his son was proclaimed his lawful successor. The army congratulate their new general, and renew their vows of fidelity to him; the navy doth the like; the city appears more unanimous for his service than they were for his father[<sup>s</sup>]; and most counties in England, by their addresses under their hands, testified their obedience to their new sovereign without any hesitation. The

Nov. 23. dead is interred in the sepulchre of the kings, and with the obsequies due to such: and his son inherits all his greatness and all his glory, without that public hate that visibly attended the other. Foreign princes addressed their condolences<sup>2</sup> to him, and desired to renew their alliances; and nothing was heard in England but the voice of joy, and large encomiums of their new Protector. So that the King's condition never appeared so hopeless, so desperate; for a more favourable

<sup>1</sup> [*Life*, p. 550.]

<sup>2</sup> ['condoliances,' MS.]

conjuncture they could never expect than this, that had blasted 1659 all their hopes, and confirmed their utmost despair.

3. And it is probable that this melancholic prospect might have continued long, if this child of fortune could have sat still, and been contented to have enjoyed his own felicity. But his council thought it necessary that he should call a Parlia- Dec. 4.  
ment, to confirm what they had already given him, and to dispel all clouds which might arise. And there seemed to be the more reason for it, because the last alliance which Oliver had made, and of which he was fonder than of all the rest, with the Crown of Sweden, did oblige him in the spring to send a strong fleet into the Sound, to assist that King against Denmark; at least to oblige Denmark, by way of mediation, to accept of such conditions as the other would be willing to give him. And this could hardly be done without some assistance by Parliament; and therefore he sent out his writs to call a Parliament, to meet together on the 27th day of January, till which day, for the full space of four months, he remained as great a prince as ever his father had been. He followed the model that was left him, and sent out his writs to call those as peers who had constituted the other House in the former Parliament. And so both Lords and Commons met at the day assigned.

4. Richard came to his Parliament in the same state that Oliver his father had used to do; and sent the gentleman 1659  
usher of the black rod to the Commons, that they should Jan. 27.  
attend him in the other House; where, first by himself, and then by his Keeper of his seal, Nathaniel Fynes, he recommended to them the prosecution of the war with Spain and the assistance of the King of Sweden in the Sound. And he had so good fortune at the entrance, that all the Commons signed an engagement not to alter the present government. But they were no sooner enclosed within those walls but there appeared the old republical spirit, though more wary than it had used to be. It began to enquire into the accounts, how Feb. 3.  
the money had been spent; enquired into the offices of excise and customs, and what was become of all that money. When they were called upon to settle the Act of recognition, to

1659 confirm him and his authority in the State, they would first  
 Feb. 8. inform themselves of their own authority, and how far the  
 government was already settled, and what part was fit to be  
 Feb. 19- assigned to the other House; which they would by no means  
 March 28. allow to be a part of the government already established, and  
 which they had promised not to alter. And upon this argu-  
 ment they exercised themselves with great license, as well  
 upon the creator of those peers, the power of the late Pro-  
 tector, as upon his creatures the peers; of whose dignity they  
 were not tender, but handled them according to the quality  
 they had been of, not that which they were in. They put  
 them in mind how grievous it had been to the kingdom that  
 the bishops had sat in the House of Peers, because they were  
 looked upon as so many votes for the King; which was a reason  
 much stronger against these men, who were all the work of the  
 Protector's own hands, and therefore could not but be entirely  
 addicted and devoted to his interest. They concluded, that they  
 could not with good consciences, and without the guilt of perjury,  
 ever consent that that House should have any part in the govern-  
 ment, since they had all taken the engagement that there should  
 be no more any House of Peers, and that the office of the Pro-  
 tector had been, and might still continue, without it.

5. Notwithstanding all this confidence, which disturbed the  
 method intended to be proceeded in, this violent party could  
 March 28. not prevail, but it was carried by the major part of the House<sup>1</sup>  
 that they would meet and confer with the other House, as a  
 part of the Parliament during this present Parliament; and  
 likewise that such other persons who had a right to come to  
 that other House, and had not forfeited it by their breach of  
 trust, (by which they meant those lords who had been always  
 against the King,) should not be restrained from coming  
 thither. Yet the temper of the House could hardly be judged  
 by all this. Some things were done which looked like condescen-  
 sion to the royal party, but more for the countenance of the  
 Presbyterians; and whatsoever contradicted those who were for  
 a republic was looked upon as favourable to the Protector.

<sup>1</sup> [by 198 to 125.]



6. The stirring these several humours, and the drowsy 1659 temper of Richard, raised another spirit in the army. A new council of officers met together by their own authority, and admitted Lambert, though no member of the army, to sit with them: they neither liked Protector nor Parliament, but consulted what government to settle, that might be better than either: yet they would not incense them both together, nor appear to have any disinclination to Richard, who had many of his nearest friends amongst them. They therefore prepared an address to him; in which they complained of the great arrears of pay that was due to the army, by which they were in great straits: that they who had borne the brunt of the war, and undergone all the difficulties and dangers of it, were now undervalued, derided, and laid aside: that the good old cause was ill spoken of, and traduced by malignants and disaffected persons, who grew every day more insolent, and their numbers increased by the resort out of Flanders and other places, and that they had several secret meetings in the city of London: that the names of all those who had sat upon the late King as his judges were lately printed in red letters<sup>1</sup>, and scattered abroad as if they were designed to destruction; and that many suits were commenced at common law against honest men for what they had transacted in the war as soldiers: that those famous acts which had been performed in the Long Parliament, and by the late Protector, were censured, railed at, and vilified. By all which, they said, it was very manifest that the good old cause was declined, which they were resolved to assert. And therefore they besought his highness to present those things to the Parliament, and to require proper and speedy remedies.

7. And this address was delivered from the army by Fleet-wood to Richard in April, 1659; which was no sooner known, but Titchborne and Ireton, two aldermen of London, and principal commanders of that militia, drew up likewise another remonstrance, which they sent to the council of officers; in April 20<sup>th</sup>. which they declared their resolutions with the army to stick to

<sup>1</sup> [The words 'in red letters' are not in the address as printed by H. Hills at the time.]

<sup>2</sup> [Whitelocke's *Memorials*.]

1659 the good old cause, and that they were resolved to accompany them in whatsoever they should do for the nation's good.

8. The Parliament was quickly alarmed with these cabals of the army and the city, which Richard was as much terrified with as they. And in order to the suppression thereof, the Parliament voted, that there should be no meeting or general council of officers without the Protector's consent, and by his order; and that no person should have command by sea or land, in either of the three nations, who did not immediately subscribe that he would not disturb the free meeting of Parliament, or of any members in either House of Parliament, or obstruct their freedom in debates and counsels.

April 18.

9. These votes, or to this effect, were sent to Richard, and by him presently to Wallingford House, where the council of officers then sat. These were men who resolved to execute as well as order, and knew well that they were gone much too far if they went no farther: and therefore they no sooner received these votes, but they sent Fleetwood and Desborough (the one had married his sister<sup>1</sup>, the other was his uncle<sup>2</sup>, both raised by Cromwell) to Richard, to advise him forthwith to dissolve the Parliament. They were two upon whose affection, in regard to the mereness of their alliance, and the obligation [to] and dependence upon his father, he had as much reason to be confident as of any men's in the nation. Fleetwood used no arguments but of conscience, to prevent the nation's being engaged in blood; which would inevitably fall out if the Parliament were not presently dissolved. Desborough, a fellow of a rough and rude temper, treated him only with threats and menaces; told him it was impossible for him to keep both the Parliament and the army his friends; wished him to choose which he would: if he dissolved the Parliament out of hand, he had the army at his devotion; if he refused that, he believed the army would quickly pull him out of Whitehall.

10. The poor man had not spirit enough to discern what was best for him, and yet he was not without friends to counsel

<sup>1</sup> [the eldest, Bridget, widow of Ireton.]

<sup>2</sup> [by marriage with Jane, his father's sister, June 23, 1636.]

him if he had been capable to receive counsel, besides many 1659 members of the Parliament, of courage and interest, who repaired to him with assurance that the Parliament would continue firm to him, and destroy the ringleaders of this seditious crew, if he would adhere to it; on the other hand, if he were prevailed upon to dissolve it, he would be left without a friend, and they who had compelled him to do so imprudent an action would contemn him when he had done it. Some officers of the army, of equal courage and interest with most of the rest, persuaded him to reject the desire of those who called themselves the council of the army, and to think of punishing their presumption. Ingol[d]sby, Whal[e]y, and Goffe, three colonels of the army, and the two former men of signal courage, offered to stand by him; and one of them offered to kill Lambert, whom they looked upon as the author of this conspiracy, if he would give him a warrant to that purpose.

11. Richard continued irresolute, now and then inclined one way, and then another way. But in the end, Desborough and his companions prevailed with him, before they parted, to sign a commission, which they had caused to be prepared, to Nathaniel Fynes, his Keeper of his seal, to dissolve the Parliament the next morning. Of which the Parliament having April 22. notice, they resolved not to go up, so that when Fynes sent for them to the other House, the Commons shut the door of the house, and would not suffer the gentleman usher of the black rod to come in, but adjourned themselves for three days, till the 25th of April, imagining that they should by that time convert the Protector from destroying himself. But the poor creature was so hared by the council of officers, that he presently caused a proclamation to be issued out, by which he April 23. did declare the Parliament to be dissolved. And from that minute nobody resorted to him, nor was the name of the Protector afterwards heard of but in derision; the council of officers appointing guards to attend at Westminster, which kept [out] those members, who, in pursuance of their adjournment, would have entered into the house upon the day appointed. And thus the extreme pusillanimity of the son suffered

1650 himself to be stripped in one moment of all the greatness and power which the father had acquired in so many years with wonderful courage, industry, and resolution.

12. When the council of officers had with this strange success, having no authority but what they gave one another, rid themselves of a superior, or, as the phrase then was, removed the *single person*; knowing that they could not long hold the government in their own hands, if, before any thing else, they did not remove Ingol[d]sby, Whal[e]y, Goffe, and those other officers who had dissuaded Richard to submit to their advice, from having any command in the army, [this]<sup>1</sup> they therefore did; and replaced Lambert, and all the rest who had been cashiered by Cromwell, into their own charges again. So that the army was become republical to the[ir] wish; and that the government might return to be purely such, they published a

May 6. declaration upon the 6th May, wherein (after a large preamble in commendation of the good old cause, and excusing themselves for having been instrumental in declining from it, from whence all the ills the commonwealth had sustained had proceeded, and the vindication whereof they were resolved to pursue for the future) they remembered that the Long Parliament, consisting of those members who had continued to sit till the 20th of April 1653, (which was the day that Cromwell, with the assistance of these very officers, had pulled them out of the House and dismissed them,) had been eminent assertors of that cause, and had a special presence of God with them, and were signally blessed in that work, the desires of many good people concurring with them, they did by that declaration, according to their duty, invite those members to return to the discharge of their trust, as they had done before that day; and that they should be ready, in their places, to yield them their utmost assistance, that they might sit and consult in safety, for the settling and securing the peace and quiet of the commonwealth, for which they had now so good an opportunity.

13. This was the only way in which they could all agree, though it was not suitable to what most of them desired: and

<sup>1</sup> ['which,' MS.]

they well foresaw that they might give an opportunity to more 1659 people to come together than would be for their benefit, for that all the surviving members of that Parliament would pretend a title to sit there: and therefore they did not only carefully limit the convention to such members who had continued to sit from January 1648 to April 1653, but caused a guard likewise to attend, to hinder and keep the other members from entering into the House. And when Lenthall, the old Speaker, with forty or fifty of those old members specified in the declaration, took their places in the House, and some of the old excluded members likewise got in, and entered into debate with them upon the matters proposed, the House was adjourned till the next day: and then better care was taken, by appointing such persons who well knew all the members, to inform the guards who were and who were not to go into the House. And by this means, only that cabal was suffered to enter which had first formed the commonwealth, and fostered it for near five years after it was born. So that the return of the government into these men's hands again seemed to all men to be the most dismal change that could happen, and to pull up all the hopes of the King by the roots <sup>1</sup>.

14. We must, for the better observation and distinction of the several changes in the government, call this congregation

<sup>1</sup> [The following passage is here struck out in the MS., as it is virtually repeated below, in § 75, in better connection with the text. 'And it did for the present make so deep an impression in the hearts of many, that when an overture was at this time made from Spain to make the duke of York admiral of his galleys, which the King for many reasons suspended giving his consent unto, the chief servants about his royal highness were so transported with the proposition, that they were very much troubled that their master made not all the haste that was possible to be possessed of the charge; and endeavoured all they could to persuade the duke that they who prevailed with the King not to give his consent were his enemies, and would not have him to be [in] a condition in which he might be able to live like a prince. And when in discourse they were desired to consider that if the duke went into Spain he could not be permitted to enter into that charge, what title soever he might have given to him, unless he changed his religion and became Catholic, and what the consequence of that might be in England, they were so far from being moved with the argument, and in that despair of ever seeing England, that they thought the religion of it not worth the insisting on.']

- 1659 of men, who were now repossessed of the government, by the style they called themselves, *the Parliament*, how far soever they were from being one. They resolved in the first place to vindicate and establish their own authority, which they could not think to be firm whilst there was still a Protector, or the name of a Protector, in being, and residing in Whitehall. They
- May 16. appointed therefore a committee to go to Richard Cromwell, and, that he might have hope that they would be his good masters, first to inquire into the state of his debts, and then to demand of him whether he acquiesced in the present government.
- May 25. 15. He, already humbled to that poverty of spirit they could wish, gave the committee a paper, in which he said was contained the state of his debts, and how contracted; which amounted to twenty-nine thousand pounds and six hundred and forty. And to the other question his answer was likewise in writing; That he trusted his carriage and behaviour had manifested his acquiescence in the will and good pleasure of God, and that he loved and valued the peace of the commonwealth much above his private concernment; desiring by this, that a measure of his future comportment might be taken, which, by the blessing of God, should be such as should bear the same witness; he having, he hoped, in some degree learned rather to reverence and submit to the hand of God than be unquiet under it: that, as to the late providence that had fallen out, however in respect to the particular engagement that lay upon him he could not be active in making a change in the government of the nations, yet, through the goodness of God, he could freely acquiesce in it, being made; and did hold himself obliged, as, with other men, he might expect protection from the present government, so to demean himself with all peaceableness under it, and to procure, to the uttermost of his power, that all in whom he had interest should do the same.
16. This satisfied them as to Richard; but they were not without apprehension that they should find a more refractory spirit in his brother Harry, who was Lieutenant of Ireland,

and looked upon as a man of another air and temper. He had 1659 in his exercise of that government, by the jolliness of his humour, and a general civility towards all, and very particularly obliging some, rendered himself gracious and popular to all sorts of people, and might have been able to have made some contests with them. But as soon as he received an order June 7. from them to attend them in person, he thought not fit to be June 15. wiser than his elder brother, and came over to them even sooner than they expected, and laid his commission at their July 4. feet; which they accepted, and put the government of that kingdom into the hands of Ludlow and four other commissioners<sup>1</sup>.

17<sup>2</sup>. It may not prove ingrateful to the reader, in this place, to entertain him with a very pleasant story that related to this miserable Richard, though long afterwards, because there will not be again any occasion so much as to mention him during the continuance of this relation. Shortly after the King's return, and the manifest joy that possessed the whole kingdom thereupon, this poor creature found it necessary to transport himself into France, more for fear of his debts than of the King, who thought it not necessary to inquire after a man who had been so long forgotten. After he had lived some years in Paris untaken notice of, indeed unknown, living in a most obscure condition in disguise, and not owning his own name, nor having above one servant to attend him, he thought it necessary, upon the first rumour and apprehension that there was like to be a war between England and France, to quit that kingdom, and to remove to some place that would be neutral to either party, and so pitched upon Geneva; and made his way thither by Bourdeaux; and through the province of Languedock, he passed through Pissenas, [Pezenas] a very pleasant town belonging to the prince of Conty who hath a fair palace there, and, being then governor of Languedock, made his residence there.

<sup>1</sup> [Five commissioners, without Ludlow, whose name was rejected on July 7, the day on which the Act for the Commissioners for Ireland was passed. But Ludlow was appointed commander-in-chief for Ireland on July 4.]

<sup>2</sup> [*Hist.*, p. 31.]

1659 18. In this place Richard made some stay, and walking abroad to entertain himself with the view of the situation, and of many things worth the seeing, he met with a person who well knew him, and was well known by him, the other having always been of his father's and of his party; so that they were glad enough to find themselves together. The other told him, that all strangers who came to that town used to wait upon the prince of Conti, the governor of the province; who expected it, and always treated all strangers, and particularly all the English, with much civility; that he need not be known, but that he would first go to the prince, and inform him that another English gentleman was passing through that town towards Italy, who would be glad to have the honour to kiss his hands. The prince received him with great civility and grace, according to his natural custom, and, after few words, began to discourse of the affairs of England, and asked many questions concerning the King, and whether all men were quiet, and submitted obediently to him; which the other answered shortly according to the truth. 'Well,' said the prince, 'Oliver, though he was a traitor and a villain, was a brave fellow, and had great parts, great courage, and was worthy to command; but that Richard, that coxcomb, cockayn [*coquin*], poltroon, was surely the basest fellow alive. What is become of that fool? how was it possible he could be such a sot?' He answered, 'that he was betrayed by those whom he most trusted, and who had been most obliged by his father;' and, being weary of his visit, quickly took his leave, and the next morning left the town, out of fear that the prince might know that he was the very fool and coxcomb he had mentioned so kindly. And within two days after the prince did come to know who it was whom he had treated so well, and whom before, by his behaviour, he had believed to be a man not very glad of the King's restoration.

May 12. 19<sup>1</sup>. Munk from Scotland presented his obedience to them [the Parliament,] and the assurance of the fidelity of the army under his command to all their determinations. The navy con-

<sup>1</sup> [*Life*, p. 554.]



gratulated their return to the sovereign power, and tendered <sup>1659</sup> their submission. The ambassadors who were in the town <sup>May 27.</sup> quickly received new credentials, and then had audience from them as their good allies, they making all their professions to them which they had formerly done to Oliver and Richard. And they continued Lockhart as their ambassador in France, as a man who could best cajole the cardinal, and knew well the bowels of that Court. They sent ambassadors <sup>1</sup> to the Sound, <sup>June 9.</sup> to mediate a peace between those two Crowns, being resolved to decline all occasions of expense abroad, that they might the better settle their government at home. And to that purpose they were willing to put an end to the war with Spain, without parting with any thing that had been taken from it, which would not consist with their honour. And that they might thoroughly unite their friends of the army to them, they passed <sup>July 12.</sup> an Act of indemnity to pardon all their former transgressions and tergiversations, which had been the cause of their former dissolution, and of all the mischieves which had followed.

20. And now there appeared as great a calm as ever, and the government as well settled to the general content of the people, who testified the same by their general acclamations, and likewise by particular addresses. And that they might be sure to be liable to no more affronts, they would no more make a general, which might again introduce a single person; the thought of which, or of any thing that might contribute towards it, they most heartily abhorred. And to make it impossible, they appointed the Speaker to execute the <sup>June 6.</sup> office of general in such manner as they should direct, and that all commissions should be granted by him, and sealed with their own seal, all the seals used by Cromwell being broken. And accordingly all the officers of the army and navy (for the Speaker was admiral as well as general) delivered up their commissions, and took new in the form that was prescribed. So that now they saw not how their empire could be shaken.

<sup>1</sup> [Algernon Sydney, Sir Rob. Honeywood, Edw. Mountague, and Thomas Boone. Whitelocke was also proposed, at first, in the Council of Stats, but declined the commission.]

1659 21. But these men had not sat long in their old places but they called to mind how they had been used after they had been deposed, the reproaches and the contempt they underwent from all kinds of people; but above all, the scoffs and derision they suffered from the King's party, when they saw them reduced to the same level in power and authority. And though the smart they felt from others vexed and angered them as much, yet they were content to suspend their revenge towards them that they might with less control exercise their tyranny over the poor broken cavaliers. So they made a present order to banish all who had ever manifested any affection to the King or his father twenty miles from London, and revived all those orders they had formerly made, and which Cromwell had abolished or forbore to execute, by which many persons were committed to prisons, for offences which they thought had been forgotten. And the consequences of these proceedings awakened those of another *classis* to apprehensions of what they might be made liable to. The soldiers were very merry at their new general, and thought it necessary he should march with them upon the next adventure; and the officers thought they had deserved more than an Act of indemnity for restoring them to such a sovereignty. In a word, as they remembered how they had been used, so all other people remembered how they had used them, and could not bring themselves to look with reverence upon those whom for above four years together they had derided and contemned.

22. This universal temper raised the spirits again of the King's friends, who found very many of those who had heretofore served the Parliament and been afterwards disobliged by Cromwell very desirous to enter into amity with them, and to make a firm conjunction with them towards the King's establishment. Those members of the Long Parliament who after the treaty of the Isle of Wight were by violence kept from the House, took it in great indignation, that those upon whom the same violence was practised afterwards which they had first countenanced upon them, should not restore them, being now restored themselves, and were ready to embrace any

occasion to disturb their new governors; to which they were 1659 the more encouraged by the common discourses of the soldiers, who declared, that if there were any commotion in the kingdom, they would go no farther to suppress it than Mr. Lenthall should lead them.

23. Mr. Mordant, who had so lately his head upon the block, was more active than any man, and was so well trusted by men of all conditions, upon the courage of his former behaviour, that he had in truth very full engagements from very good men in most quarters of the kingdoms, that if the King would assign them a day, and promise to come to them after they were embodied, they would not fail to appear at the day. Whereupon he ventured himself to come in disguise to the King to Bruxells, to give him a clear account how his business stood, and what probability there was of success, and likewise to complain of the want of forwardness in those upon whose persons the King most relied to encourage other men, and that his majesty might by him require them to concur with the rest. It appeared by the account he gave, that there were very few counties in England where there was not a formal undertaking by the most powerful men of that country to possess themselves of some considerable place in that county; and if any of them succeeded, the opportunity would be fairer for the King to venture his own person than he had yet had, or than he was like to have if he suffered those who were now in the government to be settled in it.

24. That which was best digested, and in respect of the undertakers most like to succeed, [was<sup>1</sup>] first, the surprisal and possessing of Lynn, a maritime town, of great importance in respect of the situation and likewise of the good affection of all the gentlemen of the parts adjacent. This was undertaken by the lord Willoughby of Parham, with the consent and approbation of sir Horatio Townesend, who, being a gentleman of the greatest interest and credit in that large county of Norfolk, was able to bring in a good body of men to possess it. The former had served the Parliament, and was in great credit with

<sup>1</sup> ['were,' MS.]

1659 the Presbyterians, and so less liable to suspicion; the latter had been under age till long after the end of [the] war, and so liable to no reproach or jealousy, yet of very worthy principles, and of a noble fortune, which he engaged very frankly to borrow money, which he laid out to provide arms and ammunition; and all the King's friends in those parts were ready to obey those persons in whatsoever they undertook.

25. Another design, which was looked upon as ripe too, was the surprisal of Gloster, a town very advantageously situated upon the river of Severn, and would have great influence upon Bristol and Worcester, both which, persons of the best interest undertook to secure as soon as Gloster should be possessed: which major general Mass[e]y, who had been formerly governor thereof, and defended it too well against the King, made no question he should be able to do, having been in the town *incognito*, and conferred with his friends there, and lay concealed in the adjacent places, till the day should be appointed for the execution of it; of all which he sent the King an account; nor did there appear much difficulty in the point, there being no garrison in either of the places.

26. The lord Newport, Littleton, and the gentlemen of Shropshire, were ready at the same time to secure Shrewsbury; and for the making that communication perfect, sir George Booth, a person of the best fortune and interest in Cheshire, and, for the memory of his grandfather, of absolute power with the Presbyterians, promised to possess himself of the city and castle of Chester. And sir Thomas Middleton, who had likewise served the Parliament, and was a man of the best fortune and interest in North Wales, was ready to join with sir George Booth; and both of them to unite entirely with the King's party in those parts. In the west, Arrundell, Pollard, Green-vill, and the rest of Cornwall and Devonshire, hoped to possess Plimmoth, but were sure of Exciter. Other undertakings there were in the north, by men very ready to venture all they had.

27. When the King received this account in gross from a person well instructed, and whereof he had by retail received

much from the persons concerned, (for it was another cir- 1659  
cumstance of the looseness of the present government, that  
messengers went forward and backward with all security,) and  
likewise found by Mr. Mordant that all things were now gone  
so far that there was no retreat, and therefore that the  
resolution was general, that, though any discovery should be  
made and any persons imprisoned, the rest should proceed as  
soon as the day should be appointed by the King, his majesty  
resolved that he would adventure his own person, and would be  
ready *incognito* at Calice upon such a day of the month, and  
that his brother the duke of York should be likewise there, or  
very near; to the end that they might from thence, upon the  
intelligence of the success of that day, which was likewise then  
appointed, dispose<sup>1</sup> themselves, one to one place, and the other  
to another.

28. There was in this conjuncture a very unhappy accident,  
which did do much harm, and might have done much more.  
From the death of Oliver, they who were in the secretest part  
of affairs discerned evidently that their new Protector would  
never be able to bear the burden, and so thought how they  
might do such service to the King that might merit from him.  
One who had a part in the office of secrecy<sup>2</sup>, sent an express  
to the King, to inform him of many particulars of moment, and  
to give him some advices, what his majesty was to do which was  
reasonable and prudent to be done. He sent him word what  
persons might be induced to serve him, and what way he was  
to take to induce them to it, and what other persons would  
never do it, what professions soever they might make. He  
made offer of his service to his majesty, and constantly to  
advertise him of whatsoever was necessary for him to know;  
and as an instance of his fidelity and his usefulness, he adver-  
tised his majesty of a person who was much trusted by him and  
constantly betrayed him, that he received a large pension from  
Cromwell, and that he constantly gave Thurloc<sup>3</sup> intelligence of  
all that he knew, but that it was with so great circumspection

<sup>1</sup> ['they might dispose,' MS.]

<sup>2</sup> [Samuel Morland.]

<sup>3</sup> ['Thurlough,' MS.]

1659 that he was never seen in his presence : that in his contract he had promised to make such discoveries as should prevent any danger to the State, but that he would never endanger any man's life, nor be produced to give in evidence against any ; and that this very person had discovered the marquis of Ormonde's being in London the last year to Cromwell, but could not be induced to discover where his lodging was ; only undertook his journey should be ineffectual, and that he should quickly return ; and then they might take him if they could, to which he would not contribute ; to conclude, his majesty was desired to trust this man no more, and to give his friends notice of it for their caution and indemnity.

29. The King, and they who were most trusted by him in his secret transactions, believed not this information, but concluded that it was contrived to amuse him, and to distract all his affairs by a jealousy of those who were intrusted in the conduct of them. The gentleman accused<sup>1</sup> had from the beginning to the end of the war given testimony of his duty and allegiance, and was universally thought to be superior to all temptation of infidelity. He was a gentleman, was very well bred, and of very good parts, a courage eminently known, and a very good officer, and in truth of so general a good reputation, that if the King had professed to have any doubt of his honesty his friends would have thought he had received ill infusions without any ground ; and he had given a very late testimony of his sincerity by concealing the marquis of Ormonde, who had communicated more with him than with any man in England during his being there. On the other side, all the other information and advice that was sent was very important, and could have no end but his majesty's service ; and the offices which the gentleman offered to perform for the future were of that consequence that they could not be overvalued. This intelligence could not be sent with a hope of getting money ; for the present condition of him who sent it was so good that he expected no reward till the King should be enabled to give it ; and he who was sent in the errand was likewise a gentleman who did not look for the charges of

<sup>1</sup> [Sir Richard Willis.]

his journey: and how could it have been known that that 1659 person had been trusted by the marquis of Ormonde if he had not discovered it himself?

30. In this perplexity, his majesty would not depart from his confidence in that gentleman [accused]. As to all other particulars he confessed himself much satisfied in the information he had received, acknowledged the great service, and made all those promises which were necessary in such a case; only frankly declared, that nothing could convince him of the infidelity of that gentleman, or make him withdraw his trust from him, but the evidence of his handwriting, which was well known. This messenger no sooner returned to London but July. another was despatched, with all that manifestation of the truth of what had been before informed, that there remained no more room to doubt. A great number of his letters were sent, whereof the character was well known; and the intelligence communicated was of such things as were known to very few besides that person himself.

31. One thing was observed throughout the whole, that he never communicated any thing in which there was a necessity to name any man who was of the King's party and had been always so reputed: but what was undertaken by any of the Presbyterian party, or by any who had been against the King, was poured out to the life. Amongst those, he gave information of Mass[e]y's design upon Gloster, and of his being concealed in some place near the same. If at any time he named any who had been of the King's party, it was only of them who were satisfied with what they had done, how little soever, and resolved to adventure no more. Whereupon very many were imprisoned in several places, and great noise of want of secrecy or treachery in the King's councils; which reproach fell upon those who were about the person of the King.

32. It was a new perplexity to the King that he knew not by what means to communicate this treason to his friends, lest the discovery of it might likewise come to light; which must ruin a person of merit, and disappoint his majesty of that service which must be of that huge moment. In this conjuncture

1659 Mr. Mordant came to Bruxells, and informed his majesty of all July. those particulars relating to the posture his friends were in which are mentioned before; and amongst the other orders he desired, one was, that somewhat might be sent to that knot of men whereof the accused person was one, who he said were looked upon as principally trusted by his majesty, and were all men of honour, but so wary and incredulous, that others were much discouraged by their coldness; and therefore wished that they might be quickened, and required to concur with the most forward. Hereupon the King asked him what he thought of such a one, naming the person. Mr. Mordant answered, it was of him they complained principally; who, they thought, was the cause of all the wariness in the rest, who looked upon him not only as an excellent officer but as a prudent and discreet man, and therefore, for the most part, all debates were referred to him; and he was so much given to objections, and to raising difficulties, and making things unpracticable, that most men had an unwillingness to make any proposition to him. The King asked him whether he had any suspicion of his want of honesty. The other answered, that he was so far from any such suspicion, that, though he did not take him to be his friend, by reason of the many disputes and contradictions frequently between them, he would put his life into his hand to-morrow.

33. It was not thought reasonable that Mr. Mordant should return into England with a confidence in this man, and therefore his majesty freely told all he knew but the way by which he knew it, or that he had his very letters in his own hand, which would quickly have discovered how he came by them; and charged him no farther to communicate with that person, and to give his friends such caution as might not give a greater disturbance to his affairs by raising new factions amongst them, or provoke him to do more mischief, which was in his power to do. But for all this there was another expedient found; for by the time Mr. Mordant returned to London, the person who gave the King the advertisement, out of his own wisdom, and knowledge of the ill consequence of that trust, caused papers to be posted up in several places, by which all persons were warned not to



look upon such a man (who was named) as faithful to the King, 1659 but as one who betrayed all that he was trusted with<sup>1</sup>; which in the general had some effect, though many worthy men still continued their intimacy with him, and communicated with him all they knew to be resolved.

34. It was towards the end of June<sup>2</sup> that Mr. Mordant left Bruxells, with a resolution that there should be a general rendezvous throughout England of all who would declare for the King, upon a day named, about the middle of July, there being Aug. 1. commissions in every county directed to six or seven known men, with authority to them to choose one to command in chief in that county, till they should make a conjunction with other forces who had a superior commission from the King. And those commissioners had in their hands plenty of commissions under the King's hand, for regiments and governments, to distribute to such as they judged fit to receive them; which was the best model (how liable soever to exception) that in so distracted a state of affairs could be devised.

35. The King, as is said, resolved at the day appointed to be at Calice; which resolution was kept with [so] great secrecy at Bruxells, that, towards the time, his majesty had left the town before it was suspected, and when he was gone, it was as little known whither he was gone; there being as much care taken to have it concealed from being known in France as in England. Therefore, as the King went out in the morning, so the duke of York Aug. 1<sup>3</sup>. went out in the afternoon, another way, his highness his motion being without any suspicion or notice, by reason of his command in the army. The King went attended by the marquis of Ormonde, the earl of Bristol, (who was the guide, being well acquainted with the frontiers on both sides,) and two or three servants, all *incognito* and as companions; and they found their way to Calice, where they stayed. The duke of York, with four

<sup>1</sup> [Mordaunt and Titus in a letter to Hyde of  $\frac{1}{8}$  July from London say that on the day of their arrival at London a 'scandalous libel' was set up at the Exchange in prejudice of Willis, as intimating his treacherous correspondence. *Clar. MSS.*]

<sup>2</sup> [beginning of July.]

<sup>3</sup> [*Calend. Dom. S. P.*, 1659-60, pp. 81, 82.]

1659 or five of his own menial servants, and the lord Langdale, who desired to attend his highness, went to Bulloigne [Boulogne]; where he remained with equal privacy; and [they] corresponded with each other.

36. The affairs in England had no prosperous aspect; every post brought news of many persons of honour and quality committed to several prisons throughout the kingdom before the day appointed; which did not terrify the rest. The day itself was accompanied with very unusual weather at that season of the year, being the middle of July. The night before had an excessive rain, which continued all the next day, with so terrible a cold high wind that the winter had seldom so great a storm: so that the persons who over England were drawing to their appointed rendezvous were infinitely dismayed, and met with many cross accidents; some mistook the place, and went some whither else, others went where they should be and were weary of expecting those who should have been there.

July 31. 37. In the beginning of the night, when Mass[e]y was going for Gloster, a troop of the army beset the house where he was, and took him prisoner; and putting him before one of the troopers well guarded, they made haste to carry him to a place where he might be secure. But that tempestuous night had so much of good fortune in it, that, in the darkest part of it, the troop marching down a very steep hill<sup>1</sup> with woods on both sides, he, either by his activity or the connivance of the soldier who was upon the same horse with him, found means that, in the steepest of the descent, they both fell from the horse, and he disentangled himself from the embraces of the other, and, being strong and nimble, got into the woods, and so escaped out of their hands, though his design was broken.

38. Of all the enterprises for the seizing upon strong places only one succeeded, which was that undertaken by sir George Booth; all the rest failed. The lord Willoughby of Parram, and sir Horace Townesend, and most of their friends, were apprehended before the day, and made prisoners, most of them

<sup>1</sup> [Nymphsfield hill.]

upon general suspicions, as men able to do hurt. Only sir 1659  
George Booth, being a person of the best quality and fortune of  
that county of those who had never been of the King's party,  
came into Chester, with such persons as he thought fit to take  
with him, the night before: so that though the tempestuousness  
of the night and the next morning had the same effect as in  
other places to break or disorder the rendezvous, that was ap-  
pointed within four or five miles of that city, yet being himself  
there with a good troop of horse that he brought with him, and  
finding others, though not in the number he looked for, he  
retired with those he had into Chester, where his party was  
strong enough: and sir Thomas Middleton, having kept his  
rendezvous, came thither to him, and brought strength enough  
with him to keep those parts at their devotion, and to suppress  
all who had inclination to oppose them.

39. Then they published their Declaration, rather against  
those who called themselves the Parliament and usurped the  
government by the power of the army, than owning directly  
the King's interests; and desiring well affected men of all  
conditions, especially the city of London, to join with them,  
in order to the calling a free Parliament, for settling the  
government of the nation in Church and State, to the  
determinations whereof they would willingly submit, and  
lay down their arms; with those expressions which they  
knew would be most acceptable to the Presbyterians, but  
giving all countenance and reception, and all imaginable  
assurance, to the King's party, who had all direction from  
the King to concur and to unite themselves to them.

40. What disappointments soever there were in other places,  
the fame of this action of these two gentlemen raised the spirits  
of all men. And they who were at liberty renewed their  
former designs; and they who could not promise themselves  
places of refuge prepared themselves to march to Chester, if  
sir George Booth did not draw nearer with his army; which in  
truth he meant to have done, if the appointments which had  
been made had been observed. But when he heard that all  
other places failed, and of the multitude of persons imprisoned,

1659 upon whose assistance he most depended, he was in great apprehension that he had begun the work too soon; and though his numbers increased every day, he thought it best to keep the post he was in, till he knew what was like to be done elsewhere.

41. This fire was kindled in a place which the Parliament least suspected, and therefore they were the more alarmed at the news of it, and knew it would spread far if it were not quickly quenched; and they had now too soon use of their army, in which they had not confidence. There were many officers whom they had much rather trust than Lambert, but there was none they thought could do their business so well; Aug. 5. so they made choice of him to march with such troops as he liked, and with the greatest expedition, to suppress this new rebellion, which they saw had many friends. They had formerly sent for two regiments out of Ireland, which they knew more devoted to the republican interest, and those they appointed Lambert to join with. He undertook the charge very willingly, being desirous to renew his credit with the soldiers, who had loved to be under his command, because, though he was strict in discipline, he provided well for them, and was himself brave upon any action. He cared to take nothing with him that might hinder his march, which he resolved should be very swift, to prevent the increase of the enemy in numbers. And he did make incredible haste; so that sir George Booth found he was [with]in less than a day's march before he thought he could have been half the way. Sir George himself had not been acquainted with the war, and the officers who were with him were not of one mind or humour; yet all were desirous to fight, (the natural infirmity of the nation, which could never endure the view of an enemy without engaging in a battle,) and instead of retiring into the town, which they might have defended against a much greater army than Lambert had with him longer than he could stay before it, Aug. 19. they marched to meet him, and were after a short encounter routed by him, and totally broken, so that the next day the gates of Chester were opened to him; sir George Booth himself

making his flight in a disguise, but was taken upon the way<sup>1</sup>, 1659  
and sent prisoner to the Tower. Aug. 24.

42. Lambert prosecuted the advantage he had got, and marched into North Wales, whither sir Thomas Middleton was retired with his troops to a strong castle of his own<sup>2</sup>; and he thought neither the man nor the place were to be left behind him. But it was to no purpose for one man to oppose a whole kingdom, where all other persons appeared subdued. And therefore, after a day or two making show of resistance, he made such conditions as he could obtain, and suffered his Aug. 24.  
goodly house for the strength of the situation to be pulled down.

43. And this success put an end to all endeavours of force in England; and the army had nothing to do but to take all persons prisoners whose looks they did not like, so that all prisons in England were filled; whilst the Parliament, exalted with their conquest, consulted what persons they would execute, and how they should confiscate the rest; by means thereof they made no doubt they should destroy all seeds of future insurrections on the behalf of the King, most of the nobility being at present in custody. And they resolved, if other evidence was wanting, that their suspicion should be their conviction.

44. When the King came to Calice, where he received account every day from England what was transacted there, as he was much troubled with the news he received daily of the imprisonment of his friends, so he was revived with the fame of sir George Booth's being possessed of Chester, and of the conjunction between him and Middleton. And they were reported to be in a much better posture than in truth they were; and the expectation of some appearance of troops in Lincoln[shire] and Yorkshire stood fair; whereupon the King resolved to go himself to some other part of France, from whence he might securely transport himself into those parts of

<sup>1</sup> [At Newport Pagnell, Aug. 23, 'in the habit of a gentlewoman;' *Mercur. Polit.*, No. 584, p. 690.]

<sup>2</sup> [Chirk, in Denbighshire.]

1659 England from whence with least hazard he might join himself with the troops which were in arms for him; and so went to the coast of Brittany<sup>1</sup>.

45. The duke of York remained at Bullyn [Boulogne] to expect some appearance of arms in Kent and Essex, which was still promised, as soon as the army should be drawn farther from London. And in this expectation his royal highness found an opportunity to confer with his old friend marshal Turyn, who very frankly assigned him some troops, and likewise provided vessels to transport them, if an opportunity had invited him to an engagement in any probable enterprise; and this with so much generosity and secrecy, that the cardinal should have had no notice of the preparation till it was too late to prevent the effect thereof. But it pleased God, that, whilst he was providing for his longed for expedition, and when the King, after his visiting St. Malloes, was at Rochell<sup>2</sup>, in hope to find a convenience for his transportation, the fatal news arrived in all parts of the defeat of sir George Booth, and of the total and entire suppression of all kind of opposition to the power of the Parliament; which seemed to be in as absolute possession of the government of the three nations as ever Cromwell had been.

46. Struck with this dismal relation, they had nothing to do but to make what haste they could back to Bruxells, and were obliged to use more than ordinary caution to get themselves out of France again, where they could not be found with Sept. safety. The duke of York, being much nearer, came thither Dec. 26<sup>3</sup>. first; and shortly after the King returned, less dejected than might have been expected from the extreme despair of his condition, which was discernible in everybody's countenance, insomuch as some persons had advised the King to make a journey himself into Spain, to solicit more powerful supplies, and to make Germany his way; to which his majesty himself was not uninclined, preferring any peregrination before the neglect he

<sup>1</sup> [He left Rennes in Bretagne on Aug. 19. *Calend. Dom. S. P.*, 1659-60, p. 149.]

<sup>2</sup> [He was at Rochelle on Sept. 22. *Ib.*, p. 227.]

<sup>3</sup> [See note to § 73.]

was sure to find at Bruxells and the dry looks of the Spaniards; 1659 who were broken into so many factions amongst themselves that the government was hardly in a state to subsist; and the marquis of Caracena and don Alonso had such an influence upon the counsels at Madrid, that don Juan received orders without delay to return to Spain, and to leave the government in the hands of the marquis of Caracena, which he very unwillingly obeyed; and as soon as he could obtain a pass to go through France, he left those provinces, and made his journey through that kingdom towards Madrid. He was a person of a small stature, but well made, and of great vivacity in his looks; his parts very good, natural and acquired, in fancy and judgment. And if he had not been restrained by his education, and accustomed to the pride and forms of a Spanish breeding, which likewise disposed him to laziness and music, he was capable of any great employment, and would have discharged it well.

47<sup>1</sup>. It was a great blessing of God that this melancholic conjuncture happened in the winter, that men could not execute all the thoughts and purposes the unhappy state of affairs suggested to them. The King could not make his journey through Germany till the spring, and in the mean time many men thought of providing a religion as well as other conveniences for their journey, and that might be grateful to those people and places where and with whom they were like to reside. The Protestant religion was found to be very unagreeable to their fortune, and very many exercised their thoughts most how to get handsomely from it; and if it had not been for the King's own steadiness, which was very manifest, men would have been more out of countenance to have owned the faith they were of; and many made little doubt but that it would shortly be very manifest to the King that his restoration depended wholly upon a conjunction of Catholic princes, who could never be united but on the behalf of Catholic religion.

<sup>1</sup> [This section has hitherto been transposed, without any direction in the MS., to take the place of § 74.]

1659 48. At this time an accident happened, that, as it was new, administered new hopes to raise the King's spirits, and for men to exercise their thoughts with variety of conjectures. The war had now continued between the two Crowns of France and Spain for near the space of thirty years, to the scandal and reproach of Christianity, and in spite of all the interposition and mediation of most of the princes of Europe; a war wantonly entered into, without the least pretence of right and justice, to comply (besides the natural animosity which will always be between the two nations) with the pride and humour of the two favourites of the Crowns, who would try the mastery of their wit and invention at the charge of their masters' treasure and the blood of their subjects, against all the obligations of leagues and alliances; a war prosecuted only for war sake, with all the circumstances of fire, sword, and rapine, to the consumption of millions of treasure, and millions of lives of noble, worthy, and honest men, only to improve the skill and mystery and science of destruction. All which appeared the more unnatural and the more monstrous, that this seemed to be effected and carried on by the power of a brother and a sister against each other, (for half the time had been spent in the regency of the Queen of France,) when they both loved and tendered each other's good and happiness, as the best brother and sister ought to do.

49. It was high time to put an end, and to kill this barbarous cruel war, which the Queen had long and passionately desired in vain. But now being more struck in years, and troubled with the infirmities of age, and the young King being of years ripe to marry, and the Infanta of Spain being in that and all other respects the most competent match for him, which would be the best, and was the only expedient to procure a peace, her majesty resolved to employ all her interest and authority to bring it to pass; and knowing well all her desires could produce no effect if she had not the full concurrence of the cardinal, she proposed it with all the warmth and all the concernment such a subject required to him, conjuring him, by all the good offices she had performed towards him,



that he would not only consent to it, but take it to heart, and 1659 to put it into such a way of negotiation that it might arrive at such an issue as she desired.

50. The cardinal used all the arguments he could to dissuade her majesty from desiring it at this time; that he was not able to bear the reproach, (nor could it be for her majesty's service,) of being the instrument of making a peace at a time that Spain was reduced to those straits that it could no longer resist the victorious arms of France; that they could not fail the next summer of being possessed of Bruxells itself, and then they should not be long without the rest; and therefore at this time to propose a peace, which must disappoint them of so sure a conquest, would not only be very ingrateful to the army, but incense all good Frenchmen against him and against her majesty herself.

51. The Queen was not diverted from her purpose by those arguments, but proposed it to the King, and prosecuted it with the cardinal, that, as himself confessed to his intimate friends, he was necessitated either to consent to it, or to have an irrecoverable breach with her, which his gratitude would not suffer him to choose; and thereupon he yielded; and don Anthonio Pimentell from Madrid, and monsieur de Leon [Lionne] from France, so negotiated this winter in both Courts, both *incognito*, making several journeys backward and forward, and with that effect, that by the end of the winter it was published, that there would be a treaty between the two Crowns, and that in the beginning of the summer [of 1659,] the two favourites, cardinal Mazaryne and don Lewis de Haro, would meet, and make a treaty both for the peace and for the marriage. And the marshal de Grammont was sent from the King to demand the Infanta, who, when he came to Alcovendas, a place within two leagues of Madrid, left his train there, and rode as by post, only with a valet de chambre, and alighted at the palace, and went presently up to the King to demand the Infanta; and so returned to Alcovendas, and afterwards made his entry as ambassador.

52. The cardinal was the sooner induced to this peace by

1659 the unsettled condition of England. The death of Cromwell, with whom he had concerted many things to come, had much perplexed him; yet the succession of Richard, under the advice of the same persons who were trusted by the father, pleased him well. But the throwing him out with such circumstances broke all his measures. And he could not forget that the Parliament that now governed were the very same men who had eluded all his application, appeared ever more inclined to the Spanish side, and had, without any colour of provocation, and when he believed they stood fair towards France, taken the French fleet, when it could not but relieve Dunkirk; by which that town was delivered up to the Spaniard. He knew well that Spain did at that instant use all the underhand means they could to make a peace with them; and he did not believe that the Parliament would affect the continuance of that war at so vast a charge both at sea and land, but that they would rather foment the divisions in France, and unite the prince of Condé and the Huguenots, which would make a concussion in that kingdom; and he should then have cause to repent the having put Dunkirk into the hands of the English. These reflections disturbed him, and disposed him to believe, over and above the benefit of gratifying the Queen, that he should best provide for the security of France and of himself by making a peace with Spain.

53. However, he was not so sure of bringing it to pass as to provoke or neglect England. Therefore he renewed all the promises he had formerly made to Oliver again to Lockhart, (who was the ambassador now of the republic,) that he would never make a peace without the consent and inclusion of England; and very earnestly desired him, and writ to the Parliament, that he might be at the treaty with him, that so they might still consult what would be best for their joint interest, from which he would never separate; insinuating unto him, in broken and half sentences, that though the treaty was necessary to satisfy the Queen, there were so many difficulties in view that he had little hope of a peace. And in truth, many sober men did not believe the treaty would ever produce

a peace: for, besides the great advantages which France had 1659 gotten, and that it could not be imagined that Spain would ever consent to the relinquishing all those important places to the French which they had then in their hands by conquest, (the usual effect of peace being a restitution of all places taken in the war, which France would never permit,) there were two particulars which men could find no expedients to compose, and which, notwithstanding all the preparations made by de Leon and Pimentell, were entirely reserved for the treaty to the two favourites; both sides having with great obstinacy protested against [departing<sup>1</sup>] from the resolution they had taken.

54. The two particulars were, Portugal and the prince of Condé. There could not be greater engagements than France had made to Portugal never to desert it, nor to make a peace without providing that that King should quietly enjoy his government, to him and his posterity, without being in the least degree subject to the yoke of Spain. And Spain was principally induced to buy a peace upon hard terms, that it might be at liberty to take revenge of Portugal; which they always reckoned they should be able to do within one year, if they had no other enemy upon them; and they would never value any peace, if that were not entirely left to them, and disclaimed by France.

55. On the other hand, the prince of Condé had the King of Spain's word and obligation, by the most solemn treaty that could be entered into, that he would never conclude a peace without including him, and all who adhered to him, not only to a full restitution to their honours, offices, and estates, but with some farther recompense for the great service he had done, which was very great indeed: and nobody believed that the cardinal would ever consent to the restoration of that prince, who had wrought him so many calamities, and brought him to the brink of destruction. With these ill presages, great preparations were made for this treaty, and the time and the place were agreed on, when and where the two great favourites

<sup>1</sup> ['deporting,' MS.]

1659 should meet. Fuentarabia, a place in the Spanish dominions, and very near the borders of France, the same place where  
 1526 Francis the First was delivered after his long imprisonment in Spain, was agreed upon for their interview. A little river in that place, parting both the kingdoms, and a little building of boards over it, brought the favourites to meet, without either of [them]<sup>1</sup> going out of his master's dominions.

56. The fame of this treaty yielded variety, and new matter to the King to consider of. Both Crowns had made the contention and war that was between them the only ground and reason why they did not give him that assistance which in a case so nearly relating to themselves he might well expect, and both had made many professions that when it should please God to release them from that war, they would manifest to the world that they took the King's case to be their own; so that his majesty might very reasonably promise himself some advantage and benefit from this peace, and the world could not but expect that he would have some ambassador present to solicit on his behalf. There were so many difficulties to find a fit person, and so many greater to defray the expense of an ambassador, that his majesty resolved to find himself present in that treaty; which resolution he kept very private, though he was shortly after confirmed in it by a letter from sir H. Bennet; by which he was informed, that he speaking with don Lewis about his journey to Fuentarabia, and asking him whether he would give him leave to wait on him thither, don Lewis answered, that he should do well to be present, and then asked him why the King himself would not be there? and two or three days after, he told him, that if the King, with a very light train, came *incognito* thither, (for the place could not permit them to receive him in state,) after the great difficulties in the treaty were over, he would do all he could to induce the cardinal to concur in what might be of convenience to his majesty. He [the King] had before resolved to have a very little train with him, suitable to the treasure he had to defray his expenses, and to make his whole journey *incognito*, and

<sup>1</sup> ['their,' MS.]

not to be known in any place through which he was to pass. 1859  
 But he was troubled what he was to do with reference to France, through which he was necessarily to make his journey. How much *incognito* soever he meant to travel, it might be necessary against any accident to have a pass; yet to ask one and be refused would be worse than going without one. Though he expected much less from the nature and kindness of the cardinal than from the sincerity of don Lewis de Haro, yet the former was able to do him much more good than the latter; and therefore care was to be taken that he might have no cause to find himself neglected, and that a more dependence upon Spain might not irreconcile France.

57. To extricate himself out of these perplexities, his majesty writ to the Queen his mother, to desire her, as of herself, June 28<sup>1</sup>. to desire the cardinal's advice, whether it would not be fit for the King to be present at the treaty; that she might send his majesty such counsel as was proper: if he thought well of it, she might then propose passes, as should seem reasonable to her. Her majesty accordingly took an opportunity to ask the question of the cardinal, who, at the very motion, told her very warmly that it was by no means fit, and that it would do the King much harm; and afterwards, recollecting himself, he wished the Queen to let the King know that he should rely upon him to take care of what concerned him; which he would not fail to do, as soon as he discerned that the treaty would produce a peace. Her majesty acquiesced with the profession, and sent the King word how kind the cardinal was to him, but would by no means that his majesty should think of undertaking such a journey himself<sup>2</sup>; nor did the Queen imagine that the King would ever think of it without a pass and the cardinal's approbation.

58. When his majesty had received this account from his mother, he saw it was to no purpose to think of a pass. Nor would he depart from his former resolution, but concealed his

<sup>1</sup> [Draft by Hyde of the letter among the Clarendon MSS.]

<sup>2</sup> [See letter from lord Jermyn to the King of July 11; *Clar. S. P.*, iii. 523.]

1859 purpose ; and when he was fully advertised that the favourites were met, and computed that they were well entered upon their treaty, in the very entrance into which they concluded a cessation of arms, so that all was quiet in Flanders, in the month of July, the King, attended only by the marquis of Ormonde, the earl of Bristol, and two or three other servants, (though sir H. Bennet had informed his majesty that don Lewis de Haro had particularly desired that he would not bring that earl with him ; and who, in respect of his language, the King Aug. 1<sup>st</sup> believed would be very convenient,) left Bruxells *incognito*, being in truth not known there to be gone till many days after. Since he had now more reason than ever to conceal himself in his journey, and really to apprehend being stopped if he were discovered, and therefore was not to go by Paris, or any of those roads where he had been heretofore known, he allowed himself the more time, that he might in his compass see those parts of France where he had never been before, and indeed give himself all the pleasure and divertisement that such a journey would admit. And to that purpose he appointed the earl of Bristol to be the guide, who knew most of France, at least more than any body else did, and who always delighted to go out of the way, and Daniel O'Neale to take care that they always fared well in their lodging, for which province no man was fitter. And thus they wheeled about by Lyons into Languedock, and were so well pleased with the varieties in the journey that they not enough remembered the end of it, taking their information of the progress in the treaty from the intelligence they met in the way.

59. When they came near Tholose [Toulouse] they found that the French Court was there, which they were obliged to decline<sup>2</sup>. However, the King, going himself a nearer way, sent the marquis of Ormonde thither<sup>3</sup>, to inform himself of the true state of the treaty, and to meet his majesty again at a place

<sup>1</sup> [See § 35.]

<sup>2</sup> [The King 'parted from Tholouse' on Oct. 7 ; letter from Nicholas in Carte MS. ccxiii, (Bodl. Libr.) f. 401.]

<sup>3</sup> [He was there on Oct. 12. Carte MS. xxx, f. 489.]

appointed that was the direct way to Fuentarabia. The mar- 1659  
quis went alone without a servant, that he might be the less  
suspected; and when he came to Tholose, he was informed from  
the common discourse of the Court that the treaty was upon  
the matter concluded, and that the cardinal was expected there  
within less than a week.

60. It was very true all matters of difficulty were over, in  
less time than was conceived possible: both parties equally de-  
sired the marriage, which could never be without the peace.  
The cardinal, who had much the advantage over don Lewis in  
all the faculties which are necessary for a treaty, excepting pro-  
bity, and punctuality in observing what he promised, had used  
all the arts imaginable to induce don Lewis to yield both in  
the point of Portugal and what related to the prince of Condé  
and his party. He enlarged upon the desperate estate in which  
Flanders was, and that they could possess themselves entirely  
of it in one *campania*; and therefore it might easily be con-  
cluded, that nothing but the Queen's absolute authority could  
in such a conjuncture have disposed the King to a treaty; and  
he hoped that she should not be so ill requited as to be obliged  
to break the treaty, or to oblige the King her son to consent to  
what was indispensably against his honour: that if he should  
recede from the interest of Portugal, no prince or state would  
hereafter enter into alliance with him: that though they were  
bound to insist to have Portugal included in the peace, yet he  
would be contented that a long truce might be made, and all  
acts of hostility forborne for a good number of years, which  
was necessary for Spain, that they might recover the fatigue of  
the long war they had sustained before they entered into a new  
[one:] if they would not consent to that, that Portugal should  
be left out of the peace, and Spain at liberty to prosecute the  
war, and France at the same [time] to assist Portugal, which,  
he said, in respect of the distance, they should never be able to  
administer in such a proportion as would be able to preserve it  
from their conquest; not without insinuation, that, so they  
might not renounce the promise they had made, they would not  
be over solicitous to perform it. As to the prince of Condé,

1659 that the Catholic King was now to look upon France as the dominion of his son-in-law, and to be inherited by his grandson, and therefore he would consider what peril it might bring to both if the prince of Condé were restored to his greatness in that kingdom, who could only disturb the peace of it, and whose ambition was so restless that they could no longer enjoy peace than whilst he was not in a condition to interrupt it. He [the cardinal] told him in confidence of several indignities offered by the prince of Condé to the person of the Queen, of which her brother ought to be very sensible, and which would absolve him from any engagement he had entered into with that prince; which he would never have done, if his majesty had been fully informed of those rude transgressions. And therefore he besought don Lewis that the joy and triumph which the King and the Queen would be possessed of by this peace and marriage might not be clouded, and even rendered disconsolate, by their being bound to behold a man in their presence who had so often, and with so much damage and disdain, affronted them both; but that the peace of France might be secured by that prince's being for ever restrained from living in it; which being provided for, whatsoever his Catholic majesty should require in ready money or pensions, to enable the prince to live in his just splendour abroad, should be consented to.

61. Don Lewis de Haro was a man of a great temper, of a sallow complexion, hypochondriac, and never weary of hearing; thought well of what he was to say; and what he wanted in acuteness he made up in wariness, and though he might omit the saying somewhat he had a good occasion to say, he never said any thing of which he had occasion to repent. He had a good judgment and understanding, and as he was without any talent of rhetoric, so he was very well able to defend himself from it. He told the cardinal, that he knew well that his master's affairs needed a peace with France, and that the accomplishing this marriage was the only way to attain to it; that the marriage, being the best and the most honourable in Christendom, ought<sup>1</sup> to be equally desired on both sides; that

<sup>1</sup> ['and ought,' MS.]



his Catholic majesty was sensible of his own age and the infirmities which attended it, and desired nothing more than that before his death he might see this peace and this marriage finished and made perfect; and that he was well content to purchase the former at any price but of his honour, which was the only thing he preferred even before peace. That for Portugal, the groundless rebellion was so well known to all the world, that he should not go to his grave in peace if he should do any thing which might look like a countenance or concession to that title that was only founded upon treason and rebellion, or if he should omit the doing any thing that might, with God's blessing, of which he could not doubt, reduce that kingdom to their duty and his obedience: that his resolution was, as soon as this peace should be concluded, to apply all the force and all the treasure of his dominions to the invasion of Portugal, which he hoped would be sufficient speedily to subdue it; which was a great part of the fruit which he promised himself from this peace, and therefore would never permit any thing to be included in it that might leave France at liberty to assist that war. That the King had done all he could, both by don Anthonio de Pimentell and monsieur de Leon, that his most Christian majesty might know his unalterable resolution in the point of Portugal, and with reference to the prince of Condé, before the treaty was consented to; and that he would never depart from what he had declared in either: that he had made a treaty with the prince of Condé, by which he had engaged himself never to desert his interest, nor to make a peace without providing for his full restitution and reparation, and [of] those who had run his fortune and put themselves under his protection: that the prince had performed all that he had undertaken to do, and had rendered very great service to his Catholic majesty, who would not only rather lose Flanders but his crown likewise than fail in any particular which he was bound to make good to the prince: and therefore he desired the cardinal to acquiesce in both these particulars, from which he should not recede in a tittle; in others, he should not have the same obstinacy.

1659 62. When the cardinal found that all his art and eloquence were lost upon don Lewis' want of politeness, and that he could not bend him in the least degree in either of those important particulars, he resolved they should pay otherwise for their idol honour and punctuality; and after he had brought him to consent to the detention of all the places they had taken, as well in Luxemburgh as Flanders and all other provinces, by which they dismembered all the Spanish dominions in those parts, and kept themselves nearer neighbours to the Hollanders than the other desired they should be, he compelled them, though a thing very foreign to the treaty, to deliver the town [of] Juliers to the duke of Newburgh, without the payment of any money which they had laid out upon the fortifications, and which they could otherwise claim. It is very true that town did belong of right to the duke of Newburgh, as part of the duchy of Juliers, which was descended to him; but it is as true that it was preserved by Spain from being possessed by the Hollanders, many years before, and by treaty to remain in their hands till they should receive satisfaction for all their disbursements; after which time they erected the citadel there, and much mended the fortifications. And this dependence and expectation had kept that prince fast to all the Spanish interest in Germany; whereas, by the wresting it now out of their hands, and frankly giving it up to the true owner, they got the entire devotion of the duke of Newburgh to France, and so a new friend to strengthen their alliance upon the Rhine, which was before inconvenient enough to Spain, by stopping the resort of any German succours into Flanders. And if at any time to come the French should purchase Juliers from the duke of Newburgh, as upon many accidents he may be induced to part with it, they will be possessed of the most advantageous post to facilitate their enterprises upon Liege or Cullen, or to disturb the Hollanders in Masticke, or to seize upon Aquisgrane, an imperial town, and indeed to disturb the peace of Christendom.

63. For Portugal, it was agreed that there should not be any mention of it in the whole treaty, which the French ingenuity thought could never be called a renouncing it; though there

were other expressions in the articles so binding, that they 1659 could not only not send them any relief or assistance, but that restrained them from sending any ambassador to them, or receiving one from them.

64. To the prince of Condé all things were yielded which had been insisted on, and full recompense made to such of his party as could not be restored to their offices, as president Viole, and some others: yet don Lewis would not sign the treaty till he had sent an express to the prince of Condé to inform him of all the particulars, and had received his full approbation. And even then, the King of Spain caused a great sum of money to be paid to him, that he might discharge all the debts which he had contracted in Flanders, and reward his officers who were to be disbanded; a method France did not use at the same time to their proselytes, but left Catalonia to the King's chastisement, without any provision made for don Joseph de Margarita, and others, who had been the principal contrivers of those disturbances, and were left to eat the bread of France; where it is administered to them very sparingly, without any hope of ever seeing their native country again, except they make their way thither by fomenting a new rebellion.

65. When all things were concluded, and the engrossments preparing, the cardinal came one morning into don Lewis his chamber with a sad countenance, and told him they had lost all their pains, and the peace could not be concluded. At which don Lewis, in much disturbance, asked what the matter was. The cardinal very composedly answered, that it must not be; that they two were too good Catholics to do any thing against the Pope's infallibility, which would be called in question by this peace, since his holiness had declared that there would be no peace made; as indeed he had done, after he had from the first hour of his pontificate laboured it for many years, and found himself still deluded by the cardinal, who had yet promised him that when the season was ripe for it he should have the sole power to conclude it; so that when he heard that the two favourites were to meet, of which he had no notice, he

1659 said in the consistory that he was sure that cardinal Mazaryne would not make a peace. Don Lewis was glad that there was no other objection against it; and so all the company made themselves merry at the Pope's charge.

66. When the marquis of Ormonde discovered, by the information he received at Tholose, that the treaty was so near an end, he made all possible haste to the place that the King had appointed to meet at, that his majesty might lose no more time. But when he came thither, he found nobody; which he imputed to the usual delays in their journey, and stayed one whole day in expectation of them; but then concluded that they were gone forward some other way, and so thought it his business to hasten to Fuentarabia, where he heard nothing of the King. Sir H. Bennet was in great perplexity, and complained very reasonably that the King neglected his own business in such a conjuncture, the benefit whereof was lost by his not coming. Don Lewis seemed troubled that the King had not come thither whilst the cardinal and he were together.

Sept. 15<sup>1</sup>. The treaty was now concluded; and though the cardinal remained still at his old quarters on the French side, under some indisposition of the gout, yet he and don Lewis were to meet no more. And don Lewis was the less troubled that the King had not come sooner, because he had found the cardinal, as often as he had taken occasion to speak of the King, very cold and reserved, and had magnified the power of the Parliament, and seemed to think his majesty's hopes desperate; and advised don Lewis to be wary how he embarked himself in an affair that had no foundation, and that it was rather time for all Catholics to unite to the breaking the power and interest of the heretical party, wherever it was, than to strengthen it by restoring the King, except he would become Catholic. And it is believed by wise men that in that treaty somewhat was agreed to the prejudice of the Protestant interest; and that in a short time there would have been much done against

<sup>1</sup> [On this day the articles of the treaty were settled, although it was not formally signed until Nov. 7.]

[it]<sup>1</sup> both in France and Germany, if the measures they had 1659 taken had not been shortly broken.

67. During the whole time of the treaty, Lockhart had been at Bayon[ne], and frequently consulted with the cardinal, and was by him brought twice or thrice to don Lewis, where they spake of the mutual benefit that would redound to both, if a peace were settled between Spain and England. But the cardinal treated Lockhart (who was in all other occasions too hard for him) in such a manner, that, till the peace was upon the matter concluded, he did really believe that it would not be made, (as appeared by some of his letters from Bayon[ne], which fell into the King's hands,) and to the last he was persuaded that England should be comprehended in it in terms to its satisfaction.

68. The King, the next day after he had sent the marquis of Ormonde to Tholose, received information upon the way that the treaty was absolutely ended, and that don Lewis was returned to Madrid; to which giving credit, he concluded that it would be to no purpose to prosecute his journey to Fuentarabia, and therefore was easily persuaded by the earl of Bristol to take the nearest way to Madrid, by entering into Spain as soon as they could, presuming that the marquis of Ormonde would quickly conclude whither they were gone, and follow his majesty. And with this resolution, and upon this intelligence, they continued their journey till they came to Zaragoza, the metropolis of the kingdom of Arragon. Here they received advertisement that the treaty was not fully concluded, and that don Lewis remained still at Fuentarabia. This was a new perplexity: at last they resolved that the King and the earl of Bristol, who had still a mind to Madrid, should stay at Zaragoza, until O'Neale should go to Fuentarabia and return with direction what course they were to steer.

69. Don Lewis and the marquis of Ormonde were in great confusion with the apprehension that some ill accident had befallen the King, when Mr. O'Neale arrived, and informed them by what accident and misintelligence the King had re-

<sup>1</sup> ['them,' MS.]

1659 solved to go to Madrid, if he had not been better informed at Zaragoza; where he now remained till he should receive farther advice. Don Lewis was in all the disturbance imaginable when he heard the relation, and concluded that this was a trick of the earl of Bristol's; that he held some intelligence with don Juan, and intended to carry the King to Madrid, whilst he [don Lewis] was absent, with a purpose to affront him, and in hope to transact somewhat without his privity. They were now to save and to borrow all the money they could to defray the expenses which must be shortly made for the interview, marriage, and delivery of the Infanta, and all this must be spent upon the King's entry and entertainment in Madrid; for a king *incognito* was never heard of in Spain. The marriage was concluded, and now a young unmarried king must be received and caressed in that Court; which would occasion much discourses both in Spain and France. 'All these things his melancholy<sup>1</sup> made him revolve, nor did he conceal the trouble he endured from the marquis of Ormonde and sir H. Bennet; who assured him that all that was past was by mere mistake, and without any purpose to decline him, upon whose friendship alone the King absolutely depended; and undertook positively, that as soon as his majesty should be informed of his advice he<sup>2</sup> would make all the haste thither he could, without thought of doing any thing else: which don Lewis desired might be effected as soon as was possible: so O'Neale returned to Zaragoza, and his majesty without delay

Oct. 27<sup>3</sup>. made his journey from thence to Fuentarabia, with as much expedition as he could use.

Oct. 28<sup>4</sup>. 70. The King was received according to the Spanish mode and generosity, and treated with the same respect and reverence that could be shewed to his Catholic majesty himself if he had been in that place. Don Lewis delivered all that could be said from the King, [his master;] how much he was troubled, that the condition of his affairs, and the necessity that was

<sup>1</sup> ['melancholique,' MS., and so in other places.]

<sup>2</sup> ['that he,' MS.]

<sup>3</sup> [Carte MS. cxxlii, f. 330.]

<sup>4</sup> [Clar. S. P., iii. 596.]

upon him to make shortly a long journey, would not permit 1659 him to invite his majesty to Madrid, and to treat him in that manner as was suitable to his grandeur: that having happily concluded the peace, he had now nothing so<sup>1</sup> much in his thoughts, as how he might be able to give or procure such assistance as his majesty stood in need of; and that he should never be destitute of any thing that his power and interest could help him to. Don Lewis for himself made all those professions which could possibly be expected from him. He confessed that there was no provision made in the treaty that the two Crowns would jointly assist his majesty, but that he believed the cardinal would be ready to perform all good offices towards him, and that, for his own particular, his majesty should receive good testimony of the profound veneration he had for him.

71. Don Lewis intimated a wish that his majesty could yet have some conference with the cardinal, who was, as is said, still within distance. Whereupon the King sent the marquis of Ormonde to visit him, and to let him know that his majesty Nov. 12. had a desire to come to him, that he might have some conference with him, and receive his counsel and advice. But the cardinal would by no means admit it; said it would administer unseasonable jealousy to the Parliament, without any manner of benefit to the King. He made many large professions, which he could do well, of his affection to the King; desired he would have patience till the marriage should be over, which would be in the next spring; and till then their majesties must remain in those parts: but as soon as that should be despatched, the whole Court would return to Paris; and that he would not be long there before he gave the King some evidence of his kindness and respect. And other answer than this the marquis could not obtain.

72. After his majesty had stayed as long as he thought convenient at Fuentarabia, (for he knew well that don Lewis was to return to Madrid before the King [of Spain] could take any resolution to begin or order his own journey, and

<sup>1</sup> ['too,' MS.]

1659 that he stayed there only to entertain his majesty,) he discerned that he had nothing more to do than to return to Flanders; where he was assured his reception should be better than it had been. So he declared his resolution to begin his return upon such a day. In the short time of his stay there, the earl of Bristol, according to his excellent talent, which seldom failed him in any exigent, from as great a prejudice as could attend any man, had wrought himself so much into the good graces of all the Spaniards, that don Lewis was willing to take him with him to Madrid, and that he should be received into the service of his Catholic majesty in such a province as should be worthy of him. So that his majesty had a very small train to return with, the marquis of Ormonde, Daniel O'Neale, and two or three other servants.

73. Don Lewis, with a million of excuses that their expenses had been so great as had wasted all their money, presented his majesty with seven thousand gold pistoles, to defray, as he said, the expenses of his journey, with assurance that when he came into Flanders he should find all necessary orders for his better accommodation, and carrying on his business. And  
 Nov. 17<sup>1</sup>. so his majesty began his journey, and took Paris in his way  
 Dec. 10<sup>2</sup>. to visit the Queen his mother, with whom a good understanding was made upon all former mistakes: and towards the end  
 Dec. 26<sup>3</sup>. of December he returned to Bruxells in good health, where he found his two brothers, the dukes of York and Gloster, impatiently expecting him.

74<sup>4</sup>. The pleasure and variety of his journey, and the very civil treatment he had received from don Lewis, with the good disposition he had left the Queen his mother in, had very much revived and refreshed the King's spirits, and the joy for his return dispersed the present clouds. But he had not been long at Bruxells before he discerned the same melan-

<sup>1</sup> [*Clar. S. P.*, iii. 606.]

<sup>2</sup> [*Carte's Ormonde*, ii. 191, 194.]

<sup>3</sup> [*Clar. S. P.*, iii. 636, and several other letters among the Clarendon MSS. But a letter from Nicholas in the State Paper Office says he came to Brussels on Saturday, Dec. 24. *Calend. Dom. S. P.*, 1659-60, p. 287.]

<sup>4</sup> [The section formerly numbered 74 is now 47, that being its place in the MS.]



choly and despair in the countenances of most men which he had left there; and though there had some changes happened in England which might reasonably encourage men to look for greater, men had been so often disappointed in those expectations, that it was a reproach to any man to think that any good could come from thence.

75. The best the King could look for seemed to be a permission to remain in Flanders, with a narrow assignation for his bread, which was a melancholic condition for a king; nor could that be depended upon; for there were secret approaches made both from England and Spain towards a peace; and the Spaniard had great reason to desire it, that he might meet with no obstruction in his intended conquest of Portugal. And what influence any peace might have upon his majesty's quiet might reasonably be apprehended. However, there being no war in Flanders, the dukes of York and Gloster could no longer remain in an unactive course of life; and the duke of York had a great family, impatient to be where they might enjoy plenty, and where they might be absent from the King. And therefore, when the marquis de Caracena at this time<sup>1</sup> brought the duke of York a letter from the King of Spain, that he would make him *el Admirante del Oceano*, his highness was exceedingly pleased with it, and those about him so transported with the promotion that they thought any man to be a declared enemy to their master who should make any objection against his accepting it. And when they were told that it was not such a preferment that the duke should so greedily embrace it, before he knew what conditions he should be subject to, and what he might expect from it; that the command had been in a younger son of the duke of Savoy, and at another time in a younger son of a duke of Florence, who both grew quickly weary of it; for whatever title they had, the whole command was in the Spanish officers who were under them; and that if the duke were there, he might possibly have a competent pension to live on shore, but would never be suffered to go to sea under any title of command till

<sup>1</sup> [on Tuesday, March 2, 1660.]

1660 he first changed his religion; all [this]<sup>1</sup> had no signification with them; but they prevailed with his royal highness to return his consent and acceptation of the office by the same courier who brought the letter.

76. The marquis Caracena likewise told the King that he had received orders to put all things in a readiness for his expedition into England, towards which he would add three thousand men to those troops which his majesty already had. At the same time the lord Jermin and Mr. Mountague came to the King from Paris, with many compliments from the cardinal, that when there should be a peace between the two northern kings, (for Sweden and Denmark were now in a war,) France would declare avowedly for the King; but in the mean time they could only assist the King underhand, and to that purpose they had appointed three thousand men to be ready on the borders of France, to be transported out of Flanders, and thirty thousand pistoles to be disposed of by the King to advance that expedition. Sir H. Bennet had sent from Madrid a copy of the Spanish orders to the marquis Caracena; by which he was not (as he told the King) to add three thousand men to the King's troops, but to make those which he had to amount to the number of three thousand. But that which was strangest, the King must be obliged to embark them in France. So that the men the cardinal would provide must be embarked in Flanders, and they who were to be supplied by Spain must be embarked in France. So that by these two specious pretences and proffers the King could only discern that they were both afraid of offending England, and would offer nothing of which his majesty could make any use, before they might take such a prospect of what was like to come to pass that they might new form their counsels. And the lord Jermin and Mr. Mountague had so little expectation of England, that they concurred both in opinion that the duke of York should embrace the opportunity that was offered from Spain, to which they made no doubt the Queen would give her consent.

77. And in this state of despair the King's condition was

<sup>1</sup> ['which,' MS.]

concluded to be at the end of March 1660; and though his 1660  
 majesty, and those few intrusted by him, had reason to believe  
 that God would be more propitious to him, from some great  
 alterations in England, yet such imagination was so looked upon  
 as mere dotage that the King thought not fit to communicate  
 the hopes he had, but left all men to cast about for themselves,  
 till they were awakened and confounded by such a prodigious  
 act of Providence as he hath scarce vouchsafed to any nation,  
 since he led his own chosen people through the Red Sea.

78. After the defeat of Booth and Middleton, and the King's 1659  
 hopes so totally destroyed, the<sup>1</sup> Parliament thought of nothing  
 but transporting those families into the Barbados and Jamaica,  
 and other plantations, which might hereafter produce children  
 of their fathers' affections, and by degrees to model their army  
 that it might never give them more trouble. They had sent Aug. 23.  
 Lambert a thousand pound to buy him a jewel; which he em-  
 ployed better by bestowing it amongst the officers, who might  
 well deserve it of him. And this bounty of his was quickly  
 known to the Parliament, which concluded that he intended to  
 make a party in the army that should more depend upon him  
 than upon them. And this put them in mind of his former  
 behaviour, and that it was by his advice that they were first  
 dissolved, and that he in truth had made Cromwell Protector,  
 upon his promise that he should succeed him, and that he fell  
 from him only because he had frustrated him of that expecta-  
 tion. And therefore they resolved to secure him from doing  
 farther harm as soon as he should come to the town.

79. Lambert, instead of making haste to them, found some  
 delays in his march, as if all were not safe, and to seize upon  
 the persons of delinquents. He was well informed of their good  
 purposes towards him, and knew that the Parliament intended  
 to make a peace with all foreigners, and then to disband their  
 army, except only some few regiments, which should consist  
 only of persons at their own devotion. He foresaw what his  
 portion must be, and that all the ill he had done towards them  
 would be remembered and the good forgotten. He therefore

<sup>1</sup> ['that the,' MS.]

1659 contrived a petition, which was signed by the inferior officers of his army, in which they desired the Parliament that they might be governed, as all armies used to be, by a general who might be amongst them, and other officers, according to their qualities, subordinate to him.

80. The address was entitled, *The humble petition and proposals of the army, under the command of the lord Lambert, in the late northern expedition.* They made a large recapitulation of the many services they had done, which they thought were forgotten; and that now lately they had preserved them from an enemy, which, if they had been suffered to grow, would in a short time have overrun the kingdom, and engaged the nation in a new bloody war, to which too many men were still inclined; and concluded, that they would commit the army to Fleetwood as general, and that they would appoint Lambert to be major general. Fleetwood was a weak man, but very popular with all the praying part of the army, and a man whom the Parliament would have trusted if they had not resolved to have no general, being as confident of his fidelity to them as of any man; and Lambert knew well he could govern him as Cromwell had done Fayrefax, and then in like manner lay him aside. This petition was sent by some trusty person to some colonels of the army in whom Lambert had confidence, to the end that they should deliver it to Fleetwood, to be by him presented to the Parliament. He would first consult with some of his friends for their advice; and so it came to the notice of Haslerick, who immediately informed the Parliament of a rebellion growing in the army, which if not suppressed would undo all that they had done. They, as they were always apt to take alarms of that kind, would not have the patience to expect the delivery of the

Sept. 22. petition, but sent to Fleetwood for it. He answered, he had it not, but that he had delivered it to such an officer, whom he named. The officer was sent for, but could not be found. Whereupon the Parliament, that they might discountenance  
Sept. 23. and exclude any address of that kind, passed a vote, that the having more general officers was a thing needless, chargeable, and dangerous to the commonwealth.

81. This put the whole army into that distemper that Lambert could wish it [in,] and brought the council of officers to meet again more avowedly than they had done since the reviving of the Parliament. They prepared a petition and representation to the Parliament, in which they gave them many good words, and assured them of their fidelity towards them, but yet that they would so far take care for their own preservation that they would not be at the mercy of their enemies, and implied that they had likewise privileges which they would not quit. 1659  
Oct. 5.

82. The Parliament, that was governed by Vane and Haslerigge, the heads of the republican party, though of very different natures and understandings, found there would be no compounding this dispute amicably, but that one side must be suppressed. They resolved therefore to take away all hope of subsistence from the army, if they should be inclined by force to make any alteration in the government; and in order thereunto they declared that it should be treason in any person whatsoever to raise, levy, and collect money without consent in Parliament. Then they made void all Acts for custom and excise; and by this there was nothing left to maintain the army except they would prey upon the people, which could not hold long. In the next place they cashiered Lambert, and eight other colonels of the army, with whom they were most offended, and conferred the regiments upon other persons, in whom they could confide, and committed the whole government of the army into the hands of seven commissioners, who were, Fleetewood, (whom they believed to have a great interest in the army, and so durst not totally to disoblige,) Ludlow, (who commanded the army in Ireland,) Munke, (who was their general in Scotland,) Haslerigge, Walton, Morley, and Overton, who were all upon the place. Oct. 11.  
Oct. 12.

83. The army was too far engaged to retire, and it was unskilfully done of the Parliament to provoke so many of them without being sure of a competent strength to execute their orders. But they had a great presumption upon the city, and had already forgotten how the army baffled it a dozen year[s]

1659 before, when the Parliament had much more reputation and the army less terror. The nine cashiered colonels were resolved not to part with their commands, nor would the soldiers submit to their new officers; and both officers and soldiers consulted their affairs so well together, that they agreed to meet at Westminster the next morning, and determine to whose lot it would come to be cashiered.

84. The Parliament, to encounter this design, sent their orders to those regiments whose fidelity they were confident of, to be the next morning at Westminster, to defend them from force, and likewise sent into the city to draw down their militia.

Oct. 13. Of the army, the next morning, there appeared two regiments of foot and four troops of horse, who were well armed, and ranged themselves in the Palace-yard, with a resolution to oppose all force that should attempt the Parliament. Lambert intended they should have little to do there; and divided [his party in] the army to the several places by which the city militia could come to Westminster, with order that they should suffer none to march that way, or to come out of the gates; then placed himself with a troop or two in King Street, to expect when the Speaker would come to the House, who at his accustomed hour came in his usual state, guarded with his troop of horse. Lambert rode up to the Speaker, and told him there was nothing to be done at Westminster, and therefore advised him to return back again to his house, which he refused to do, and endeavoured to proceed, and called to his guard to make way. Upon which he [Lambert] rode to the captain, and pulled him off his horse; and bade major Creed, who had formerly commanded that troop, to mount into his saddle; which he presently did. Then he took away the mace, and bade major Creed conduct Mr. Lenthall to his house. Whereupon they made his coachman turn, and without the least contradiction the troop marched very quietly till he was alighted at his own house, and then disposed of themselves as their new captain commanded them.

85. When they had thus secured themselves from any more votes, Lambert sent to those in the Palace-yard to withdraw to

their quarters, which they refused to do; at which he smiled, 1650 and bade them then to stay there; which they did till towards the evening: but then finding themselves laughed at, that they had nothing to do, and that the Parliament sat not, they desired that they might retire to their quarters; which they were appointed to do. But their officers were cashiered, and such sent to command as Lambert thought fit, who found all submission and obedience from the soldiers, though nobody yet knew who had power to command them. There was no Parliament, nor any officer in the army who by his commission was above the degree of colonel, nor had any of them power to command more than his own regiment.

86. Whereupon the officers of the army meet together, and Oct. 14. declare, that the army finding itself without a general, or other general officers, had themselves made choice of Fleetwood to be their general, and of Lambert to be their major general, and Oct. 18<sup>1</sup>. of Desborough to be commissary general of the horse; and that they bound themselves to obey them in their several capacities, and to adhere to and defend them. And upon the publishing this declaration they assumed their several provinces, and the Oct. 29. whole army took commissions from their new general, and were as much united as ever they were under Cromwell, and looked upon it as a great deliverance that they should no more be subject to the Parliament, which they all detested.

87. But these generals were not at ease, and knew well upon what slippery ground they stood. The Parliament had stopped all the channels in which the revenue was to run; put an end to all payments of custom and excise; and to revive these impositions, by which the army might receive their wages, required another authority than of the army itself. The divisions in the Parliament had made the outrage that was committed upon it less reproachful.

88. Vane, who was much the wisest man, found he could never make that assembly settle such a government as he affected, either in Church or State: and Haslerigge, who was of a rude and stubborn nature and of a weak understanding,

<sup>1</sup> [*Mercur. Polit.*, No. 591, p. 812; Oct. 17, Whitlocke's *Memorials.*]

1659 concurred only with him in all the fierce counsels which might more irrecoverably disinherit the King and root out his party. In all other matters relating to the temporal or ecclesiastical matters, they were not only of different judgments but of extraordinary animosity against each other, Vane being a man not to be described by any character of religion; in which he had swallowed some of the fancies and extravagances of every sect or faction, and was become (which cannot be expressed by any other language than was peculiar to that time) *a man above ordinances*, unlimited and unrestrained by any rules or bounds prescribed to other men, by reason of his perfection. He was a perfect enthusiast, and without doubt did believe himself inspired; which so far corrupted his reason and understanding, (which in all matters without the verge of religion was inferior to that of few men,) that he did at some time believe that he was the person deputed to reign over the saints upon earth for a thousand years.

89. Haslerigge was as to the State perfectly repub[lican], and as to religion perfectly Presbyterian; and so he might be sure never to be troubled with a king or a bishop, was indifferent to other things; only he believed the Parliament to be the only government that would infallibly keep those two out; and his credit in the House was greater than the other's; which made Vane less troubled at the violence that was used, though he would never advise it, and [he] appeared willing enough to confer and join with those who would find any other hinge to hang the government upon: and so he presently entered into conversation with those of the army who were most like to have authority.

90. A model of such a government as the people must acquiesce in and submit to would require very much agitation and very long time, which the present conjuncture would not bear, nor were there enough of one mind to give great authority  
 Oct. 26. to their counsel. In this they could agree, which might be an expedient towards more ripe resolutions, that a number of persons should be chosen, who under the style of a *Committee of Safety* should assume the present entire government, and have full power to revive all such orders, or to make new, which



should be necessary for raising of money, or for doing any thing 1659  
 else which should be judged for the peace and safety of the  
 kingdom, and to consider and determine what form of govern-  
 ment was fit to be erected to which the nation should submit.

91. To this new invention, how wild soever, they believed  
 the people would be persuaded, with the assistance of the army,  
 to pay a temporary obedience, in hope of another settlement  
 speedily to ensue. They agreed that the number of this Com- Oct. 26.  
 mittee of Safety should consist of three and twenty persons ; six  
 officers of the army, whereof Fleetwood, Lambert, and Des-  
 borough were three, Ireton, lord mayor of London, and Titch-  
 borne, the two principal officers of the militia of the city, with  
 four or five more of that *classis* of more private names, but men  
 tried, and faithful to the repub[lican] interest, and not like to  
 give any countenance to Presbyterians, (for they were very  
 jealous of that party generally); three or four others, of those  
 who had been the King's judges, with Vane, and Whitlocke, whom  
 they made Keeper of their Great Seal.

92. And thus having chosen each other, and agreed that  
 they should exercise the whole legislative power of the nation,  
 and proclaimed themselves *The Committee of Safety for the king-* Oct. 29.  
*dom*, and required all people to pay them obedience, and issued  
 out their warrants for all things which they thought good for Oct. 31.  
 themselves, to all which there appeared a general submission  
 and acquiescence, and that they might be sure to receive no  
 disturbance from those of their own tribe in any parts, the  
 Committee of Safety<sup>1</sup> sent colonel Cobbett to Scotland, to per- Oct. 14<sup>2</sup>.  
 suade general Munke to a concurrence with them, and, because  
 they were not confident of him, (there being great emulation  
 between him and Lambert,) to work upon as many of his officers  
 as he could, there being many in that army of whose affections  
 they were well assured ; and at the same time they sent another  
 colonel<sup>3</sup> into Ireland, to dispose the army there to a submission  
 to their power and authority.

<sup>1</sup> [The committee of the officers.]

<sup>2</sup> [*Mercur. Polit.*, No. 591, p. 812 ; Oct. 17, Whitlocke's *Memorials*.]

<sup>3</sup> [col. Barrow.]

1659 93. Before the Parliament was routed they discerned what Lambert's intrigues would shortly produce, and therefore had writ to Munke that he would take care of his army, lest it was corrupted against him, which they knew was endeavouring; and Haslerigge, who had some friendship with him, writ particularly to him, to continue firm to the Parliament, and to assure him that before Lambert should be able to be near him to give him any trouble he would give him other divertisement. And as soon as Lambert had acted that violence upon the Speaker, so that they could meet no more, Haslerigge and Morl[e]y, two of the commissioners for the government of the army, went presently to Portsmouth, where colonel Whettam the governor was their friend, and devoted to the Presbyterian republical party; for that distinction was now grown amongst them, the most considerable of their party professing that they very much desired monarchical government and the person of the King, so that they might have him without episcopacy, and enjoy the lands of the

Dec. 4. Church, which they had divided amongst them. They were well received at Portsmouth; and that they might be without any disturbance there, the governor turned all such officers and soldiers out of the town who were suspected to be, or might be made, of the party of the army; and colonel Morl[e]y, whose interest was in Sussex, easily drew in enough of his friends to make them very secure in their garrison; which the Committee of Safety thought would be quickly reduced, if all the rest of the kingdom were at their devotion; nor did the matter itself much trouble them, for they knew that Haslerigge would never be induced to serve the King, whose interest could only break all their measures.

94. But that which gave them real trouble was, that they

Oct. 29. received a bold letter from Munke<sup>1</sup>, who presumed to censure and find fault with what they had done, in using such force and violence to the Parliament, from whence they had all their power and authority; and shortly after they heard that he had possessed himself of Barwick. But that which troubled them most was, that as soon as Cobbett came into Scotland he was coun-

<sup>1</sup> [Dated Oct. 20.]

mitted close prisoner to Edenborough castle, and that Munke 1659 used extraordinary diligence to purge his army, and turned all the fanatics, and other persons who were supposed by him to have any inclination to Lambert and his party, both out of the army and the kingdom; sending them under a guard into Warwick, and from thence dismissed them into England, under the penalty of death if they were ever after found in Scotland. This was an alarum worthy of their fear, and evidence enough that they were never to expect him to be of their party; besides that they had always looked upon him as a person entirely devoted to the person of Cromwell; otherwise, without obligation to any party or opinion, and more like to be seduced by the King than any man who had authority in the three kingdoms. Therefore they resolved to send Lambert with their whole army into the north, that he might at least stop him in any march he should think of making; reserving only some troops to send to Portsmouth, if not to reduce it at least to hinder them from making incursions into the two neighbour counties of Sussex and Hampshire, where they had many friends. Oct. 29<sup>1</sup>.

95. Whilst all preparations were making for the army to march towards Scotland, the Committee of Safety resolved once more to try if they could induce Munke to a conjunction with them; and to that purpose they sent a committee to him of such persons as they thought might be grateful to him<sup>2</sup>, amongst whom was his wife's brother, with offers of any thing he could desire of advantage to himself or for any of his friends. He received these men with all imaginable civility and courtesy, making great professions that he desired nothing more than to unite himself and his army with that of England, so that there might be a lawful power to which they might all be subject; that the force that had been used upon the Parliament was an action of such a nature that was destructive to all government, and that it would be absolutely necessary to restore that to its freedom, rights, and privileges; which being done, he would use all the instance and credit he had to procure an Act of pardon Oct. 29.

<sup>1</sup> [Lambert began his journey on Nov. 3.]

<sup>2</sup> [Dr. Clarges and col. Talbot.]

1659 and oblivion for all that had been done amiss ; and this would unite both Parliament and army for the public safety, which was apparently threatened and shaken by this disunion ; that he so much desired peace and union, and so little thought of using force, that he had appointed three officers of his army, Nov. 4<sup>1</sup>. Wilkes, Clobery, and Knight, to go to London and treat with the Committee of Safety of all particulars necessary thereunto. When the committee from London gave an account of their reception, and of the great professions the general made, and his resolution to send a committee to treat upon the accommodation, the Committee of Safety was very well pleased, and concluded that the fame of their army's march had frightened him ; so that, as they willingly embraced the overture of a treaty, they likewise appointed Lambert to hasten his march, and to make no stay till he should come to Newcastle. All which he observed with great punctuality and expedition, his army still increasing till he came thither.

96. General Munke was a gentleman of a very good extraction, of a very ancient family in Devonshire, always very loyally affected. Being a younger brother he entered early into the life and condition of a soldier, upon that stage where all Europe then acted, between the Spaniard and the Dutch ; and had the reputation of a very good foot-officer in the lord Vere's regiment in Holland, at the time when he assigned it to the command of colonel Goring. When the first troubles began in Scotland, Munke, with many other officers of the nation, left the Dutch service, and betook themselves to the service of the King. And in the beginning of the Irish rebellion he was sent thither, with the command of the lord of Leicester's own regiment of foot, (who was then Lieutenant of Ireland,) and continued in that service with singular reputation of courage and conduct. When the war brake out in England between the King and the Parliament, he fell under some discountenance upon a suspicion of some inclination to the Parliament ; which proceeded only from his want of bitterness in his discourses against them, rather than from any inclinations towards them ; as appeared by his

<sup>1</sup> [Letter to Lambert.]

behaviour at Nantwich, where he was taken prisoner, and re- 1659  
mained in the Tower till the end of the war. <sup>1</sup> For though his  
behaviour had been such in Ireland, when the transportation of  
the regiments from thence to serve the King in England was in  
debate, that it was evident enough that he had no mind his  
regiment should be sent in that expedition, and his answers to  
the lord Ormonde were so rough and doubtful, (having had no  
other education but Dutch and Devoushire,) that he thought not  
fit to trust him, but gave the command of the regiment to Harry  
Warren, the lieutenant colonel of it, an excellent officer, gene-  
rally known, and exceedingly beloved where he was known ;  
those regiments were sent to Chester ; but there were others at  
the same time sent to Bristol, and with them Munke was sent  
prisoner, and from Bristol to the King at Oxford, where, being  
known to many persons of quality, and his eldest brother being  
at the same time most zealous in the King's service in the west  
and most useful, his professions were so sincere, (being through-  
out his whole life never suspected of dissimulation,) that all men  
thought him very worthy of all trust ; and the King was willing  
to send him into the west, where all men had a great opinion of  
his ability to command. But he desired that he might serve  
with his old friends and companions ; and so, with the King's  
leave, made all possible haste towards Chester, where he arrived  
the very day before the defeat at Nantwich ; and though his  
lieutenant colonel was very desirous to give up the command  
again to him, and to receive his orders, he would by no means  
at that time take it, but chose to serve as a volunteer in the first  
rank, with a pike in his hand, and was the next day taken <sup>1644</sup>  
prisoner with the rest, and with most of the other officers sent <sup>Jan. 25.</sup>  
to Hull, and shortly after from thence to the Tower of London.

97. He was no sooner there, than the lord Lysle, who had  
great kindness for him, and good interest in the Parliament,  
persuaded him, with much importunity, to take a commission  
in that service, and offered him a command superior to what he  
had ever had before ; which he positively and disdainfully re-  
fused to accept, though the straits he suffered in prison were

<sup>1</sup> [*Hist.*, p. 32.]

1659 very great, and he thought himself not kindly dealt with, that there was neither care for his exchange nor money sent for his support. But there was all possible endeavour used for the first, by offering several officers of the same quality for his exchange; which was always refused; there having been an ordinance made that no officer who had been transported out of Ireland should ever be exchanged; so that most of them remained still in prison with him in the Tower, and the rest in other prisons; who all underwent the same hardships by the extreme necessity of the King's condition, which could not provide money enough for their supply; yet all was done towards it that was possible.

1644  
Oct. 10.

98<sup>1</sup>. When the war was at an end, and the King a prisoner, Cromwell prevailed with him, [Monck,] for his liberty and money, which he loved heartily, to engage himself again in the war of Ireland. And from that time he continued very firm to him [Cromwell,] who was liberal and bountiful to him, and took him into his entire confidence; and after he had put the command of Scotland into his hands, he feared nothing from those quarters; nor was there any man in either of the armies upon whose fidelity to him he more depended. And those of his western friends who thought best of him thought it to no purpose to make any attempt upon him whilst he [Cromwell] lived. But as soon as Cromwell was dead, he was generally looked upon as a man more inclined to the King than any other in any authority, if he might discover it without too much loss or hazard. His elder brother had been entirely devoted to the King's service, and all his relations were of the same faith. He had no fumes of religion which turned his head, nor any credit with, or dependence upon, any who were swayed by those trances; only he was cursed, after a long familiarity, to marry a woman of the lowest extraction<sup>2</sup>, the least wit, and less beauty, who, taking no care for any other part of herself, had deposited her soul with some Presbyterian ministers, who disposed her to that interest. She was a woman *nihil muliebre*

<sup>1</sup> [Life, p. 573.]

<sup>2</sup> [Aune Clarges, sister of Thomas Clarges, M.D.; married about 1653.]

*præter corpus gerens*<sup>1</sup>, so utterly unacquainted with all persons 1659 of quality of either sex, that there was no possible approach to him by her.

99. He had a younger brother, a divine, who had a parsonage in Devonshire<sup>2</sup>, and had through all the ill times carried himself with signal integrity, and, being a gentleman of a good family, was in great reputation with all those who constantly adhered to the King. Sir Hugh Pollard and sir John Greenevill, who had both friendship for the general and old acquaintance and all confidence in his brother, advised with him, whether, since Cromwell was now gone, and in all reason it might be expected that his death would be attended with a general revolution, by which the King's interest would be again disputed, he did not believe that the general might be wrought upon, in a fit conjuncture, to serve the King, in which he would be sure to meet with a universal concurrence from the whole Scotch nation. The honest person thought the overture so reasonable, and wished so heartily it might be embraced, that he offered himself to make a journey to him [his brother] into Scotland, upon pretence of a visit, (there having been always a brotherly affection performed between them,) and directly to propose it to him. Pollard and Greenevill informed the King of this design, and believed well themselves of what they wished so much, and desired his majesty's approbation and instruction. The King had reason to approve it, and sent such directions as he thought most July 21. proper for such a negotiation. And so his brother began his journey towards Edenborough, where the general received him well. But after he had stayed some time there, and found an opportunity to tell him on what errand he came, he found him to be so far from the temper of a brother, that, after infinite reproaches for his daring to endeavour to corrupt him, he required him to leave that kingdom, using many oaths to him that if he ever returned to him with the same proposition he would cause him to be hanged; with which the poor man was

<sup>1</sup> [Vell. Paterculus, *Hist. Rom.*, ii. 74.]

<sup>2</sup> [Nicholas Monck, vicar of Kilkhampton, afterwards bishop of Hereford.]

1659 so terrified, that he was glad when he was gone, and never had the courage after to undertake the like employment <sup>1</sup>.

100. And at that time there is no question the general had not the least thought or purpose ever to contribute to the King's restoration, the hope whereof he believed to be desperate; and the disposition that did grow in him afterwards did arise from those accidents which fell out, and even obliged him to undertake that which proved so much to his profit and glory. And yet from this very time, his brother being known and his journey taken notice of, it was generally believed in Scotland that he had a purpose to serve the King; which his majesty took no pains to disclaim, either there or in England.

101. Upon the several sudden changes in England, and the army's possessing itself of the entire government, he [Monck] saw he should quickly be overrun and destroyed by Lambert's greatness, of which he had always great emulation, if he did not provide for his own security. And therefore when he heard of his march towards the north, he used all inventions to get time, by entering into treaties, and in hope that there would appear some other party that would own and avow the Parliament interest, as he had done; nor had he then more in his imagination than his own profit and greatness under the establishment of its government.

102. When he heard of Lambert's being past York, and his making haste to Newcastle, and had purged out of his army all those whose affections and fidelity were suspected by him, he called the States of Scotland together, which he had subdued to all imaginable tameness, though he had exercised no other tyranny over them than was absolutely necessary to reduce the pride and stubbornness of that people to an entire submission to the yoke. In all his other carriage towards them but what was in order to that end, he was friendly and compani[on]able enough; and as he was feared by the nobility and hated by the

<sup>1</sup> [He left about Oct. 8, after two months' friendly stay. According to Skinner's *Life*, the general had told him that he would have to hang him if he found him talking about a restoration, but this was only in pursuance of his dissembling policy.]



clergy, so he was not unloved by the common people, who 1659 received more justice and less oppression from him than they had been [ac]customed<sup>1</sup> to under their own lords. When the Convention appeared before him, he told them that he had Nov.15-17. received a call from heaven and earth to march with his army into England for the better settlement of the government there; and though he did not intend his absence should be long, yet he foresaw that there might be some disturbance of the peace which they enjoyed, and therefore he expected and desired that in any such occasion they would be ready to join with the forces he left behind in their own defence. In the second place, which was indeed all he cared for, he very earnestly pressed them that they would raise him a present sum of money for supplying the necessities of the army, without which it could not march into England.

103. From the time that he had settled his government in that kingdom, he had shewed more kindness to, and used more familiarity with, such persons who were most notorious for affection to the King, as finding them a more direct and punctual people than the rest; and when these men resorted to him upon this Convention, though they could draw nothing from him of promise or intimation to any such purpose, yet he was very well content that they should believe that he carried with him very good inclinations to the King; of which imagination of theirs he received very great advantage; for they gave him a twelvemonth's tax over the kingdom, which complied with his wish, and enabled him to draw his army together. And after he had assigned those who[m] he thought fit to leave behind him, under the command of major general Morgan, he marched with the rest to Barwick, where a good part of his Dec. 5<sup>2</sup> horse and foot expected him, having put an end to his treaty at London, and committed and cashiered colonel Wilkes, one of his commissioners he had sent thither, upon his return to Scotland, for having consented to something prejudicial to him, and expressly contrary to his instructions. However, he

<sup>1</sup> ['uncustomed,' MS.]

<sup>2</sup> [*Mercur. Polit.*, No. 598, p. 944.]

1650 desired to gain farther time, and consented to another treaty to be held at Newcastle, which, though he knew [it] would be governed by Lambert, was like not to be without some benefit to him, because it would keep up the opinion in the Committee of Safety that he was inclined to accommodation of peace.

about Nov.  
21.

104. It was towards the end of November that Lambert with his army arrived at Newcastle, where he found the officers and soldiers [whom<sup>1</sup>] Munke had cashiered, and [who<sup>1</sup>,] he persuaded the people, had deserted him for his infidelity to the commonwealth, and that most of those who stayed with him would do so too, as soon as he [Lambert] should be within any distance to receive them. But he now found his confidence had carried him too far, and that he was at too great a distance to give that relief to his Committee of Safety which it was like to stand in need of. Haslerigge and Morl[e]y were now looked upon as the persons invested with the authority of Parliament, whose interest was supported by them; and the officer who was sent by the Committee of Safety to restrain them, or rather to restrain persons from resorting to them, found himself deserted by more than half his soldiers, who declared that they would serve the Parliament, and so went into Portsmouth; and another officer, who was sent with a stronger party to second them, discovering or fomenting the same affections in his soldiers, Dec. 20. very frankly carried them to the same place: so that they were now grown too numerous to be contained within that garrison, but were quartered to be in readiness to march whither their generals would conduct them.

105. The city took new courage from hence; and what the masters durst not publicly own, the apprentices did, their dislike of the present government; and, flocking together in great multitudes, declared that they would have a free Parliament. And though colonel Hewson, (a fellow who had been an ill shoemaker, and afterwards clerk to a brewer of small beer,)

Dec. 5. who was left to guard the Committee of Safety, suppressed that commotion by marching into the city, and killing some of the apprentices, yet the loss of that blood inflamed the city the

<sup>1</sup> ['which—which,' MS.]

more against the army, which they said was only kept on foot 1659 to murder the citizens; and they caused a bill of indictment to be prepared against Hewson for those murders. The Common Council appeared every day more refractory, and refused to concur in any thing that was proposed to them by the Committee of Safety, which began to be universally abhorred, as like to be the original of such another tyranny as Cromwell had erected, since it wholly depended upon the power and spirit of the army; though, on the other hand, the Committee pro- Dec. 10<sup>1</sup>. tested and declared to them, that there should be a Parliament called to meet together in February next, under such qualifications and restrictions as might be sure to exclude such persons who would destroy them. But this gave no satisfaction, every man remembering the Parliament that had been packed by Cromwell.

106. But that which brake the heart of the Committee of Safety was the revolt of their favourite vice-admiral Lawson, a man at least as much a republican as any man amongst them; as much an Independent, as much an enemy to the Presbyterians of the Covenant, as sir H. Vane himself, and a great dependent upon sir H. Vane; whom they had raised to that command that they might be sure to have the seamen still at their devotion. This man, with his whole squadron, came into the river and declared for the Parliament<sup>2</sup>. This was so unexpected that they would not believe it, but sent sir H. Vane and two others of great intimacy with Lawson<sup>3</sup> to confer with him; who, when they came to the fleet, found sir Anthony Dec. 17. Ashl[e]y Cooper, and two others, members of the Parliament, who had so fully possessed him, that he was deaf to all their charms, and told them that he would submit to no authority Dec. 18. but that of the Parliament.

107. Upon the fame of this, Haslerigge and Morl[e]y resolve with their troops to leave Portsmouth, and to march towards

<sup>1</sup> [On Dec. 14 the Committee ordered that writs should be issued for summoning a Parliament on Jan. 24.]

<sup>2</sup> [His *Declaration* is dated Dec. 13.]

<sup>3</sup> [‘sir Henry Vane, major Salwey, col. Salmon, and others.’ *Mercur. Polit.*, No. 599, p. 963.]

1659 London, where their friends now prevailed so much. And the  
 Dec. 22. news of this march raised new thoughts in those soldiers who had been left by Lambert to execute any orders which they should receive from the Committee of Safety. The officers of these regiments had been cashiered by the Committee of Safety for adhering to the Parliament; and their commands having been given to other men who had been discountenanced by the Parliament, the regiments appeared as much confirmed to the interest of the army as could be wished. These cashiered officers, upon so great revolutions in the city and the navy, and the news of the advance of Haslerigge and Morl[e]y, resolved to confer with their old soldiers, and try whether they had as much credit with them as their new officers; and found so much encouragement, that at a time appointed they put themselves into the head of their regiments, and marched with them into the field; [whence<sup>1</sup>,] after a short conference together, and renewing vows to each other never more to desert the Parlia-  
 Dec. 24. ment, they all marched into Chancery Lane, to the house of the Speaker, and professed their resolution to live and die with the Parliament, and never more to swerve from their fidelity to it.

108. Lambert, upon the first news of the froward spirit in the city, had sent back Desborough's regiment, which was now  
 Dec. 23. marched as near London as St. Alban's, where, hearing what their fellows at Westminster, with whom they were to join, had done, they resolved not to be the last in their submission, but declared that they likewise were for the Parliament, and gave the Speaker notice of their obedience. In all these several tergiversations of the soldiers, the general Flectewood remained still in consultations with the Committee of Safety; and when any intelligence was brought of any murmur amongst the soldiers, by which a revolt might ensue, and he was desired to go amongst them to confirm them, he would fall upon his knees to his prayers, and could hardly be prevailed with to go to them. And when he was amongst them, and in the middle of any discourse, he would invite them all to prayers, and put

<sup>1</sup> ['where,' MS.]

himself upon his knees before them: and when some of his 1659 friends importuned him to appear more vigorous in the charge he had, without which they must be all destroyed, they could get no other answer from him than that God had spit in his face and would not hear him: so that men ceased to wonder why Lambert had preferred him to the office of general, and were content with the second command for himself.

109. Lenthall the Speaker, upon this new declaration of Dec. 24. the soldiers, recovered his spirit, and went into the city, conferred with the Lord Mayor and aldermen, and declared to them that the Parliament would meet within very few days. For as the members were not many who were alive and suffered to meet as the Parliament, so they were now dispersed into several places. Then he went to the Tower, and by his own authority removed the lieutenant<sup>1</sup>, who had been put in by the Committee of Safety, and put in sir Anthony Ashl[e]y Cooper Dec. 26. and other members of the Parliament into the government and command of the Tower. And all things being in this good order, he and his members met again together at Westminster, Dec. 26. and assumed the government of the three kingdoms, out of which they had been twice before cast with so much reproach and infamy. As soon as they came together, they repealed their Act against the payment of excise and customs, and put Dec. 27. those collections into the state they had been formerly [in,] that they might be sure not to be without money to pay their proselyte forces, and to carry on their other expenses. Then they appointed commissioners to direct the quarters into which their army should be put, and made an order that all the troops under the command of Lambert, (without sending any direction to him,) should repair to those quarters to which they were assigned.

110. This man was now in a disconsolate condition. As Munke approached nearer to him, very many of his soldiers deserted him, and went to the other. The lord Fayrefax had raised forces, and possessed himself of York, without declaring any thing of his purpose. And this last order of the Parlia-

<sup>1</sup> [col. Fitch.]

1660 ment so entirely stripped Lambert of his army, that there remained not with him above one hundred horse; all the rest returned to their quarters with all quietness and resignation; March 7. and himself was soon after committed to the Tower. Those officers of the army who had been formerly cashiered by them [the Parliament], and resumed their commands that they might disband them, were again dismissed from their charges, and committed prisoners to their own houses. Sir H. Vane and Jan. 9. such other members of the House as had concurred with the Committee of Safety were likewise confined to their own houses: so that the Parliament seemed now again possessed of a more absolute authority than ever it had been, and to be without any danger of opposition or contradiction.

111. The other changes and fluctuations had still administered hopes to the King, and the daily breaking out of new animosities amongst the chief ministers of the former mischieves disposed men to believe that the government might at last rest upon the old foundations. Men expected that a very sharp engagement between Lambert and Munke might make the army for ever after irreconcilable<sup>1</sup> and that all parties would be at last obliged to consent to a new Parliament, in the election whereof there was a reasonable belief that the general temper of the people would choose sober and wise men, who would rather bind up wounds which had been already made than endeavour to widen them. The Committee of Safety neither received the reverence nor inculcated the fear which any government was to do that was to last any time. But this wonderful resurrection of the Parliament, that had been so often exploded, so often dead and buried, and was the only image of power that was formidable to the King and his party, and seemed to pull up all their hopes by the roots, looked like an act of Providence to establish their monstrous murder and usurpation. And it may be justly said, and transmitted as a truth to posterity, that there was not one man who bore a part in these changes and giddy revolutions who had the least purpose or thought to contribute towards the King's restor-

<sup>1</sup> ['irreconciliable,' MS.]

ation, or who wished well to his interest; they who did so 1660  
 being so totally suppressed and dispirited, that they were only  
 at gaze what light might break out of this darkness, and what  
 order Providence might produce out of this confusion.

112. And this was the true state of affairs when the King  
 returned from Fuentarabia to Bruxells, or within few days  
 after; and therefore it is no wonder that there was that de-  
 jection of spirit upon his majesty and those about him, and that  
 the duke of York, who saw so little hope of returning into  
 England, was well pleased with the condition that was offered  
 him in Spain, and that his servants were impatient to find him  
 in possession of it.

113. Whilst the divisions continued in the army, and the  
 Parliament seemed entirely deposed and laid aside, and nobody  
 imagined a possibility of any composition without blood, the  
 cardinal himself, as is said before, and the Spanish ministers; § 70.  
 seemed ready and prepared to advance any design of the  
 King's. But when they saw all those contentions and raging  
 animosities composed or suppressed without one broken head;  
 and those very men again in possession of the power and the  
 army who had been so scornfully rejected and trampled upon,  
 and who had it now in their power as well as their purpose to  
 level all those preeminences which had overlooked them, they  
 looked upon the government as more securely settled against  
 domestic disturbances, and much more formidably with refer-  
 ence to their neighbours, than it had been under Cromwell  
 himself, and thought of nothing more than how to make ad-  
 vantageous and firm alliances with it.

114. There remained only within the King's own breast  
 some faint hope (and God knows it was very faint) that  
 Munke's march into England might yet produce some alter-  
 ation. His majesty had a secret correspondence with some  
 principal officers in his army, who were much trusted by him,  
 and promised great services, and it was presumed that they  
 would undertake no such perilous engagement without his  
 privity and connivance. Then it might be expected from his  
 judgment, that whatever present conditions the governing party

1660 might give him for the service he had done, he could not but conclude that they would be always jealous of the power they saw he was possessed of, and that an army that had marched so far barely upon his word would be as ready to march to any place, or for any purpose, he would conduct them. And it was evident enough to all the world that the Parliament resolved to new model their army, and to leave no man in any such extent of command as to be able to control their counsels. Besides, he knew they were jealous of his fidelity, how much soever they courted him then, and therefore he was obliged to provide for his own safety and security.

115. But, I say, these were but faint hopes, and grounded upon such probabilities as despairing men are willing to entertain. The truth is, those officers had honest inclinations, and, as wise men, had concluded, that from those frequent shuffles some game at last might fall out that might prove to the King's advantage, and so were willing to bespeak their own welcome by an early application, which, in regard of the persons trusted by them, they concluded would be attended with no danger. But they never gave the general the least cause to imagine that they had any such affection; and if they had, they had paid dearly for it. And for the second presumption, upon his understanding and ratiocination, alas! it was not equal to the enterprise. He could not bear so many and so different contrivances in his head together as were necessary to that work. And it was the King's great happiness that he never had it in his purpose to serve him till it fell to be in his power, and indeed till he had nothing else in his power to do. If he had resolved it sooner, he had been destroyed himself; the whole machine being so infinitely above his strength, that it could be only moved by a divine hand; and it is glory enough to his memory, that he was instrumental in bringing those mighty things to pass, which he had neither wisdom to foresee, nor courage to attempt, nor understanding to contrive.

116. When the Parliament found themselves at so much ease, and so much without apprehension of farther insecurity, they heartily wished that general Munke was again in his old



quarters in Scotland. But as he continued his march towards 1660 London without expecting their orders, so they knew not how to command him to return whom they had sent for to assist them, without seeing him and giving thanks and reward for his great service; yet they sent to him their desire that all his Jan. 6. forces might be sent back to Scotland, and that he would not come to London with above five hundred horse. But he, having sent back as many as he knew would be sufficient for any work they could have to do in those northern parts, continued his march with an army of about five thousand horse and foot, consisting of such persons in whose affections to him he had full confidence. When he came to York, he found that Jan. 11. city in the possession of the lord Fayrefax, who received him with open arms, and as if he had drawn those forces together, and seized upon that place, to prevent the army's possessing it, and to make his advance the less interrupted.

117. The truth is, that upon a letter from the King delivered to him [Fayrefax] by sir Horatio Townesend, and with his sole privity, and upon a presumption that general Munke brought good affections with him for his majesty's service, the lord Fayrefax had called together his old disbanded officers and soldiers, and marched in the head of them into York, as soon as Jan. 1. Lambert was passed towards Newcastle, with a full resolution to declare for the King. But when he could not discover upon conference with Munke that he had any such thought, he satisfied himself with the testimony of his own conscience, and presently dismissed his troops, being well contented with having, in the head of the principal gentlemen of that large county, presented their desires to the general in writing, that he would be instrumental to restore the nation to peace and security, and to the enjoying those rights and liberties which by the law were due to them, and of which they had been robbed and deprived by so many years' distractions; and that in order thereunto, he would prevail either for the restoring those members which had been excluded in the year 1648 by force and violence, that they might exercise that trust the kingdom had reposed in them, or that a free and full Parliament might

1660 be called by the votes of the people, to which all subjects had a right by their birth.

Dec. 29. 118. The principal persons of all counties through which he marched flocked to him in a body with addresses to the same purpose. The city of London sent a letter to him by their sword-bearer, to offer their service; and all concluded for a free Parliament, legally chosen by the free votes of the people. He received all with much civility and few words; took all occasions publicly to declare that nothing should shake his fidelity to the present Parliament, yet privately assured those who he thought necessary should hope well, that he would procure a free Parliament; so that every body promised himself that which he most wished.

Jan. 16. 119. The Parliament was far from being confident that he was above temptation; the manner of his march, with such a body contrary to their desires, his receiving so many addresses from the people, and his treating malignants so civilly, startled them much; though his professions of fidelity to the Parliament, and referring all determinations to their wisdoms, had a good aspect, yet they feared that he might observe too much how generally odious they were grown to the people, which might lessen his reverence towards them. To prevent this as much as might be, and to give some check to that license of addresses and resort of malignants, they sent two of their members of most credit (Scott and Robinson,) under pretence of giving their thanks to him for the service he had done, to continue and be present with him, and to discountenance and reprehend any boldness that should appear in any delinquents<sup>1</sup>. But this served but to draw more affronts upon them; for those gentlemen who were civilly used by the general would not bear any disrespect from those, of whose persons they had all contempt, and for the authority of those who sent them had no kind of reverence. As soon as the city knew of the departing these two members, they likewise sent four<sup>2</sup> of their

<sup>1</sup> [They met Monk at Leicester on Jan. 22.]

<sup>2</sup> [three; aldermen Fowke and Vincent, and col. Bromfield. *Mercur. Polit.*, No. 604, p. 1043.]

principal citizens to perform the same compliments, and to 1660 confirm him in his inclinations to a free Parliament, as the remedy all men desired<sup>1</sup>.

120. He continued his march with very few halts till he came to St. Alban's. There he stopped for some days, and sent Jan. 28. to the Parliament that he had some apprehension that those regiments and troops of the army who had formerly deserted them, though for the present they were returned to their obedience, would not live peaceably with his men, and therefore desired that all the soldiers who were then quartered in the Strand, Westminster, or other suburbs of the city, might be presently removed, and sent to more distant quarters, that there might be room for his army. This message was unexpected, and exceedingly perplexed them, and made them see their fate would still be to be under the force and awe of an army. However, they found it necessary to comply, and sent Feb. 1. their orders to all soldiers to depart, which with the reason and ground of their resolution, was so disdainfully received, that a mutiny did arise amongst the soldiers, and the regiment that Feb. 2. was quartered in Somerset House expressly refused to obey those orders; so that there was like to be new uproars. But their officers who would have been glad to inflame them upon such an occasion were under restraint; and so at last all was composed, and officers and soldiers removed to the quarters which were assigned them, with animosity enough against those who were to succeed them in their old [ones.] And about the middle of February general Munke with his army marched through the Feb. 3. city into the Strand and Westminster, where it was quartered; his own lodgings being provided for him in Whitehall.

121. He was shortly after conducted to the Parliament, which had before, when they saw there was no remedy, conferred the office and power of general of all the forces in the three kingdoms upon him, as absolutely as ever they had given it to Cromwell<sup>2</sup>. There he had a chair appointed for him to sit

<sup>1</sup> [They met him at Market Harborough on Jan. 23.]

<sup>2</sup> [By vote on Jan. 26 confirming a commission given by the Council of State on Nov. 24.]

1660 in; and the Speaker made a speech to him, in which he  
 Feb. 6. extolled the great service he had done to the Parliament, and  
 therein to the kingdom, which was in danger to have lost all  
 the liberty they had gotten with so vast an expense of blood  
 and treasure, and to have been made slaves again, if he had not  
 magnanimously declared himself in their defence; the reputa-  
 tion whereof was enough to blast all their enemies' designs,  
 and to reduce all to their obedience. He told him his memory  
 should flourish to all ages, and the Parliament (whose thanks he  
 presented to him) would take all occasions to manifest their  
 kindness and gratitude for the service he had done.

122. The general was not a man of eloquence, or of any  
 volubility of speech; he assured them of his constant fidelity,  
 which should never be shaken, and that he would live and die  
 in their service; and then informed them of the several ad-  
 dresses which he had received in his march, and of the observ-  
 ation he made of the general temper of the people, and their  
 impatient desire of a free Parliament, which he mentioned with  
 more than his natural warmth, as a thing they would expect to  
 be satisfied in; (which they observed and disliked;) yet con-  
 cluded, that having done his duty in this representation, and  
 thereby complied with his promise which he had made to those  
 who had made the addresses, he entirely left the consideration  
 and determination of the whole to their wisdoms; which gave  
 them some ease, and hope that he would be faithful, though  
 inwardly they heartily wished that he was again in Scotland,  
 and that they had been left to contend with the malignity of  
 their old army; and they longed for some occasion that he  
 might manifest his fidelity and resignation to them, or give  
 them just occasion to suspect and question it.

123. The late confusions and interruptions of all public  
 receipts had wholly emptied those coffers out of which the  
 army and all other expenses were to be supplied. And though  
 the Parliament had, upon their coming together again, renewed  
 their ordinances for all collections and payments, yet money  
 came in very slowly; and the people generally had so little  
 reverence for their legislators, that they gave very slow

obedience to their directions: so that they found it necessary 1660 for their present supply, till they might by degrees make themselves more universally obeyed, to raise a present great sum of money upon the city; which could not be done but by the advice and with the consent of the Common Council; that is, it could not be levied and collected orderly and peaceably without their distribution.

124. The Common Council was constituted of such persons who were weary of the Parliament, and would in no degree submit to or comply with any of their commands. They did not Feb. 8. only utterly refuse to consent to this new imposition, but in the debate of it excepted against the authority, and, upon the matter, declared that they would never submit to any imposition that was not granted by a free and lawful Parliament. And it was generally believed that they had assumed this courage upon some confidence they had in the general; and the apprehension of this made the Parliament to be in the greater perplexity and distraction. This would immediately put an end to their empire; and they resolved therefore upon this occasion to make a full experiment of their own power and of their general's obedience.

125. The Parliament, having received a full information from those aldermen, and others, whose interest was bound up with theirs, of all that had passed at the Common Council, and of the seditious discourses and expressions made by several of the citizens, referred it to the consideration of the Council of State what was fit to be done towards the rebellious city, and to reduce them to that submission which they ought to pay to the Parliament. The Privy Council deliberated the matter, and returned their advice to the Parliament, that some part of the Feb. 9. army might be sent into the city, and remain there, to preserve the peace thereof and of the commonwealth, and to reduce it to the obedience of the Parliament. And in order thereunto, and for their better humiliation, they thought it convenient that the posts and chains should be removed from and out of the several streets of the city, and that the portcullises and gates of the city should be taken down and broken. Over and above this,

1660 they named ten persons, who had been the principal conductors in the Common Council, all citizens of great reputations; and advised that they might be apprehended and committed to prison, and that thereupon a new Common Council might be elected, that would be more at their devotion.

126. This round advice was embraced by the Parliament; and they had now a fit occasion to make experiment of the courage and fidelity of their general, and commanded him to march into the city with his whole army, and to execute all those particulars which they thought so necessary to their service; and he as readily executed their commanda; led Feb. 9. his army into the town, neglected the entreaties and prayers of all who applied to him, (whereof there were many who believed he meant better towards them,) caused as many as he could of those who were proscribed to be apprehended, and sent them to the Tower, and, with all the circumstances of contempt, pulled down and brake the gates and portcullises, to the confusion and consternation of the whole city; and having thus exposed it to the scorn and laughter of all who hated it, which was the whole kingdom, he returned himself to Whitehall, and his army to their former quarters; and by this last act of outrage convinced those who expected somewhat from him how vain their hopes were, and how incapable he was of embracing any opportunity to do a noble action, and confirmed his masters that they could not be too confident of his obedience to their most extravagant injunctions. And without doubt, if they had cultivated this tame resignation of his with any temper and discretion, by preparing his consent and approbation to their proceedings, they would have found a full condescension from him, at least no opposition to their counsels. But they were so infatuated with pride and insolence, that they could not discern the ways to their own preservation.

127. Whilst he was executing this their tyranny upon the city, they were contriving how to lessen his power and authority, and resolved to join others with him in the command of the Feb. 9. army; and upon that very day they received a petition, which they had fomented, presented to the Parliament by a man

notorious in those times, and who hath been formerly mentioned, 1660 Praise God Barebones, in the head of a crowd of sectaries. The petition began with all the imaginable bitterness and reproaches upon the memory of the late King, and against the person of the present King and all the nobility, clergy, and gentry of the kingdom which adhered to him; the utter extirpation of all which it pressed with great acrimony. It took notice of many discourses of calling a new Parliament, at least of admitting those members to sit in the present Parliament who had been excluded in the year 1648; either of which, they [the petitioners] said, would prove the inevitable destruction of all the godly in the land<sup>1</sup>; and therefore they besought them with all earnestness, that no person whatsoever might be admitted to the exercise of any office or function in the State or in the Church, no not so much as to teach a school, who did not first take the oath of abjuration of the King and of all his family, and that he would never submit to the government of any one single person whatsoever; and that whosoever should presume so much as to propose or mention the restoration of the King, in Parliament or in any other place, should be adjudged guilty of, and condemned for, high treason.

128. This petition was received with great approbation by the House, their affection much applauded, and the thanks of the Parliament very solemnly returned by the Speaker; all which information the general received at Whitehall when he returned out of the city, and was presently attended by his chief officers, who, with open mouths, inveighed against the proceedings of the Parliament, their manifest ingratitude to him and the indignity offered to him, in their giving such countenance to a rabble of infamous varlets, who desired to set the whole kingdom in a flame, to comply with their fantastic and mad enthusiasms; and that they [the Parliament] would never have admitted such an infamous address with approbation except they had first resolved upon his ruin and destruction, which he was assuredly to look for if he did not pre-

<sup>1</sup> [These are not the actual words of the petition, but only express its sense.]

1660 vent it by his wisdom and sagacity; and thereupon told him of the underhand endeavours which were used to work upon the affections of the soldiers.

129<sup>1</sup>. The general had been prepared, by the conferences of Scott and Robinson in the march, to expect that as soon as he came to the Parliament he<sup>2</sup> must take the oath of abjuration of the King and his family; and therefore they advised him to offer the taking it himself, before it should be proposed to him, as a matter that would confirm all men in an entire confidence in him; and he discovered not the least aversion from it. And when he came to the Parliament, they forebore that day to mention it, being a day dedicated only to caress him and to give him thanks, in which it could not be seasonable to mingle any thing of distrust. But they meant roundly to have pressed him to it, if this opportunity, which they looked upon as a better earnest of his fidelity, had not fallen out; and without doubt he had not yet taken any such resolution as would have made him pause in the giving them that satisfaction. But<sup>3</sup> being now awakened by this alarum from his officers, and the temper they were in, and his phlegm a little curdled, he began to think himself in danger, and that this body of men that was called the Parliament had not reputation enough to preserve themselves and those who adhered to them. He had observed throughout the kingdom, as he marched, how opprobrious they were in the estimation of all men, who gave them no other term or appellation but the *rump*, as the fag end of a carcass long since expired. All that night was spent in consultation with his officers; nor did he then form any other design than so to unite his army to him that they might not leave him in any resolution he should think fit to take.

Feb. 11. 130. In the morning, the very next morning<sup>4</sup> after he had broken the gates and the hearts of the city, he called his army again together, and marched with it into London, taking up his own quarters at an alderman's house, where he dined. At

<sup>1</sup> [*Hist.*, p. 32.]

<sup>2</sup> ['that he,' MS.]

<sup>3</sup> [*Life*, p. 581.]

<sup>4</sup> [The next but one. On Thursday, Feb. 9, he removed the chains and barriers in the city, on Friday remained at Whitehall, and on Saturday returned into the city. *Mercur. Polit.*, No. 607, pp. 1101, 2.]



the same time he left Whitehall he sent a letter to the 1660 Parliament, in which he roundly took notice of their unreasonable, unjust, and unpolitic proceedings; of their abetting and countenancing wicked and unchristian tenents in reference to religion, and such as would root out the practice of any religion; of their underhand corresponding with those very persons whom they had declared to be enemies, and who had been principally instrumental in all the affronts and indignities they had undergone, in and after their dissolution. And thereupon he advised them in such terms as they could not but understand for the most peremptory command, that within such a time, (a time prescribed in his letter,) they would issue out writs for a new Parliament<sup>1</sup>, that so their own sitting might be determined<sup>2</sup>; which was the only expedient that could return peace and happiness to the kingdom, and which both the army and kingdom expected at their hands. This letter was no sooner delivered to the House than it was printed, and carefully published and dispersed throughout the city, to the end that they who had been so lately and so wofully disappointed might see how throughly he was embarked, and so entertain no new jealousies of him.

131. After he had dined, and disposed his army in such manner and order as he thought fit, he sent to the Lord Mayor and aldermen to meet him at the Guildhall; where, after many excuses for the work of yesterday, they plighted their troth each to other in such a manner, for their perfect union and adhering to each other for the future, that, as soon as they came from thence, the Lord Mayor attended the general to his lodging, and all the bells of the city proclaimed and testified to the town and kingdom that the army and the city were of one mind. And as soon as the evening came, there was a continued light by bonfires throughout the city and suburbs, with such a universal exclamation of joy as had never been known and cannot be expressed, with such ridiculons expressions of scorn and contempt of the Parliament as testified the no regard, or

<sup>1</sup> [writs for filling up their own number, to be issued by Friday, Feb. 17.]

<sup>2</sup> ['the time hastens wherein you have declared your intended dissolution, which the people and ourselves desire you would be punctual in.']

1660 rather the notable detestation, they had of it; there being scarce a bonfire at which they did not roast rumps, and pieces of flesh they made like them, which they said was for the celebration of the funeral of the Parliament. There can be no invention of fancy, wit, or ribaldry, that was not that night exercised to defame the Parliament and to magnify the general.

132. In such a huddle and mixture of loose people of all conditions, and such a transport of affections, it could not be otherwise but that some men would drink the King's health; which was taken no notice of; nor did one person of condition once presume to mention him. All this, how much soever it amazed and distracted the Parliament, did not so dishearten them but that they continued still to sit, and proceeded in all things with their usual confidence. They were not willing to despair of recovering their general again to them; and to that purpose they sent a committee to treat with him, and to make all such proffera to him as they conceived were most like to comply with his ambition or to satisfy his insatiable avarice. The entertainment he gave this committee was the engaging them in a conference with another committee of the excluded members, to the end that he might be satisfied by hearing both, how one could have right to sit there as a Parliament and the other be excluded: and when he had heard them all, he made no scruple to declare, that in justice the secluded members ought to be admitted, but that matter was now over by his having required the calling another Parliament and the dissolution of this.

133. After he had put the city into the posture they desired, and found no danger threatened him from any place, he returned again to his quarter in Whitehall, and disposed his army to those posts which he judged most convenient. He then sent  
Feb. 17<sup>1</sup>. for the members of the Parliament to come to him, and many others who had been excluded, and lamented the sad condition the kingdom was in, which he principally imputed to the disunion and divisions which had arisen in Parliament between those who were faithful to the commonwealth; that he had had many conferences with them together, and was satisfied by those

<sup>1</sup> [*Mercur. Polit.*, No. 608, p. 1117.]

gentlemen who had been excluded of their integrity; and there- 1660  
fore he had desired this conference between them, that he might  
communicate his own thoughts to them; in doing whereof, that  
he might not be mistaken in his delivery or misapprehended in  
his expressions, as he had lately been, he had put what he had  
a mind to say in writing; which he commanded his secretary  
to read to them. The writing imported, that the settlement of  
the nation lay now in their hands, and that he was assured they  
would become makers-up of its woful breaches, in pursuit whereof  
they would be sure of all his service, and [he] should think all  
his pains well spent; that he would impose nothing upon them,  
but took leave to put them in mind, that the old foundations  
upon which the government had heretofore stood were so totally  
broken down and demolished, that in the eye of human reason  
they could never be re-edified and restored but in the ruin of  
the nation; that the interest of the city of London would be  
best preserved by the government of a commonwealth, which  
was the only means to make that city to be the bank for the  
whole trade of Christendom; that he thought a moderate, not a  
rigid, Presbyterian government would be most acceptable, and  
the best way of settlement in the affairs of the Church; that their  
care would be necessary to settle the conduct of the army, and  
to provide maintenance for the forces by sea and land; and con-  
cluded with a desire that they would put a period to the present  
Parliament, and give order for the calling another that might  
make a perfect settlement, to which all men might submit.

134. There was no dissimulation in this, that he might cover  
and conceal his good intentions for the King; for without doubt  
he had not to this hour entertained any purpose or thought to  
serve him, but was really of the opinion he expressed in his  
paper, that it was a work impossible; and desired nothing but  
that he might see a commonwealth established, in such a model  
as Holland was, where he had been bred, and that himself might  
enjoy the authority and place which the Prince of Aurange  
possessed in that government. He had not from his marching  
out of Scotland to this time had any conversation with any one  
person who had served the King, or indeed had he acquaintance

1660 with any such; nor had he hitherto, or long after did he, set one of the King's friends at liberty, though all the prisons were full of them; but, on the contrary, they were every day committed, and it was guilt enough to be suspected but to wish for the King's restoration.

135. As soon as the conference above mentioned was ended with the members of the Parliament, they who had been excluded
- Feb. 21. from the year 1648 repaired to the House and without any interruption, which they had hitherto found, took their places; and, being superior in number to the rest, they first repealed and abolished all the orders by which they had been excluded; then they provided for him who had so well provided for them,
- Feb. 25. by renewing and enlarging the general's commission, and re-
- Feb. 24. voking all other commissions which had been granted to any to meddle with, or assign quarters to, any part of the forces. They who had sat before had put the whole militia of the kingdom into the hands of sectaries, persons of no degree or quality, and notorious only for some new tenent in religion, and for some barbarity exercised upon the King's party. All these
- Feb. 23. commissions were revoked, and the militia put under the government of the nobility and principal gentry throughout the
- March 12. kingdom; yet with this care and exception, that no person should be capable of being trusted in that province who did not first declare under his hand, that he did confess and acknowledge that the war raised by the two Houses of Parliament against the late King was just and lawful, until such time as force and violence was used upon the Parliament in the year 1648<sup>1</sup>.
- Jan. 26. 136. In the last place, they raised an assessment of one hundred thousand pounds by the month, for the payment of the army and defraying the public expenses for six months, to which the whole kingdom willingly submitted; and the city of
- Feb. 23. London, upon the credit and security of that Act, advanced as much ready money<sup>2</sup> as they were desired. And having thus far redressed what was past, and provided as well as they could for
- Feb. 22. the future, they issued out writs to call a Parliament, to meet upon the 25th day of April next ensuing, (being April 1660.)

<sup>1</sup> [The words 'until—1648' are not in the proviso.]

<sup>2</sup> [£60,000.]

and then, on the 16th day of March, after they had appointed a 1660 Council of State, consisting of many sober and honest gentlemen, who had never wished the King ill, they dissolved that March 16. present Parliament, against all the importunities used by the sectaries, who in multitudes flocked together, and made addresses in the name of the city of London, that they would not dissolve themselves, and to the unspeakable joy of all the rest of the kingdom, who, notwithstanding their very different affections, expectations, and designs, were unanimous in their weariness and detestation of the Long Parliament.

137. When the King, who had rather an imagination than an expectation that the march of general Munke to London with his army might produce some alteration that might be useful to him, heard now of his entire submission to the Parliament, and of his entering the city and disarming it, the commitment of the principal citizens, and breaking their gates and portcullises, all the little remainder of his hopes was extinguished, and he had nothing left before his eyes but a perpetual exile, attended with all those discomforts of which he had too long experience, and which he must now expect would be improved with the worst circumstances of neglect, which use to wait upon that condition. And a greater consternation and dejection of mind cannot be imagined than at that time covered the whole Court of the King. But God would not suffer the King long to be wrapped up in that melancholic cloud. As the general's second march into the city was the very next day after his first, and dispelled the mists and fogs which the other had raised, so the very evening of that day which had brought the news of the first in the morning, brought likewise an account to his majesty of the second, with all the circumstances of bells and bonfires and burning of rumps, and such other additions as might reasonably be true, and which a willing relator would not omit.

138. When it began to be dark, the lord marquis of Ormonde brought a young man with him to the Chancellor's lodging at Bruxells, which was under the King's bedchamber, and to which his majesty every day vouchsafed to come for the despatch of

1660 any business. The marquis said no more but that that man had formerly been an officer under him, and he believed he was an honest man ; besides, that he brought a line or two of credit from a person they would both believe ; but that his discourse was so strange and extravagant that he knew not what to think of it ; however, he would call the King to judge of it ; and so went out of the room, leaving the man there, and immediately returned with the King.

139. The man's name was Bayly, who had lived most in Ireland, and had served there as a foot-officer under the marquis. He looked as if he had drunk much, or slept little. His relation was, that in the afternoon of such a day he was with sir John Stephens in Lambeth House, used then as a prison for many of the King's friends ; where, whilst they were in conference together, news was brought into the house by several persons that the general was marched with his whole army into the city, it being the very next day after he had been there and broke down their gates and pulled down their posts, and that he had a conference with the mayor and aldermen, which was no sooner ended but that all the city bells rang out ; and he heard the bells very plain at Lambeth ; and that he stayed there so late till they saw the bonfires burning and flaming in the city : upon which sir John Stephens had desired him that he would immediately cross the river, and go into London, and inquire what the matter was, and if he found any thing extraordinary in it, that he would take post, and make all possible haste to Bruxells, that the King might be informed of it ; and so gave him a short note in writing to the marquis of Ormonde, that he might believe all that that messenger would inform him : that thereupon he went over the river, walked through Cheapside, saw the bonfires and the King's health drank in several places, heard all that the general had done, and brought a copy of the letter which the general had sent to the Parliament at the time when he returned with his army into the city ; and then told many things which were, he said, publicly spoken concerning sending for the King : and then he took post for Dover, and hired a bark that brought him to Ostend.

140. The time was so short from the hour he left London 1660 that the expedition of his journey was incredible; nor could any man undertake to come from thence in so short a time upon the most important affair and for the greatest reward. It was evident, by many pauses and hesitations in his discourse and some repetitions, that the man was not composed, and at best wanted sleep; yet his relation could not be a mere fiction and imagination. Sir John Stephens was a man well known to his majesty and the other two, and had been sent over lately by the King with some advice to his friends; and it was well known that he had been apprehended at his landing, and was sent prisoner to Lambeth House. And though he had not mentioned in his note any particulars, yet he had given him credit, and nothing but the man's own devotion to the King could reasonably tempt him to undertake so hazardous and chargeable a journey. Then the general's letter to the Parliament was of the highest moment, and not like to be feigned; and, upon the whole matter, the King thought he had argument to raise his own spirits, and that he should do but justly in communicating his intelligence to his dispirited family and servants; who, upon the news thereof, were proportionably revived to the despair they had swallowed, and, according to the temper of men who had lain under long disconsolation, thought all their sufferings over, and laid in a stock of unreasonable presumption that no success could procure satisfaction for.

141. But the King, who thanked God for this new dawning of hope, and was much refreshed with this unexpected alteration, was yet restrained from any confidence that this would produce any such revolution as would be sufficient to do his work, towards which he saw cause enough to despair of assistance from any foreign power. The most that he could collect from the general's letter, besides the suppressing the present tyranny of the Parliament, was, that the secluded members would be again admitted, and, it may be, able to govern that council; which administered no solid ground of comfort or confidence. Few of those excluded members had been true

1660 members of Parliament, but elected into their places after the end of the war who had been expelled for adhering to the King, and so had no title of sitting there but what the counterfeit great seal had given them, without and against the King's authority. These men, with others who had been lawfully chosen, were willing and desirous that the concessions made by the late King at the Isle of Wight might be accepted; which in truth did, with the preservation of the name and life of the King, as much establish a republican government as was settled after his murder; and because they would insist upon that, they were, with those circumstances of force and violence which are formerly mentioned, excluded from the House; without which that horrid villainy could never have been committed.

142. Now what could the King reasonably expect from these men's re-admission into the government, but that they would resume their old conclusions, and press him to consent to his father's concessions, and which his late majesty yielded unto with much less cheerfulness than he walked to the scaffold, and upon the promise of many powerful men then in the Parliament that he should not be obliged to accomplish that agreement? These revolvings wrought much upon his majesty, though he thought it necessary to appear pleased with what was done, and to expect much greater things from it; which yet he knew not how to contribute to, till he should receive a farther account from London of the revolutions.

143. Indeed, when all he heard before was confirmed by several expresses, who passed with much freedom, and were every day sent by his friends, who had recovered their courage to the full, and discerned that these excluded members were principally admitted to prepare for the calling a new Parliament, and to be sure to make the dissolution of this unquestionable and certain, his majesty recovered all his hopes again; which were every day confirmed by the addresses of many men who had never before applied themselves to him; and many sent to him for his majesty's approbation and leave to serve and sit in the next Parliament. And from the time that the Parliament was dissolved, the Council of State behaved themselves very



civilly towards his majesty's friends, and released many of them 1660 out of prison: and Ansløe [Annesley,] the president of the Council, was very well contented that the King should receive particular information of his devotion, and of his resolution to do him service; which he manifested in many particulars of importance, and had the courage to receive a letter from his majesty, and returned a dutiful answer: all which had a very good aspect, and seemed to promise much good. Yet the King knew not what to think of the general's paper, which he had delivered at his conference with the members; for which he could have no temptation but his violent affection to a commonwealth. None of his [majesty's] friends could find any means of address to him [Monck]; yet they did believe, and were much the better for believing it, that the King had some secret correspondence with him; and some of them sent to the King, of what importance it would be that he gave them some credit, or means of access, to the general, by which they might receive his order and direction in such things as occurred on the sudden, and that they might be sure to do nothing that might cross any purpose of his. To which the King returned no other answer but that they should have patience, and make no attempt whatsoever, and that in due time they should receive all advertisements necessary; it being not thought fit to disclaim the having intelligence<sup>1</sup> with or hopes of the general, since it was very evident, that the opinion that he did design to serve the King, or that he would be at last obliged to do it whether he designed to do it or no, did really as much contribute to the advancement of his [majesty's] service as if he had dedicated himself to it. And the assurance that other men had that he had no such intention hindered those obstructions, jealousies, and interruptions, which very probably might have lessened his credit with his own army, or united all the rest of the forces against him.

144. There happened likewise at this time an accident that very much troubled the King, and might very probably have destroyed all the hopes that began to flatter him. Upon the

<sup>1</sup> [‘no intelligence,’ MS.]

1660 dissolution of the Parliament, which put an end to all the power and authority of those who had been the chief instruments of all the monstrous things which had been done, the highest despair seized upon all who had been the late King's judges, who were sure to find all the hard measure from the secluded members as they were to expect if the King himself had been restored. And all they who had afterwards concurred with them, and exercised the same power, who were called the *rump*, believed their ruin and destruction to be certain and at hand. And therefore they contrived all the ways they could to preserve themselves, and to prevent the assembling a new Parliament; which if they could interrupt, they made no doubt but the rump members would again resume the government, notwithstanding their dissolution by the power of the secluded members, who should then pay dear for their presumption and intrusion.

145. To this purpose they employed their agents amongst the officers and soldiers of the army, who had been disgracefully removed from their quarters in the Strand and Westminster, and the parts adjacent to London, to make room for general Munke's army, which was now looked upon as the sole confiding part of the army. They inflamed these men with the sense of their own desperate condition, who, having served throughout the war, should, besides the loss of all the arrears of pay due to them, be now offered as a sacrifice to the cavaliers, whom they had conquered, and who were implacably incensed against them. Nor did they omit to make the same infusions into the soldiers of general Munke's army, who had all the same title to the same fears and apprehensions. And when their minds were thus prepared, and ready to declare upon the first opportunity, Lambert made his escape out of the Tower; that people having in all places so many of their combination, that they could compass their designs of that kind whenever they thought fit; though the general had as great a jealousy of this man's escape as of any thing that could fall out to supplant him. And therefore it may be presumed that he took all

April 10<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> [*Méroux. Polit.*, No. 615, p. 1253.]

possible care to prevent it: and they who then had the com-**1860** mand of the place were notoriously known neither to love his [Lambert's] person nor to favour his designs.

146. This escape of Lambert in such a conjuncture, the most perilous that it could fall out in, put the general and the Council of State into a great agony. They knew well what poison had been scattered about the army, and what impression it had made in the soldiers. Lambert was the most popular man, and had the greatest influence upon them, and though they had lately deserted him, they had sufficiently published their remorse, and their detestation of those who had seduced and cozened them. So that there was little doubt to be made, now he was at liberty, but that they would flock and resort to him as soon as they should know where to find him. On the other hand, no small danger was threatened from the very drawing the army together to a rendezvous in order to prosecute and oppose him, no man being able to make a judgment what they would choose to do in such a conjuncture, when they were so full of jealousy and dissatisfaction. And it may very reasonably be believed, that if he had, after he found himself at liberty, lain concealed till he had digested the method he meant to proceed in, and procured some place to which the troops might resort to declare with him when he should appear, (which had been very easy then for him to have done,) he would have gone near to have shaken and dissolved the model that the general had made.

147. But either [through] the fear of his security and being betrayed into the hands of his enemy, (as all kind of treachery was at that time very active, as he had experience of,) or the presumption that the army would obey him upon his first call, and that if he could draw a small part to him the rest would never appear against him, he precipitated himself to make an attempt before he was ready for it or it for him, and so put it into his enemy's power to disappoint and control all. He stayed not at all in London, as he ought to have done, but hastened into the country, and trusting a gentleman in Buckinghamshire whom he thought himself sure of, the general had

1660 quickly notice in what quarter he was: yet with marvellous expedition he [Lambert] drew four troops of the army to him, with which he had the courage to appear near Daintry in Northamptonshire, a country infamously famous for disaffection to the King and for adhering to the Parliament; where he presumed he should be attended by other parts of the army, before it should be known at Whitehall where he was and that any forces could be sent from thence against him: of which he doubted not, from his many friends, he should have seasonable notice.

148. But the general, upon his first secret intimation of his being in Buckinghamshire, and of the course he meant to take, had committed it to the charge and care of colonel Ingol[d]sby, (who was well known to be very willing and desirous to take revenge upon Lambert for his malice to Oliver and Richard, and the affront he had himself received from him,) to attend and watch all his motion with his own regiment of horse; which was the more faithful to him for having been before seduced by Lambert to desert him. He [Ingoldsby] used so much diligence in waiting upon his [Lambert's] motion, before he was suspected to be so near, that one of Lambert's four captains<sup>1</sup> fell into the hands of his forlorn hope, who made him prisoner and brought him to their colonel. The captain was very well known to Ingol[d]sby, who after some conference with him gave him his liberty, upon his promise that he would himself retire to his house, and send his troop to obey his commands; which promise he observed; and the next day his troop, under his cornet and quartermaster, came to Ingol[d]sby and informed him where Lambert was; who thereupon made haste, and was in his view before he [Lambert] had notice that he was pursued by him.

April 23. 149. Surprised with this discovery, and finding that one of his troops had forsaken him, he [Lambert] found his enemy much superior to him in number, and therefore sent to desire that they might treat together, which the other was content to do. Lambert proposed to him that they might restore Richard to be Protector, and promised to uuite all his credit to the

<sup>1</sup> [capt. Haselrig.]

support of that interest. But Ingol[d]shy (besides that he well understood the folly and impossibility of that undertaking) had devoted himself to a better interest, and adhered to the general because he presumed that he did intend to serve the King, and so rejected this overture. Whereupon both parties prepared to fight, when another of Lambert's troops forsaking him, and putting themselves under his enemy, he concluded that his safety would depend upon his flight; which he thought to secure by the swiftness of his horse. But Ingol[d]shy keeping his eye still upon him, and being as well horsed, overtook him and made him his prisoner, after he had in vain used great and much importunity to him that he would permit him to escape.

150. With him were taken Okey, Axtell, Cobbett, Creed<sup>1</sup>, and many other officers of the greatest interest with the fanatic part of the army, and who were most apprehended by the general in a time when all the ways were full of soldiers who endeavoured to repair to them; so that if they had not been crushed in that instant they would in very few days have appeared very formidable. Ingol[d]shy returned to London, and brought his prisoners to the Privy Council, who committed Lambert again to the Tower with a stricter charge, with some other of the officers, and sent the rest to other prisons. This very seasonable victory looked to all men as a happy omen to the succeeding Parliament, which was to assemble the next day after the prisoners were brought before the Council, and which would not have appeared with the same cheerfulness if Lambert had remained still in arms, or, in truth, if he had been still at liberty. April 25.

151. In this interval between the dissolution of the last and convention of the new Parliament, the Council of State did many prudent actions, which were good presages that the future councils would proceed with moderation. They released Feb. 22. sir George Booth from his imprisonment, that he might be elected to sit in the ensuing Parliament, as he shortly after was, and set at liberty all those who had been committed for adhering to him. Those of the King's party who had sheltered

<sup>1</sup> [Okey and Axtell escapéd. *Merc. Publicus*, No. 17, p. 270; White-locke's *Memorials*.]

1660 themselves in obscurity appeared now abroad, and conversed without control; and Mr. Mordant, who was known to be entirely trusted by the King, walked into all places with freedom; and many of the Council, and some officers of the army, as Ingol[d]sby and Huntington, made, through him, tender of their services to the King.

152. But that which seemed of most importance was the reformation they made in the navy, which was full of sectaries, and under the government of those who of all men were declared the most republical. The present command of the fleet prepared for the summer service was under vice-admiral Lawson, an excellent seaman, but a notorious Anabaptist, who had filled the fleet with officers and mariners of the same principles. And they well remembered how he had the year before besieged the city, and by the power of his fleet given that turn which overturned the Committee of Safety, and restored the rump Parliament to the exercise of their jurisdiction; for which he stood high in reputation with all that party. The Council resolved, though they thought not fit or safe to remove him, yet so far to eclipse him that he should not have it so absolutely in his power to control them; and in order to this they concluded that they  
 March 2. would call Mountague<sup>1</sup>; who had lain privately in his own house under a cloud and jealousy of being inclined too much to the King, and make the general (who was not to be left out in any thing) and him joint admirals of the fleet; whereby Mountague would only go to sea, and have the ships under his command; by which he might take care for good officers and seamen for such other ships as they meant to add to the fleet, and would be able to observe, if not reform, the rest. Mountague sent privately over to the King for his approbation before he would accept the charge, which being speedily sent to him he came to London, and entered into that joint command with the general, and immediately applied himself to put the fleet into so good order that he might comfortably serve in it. Since there was no man who betook himself to his majesty's service with more gene-

<sup>1</sup> [Clarendon here, and in following instances, spells the name *Mountague*.]

rosity than this gentleman, it is fit in this place to enlarge concerning him and his correspondence which he held with the King. 1660

153. Mountague was of a family too much addicted to innovations in religion, and that in the beginning of the troubles appeared against the King; though his father, who had been a long servant to the Crown, never could be prevailed upon to swerve from his allegiance, and took all the care he could to restrain this his only son within those limits; but being young, and more out of his father's control by being married into a family which at that time also trod awry<sup>1</sup>, he was so far wrought upon by the caresses of Cromwell, that, out of pure affection to him, he was persuaded to take command in the army when it was new modelled under Fayrefax, and when he was little more than twenty years of age. He served in that army in the condition of a colonel till the end of the war, with the reputation of a very stout and sober young man; and from that time Cromwell, (to whom he passionately adhered,) took him into his nearest confidence, and sent him, first, joined in commission with Blake, and then in the sole command of several expeditions by sea, in which he was successful and discreet. And though all men looked upon him as devoted to Cromwell's interest, in all other respects he behaved himself with civility to all men, and without the least show of acrimony towards any who had served the King; and was so much in love with that government [monarchy,] that he was one of those who most desired and advised Cromwell to accept and assume that title, when it was offered to him by the Parliament. He was designed by him to command the fleet that was to mediate, as was pretended, in the Sound, between the two Kings of Sweden and Denmark, but was in truth to hinder the Dutch from assisting the Dane against the Swede, with whom Oliver was engaged in an unseparable alliance. He was in this expedition when Richard was scornfully thrown out of the Protectorship, and was afterwards joined (for they knew not how to leave him out whilst he had that command) with Sidney and the other plenipotentiaries which

1659  
March.

1659  
July 1.

<sup>1</sup> [He married, 7 Nov. 1642, Jemima, daughter of John, afterwards first lord Crewe of Stene.]

1659 the rump Parliament sent to reconcile those Crowns. As soon as Richard was so cast down, the King thought Mountague's relations and obligations were at an end, and was advised by those who knew him to invite him to his service.

154. There accompanied him at that time Edward Mountague, the eldest son of the lord Mountague of Boughton, and his cousin german, with whom he had a particular friendship. This gentleman was not unknown to the King, and very well known to the Chancellor to have good affections and resolutions, and who, by the correspondence that was between them, he knew had undertaken that unpleasant voyage only to dispose his cousin to lay hold on the first opportunity to serve his majesty<sup>1</sup>. At this time sir George Booth appeared, and all those designs were laid, which were reasonably hoped would engage the whole kingdom against that odious part of the Parliament which was then possessed of the government ; and it was now thought a very seasonable conjuncture to make an experiment whether Mountague with his fleet would declare for the King.

155. The Chancellor hereupon prepared such a letter in his own name as his majesty thought fit<sup>2</sup>, to invite him to that resolution, from the distraction of the time, and the determination of all those motives which had in his youth first provoked him to those engagements. He informed him of sir George Booth's being possessed of Chester, and in the head of an army, and that his majesty was assured of many other places and of a general combination between the persons of greater interest to declare for the King ; and that if he would bring his fleet upon the coast, his majesty or the duke of York would immediately be on board with him. This letter was enclosed in another to Edward Mountague, to be by him delivered or not delivered as he thought fit, and committed to the care of an express<sup>3</sup> who

<sup>1</sup> [See *Clar. S. P.*, iii. 497-8 ; letter from Hyde to Edw. Montague of June 20, 1659.]

<sup>2</sup> [The King himself wrote to Montague on July 4, N. S. ; the draft by Hyde of the letter is among the Clarendon MSS.]

<sup>3</sup> [sir Thomas Whetstone. Instructions for him from the King, dated July 3, are among the Clarendon MSS.]



was then thought not to be without some credit with the admiral 1659 himself; which was not true. However, the messenger was diligent in prosecuting his voyage, and arrived safely at Copenhagen, where the fleet lay, and where all the plenipotentiaries from the Parliament then were; and without difficulty he found opportunity to deliver his letter to the person to whom it was directed; who the same night delivered the other to his cousin, who received it cheerfully, and was well pleased with the hopes of sudden revolutions in England.

156. They were both of them puzzled how to behave themselves towards the messenger, who was nothing acceptable to them, being very well known to the fleet, where, though he had had good command, he had no credit; and had appeared so publicly, by the folly of good fellowship, that the admiral and many others had seen him and taken notice of him before he knew that he brought any letter for him. The conclusion was, that he should without delay be sent away without speaking with the admiral, or knowing that he knew any thing of his errand; but Edward Mountague writ such a letter to the Chancellor as was evidence enough that his majesty would not be disappointed in his expectation of any service that the other person could perform for him. And with this answer the messenger returned to Bruxells, where there was a great alteration from the time he had left it.

157. Within few days after this man's withdrawing from Copenhagen, of whose being there the plenipotentiaries were so jealous that they resolved to require of the King [of Denmark] that he might be committed to prison, admiral Mountague declared that he should not be able to stay longer there for the want of victual, of which he had not more than would serve to carry him home; and therefore desired that they would press both Kings and the Dutch plenipotentiaries to finish the negotiation. By this time the news of the revolutions in England made a great noise, and were reported, according to the affections of that place from whence, and of the persons who sent letters thither, more to the King's advantage than there was reason for; and the other plenipotentiaries came to know that

1650 the man of whom they were so jealous had privately spoken with Edward Mountague, who was very well known and very ill thought of by them. And from thence they concluded that the admiral, who had never pleased them, was no stranger to his negotiation; in which jealousy they were quickly confirmed when they saw him with his fleet under sail, making his course for England, without giving them any notice or taking his leave of them; which if he had done, they had secret authority from their coming thither (upon the general apprehension of his inclination) to have secured his person on board his own ship, and to have disposed of the government of the fleet; which being thus prevented, they could do no more than send expresses overland, to acquaint the Parliament of his departure, with all the aggravation of his pride, presumption, and infidelity, which the bitterness of their natures and wits could suggest to them.

158. When the fleet arrived near the coast of England, they found sir George Booth defeated, and all persons who pretended any affection for the King so totally crushed, and the Parliament in so full exercise of its tyrannical power, that poor Mountague  
 Sept. 14. had nothing to do but to justify his return by his scarcity of provisions, which must have failed if he had stayed till the winter (which was drawing on) had shut him up in the Sound; and his return was upon the joint advice with the flag-officers of the fleet; there being not a man but his cousin who knew any other reason of his return, or was privy to his purposes. So that as soon as he had presented himself to the Parliament and laid down his command, they deferred the examination of the whole matter, upon the complaints which they had received from their commissioners, till they could be at more leisure, for it was then about the time that they grew jealous of Lambert; so that he went quietly into the country, and remained neglected and forgotten till those revolutions were over which were produced by Lambert's invasion and general Munke's march into England, and till the name and title of the Parliament was totally abolished and extinguished. And then the Council of State called him to resume the command of another fleet, which he accepted in the manner aforesaid; which, together with the

other good symptoms in the State, raised his majesty's hopes and expectation higher than ever, if it had not been a[n] unpleasant allay, that, in so general an alteration and application of many who had been eminently averse from his majesty, of the general only, who could put an end to all the rest, there was *altum silentium*; no person trusted by his majesty could approach him, nor did any word fall from him that could encourage them to go to him, though they still presumed that he meant well.

159. The general was weary and perplexed with his unwieldy burden, yet knew not how to make it lighter by communication. He spent much time in consultation with persons of every interest, the King's party only excepted, with whom he would hold no conference; though he found in his every day's discourses in the city with those who were thought to be Presbyterians, and with other persons of quality and consideration, that the people did generally wish for the King, and that they did believe that there could be no firm and settled peace in the nation that did not comprehend his interest and compose the prejudice that was against his party. But then there must be strict conditions to which he must be bound, which it should not be in his power to break, and which might not only secure all who had borne arms against him, but such who had purchased the lands of the Crown or of bishops or of delinquents; and nobody spake more moderately than for the confirming all that had been offered by his father in the Isle of Wight.

160. Whether by invitation or upon his own desire, he was present at Northumberland House in a conference with that earl, the earl of Manchester, and other lords, and likewise with Hollis, Waller, Lewes, and other eminent persons, who had a trust and confidence in each other, and who were looked upon as the heads and governors of the moderate Presbyterian party, though most of them would have been very glad, their own security being provided for, that the King should be restored to his full rights and the Church to its possessions. In this conference the King's restoration was proposed in direct terms, as absolutely necessary to the peace of the

1660 kingdom and for the satisfaction of the people, and the question seemed only to be upon what terms they should admit him, some proposing more moderate, others more severe, conditions. And in this whole debate the general insisted upon the most rigid propositions; which he pressed in such a manner that the lords grew jealous that he had such an aversion from restoring the King that it would not be safe for them to prosecute that advice; and therefore to acquiesce till the Parliament met, and that they could make some judgment of the temper of it.

161. And the general, though he consulted with those of every faction with much freedom, yet was thought to have more familiarity and to converse more freely with sir Arthur Haslerigge, who was irreconcilable<sup>1</sup> to monarchy, and looked upon as the chief of that repub[lican] party which desired not to preserve any face of government in the Church and in the public exercise of religion. And this made the lords and all others who were of different affections very wary in their discourses with the general, and jealous of his inclinations.

162. There was at this time in much conversation and trust with the general a Devonshire gentleman, of a fair estate and reputation, one Mr. William Morrice, a person of a retired life, which he spent in study, being learned and of good parts, and had been always looked upon as a man far from any malice towards the King, if he had not good affection for him, which they who knew him best believed him to have in a good measure. This gentleman was allied to the general, and entirely trusted by him in the managery of his estate in that country, where by the death of his elder brother without heirs males he inherited a fair fortune. And being chosen to serve in the next ensuing Parliament, he had made haste to London, the better to observe how things were like to go. With him the general consulted freely all his perplexities and observations; how he found most men of quality and interest inclined to call in the King, but upon such conditions as must be

<sup>1</sup> ['irreconciliable,' MS.]

very ungrateful, if possible to be received; and the London 1660 ministers talked already so loudly of it, that they had caused the Covenant to be new printed, and to be secretly fixed up in all churches, where in their sermons they discoursed of the several obligations in it, that, without exposing themselves to the danger of naming him (which yet they did not long forbear,) every body understood that they thought it necessary that the people should return to their allegiance.

163. That which wrought most upon the general was the choice which was generally made in all countries for members to serve in Parliament, very many of them being known to be of singular affection to the King, and very few who did not heartily abhor the murder of his father and detest the government that succeeded; so that it was reasonably apprehended that when they should once meet, there would be a warmth amongst them that could not be restrained or controlled, and they might take the business so much into their own hands that they might leave no part to him to merit of the King, from whom he had yet deserved nothing.

164. Mr. Morrice was not wanting to cultivate those conceptions with the information of the affections of the west, where the King's restoration was, he said, so impatiently longed for, that they had made choice of no members to serve for Cornwall or Devonshire but such who they were confident would contribute all they could to invite the King to return; and when that subject was once upon the stage, they who concurred with most frankness would find most credit, and they who opposed it would be overborne with lasting reproach. When the general had reflected upon the whole matter, he resolved to advance what he clearly saw he should not be able to hinder, and so consulted with his friend, how he might manage it in that manner before the Parliament should assemble, that what followed might be imputed to his counsel and contrivance.

165. There was then in the town a gentleman well known to be a servant of trust to the King, sir John Greenevill, who from the time of the surrender of Silly had enjoyed his estate and liberty, though, under the jealousy of a disaffected person,

1660 often restrained. He had been privy to the sending the parson, his brother, to the general into Scotland, and was conversant only with those who were most trusted by his majesty, and at this time was taken notice of to have all intimacy with Mr. Mordant, who most immediately corresponded with Bruxells. This gentleman was of a family to which the general was allied and had been obliged to his father, sir Bevil Greenevill, who lost his life at the battle of Lansdowne for the King, and by his will commended his much impaired fortune, and his wife and children, to the care and counsel of his neighbour and friend Mr. Morrice, who had executed the trust with the utmost fidelity and friendship.

166. The general was content that sir John Greenevill should be trusted in this great affair, and that Mr. Morrice should bring him secretly to him, in a private lodging he had in St. James's. When he came to him, after he had solemnly conjured him to secrecy, upon the peril of his life, he told him he meant to send him to the King, with whom he presumed he had credit enough to be believed without any testimony, for he was resolved not to write, nor to give him anything in writing, but wished him to confer with Mr. Morrice, and to take short memorials in his own hand of those particulars which he should offer to him in discourse; which when he had done, he would himself confer with him again at an hour he should appoint. And so he retired hastily out of the room, as if he were jealous that other men would wonder at his absence.

167. That which Mr. Morrice communicated to him [Greenevill,] was, after he had enlarged upon the perplexity the general was in by the several humours and factions which prevailed, and that he durst not trust any officer of his own army. or any friend but himself, with his own secret purposes, he advised that the King should write a letter to the general, in which, after kind and gracious expressions, he should desire him to deliver the enclosed letter and declaration to the Parliament; the particular heads and materials for which letter and declaration he [Morrice] discoursed to him; the end of which was to satisfy all interests, and to comply with every man's humour, and indeed to suffer every man to enjoy what he would.

168. After sir John Greenevill had enough discoursed all 1660 particulars with him, and taken such short memorials for his memory as he thought necessary, within a day or two he was brought with the same wariness, and in another place, to the general, to whom he read the short notes he had taken, to which little was added; and he [the general] said, that if the King writ to that purpose, when he brought the letter to him he would keep it in his hands until he found a fit time to deliver it, or should think of another way to serve his majesty. Only he added another particular, as an advice absolutely necessary for the King to consent to, which was, his majesty's present remove out of Flanders. He undertook to know that the Spaniard had no purpose to do any thing for him, and that all his friends were jealous that it would not be in his power to remove from thence if he deferred it till they discovered that he was like to have no need of them. And therefore he desired that his majesty would make haste to Breda, and, for the public satisfaction, and that it might be evident he had left Flanders, whatsoever he should send in writing should bear date as from Breda; and he enjoined sir John Greenevill not to return till he had himself seen the King out of the dominions of Flanders. And thus instructed he left him, who, taking Mr. Mordant with him for the companion of his journey, set out for Flanders about the beginning of April 1660, and in few days arrived safely at Bruxells.

March 20.

March 26<sup>1</sup>.

169. It was no unpleasant prospect to the King, nor of small advantage to him, that the Spaniards looked upon all these revolutions in England as the effects of the several animosities and emulations of the several factions amongst themselves; a contention only between the Presbyterian republicans on one side, and the Independent and Levelling party on the other, for superiority, and who should steer the government of the State, without the least reference to the King's interest, which would in no degree be advanced which side soever prevailed. And

<sup>1</sup> [Mordaunt left London on Monday before March 30, O. S., i. e. March 26; letter from major Wood to Hyde, among the Clarendon MSS. On March 30 Lady Mordaunt writes to Hyde that she hopes her husband is by that time with him; letter *ibid.*]

1660 therefore don Alonso, by his Irish agents, (who made him believe any thing,) continued firm to the Levellers, who, if they got the better of their enemies, he was assured would make a good peace with Spain; which above all things they desired: and if they were oppressed, he made as little doubt they would unite themselves to the King upon such conditions as he should arbitrate between them. And in this confidence he embraced all the ways he could to correspond with them, receiving such agents with all possible secrecy who repaired to him to Bruxells; and when instruments of most credit and importance would not adventure thither, he was contented to send some person who was trusted by him into Ze[a]land, to confer and treat with them. And in this kind of negotiation, which was very expensive, they cared not what money they disbursed, whilst they neglected the King, and suffered him to be without that small supply which they had assigned to him.

170. And in this temper were the Spanish ministers when Mr. Mordant and sir John Greenvill came to Bruxells. And they had so fully possessed the Court at Madrid with the same spirit, that when the Chancellor in his letters to sir H. Bennet, his majesty's resident there, intimated the hopes they had of a revolution in England to the advantage of the King, he answered plainly, that he durst not communicate any of those letters to the ministers there, who would laugh at him for abusing them, since they looked upon all those hopes of the King as imaginary and without foundation of sense, and upon his condition as most deplorable and absolutely desperate.

171. When sir John Greenvill had at large informed his majesty of the affairs of England, of the manner of the general's conference with him, [and] the good affection of Mr. Morrice, and had communicated the instructions and advices he had received, as his majesty was very glad that the general had thus far discovered himself, and that he had opened a door for correspondence, so he was not without great perplexity upon many particulars which were commended to be done; some of which he believed impossible and unpracticable, as, the leaving all men in the state they were in, and confirming their posses-



sion in all the lands which they held in England, Scotland, and 1660 Ireland, by purchase or donation, whether of lands belonging to the throne [and] Church, or such who, for adhering to his father and himself, were declared delinquents, and their lands confiscated and disposed of as they [their enemies] had thought fit; [and] the complying with all humours in religion, and the granting a general liberty of conscience, was a violation of all the laws in force, and could not be comprehended to consist with the peace of the kingdom. No man was more disposed to a general act of indemnity and oblivion than his majesty was, which he knew, in so long and universal a guilt, was absolutely necessary; but he thought it neither consistent with his honour or his conscience that those who sat as judges and condemned his father to be murdered should be comprehended in that act of pardon; yet it was advised that there might be no exception, or that above four might not be excepted; because it was alleged that some of them had facilitated the general's march by falling from Lambert, and others had barefaced advanced the King's service very much.

172. After great deliberation upon all the particulars, and weighing the importance of complying with the general's advice in all things which his conscience and honour would permit, his majesty directed such letters and declaration to be prepared as should be in a good degree suitable to the wishes and counsel of the general, and yet make the transaction of those things which he did not like the effect of the power of the Parliament rather than of his majesty's approbation. And the confidence he had upon the general election of honest and prudent men, and in some particular persons who he heard were already chosen, disposed him to make a general reference of all things which he could not reserve to himself to the wisdom of the Parliament, upon presumption that they would not exact more from him than he was willing to consent to; since he well knew that, whatever title they assumed or he gave them, they must have another kind of Parliament to confirm all that was done by them, and without which they could not be safe and contented nor his majesty obliged.

173. The advice for his majesty's remove out of Flanders

1660 presently was not ingrateful, for he had reasons abundant to be weary of it; yet he was without any great inclination to Holland, where he had been as barbarously used as it was possible for any gentleman to be. But, besides the authority which the general's advice deserved to have, the truth is, his majesty could remove no whither else. France was equally excepted against, and equally unagreeable to the King, and the way thither must be through all the Spanish dominions. Dunkirk was a place in many respects desirable, because it was in the possession of the English, from whence he might embark for England upon the shortest warning. And upon the first alterations in England, after the peace between the two Crowns, the King had sent to Lockhart, the governor, and general of the English there, by a person of honour, well known and respected by him<sup>1</sup>, to invite him to his service by the prospect he had of the revolutions like to ensue, which probably could not but be advantageous to the King, and by the uncertainty of his own condition upon any such alterations. The arguments were urged to him with clearness and force enough, and all necessary offers made to persuade him to declare for the King and to receive his majesty into that garrison; which might be facilitated by his majesty's troops, if he did not think his own soldiers enough at his devotion: but he could not be prevailed with, but urged the trust he had received, and the indecency of breaking it; though he confessed there was such a jealousy of him in the Council of State, for his relation and alliance to Cromwell, that he expected every day to be removed from that command; as shortly after he was<sup>2</sup>. Whether this refusal proceeded from the punctuality of his nature, (for he was a man of parts and of honour,) or from his jealousy of the garrison, that they would not be disposed by him, (for though he was exceedingly beloved and

<sup>1</sup> [Major gen. Middleton. Letters from him to Hyde about his attempting to enter into communication with Lockhart, dated June 2 and 20, 1659, are among the Clarendon MSS.]

<sup>2</sup> [He was not removed. On Monday, June 9, 1659, he was called by express to England, and on June 26 wrote to Mazarin from Dover that Parllamont and the Council had ordered him to resume his employment. Clarendon MSS.]

obeyed by them, yet they were all Englishmen, and he had none 1660 of his own nation but in his own family,) certain it is that at the same time he refused to treat with the King he refused to accept the great offers made to him by the cardinal, who had a high esteem of him, and offered to make him marshal of France, with great appointments of pensions and other emoluments, if he would deliver Dunkirk and Mardike into the hands of France, all which overtures he rejected. So that his majesty had no place to resort to preferable to Breda.

174. The King was resolved rather to make no mention of the murderers of his father than to pardon any of them and except four, as was proposed ; and chose rather to refer the whole consideration of that affair, without any restriction, to the conscience of the Parliament ; yet with such expressions and descriptions, that they could not but discern that he trusted them in confidence that they would do themselves and the nation right, in declaring their detestation, and preparing vengeance for that parricide. And from the time that the secluded members sat again with the rump, there was good evidence given that they would not leave that odious murder unexamined and unpunished ; which the more disposed the King to depend upon their virtue and justice.

175. When the summons were sent out to call the Parliament, there was no mention or thought of a House of Peers, nor had the general mentioned any such thing to sir John Greenvill ; nor did sir John himself or Mr. Mordant conceive that any of the Lords had a purpose to meet, but that all must depend upon the Commons. However, the King thought not fit to pass them by, but to have a letter prepared as well for them as for the House of Commons ; and likewise another to the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Council of the city of London ; who by adhering to the general were like to add very much to his authority.

176. When all those things were prepared and perused and approved by the King, which he resolved to send by sir John Greenvill to the general, (his and Mr. Mordant's being in Bruxells being unknown, and they, attending his majesty only in the night at the Chancellor's lodging, concealed themselves

1660 from being taken notice of by any,) his majesty visited the marquis of Caracena, and told him that he intended the next day to go to Antwerp, and from thence to Breda, to spend two or three days with his sister the Princess of Aurange, to whom the dukes of York and Gloster were already gone to acquaint her with the King's purpose; and his majesty likewise in confidence informed him, that there were some persons come from England, who would not venture to come to Bruxella, from whom he expected some propositions and information which might prove beneficial to him, which obliged him to make that journey to confer with them.

177. The marquis seemed to think that of little moment, and said that don Alonso expected every day to receive assurance that the Levellers would unite themselves to the King's interest upon more moderate conditions than they had hitherto made; but desired his majesty that the duke of York might hasten his journey into Spain, to receive the command that was there reserved for him; and the King desired him, that the forces he had promised for his service might be ready against his return to be embarked upon the first appearance of a hopeful occasion. And so they parted; and his majesty went the next day to Antwerp with that small retinue he used to travel with.

March 21,  
O. S.<sup>1</sup>

[178<sup>2</sup>. His departure was some hours earlier than the marquis imagined; and the reason of it was this: in that night, one Mr. William Galloway, an Irish young man, page at that time to don Alonzo de Cardinas, came to the Lord Chancellor's lodgings, and finding his secretary in his own room, told him he must needs speak presently with his lord; for he had something to impart to him that concerned the King's life. The Chancellor, though at that time in bed, ordered him to be admitted; and the poor man trembling told him, that his lord don Alonzo and the marquis of Carracena had been long together that evening, and that himself had overheard them saying something of sending a guard to attend the King; that about an hour after, they parted, and the marquis sent a paper

<sup>1</sup> [Sir W. Lower's *Relation of the voyage of Charles II*, fol. Hague, 1660, p. 5.]

<sup>2</sup> [This section is only found in the transcript used for the first edition, written on a small quarto page by a different hand.]

to don Alonzo, who, when he went to bed, laid it on his table : 1660 that himself, who lay in his master's antechamber, looked into the paper when his master was in bed, and seeing what it was, had brought it to the Chancellor. It imported an order to an officer to attend the King with a party of horse for a guard wherever he went, (a respect that never had been paid him before,) but not to suffer him on any terms to go out of the town. As soon as the Chancellor had read the order, he sent his secretary with it to the King, who was in bed likewise; and his majesty having read it, the secretary returned it to Galloway, who went home, and laid it in its place upon his master's table. The King commanded the Chancellor's secretary to call up his majesty's querry, sir William Armorer, and to him his majesty gave his orders, charging him with secrecy that he would be gone at three of the clock that morning: and accordingly he went, attended by the marquis of Ormonde, sir William Armorer, and two or three servants more. Between eight and nine that morning, an officer did come and inquire for the King; but it happened, by this seasonable discovery, that his majesty had made his escape some hours before, to the no small mortification, no doubt, of the Spanish governor.]

179. And as soon as he came into the States' dominions, which was the midway between Antwerp and Breda, he delivered to sir John Greenevill (who attended there *incognito*, that he might warrantably aver to the general that he had seen his majesty out of Flanders) all those despatches which were prepared and dated as from Breda, upon the same day in which he received them, and where his majesty was to be that night. The copies of all were likewise delivered to him, that the general, upon perusal thereof, might choose whether he would deliver the originals, if any thing was contained therein which he disliked; and his majesty referred it to him to proceed any other way, if, upon any alterations which had or should happen, he thought fit to vary from his former advice.

180. Sir John Greenevill before his departure told the King that though he had no order to propose it directly to his majesty, yet he could assure him that it would be the most grateful

1660 and obliging thing he could do towards the general, if he would give him leave to assure him, that as soon as he came into England he would bestow the office of one of the Secretaries of State upon Mr. Morrice, who was as well qualified for it as any man who had not been versed in the knowledge of foreign affairs. One of those places was then void by the earl of Bristol's becoming Roman Catholic, and thereupon resigning the signet; and his majesty was very glad to lay that obligation upon the general, and to gratify a person who had so much credit with him, and who had already given such manifestation of his good affection to his majesty, and directed him to give that assurance to the general. And with these despatches Mr. Mordant (who privately expected his return at Antwerp) and sir John Greenville made what haste they could towards England; and the King went that night to Breda. The letters which the King writ to the general and to the House of Commons, and the Declaration, are here inserted in the terms they were sent.

April 4,  
O.S.

181. '*To our trusty and well-beloved general Monck, to be by him<sup>1</sup> communicated to the President and Council of State, and to the officers of the armies under his command<sup>2</sup>.*

' Charles R.

' Trusty and well-beloved, we greet you well. It cannot be believed but that we have been, are, and ever must be, as solicitous as we can, by all endeavours, to improve the affections of our good subjects at home, and to procure the assistance of our friends and allies abroad, for the recovery of that right which, by the laws of God and man, is unquestionable, and of which we have been so long dispossessed by such force, and with those circumstances, as we do not desire to aggravate by any sharp expressions, but rather wish that the memory of what is past may be buried to the world. That we have more endeavoured to prepare and to improve the affections of our subjects at home for our restoration, than to procure assistance from abroad to invade either of our kingdoms, is as manifest to the world. And we cannot give a better evidence that we are still of the same mind than in this conjuncture, when common reason must satisfy all men that we cannot be without assistance from abroad, we choose rather to send to you, who have it in your power to prevent that ruin and desolation which a war would bring upon the nation, and to make the whole

<sup>1</sup> [The words 'by him' are omitted in the superscription in the *Commons' Journals*.]

<sup>2</sup> [The letters to Monck and the House of Commons and the Declaration are inserted in the MS. by the hand of an amanuensis. The superscriptions are here transferred to the head of the letters from their end.]

kingdom owe the peace, happiness, security, and glory it shall enjoy, to your virtue, and to acknowledge that your armies have complied with their obligations for which they were first raised, for the preservation of the Protestant religion, the honour and dignity of the King, the privileges of Parliament, the liberty and property of the subject, and the fundamental laws of the land; and that you have vindicated that trust which others most perfidiously abused and betrayed. How much we desire and resolve to contribute to those good ends will appear to you by our enclosed Declaration; which we desire you to cause to be published for the information and satisfaction of all good subjects, who do not desire a farther effusion of precious Christian blood, but to have their peace and security founded upon that which can only support it, an unity of affections amongst ourselves, an equal administration of justice to men, restoring Parliaments to a full capacity of providing for all that is amiss, and the laws of their land to their due veneration.

182. 'You have been yourselves witnesses of so many revolutions, and have had so much experience how far any power and authority that is only assumed by passion and appetite, and not supported by justice, is from providing for the happiness and peace of the people, or from receiving any obedience from them, (without which no government can provide for them,) that you may very reasonably believe that God hath not been well pleased with the attempts that have been made, since he hath usually increased the confusion by giving all the success that hath been desired, and brought that to pass without effect which the designers have proposed as the best means to settle and compose the nation: and therefore we cannot but hope and believe that you will concur with us in the remedy we have applied, which, to human understanding, is only proper for the ills we all groan under, and that you will make yourselves the blessed instruments to bring this blessing of peace and reconciliation upon King and people; it being the usual method in which divine Providence delighteth itself, to use and sanctify those very means which ill men design for the satisfaction of private and particular ends and ambition, and other wicked purposes, to wholesome and public ends, and to establish that good which is most contrary to the designers; which is the greatest manifestation of God's peculiar kindness to a nation that can be given in this world. How far we resolve to preserve your interests and reward your services, we refer to our Declaration; and we hope God will inspire you to perform your duty to us and to your native country, whose happiness cannot be separated from each other.

183. 'We have intrusted our well-beloved servant sir John Greenevill, one of the gentlemen of our bedchamber, to deliver this unto you, and to give us an account of your reception of it, and to desire you, in our name, that it may be published. And so we bid you farewell.

'Given at our Court at Breda, this  $\frac{1}{4}$ th of April, 1660, in the twelfth year of our reign.'

184. '*To our trusty and well-beloved the Speaker of the House of Commons.*

'Charles R.

'Trusty and well-beloved, we greet you well. In these great and insupportable afflictions and calamities under which the poor nation hath

1680 been so long exercised, and by which it is so near exhausted, we cannot think of a more natural and proper remedy than to resort to those for counsel and advice who have seen and observed the first beginning of our miseries, the progress from bad to worse, and the mistakes and misunderstandings which have produced, and contributed to, inconveniences which were not intended, and, after so many revolutions and the observation of what hath attended them, are now trusted by our good subjects to repair the breaches which are made, and to provide proper remedies for those evils, and for the lasting peace, happiness, and security of the kingdom.

185. 'We do assure you upon our royal word that none of our predecessors have had a greater esteem of Parliaments than<sup>1</sup> we have, in our judgment as well as from our obligation; we do believe them to be so vital a part of the constitution of the kingdom, and so necessary for the government of it, that we well know neither prince nor people can be in any tolerable degree happy without them; and therefore you may be confident that we shall always look upon their counsels as the best we can receive, and shall be as tender of their privileges, and as careful to preserve and protect them, as of that which is most near to ourself, and most necessary for our own preservation.

186. 'And as this is our opinion of Parliaments, that their authority is most necessary for the government of the kingdom, so we are most confident that you believe and find that the preservation of the King's authority is as necessary for the preservation of Parliaments; and that it is not the name<sup>2</sup>, but the right constitution, of them which can prepare and apply proper remedies for those evils which are grievous to the people, and which can thereby establish their peace and security. And therefore we have not the least doubt but that you will be as tender in, and as jealous of, any thing that may infringe our honour or impair our authority, as of your own liberty and property, which is best preserved by preserving the other.

187. 'How far we have trusted you in this great affair, and how much it is in your power to restore the nation to all that it hath lost, and to redeem it from any infamy it hath undergone, and to make King and people as happy as they ought to be, you will find by our enclosed Declaration, a copy of which we have likewise sent to the House of Peers; and you will easily believe that we would not voluntarily, and of ourself, have reposed so great a trust in you but upon an entire confidence that you will not abuse it, and that you will proceed in such a manner, and with such due consideration of us who have trusted you, that we shall not be ashamed of declining other assistance, (which we have assurance of,) and repairing to you for more natural and proper remedies for the evils we would be freed from, nor sorry that we have bound up our own interests so entirely with that of our subjects, as that we refer it to the same persons to take care of us who are trusted to provide for them. We look upon you as wise and dispassionate men, and good patriots, who will raise up those banks and fences which have been cast down, and who will most reasonably hope that the same prosperity will again spring from those roots from which it

<sup>1</sup> ['aa,' *Commons' Journals.*]

<sup>2</sup> [*Commons' Journals*; 'in the name,' MS.]



hath heretofore and always grown; nor can we apprehend that you will 1660 propose any thing to us, or expect any thing from us, but what<sup>1</sup> we are as ready to give as you to receive.

188. 'If you desire the advancement and propagation of the Protestant religion; we have, by our constant profession and practice of it, given sufficient testimony to the world, that neither the unkindness of those of the same faith towards us, nor the civilities and obligations from those of a contrary profession, (of both which we have had abundant evidence,) could in the least degree startle us, or make us swerve from it; and nothing can be proposed to manifest our zeal and affection for it to which we will not readily consent. And we hope, in due time, ourself to propose somewhat to you for the propagation of it, that will satisfy the world that we have always made it both our care and our study, and have enough observed what is most like to bring disadvantage to it.

189. 'If you desire security for those who in these calamitous times either wilfully or weakly have transgressed those bounds which were prescribed, and have invaded each other's rights; we have left to you to provide for their security and indemnity, and in such a way as you shall think just and reasonable, and by a just computation of what men have done and suffered, as near as is possible, to take care that all men be satisfied; which is the surest way to suppress and extirpate all such uncharitableness and animosity, as might hereafter shake and threaten that peace which for the present might seem established. If there be a crying sin, for which the nation may be involved in the infamy that attends it, we cannot doubt but that you will be as solicitous to redeem and vindicate the nation from that guilt and infamy as we can be.

190. 'If you desire that reverence and obedience may be paid to the fundamental laws of the land, and that justice may be equally and impartially administered to all men; it is that which we desire to be sworn to ourself, and that all persons in power and authority should be so too.

191. 'In a word, there is nothing that you can propose that may make the kingdom happy, which we will not contend with you to compass; and upon this confidence and assurance we have thought fit to send you this Declaration, that you may, as much as is possible at this distance, see our heart; which, when God shall bring us nearer together, (as we hope he will do shortly,) will appear to you very agreeable to what we have professed; and we hope that we have made that right Christian use of our affliction, and that the observation and experience we have had in other countries hath been such, as that we, and we hope all our subjects, shall be the better for what we have seen and suffered.

192. 'We shall add no more but our prayers to Almighty God, that he will so bless your counsels and direct your endeavours, that his glory and worship may be provided for, and the peace, honour, and happiness of the nation may be established upon those foundations which can best support it. And so we bid you farewell.

'Given at our Court at Breda, this  $\frac{4}{4}$ th day of April, 1660, in the twelfth year of our reign.'

<sup>1</sup> ['that,' *Commons' Journals.*]

1660 193.

*His majesty's Declaration.*

' Charles R.

' Charles, by the grace of God, King of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &c., To all our loving subjects, of what degree or quality soever, greeting. If the general distraction and confusion which is spread over the whole kingdom doth not awaken all men to a desire and longing that those wounds which have so many years together been kept bleeding may be bound up, all we can say will be to no purpose. However, after this long silence, we have thought it our duty to declare how much we desire to contribute thereunto; and that, as we can never give over the hope in good time to obtain the possession of that right which God and nature hath made our due, so we do make it our daily suit to the divine Providence, that he will, in compassion to us and our subjects, after so long misery and sufferings, remit and put us into a quiet and peaceable possession of that our right, with as little blood and damage to our people as is possible; nor do we desire more to enjoy what is ours, than that all our subjects may enjoy what by law is theirs, by a full and entire administration of justice throughout the land, and by extending our mercy where it is wanted and deserved.

194. ' And to the end that the fear of punishment may not engage any, conscious to themselves of what is past, to \* perseverance in guilt for the future, by opposing the quiet and happiness of their country in the restoration both of King, Peers, and people to their just, ancient, and fundamental rights, we do by these presents declare, that we do grant a free and general pardon, which we are ready, upon demand, to pass under our Great Seal of England, to all our subjects, of what degree or quality soever, who within forty days after the publishing hereof shall lay hold upon this our grace and favour, and shall by any public act declare their doing so, and that they return to the loyalty and obedience of good subjects; excepting only such persons as shall hereafter be excepted<sup>1</sup> by Parliament. Those only excepted, let all our subjects, how faulty soever, rely upon the word of a King, solemnly given by this present Declaration, that no crime whatsoever committed against us or our royal father before the publication of this shall ever rise in judgment, or be brought in question, against any of them, to the least endamage of them, either in their lives, liberties, or estates, or (as far forth as lies in our power) so much as to the prejudice of their reputations, by any reproach or term of distinction from the rest of our best subjects; we desiring and ordaining, that henceforward all notes of discord, separation, and difference of parties, be utterly abolished among all our subjects; whom we invite and conjure to a perfect union among themselves, under our protection, for the re-settlement of our just rights and thoirs, in a free Parliament; by which, upon the word of a King, we will be advised.

195. ' And because the passion and uncharitableness of the times have produced several opinions in religion, by which men are engaged in parties and animosities against each other, which, when they shall hereafter unite in a freedom of conversation, will be composed or better understood; we

<sup>1</sup> [' accepted ' (†), *Commons' Journals.*]

do declare a liberty to tender consciences, and that no man shall be dis- 1660  
 quieted, or called in question, for differences of opinion in matters of religion which do not disturb the peace of the kingdom; and that we shall be ready to consent to such an Act of Parliament as, upon mature deliberation, shall be offered to us for the full granting that indulgence.

196. 'And because in the continued distractions of so many years, and so many and great revolutions, many grants and purchases of estates have been made to and by many officers, soldiers, and others, who are now possessed of the same, and who may be liable to actions at law, upon several titles; we are likewise willing that all such differences, and all things relating to such grants, sales, and purchases, shall be determined in Parliament; which can best provide for the just satisfaction of all men who are concerned.

197. 'And we do farther declare, that we will be ready to consent to any Act or Acts of Parliament to the purposes aforesaid, and for<sup>1</sup> the full satisfaction of all arrears due to the officers and soldiers of the army under the command of general Monck, and that they shall be received into our service upon as good pay and conditions as they now enjoy.

'Given under our sign manual, and privy signet, at our Court at Breda, the 14<sup>th</sup> day of April, 1660, in the twelfth year of our reign.'

198<sup>2</sup>. '*To the Speaker of the House of Peers, and to the Lords there assembled.*

'Charles R.

'Right trusty and right well-beloved cousins, and right trusty and well-beloved cousins, and trusty and right well-beloved, we greet you well. We cannot have a better reason to promise ourself an end of our common sufferings and calamities, and that our own just power and authority will, with God's blessing, be restored to us, than that we hear you are again acknowledged to have that authority and jurisdiction which hath always belonged to you by your birth and the fundamental laws of the land; and we have thought it very fit and safe for us to call to you for your help, in the composing the confounding distempers and distractions of the kingdom, in which your sufferings are next to those we have undergone ourself; and therefore you cannot but be the most proper counsellors for removing those mischiefs, and for preventing the like for the future. How great a trust we repose in you, for the procuring and establishing a blessed peace and security for the kingdom, will appear to you by our enclosed Declaration; which trust we are most confident you will discharge with that justice and

<sup>1</sup> ['to,' *Commons' Journals.*]

<sup>2</sup> [The following three letters are not inserted in the MS., but only this direction with regard to two of them: 'Here are to be inserted the King's letters to the House of Peers, and to the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Council, of the same date with the other.' The copies in the text are taken, the first from the Lords' Journals, and the others from the official copies printed at the time. But all the three are transcribed, somewhat incorrectly, in the MS. from which the first edition was printed.]

1660 wisdom that becomes you, and must always be expected from you; and that, upon your experiences how one violation succeeds another when the known relations and rules of justice are once transgressed, you will be as jealous for the rights of the Crown, and for the honour of your King, as for yourselves: and then you cannot but discharge your trust with good success, and provide for and establish the peace, happiness, and honour of King, Lords, and Commons, upon that foundation which can only support it; and we shall be all happy in each other. And as the whole kingdom will bless God for you all, so we shall hold ourself obliged in an especial manner to thank you in particular, according to the affection you shall express towards us. We need the less enlarge to you upon this subject because we have likewise writ to the House of Commons; which, we suppose, they will communicate to you. And we pray God to bless your joint endeavours for the good of us all. And so we bid you very heartily farewell.

'Given at our Court at Breda, this 1<sup>4</sup>/<sub>4</sub>th day of April, 1660, in the twelfth year of our reign.'

199. *'To our trusty and well-beloved general Monk and general Mountague, generals at sea; to be communicated to the fleet.'*

'Charles R.

'Trusty and well-beloved, we greet you well. It is no small comfort to us, after so long and great troubles and miseries, which the whole nation hath groaned under, and after so great revolutions which have still increased those miseries, to hear, that the fleet and ships, which are the walls of the kingdom, are put under the command of two persons so well disposed to, and concerned in, the peace and happiness of the kingdom, as we believe you to be; and that the officers and seamen under your command are more inclined to return to their duty to us, and put a period to these distempers and distractions which have so impoverished and dishonoured the nation, than to widen the breach, and to raise their fortunes by rapine and violence; which gives us great encouragement and hope, that God Almighty will heal the wounds by the same plaister that made the flesh raw; that he will proceed in the same method in pouring his blessings upon us which he was pleased to use when he began to afflict us; and that the manifestation of the good affection of the fleet and seamen towards us, and the peace of the nation, may be the prologus to that peace which was first interrupted by the mistake and misunderstanding of their predecessors; which would be such a blessing upon us all, that we should not be less delighted with the manner than the matter of it.

200. 'In this hope and confidence, we have sent the enclosed Declaration to you, by which you may discern how much we are willing to contribute towards the obtaining the general and public peace; in which, as no man can be more or so much concerned, so no man can be more solicitous for it. And we do earnestly desire you, that you will cause the said Declaration to be published to all the officers and seamen of the fleet; to the end that they may plainly discern how much we have put it into their power to provide for the peace and happiness of the nation, who have been always understood by them to be the best and most proper counsellors for

those good ends : and you are likewise further to declare to them, that we have the same gracious purpose towards them which we have expressed towards the army at land ; and will be as ready to provide for the payment of all arrears due to them, and for rewarding them according to their several merits, as we have expressed to the other ; and we will always take so particular a care of them, and their condition, as shall manifest our kindness towards them. And so, depending upon God's blessing for infusing those good resolutions in your and their hearts which are best for us all, we bid you farewell.

' Given at our Court at Breda, this 1<sup>4</sup><sup>th</sup> day of April, 1660, in the twelfth year of our reign.'

201. '*To our trusty and well-beloved the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Council, of our city of London.*

' Charles R.

' Trusty and well-beloved, we greet you well. In these great revolutions which of late have happened in that our kingdom, to the wonder and amazement of all the world, there is none that we have looked upon with more comfort than the so frequent and public manifestations of their affections to us in the city of London ; which hath exceedingly raised our spirits, and which, no doubt, hath proceeded from the Spirit of God, and his extraordinary mercy to the nation ; which hath been encouraged by you, and your good example, to assert that government under which it hath so many hundred years enjoyed as great felicity as any nation in Europe, and to discountenance the imaginations of those who would subject our subjects to a government they have not yet devised, and, to satisfy the pride and ambition of a few ill men, would introduce the most arbitrary and tyrannical power that was ever yet heard of. How long we have all suffered under those and the like devices, all the world takes notice, to the no small reproach of the English nation ; which we hope is now providing for its own security and redemption, and will be no longer bewitched by those inventions.

202. ' How desirous we are to contribute to the obtaining the peace and happiness of our subjects without further effusion of blood, and how far we are from desiring to recover what belongs to us by a war, if it can be otherwise done, will appear to you by the enclosed Declaration ; which, together with this our letter, we have intrusted our right trusty and well-beloved cousin, the lord viscount Mordant, and our trusty and well-beloved servant, sir John Greenville, knight, one of the gentlemen of our bed-chamber, to deliver to you ; to the end that you, and all the rest of our good subjects of that our city of London, (to whom we desire it should be published,) may know how far we are from the desire of revenge, or that the peace, happiness, and security of the kingdom should be raised upon any other foundation than the affections and hearts of our subjects and their own consents.

203. ' We have not the least doubt of your just sense of those our condescensions, or of your zeal to advance and promote the same good end, by disposing all men to meet us with the same affection and tenderness, in restoring the fundamental laws to that reverence that is due to them, and

1660 upon the preservation whereof all our happiness depends. And you will have no reason to doubt of enjoying your full share in that happiness, and of the improving it by our particular affection to you. It is very natural for all men to do all the good they can for their native country, and to advance the honour of it. And as we have that full affection for the kingdom in general, so we would not be thought to be without some extraordinary kindness for our native city in particular; which we shall manifest on all occasions, not only by renewing their charter, and confirming all those privileges which they have received from our predecessors, but by adding and granting any new favours which may advance the trade, wealth, and honour of that our native city; for which we will be so solicitous, that we doubt not but that it will in due time receive some benefit and advantage in all those respects, even from our own observation and experience abroad: and we are most confident we shall never be disappointed in our expectation of all possible service from your affections. And so we bid you farewell.

'Given at our Court at Breda, the [14<sup>th</sup>] day of April, 1660, in the twelfth year of our reign.'

April 27. 204. The gentlemen who had been with the King returned to London before<sup>1</sup> the defeat of Lambert, and a full week before the Parliament was to begin<sup>2</sup>. The general upon perusal of the copies of the several despatches liked all very well. And it ought to be remembered for his honour, that from this time he behaved himself with great affection towards the King; and, though he was offered all the authority that Cromwell had enjoyed and the title of King, he used all his endeavours to promote and advance the interest of his majesty: yet he as carefully retained the secret, and did not communicate to any person living, (Mr. Morrice only excepted,) that he had received any letter from the King until the very minute that he presented it to the House of Commons.

205. There happened a concurrence at the same time which much facilitated the great work in hand. The great obstruction that hind[er]ed the universal consent to call in the King was the conscience of the personal injuries and incivilities and reproaches which all the royal party had sustained, and the apprehension that their animosities were so great, that, notwithstanding all acts of pardon and indemnity granted by the King, all opportunities would be embraced for secret revenge, and that they who had been kept under and oppressed for near

<sup>1</sup> [four days after.]

<sup>2</sup> [two days after.]

twenty years would for the future use the power they could <sup>1660</sup> not be without upon the King's restoration with extreme license and insolence. To obviate this too reasonable imagination, some discreet persons of the King's party caused a profession and protestation to be prepared, in which they declared that they looked upon their late sufferings as the effect of God's judgments upon their own particular sins, which had as much contributed to the miseries of the nation as any other cause had done; and they did therefore protest, and call God to witness of such their protestation, that if it should please God to restore the King, they would be so far from remembering any injuries or discourtesies which they had sustained, in order to return the like to any who had disobliged them, that they resolved on nothing more than to live with the same affection and good neighbourhood towards them as towards each other, and never to make the least reflection upon any thing that was past.

206. These professions, or to the same purpose, [were made] under the title of 'The Protestation of all those who had served the late King or his present majesty, or adhered to their party, in such a county,' which was named; and so several papers were signed in [that<sup>1</sup>] name, and signed by all the considerable <sup>April.</sup> persons of that county who were reputed of the royal party; and then they were all printed with their names, and published to the view of all the world; which were received with great joy, and did much allay those jealousies which obstructed the confidence that was necessary to establish a good understanding between them.

207. Nothing hath been yet said of Ireland; which waited upon the dictates of the governing party in England with the same giddiness. The Irish, who would have been glad to have redeemed their past miscarriages and madness by doing any service for the King, were under as severe a captivity and complete misery as the worst of their actions had deserved, and indeed as they were capable of undergoing. After near or above one hundred<sup>2</sup> thousand of them transported into foreign

<sup>1</sup> ['the,' MS.]

<sup>2</sup> [altered from 'fifty.']

1660 parts, for the service of the two Kings of France and Spain, few of whom were alive after seven years, and after double that number consumed by the plague and famine, and inhuman barbarities exercised upon them in their own country, the remainder of them had been by Cromwell (who could not find a better way of extirpation) transplanted into the most inland, barren, desolate, and mountainous part of the province of Connaught; and it was lawful for any man to kill any of the Irish who were found in any place out of those precincts which were assigned to them. Within that circuit such a proportion of land was assigned to every man as the Protector thought competent for them; upon which they gave formal releases of all their pretences and titles to any lands in any other province of which they had been deprived; and if they refused to give such releases, they were still deprived of what they would not release, without any reasonable hope of ever being restored to it, and left to starve within the limits prescribed to them, and out of which they durst not withdraw; and they who did adventure were without all remorse killed by the English as soon as they were discovered: so that very few refused to sign those releases, or other acts which were demanded; upon which the lords and gentlemen had such assignments of land made to them as in some degree were proportionable to their qualities; which fell out less mischievously to those who were of that place, who came to enjoy some part of what had been their own; but to those who were driven thither out of other provinces, it was little less destructive than if they had nothing, it was so long before they could settle themselves, and by husbandry raise any thing out of their land to support their lives. Yet necessity obliged them to acquiescence, and to industry; so that at the time to which we are now arrived, they were settled, within the limits prescribed, in a condition of living; though even the hard articles which had been granted were not observed to them, but their proportions restrained and lessened by some pretences of the English under some former grants or other titles; to all which they found it necessary to submit, and were compelled to enjoy what was left, under all the marks and



brands which ever accompanied a conquered nation; which 1660 reproach they took so heavily from the earl of Strafford, when indeed they were equally free with the English who had subdued them, that they made it part of that charge upon which he lost his life.

208. Upon the recalling and tame submission of Harry Cromwell<sup>1</sup> to the rump Parliament as soon as his brother Richard was deposed, the factions increased in Ireland to a very great height, as well amongst the soldiers and officers of the army as in the Council of State and amongst the civil magistrates. The lord Broghill, who was president of Munster, and of a very great interest and influence upon that whole province, though he had great wariness in discovering his inclinations, as he had great guilt to restrain them, yet hated Lambert so much that he less feared the King, and so wished a safe opportunity to do him service; and he had a good post, and a good party to concur with him, when he should call upon them, and think fit to declare.

209. Sir Charles Coote, who was president of Connaugh[t], and had a good command and interest in the army, was a man of less wit and less guilt, and more courage and impatience to serve the King, and sent over sir Arthur Forbes, a Scotch gentleman of good affection to the King, and good interest in the province of Ulster, where he was an officer of horse. This gentleman sir Charles Coote sent to Bruxells to the marquis of Ormonde, that he might assure his majesty of his affection and duty; and that if his majesty would vouchsafe himself to come into Ireland, he was confident the whole kingdom would declare for him: that though the present power in England had removed all the sober men from the government of the State, under the character of Presbyterians, and had placed Ludlow, Corbett, and others of the King's judges, in their places, yet they were so generally odious to the army as well as to the people, that they could seize upon their persons, and the very castle of Dublin, when they should judge it convenient.

<sup>1</sup> [In this one instance Clarendon has written the name as *Cromwell* instead of *Crumwell*.]

- 1660 210. Sir Arthur Forbes arrived at Bruxells before the King had any assurance or confident hope of the general, and when few men thought his fortune better than desperate: so that if what sir Arthur proposed (which was kept very secret) had been published, most men would have been very solicitous for his majesty's going into Ireland. But his majesty well knew that that unhappy kingdom must infallibly wait upon the fate of England; and therefore he resolved to attend the vicissitudes there, which in his own thoughts he still believed would produce somewhat in the end of which he should be glad; and
- March 16, N. S. dismissed sir Arthur Forbes with such letters and commissions as he desired, who thereupon returned for Ireland, where he found the state of affairs very much altered since his departure. For upon the defeat of Lambert, and general Munke's marching towards London, the lord Broghill and sir Charles Coote, notwithstanding the jealousy that was between them, joined with such other persons who were Presbyterians, and though they had been always against the King, yet they all concurred in seizing upon the persons who had been put in by Lambert or the rump Parliament, and submitted to the orders of general Munke, the rather because they did imagine that he intended to serve the King; and so by the time that the Parliament was to meet at Westminster all things were so well disposed in Ireland, that it was evident they would do whatsoever the general and the Parliament (who they presumed would be of one mind) should order them to do.
- Apr. 25. 211. The Parliament met upon the 25th of April; of which the general was returned a member, to serve as knight of the shire for the county of Devon, together with Mr. Morrice. Sir Harbottle Grimston was chosen Speaker, who had been a member of the Long Parliament, and continued rather than concurred with them till after the treaty of the Isle of Wight; where he was one of the commissioners sent to treat with the King, and behaved himself so well that his majesty was well satisfied with him; and after his return from thence pressed the acceptance of the King's concessions, and was thereupon in the number of those who were by force excluded from the

House. And his election to be Speaker at this time was con- 1660  
 trived by those who meant well to the King, and he submitted  
 to it out of a hope and confidence that the designs would suc-  
 ceed. They began only with bitter invectives against the  
 memory of Cromwell, as an odious and perjured tyrant, with  
 execrations upon the unchristian murder of the late King. And  
 in these generals they spent the first five days of their sitting;  
 no man having the courage, how loyal soever their wishes were,  
 to mention his majesty, till they could make a discovery what  
 mind the general was of, who could only protect such a pro-  
 position from being penal to the person that made it by their  
 former ordinances.

212. After he [the general] had well surveyed the temper  
 of the House, upon Tuesday the first of May he came into the May 1.  
 House, and told them one sir John Greenvill, who was a  
 servant of the King's, had brought him a letter from his  
 majesty, which he had in his hand, but would not presume to  
 open it without their direction, and that the same gentleman  
 was at the door, and had a letter to the House; which was no  
 sooner said than with a general acclamation he was called for;  
 and being brought to the bar, he said that he was commanded  
 by the King his master, having been lately with him at Breda,  
 to deliver that letter to the House, which he was ready to do;  
 and so, sending it by the serjeant to be delivered to the Speaker,  
 he withdrew.

213. The House impatiently called to have both the letters  
 read, that to the general and that to the Speaker; which being  
 done, the Declaration was as greedily called for, and read.  
 And from this time Charles Steward was no more heard of,  
 and so universal a joy was never seen within those walls; and  
 though there were some members there who were nothing de-  
 lighted with the temper of the House, nor with the argument  
 of it, and had malice enough to make within themselves the  
 most execrable wishes, yet they had not the hardiness to appear  
 less transported than the rest: who, not deferring it one  
 moment, and without one contradicting voice, appointed a com-  
 mittee to prepare an answer to his majesty's letter, expressing

1660 the great and joyful sense the House had of his gracious offers, and their humble and hearty thanks for the same, and with professions of their loyalty and duty to his majesty; and that the House would give a speedy answer to his majesty's gracious proposals. They likewise ordered at the same time that both his majesty's letters, that to the House and that to the general, with his majesty's Declaration therein enclosed, and the resolution of the House thereupon, should be forthwith printed and published.

214. This kind of reception was beyond what the best affected, nay, even the King, could expect or hope; and all that followed went in the same pace. The Lords, when they saw what spirit the House was possessed of, would not lose their share of thanks, but make haste into the [ir] house, without excluding any who had been sequestered from sitting there for their delinquency; and then they received likewise the letter from sir John Greenevill which his majesty had directed to them, and which they received with the same duty and acknowledgment. The [Lord] Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Council were transported with the King's goodness towards them, and with the expressions of his royal clemency, and entered into close deliberation what return they should make to him to manifest their duty and gratitude. And the officers of the army, upon the sight of the letter to their general and his majesty's Declaration, thought themselves highly honoured in that they were looked upon as good instruments of his majesty's restoration; and made those vows, and published such declarations, of their loyalty and duty as their general caused to be provided for them, which they signed with the loudest alacrity. And the truth is, he managed the business which he had now undertaken with wonderful prudence and dexterity; and as the nature and humour of his officers was well known to him, so he removed such from their commands whose affections he suspected, and conferred their places upon others of whom he was most assured. In a word, there was either real joy in the hearts of all men, or at least their countenances appeared such as if they were glad at the heart.

May 2.

215. The committee who were appointed by the House of 1660 Commons to prepare an answer to the King's letter, found it hard to satisfy all men; who were well contented that the King should be invited to return, but they thought that the guilt of the nation did require less precipitation than was like to be used, and that the treaty ought first to be made with the King, and conditions of security, before his majesty should be received. Many of those who had conferred together before the meeting of the Parliament had designed some articles to be prepared, according to the model of those at Killingworth in the time of King Harry the Third, to which the King should be sworn before he came home. Then the Presbyterian party, of which there were many members in Parliament, though they were rather troublesome than powerful, seemed very solicitous that somewhat should be concluded in veneration of the Covenant, and at least that somewhat should be inserted in their answer to the discountenance of the bishops. But the warmer zeal of the House threw away all those formalities and affectations, and said they had proceeded too far already in their vote upon the reception of the letter to fall back again, and offend the King with colder expressions of their duty. In the end, after some days' <sup>1</sup> debate, finding an equal impatience without the walls to that within the House, they were contented to gratify the Presbyterians in the length of the answer, and in using some expressions which would please them, and could do the King no prejudice; and all agreed that this answer should be re- May 2. turned to his majesty, which is here inserted in the very words.

216<sup>2</sup>. 'Most royal Sovereign,

'We, your majesty's most loyal subjects, the Commons of England assembled in Parliament, do, with all humbleness, present unto your majesty the unfeigned thankfulness of our hearts, for those gracious expressions of piety and goodness, and love to us and the nations under your dominion, which your majesty's letter of 1<sup>4</sup>/<sub>4</sub>th of April, dated from Breda, together with the Declaration enclosed in it of the same date, do so evidently contain. For which we do, in the first place, look up to the great

<sup>1</sup> [Some hours only.]

<sup>2</sup> [This copy of the answer is in the handwriting of an amanuensis.]

1660 King of kings, and bless his name, who hath put these thoughts into the heart of our King, to make him glorious in the eyes of his people; as those great deliverances which that divine Majesty hath afforded unto your royal person from many dangers, and the support which he hath given unto your heroic and princely mind under various trials, make it appear to all the world that you are precious in his sight. And give us leave to say, that as your majesty is pleased to declare your confidence in Parliaments, your esteem of them, and this your judgment and character of them, that they are so necessary for the government of the kingdom that neither prince nor people can be in any tolerable degree happy without them, and therefore say, that you will hearken unto their counsels, be tender of their privileges, and careful to preserve and protect them; so we trust, and will with all humility be bold to affirm, that your majesty will not be deceived in us, and that we will never depart from that fidelity which we owe unto your majesty, that zeal which we bear unto your service, and a constant endeavour to advance your honour and greatness.

217. 'And we beseech your majesty we may add this further, for the vindication of Parliaments, and even of the last Parliament convened under your royal father of happy memory, when (as your majesty well observes) through mistakes and misunderstandings many inconveniences were produced which were not intended; that those very inconveniences could not have been brought upon us by those persons who had designed them without violating the Parliament itself; for they well knew it was not possible to do a violence to that sacred person whilst the Parliament which had vowed and covenanted for the defence and safety of that person remained entire. Surely, sir, as the persons of our kings have ever been dear unto Parliaments, so we cannot think of that horrid act committed against the precious life of our late sovereign but with such a detestation and abhorrence as we want words to express it; and, next to wishing it had never been, we wish it may never be remembered by your majesty to be unto you an occasion of sorrow, as it will never be remembered by us but with that grief and trouble of mind which it deserves; being the greatest reproach that ever was incurred by any of the English nation, an offence to all the Protestant churches abroad, and a scandal to the profession of the truth of religion here at home; though both profession and true professors, and the nation itself, as well as the Parliament, were most innocent of it; having been only the contrivance and act of some few ambitious and bloody persons, and such others as by their influence were misled. And as we hope and pray that God will not impute the guilt of it, nor of all the evil consequences thereof, unto the land, whose divine justice never involves the guiltless with the guilty, so we cannot but give due praise unto your majesty's goodness, who are pleased to entertain such reconciled and reconciling thoughts, and with them not only meet, but as it were prevent, your Parliament and people, proposing yourself in a great measure, and inviting the Parliament to consider further, and advise your majesty, what may be necessary to restore the nation to what it hath lost, raise up again the banks and fences of it, and make the kingdom happy by the advancement of religion, the scouring of our laws, liberties, and estates, and the removing of all jealousies and animosities which may render our peace less

certain and durable. Wherein your majesty gives a large evidence of your 1660 great wisdom ; judging aright, that, after so high a distemper, and such a universal shaking of the very foundations, great care must be had to repair the breaches, and much circumspection and industry used to provide things necessary for the strengthening of those repairs, and preventing whatsoever may disturb or weaken them.

218. ' We shall immediately apply ourselves to the preparing of these things, and in a very short time we hope to be able to present them to your majesty ; and for the present do, with all humble thankfulness, acknowledge your grace and favour in assuring of us of your royal concurrence with us, and saying, that we shall not expect any thing from you but what you will be as ready to give as we to receive. And we cannot doubt of your majesty's effectual performance, since your own princely judgment hath prompted unto you the necessity of doing such things, and your piety and goodness hath carried you to a free tender of them to your faithful Parliament. You speak as a gracious King, and we will do what befits dutiful, loving, and loyal subjects ; who are yet more engaged to honour and highly esteem your majesty, for your declining, as you were pleased to say, all foreign assistance, and rather trust to your people ; who, we do assure your majesty, will and do open their arms and their hearts to receive you, and will spare neither their estates nor their lives when your service shall require it of them.

219. ' And we have yet more cause to enlarge our praise and our prayers to God for your majesty, that you have continued unshaken in your faith ; that neither the temptation of allurements, persuasions, and promises from seducing Papists on the one hand, nor the persecution and hard usage from some seduced and misguided professors of the Protestant religion on the other hand, could at all prevail on your majesty to make you forsake the Rock of Israel, the God of your fathers, the true Protestant religion in which your majesty hath been bred ; but you have still been as a rock yourself, firm to your covenant with your and our God, even now expressing your zeal and affection for the Protestant religion, and your care and study for the propagation thereof. This hath been a rejoicing of heart to all the faithful of the land, and an assurance to them that God would not forsake you, but, after many trials, which should but make you more precious, as gold out of the fire, restore<sup>1</sup> your majesty unto your patrimony and people with more splendour and dignity, and make you the glory of kings and the joy of your subjects ; which is, and shall ever be, the prayer of your majesty's most loyal subjects, the Commons of England assembled in Parliament.'

Which letter was signed by sir Harbottle Grimston, Speaker.

220. As soon as this letter was engrossed and signed, sir John Greenvill was appointed to attend again ; and being May 3. brought to the bar, the Speaker stood up, and told him that ' they need not tell him with what grateful hearts they had

<sup>1</sup> [ ' to restore,' MS.]

1660 received his majesty's gracious letter; he himself was an ear and an eye-witness of it; their bells and their bonfires had already begun the proclamation of his majesty's goodness and of their joys; that they had now prepared an answer to his majesty, which should be delivered to him; and that they did not think it fit that he should return to their royal sovereign without some testimony of their respects to himself, and therefore that they had ordered five hundred pounds to be delivered to him, to buy a jewel to wear, as an honour for being the messenger of so gracious a message; and in the name of the House he gave him their hearty thanks.' So blessed a revolution it was, that a servant of the King's, who for near ten years together had been in prisons and under confinements only for being the King's servant, and would but three months before have been put to have undergone a shameful death if he had been known to have seen the King, should be now rewarded for bringing a message from him. And from this time there was such an emulation and impatience in Lords and Commons and city, and generally over the kingdom, who should make the most lively expressions of their duty and of their joy, that a man could not but wonder where those people dwelt who had done all the mischief, and kept the King so many years from enjoying the comfort and the support of such excellent subjects.

221. The Lords and the Commons now conferred together, how they might with most lustre perform those respects that might be preparatory to his majesty's return. They remembered, that upon the murder of the late King there was a declaration that no man, upon peril of his life and forfeiture of his estate, should presume to proclaim his successor; which so terrified the people, that they durst not so much as pray for him. Though the Parliament had, by all the ways they could think of, published their return to their obedience, yet they thought it necessary, for the better information and conviction of the people, to make some formal proclamation of his majesty's undoubted right to the Crown, and to oblige all men to pay that reverence and duty to him which they ought to do by the May 7. laws of God and of the land. Whereupon they gave order to



prepare such a proclamation; which being done, the Lords and 1660 Commons, (the general having concerted all things with the city), met in Westminster Hall upon the 8th of May, within May 8. seven days after the receipt of the King's letter, and walked into the Palace-yard, where they all stood bare whilst the heralds proclaimed the King. Then they went to Whitehall, and did the same; and afterwards at Temple Bar the Lord Mayor and aldermen and all the companies of the city received them, when the like proclamation was made in like manner there; and then in all the usual places of the city; which done, the remainder of the day and the night was spent in those acclamations, festivals, bells, and bonfires, as are the natural attendants upon such solemnities. Which done, nothing was thought of but to make such preparations as should be necessary for his majesty's invitation and reception. The proclamation made was in these words :

222<sup>1</sup>. Although it can no way be doubted but that his majesty's right and title to his crown and kingdoms is and was every way completed by the death of his most royal father of glorious memory, without the ceremony or solemnity of a proclamation; yet, since proclamations in such cases have been always used, to the end that all good subjects might upon this occasion testify their duty and respect; and since the armed violence, and other the calamities, of many years last past [have<sup>2</sup>] hitherto deprived us of any such opportunity whereby<sup>3</sup> we might express our loyalty and allegiance to his majesty; we therefore, the Lords and Commons now assembled in Parliament, together with the Lord Mayor, aldermen, and commons of the city of London, and other freemen of this kingdom, now present, do, according to our duty and allegiance, heartily, joyfully, and unanimously [acknowledge and<sup>4</sup>] proclaim, that immediately upon the decease of our late sovereign lord King Charles the imperial crown of the realm of England, and of all the kingdoms, dominions, and rights belonging to the same, did, by inherent birthright and lawful undoubted succession, descend and come to his most excellent majesty Charles the Second, as being lineally, justly, and lawfully next heir of the blood royal of this realm; and that, by the goodness and providence of Almighty God, he is of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, the most potent, mighty, and undoubted King; and thereunto we do most humbly and faithfully submit and oblige ourselves, our heirs and posterity<sup>5</sup> for ever.

<sup>1</sup> [Copied by Clarendon's amanuensis.]

<sup>2</sup> [*Lords' and Commons' Journals*; 'hath,' MS.]

<sup>3</sup> ['wherein,' *Lords' and Commons' Journals*.]

<sup>4</sup> [The words in brackets are added from the *Journals*.]

<sup>5</sup> ['posterities,' *Journals*.]

1660 223. From the time that the King came to Breda, very few days passed without some express from London, upon the observations of his friends, and the applications made to them by many who had been very active against the King, and were now as solicitous that his majesty should know that they wholly dedicated themselves to his service. Before the general had declared himself, or the Parliament was assembled, some who had sat judges upon his father sent many excuses that they were forced to it, and offered to perform signal services if they might obtain their pardon. But his majesty would admit no address from them, nor hearken to any proposition made on their behalf.

224. There was one instance that perplexed him; which was the case of colonel Ingoldsby<sup>1</sup>, who was in the number of the late King's judges, and whose name was in the warrant for his murder; who from the deposal of Richard had declared that he would serve the King, and told Mr. Mordant that he would perform all the services he could without making any condition<sup>2</sup>, but would be well content that his majesty when he came home should take his head if he thought fit; only he desired that he might know the truth of his case; which was this:—

225. He was a gentleman of a good extraction, and near allied to Cromwell, who had drawn him into the army before or about the time when he came first to age, where he grew to be a colonel of horse, and to have the reputation of great courage against the enemy, and of equal civility to all men. It is very true he was named amongst those who were appointed to be judges of the King; and it is as true that he was never once present with them, always abhorring the action in his heart, and having no other passion in any part of the quarrel but his personal kindness to Cromwell. The next day after the horrid sentence was pronounced, he had occasion to speak with an officer, who, he was told, was in the Painted Chamber; where, when he came thither, he saw Cromwell, and the rest of those who had sat upon the King, and were then, as he found after-

<sup>1</sup> ['Inglesby,' MS., in this one place.]

<sup>2</sup> [See Carto's *Original Letters*, ii. 333.]

wards, assembled to sign the warrant for his majesty's death. 1660  
 As soon as Cromwell's eyes were upon him, he ran to him, and taking him by the hand, drew him by force to the table; and said, though he had escaped him all the while, he should now sign that paper as well as they; which he, seeing what it was, refused with great passion, saying he knew nothing of the business, and offered to go away. But Cromwell and others held him by violence; and Cromwell, with a loud laughter, taking his hand in his, and putting the pen between his fingers, with his own hand writ *Richard Ingol[d]sby*, he making all the resistance he could: and he said, if his name there were compared with what he had ever writ himself, it could never be looked upon as his own hand.

226. Though his majesty had within himself compassion for him, he would never send him any assurance of his pardon; presuming that if all the allegations were true, there would be a season when a distinction would be made, without his majesty's declaring himself, between him and those other of those classes, which he resolved never to pardon. Nor was he [Ingoldsby] at all disheartened with [this<sup>1</sup>,] but pursued his former resolutions, and first surprised the castle of Windsor, <sup>1659</sup> where there was a great magazine of arms and ammunition, <sup>Dec. 27.</sup> and put out that governor whom the rump had put in, and afterwards took Lambert prisoner, as is before remembered. § 149.

227. Whilst the fleet was preparing, admiral Mountegue sent his cousin Edward Mountegue to the King, to let him know that as soon as it should be ready, which he hoped might be within so many days, he would be himself on board, and would then be ready to receive and obey his majesty's orders. This was before the Parliament assembled. He sent word what officers he was confident of, and of whom he was not assured, and who he concluded would not concur with him, and who must be reduced by force. He desired to know whether the King had any assurance of the general, who, however, he wished might know nothing of his resolutions. And it was no small inconvenience to his majesty that he was restrained from com-

<sup>1</sup> ['the obligation,' MS.]

1660 municating to either the confidence he had in the other, which might have facilitated both their designs. But the mutual jealousies between them, and indeed of all men, would not permit that liberty to his majesty.

228. The frequent resort of persons to Bruxells before they knew of the King's being gone to Breda, and their communication of the good news they brought to his majesty's servants and the other English who remained there, and who published what they wished as come to pass as well as what they heard, made the Spanish ministers begin to think that the King's affairs were not altogether so hopeless as they imagined them to be, and that there was more in the King's remove to Breda than at first appeared. And they had every day expected to hear that the States had sent to forbid his majesty to remain in their dominions, as they used to do when his presence had been less notorious. But when they could hear of no such thing, but of great resort thither to the King, and that he had stayed longer there than he had seemed to intend to do, the marquis May 14,  
N.S. Caracena sent a person of prime quality<sup>1</sup> to Breda, to invite his majesty to return to Bruxells; the rather, because he had received some very hopeful propositions from England, to which he was not willing to make any answer without receiving his majesty's approbation and command.

229. The King sent him word, that he was obliged with reference to his business in England to stay where he was, and that he was not without hope that his affairs might succeed so well that he should not be necessitated to return to Bruxells at all. Which answer the marquis no sooner received, than he May 18,  
N.S. returned the same messenger with a kind of expostulation for the indignity that would be offered to his Catholic majesty if he should leave his dominions in such a manner, and therefore besought him either to return himself thither, or that the duke of York and the duke of Gloster, or at least one of them,

<sup>1</sup> [marq. de Monroy. He arrived at Breda on May 1<sup>st</sup>. The dates of some of the subsequent occurrences during the King's stay in Holland are taken, with the substitution of old for new style, from Sir W. Lower's *Relation of the voyage of Charles II*, fol. Hague, 1660.]

might come to Bruxells, that the world might not believe that 1660 his majesty was offended with the Catholic King, who had treated him so well<sup>1</sup>. When he found that he was to receive no satisfaction in either of those particulars, though the King and both the dukes made their excuses with all possible acknowledgment of the favours they had received from his Catholic majesty, and of the civilities shewed to them by the marquis himself, he revenged himself upon don Alonso with a million of reproaches for his stupidity, and ignorance in the affairs of England, and of every thing relating thereunto, after having resided sixteen years ambassador in that kingdom.

230. Cardinal Mazaryne had better intelligence from the French ambassador in London; who gave him diligent accounts of every day's alteration, and of the general imagination that general Munke had other intentions than he yet discovered. And when he heard that the King was removed from Bruxells to Breda, he presently persuaded the Queen mother of England to send the lord Jermin (whom the King had lately, upon his mother's desire, created earl of St. Alban's) to invite the King April 27. to come into France, and to make that treaty which probably would be between the ensuing Parliament and his majesty, in that kingdom; which might prove of great use and advantage to her majesty's interest and honour, and in which the power of the cardinal might be of great importance, in diverting or allaying any insolent demands which might be made. And the cardinal made the same invitation by him, with professions of wonderful kindness, and that the [most] Christian King was infinitely desirous to perform all those offices and respects to his majesty which he had always desired, but was never able to accomplish till now; with this addition, that if his majesty found that the expedition of his affairs would not permit him to come to Paris, order and preparations should be made for his reception at Calice, or any other place he would appoint, where the Queen his mother would attend him; with all other expressions of the highest esteem, which the sagacity of that great minister was plentifully supplied with.

<sup>1</sup> [He invited Ormonde by letter of May 1<sup>st</sup>. Carte MS. ccxiv, f. 200.]

1660 231. The earl of St. Alban's found the King in too good a posture of hope and expectation to be much importuned upon the instances he brought, and was contented to return with the King's acknowledgment, and excuse that he could not decently pass through Flanders after he had refused to return to Bruxells; and without going through those provinces it was not possible for him to make a journey into France. In the mean time it was no small pleasure to his majesty to find himself so solemnly invited by two great Kings to enter in[to] their dominions; out of one of which he had been rejected with so many disobligations and indignities, and with so much caution and apprehension suffered to pass through the other, that he might not reside a day there, or spend more time than was absolutely necessary for his journey.

232. Persons now came to Breda, not, as heretofore to Cullen and to Bruxells, under disguises and in fear to be discovered, but with bare faces, and the pride and vanity to be taken notice of, to present their duty to the King; some being employed to procure pardons for those who thought themselves in danger, and to stand in need of them; others brought good presents in English gold to the King, that their names, and the names of their friends who sent them, might be remembered amongst the first of those who made the first demonstrations of their affections that way to his majesty, by supplying his necessities; which had been discontinued for many years, to a degree that cannot be believed, and ought not to be remembered. And by these supplies his majesty was enabled, besides the payment of his other debts, not only to pay all his servants the arrears of their board-wages, but to give them all some testimony of his bounty, to raise their spirits after so many years of patient waiting for deliverance: and all this before the delivery of the King's letter by the general to the Parliament.

233. The King had not been many days in Breda before the States General sent deputies of their own body<sup>1</sup> to congratulate his majesty's arrival in their dominions, and to acknowledge

<sup>1</sup> [They were commissioned by the States on May 13, 16, and arrived at Breda on May 18.]

the great honour he had vouchsafed to do them. And shortly 1660 after, other deputies came from the States of Holland, beseeching his majesty that he would grace that province with his kingly presence at the Hague, where preparations should be made for his reception, in such a manner as should testify the great joy of their hearts for the blessings which the divine Providence was pouring upon his head. And his majesty accepting their invitation, they returned in order to make his journey thither, and his entertainment there, equal to their professions.

234. In the mean time Breda swarmed with English, a multitude repairing thither from all other places as well as London, with presents, and protestations how much they had longed and prayed for this blessed change, and magnifying their sufferings under the late tyrannical government, when many of them had been zealous ministers and promoters of it. The magistrates of the town took all imaginable care to express their devotion to the King, by using all civilities towards, and taking care for the accommodation of, the multitude of his subjects who resorted thither to express their duty to him. So that no man would have imagined, by the treatment he now received, that he had been so lately forbid to come into that place; which indeed had not proceeded from the disaffection of the inhabitants of that good town, who had always passion for his prosperity, and even then publicly detested the rudeness of their superiors, whom they were bound to obey.

235. All things being in readiness, and the States having sent their yachts<sup>1</sup> and other vessel[s] for the accommodation of his majesty and his train, as near to Breda as the river would permit, the King, with his royal sister and brothers, left that place upon [Friday] the [fourteenth] day of May<sup>2</sup>, and within May 14,  
O.S. an hour embarked themselves on board the yachts<sup>1</sup>, which carried them to Rot[t]erdam; Dort, and the other places near which they passed, making all those expressions of joy, by the conflux of the people to the banks of the river and all other

<sup>1</sup> ['yuaghts,' MS.]

<sup>2</sup> [Blanks are left in the MS. for the words within brackets.]

1660 ways, which the situation of those places would suffer. At Rot[t]erdam they entered into their coaches; from whence to the Hague (at least five English miles) they seemed to pass through one continued street, by the wonderful and orderly appearance of the people on both sides, with such acclamations of joy as if themselves were now restored to peace and security.

May 15,  
O.S.

236. The entrance into the Hague, and the reception there, and the conducting his majesty to the house provided for his reception, was very magnificent, and in all respects answerable to the pomp, wealth, and greatness of that State. And the treatment of his majesty, and all who had relation to his service, at the State's charge, during the time of his abode there, which continued many days, was incredibly splendid and noble; and the universal joy so visible and real, that it could only be exceeded by that of his own subjects. The States General in a body, and the States of Holland in a body, performed their compliments with all solemnity; and then the several persons, according to their faculties, made their professions; and a set number of them was appointed always to wait in the Court, to receive his majesty's commands. All the ambassadors and public ministers of kings, princes, and states, repaired to his majesty, and professed the joy of their masters on his majesty's behalf: so that a man would have thought that this revolution had been brought to pass by the general combination and activity of Christendom, that appeared now to take so much pleasure in it.

237. The King had been very few days at the Hague when he heard that the English fleet was in sight of Shivelin, [Scheveling]<sup>1</sup> and shortly after, an officer from admiral Mountegue was sent to the King, to present his duty to him, and to the duke of York, their high admiral, to receive his orders. As soon as Mountegue came on board the fleet in the Downs, and found those officers more frank in declaring their duty to the King, and resolution to serve him, than he expected, that he might not seem to be sent by the Parliament to his majesty but to be carried by his own affection and duty, without expecting any

<sup>1</sup> [It arrived on the coast of Holland on May 14.]



command from them, the wind coming fair, he set up his sails, 1660 and stood for the coast of Holland, leaving only two or three of the lesser ships to receive their orders, and to bring over those persons who, he knew, were designed to wait upon his majesty; which expedition was never forgiven him by some men, who took all occasions afterwards to revenge themselves upon him.

238. The duke of York went the next day on board the fleet, <sup>May 21,</sup> to take possession of his command; where he was received by <sup>O.S.</sup> all the officers and seamen with all possible duty and submission, and with those exclamations which are peculiar to that people, and in which they excel. After he had spent the day there, in receiving information of the state of the fleet, and a catalogue of the names of the several ships, his highness returned with it that night to the King, that his majesty might make alterations, and new christen those ships which too much preserved the memory of their late governors and of the republic.

239. Shortly after, the committee of Lords [and Commons] <sup>May 14,</sup> arrived at the Hague, where the States took care for their decent <sup>O.S.</sup> accommodation. And the next day they desired admission to <sup>May 16,</sup> his majesty, who immediately received them very graciously. <sup>O.S.</sup> From the House of Peers were deputed six of their body, and, according to custom, twelve from the Commons. The peers were, the earls of Oxford, Warwick, and Middlesex; the lords, the viscount Hereford, the lord Berkely of Berkely Castle, and the lord Brooke. From the Commons were sent, the lord Fayrefax, the lord Bruce, the lord Falkeland, the lord Castleton, the lord Harbert, the lord Mandevil, Denzil Hollis, sir Horatio Townesend, sir Anthony Ashly Cooper, sir George Booth, sir John Holland, and sir Henry Cholmely. These persons presented the humble invitation and supplication of the Parliament, that his majesty would be pleased to return, and take the government of the kingdom into his hands, where he should find all possible affection, duty, and obedience from all his subjects; and lest his return, so much longed for, might be retarded by the want of money to discharge those debts which he could not but have contracted, they presented from the Parliament the

1660 sum of fifty thousand pounds to his majesty<sup>1</sup>; having likewise order to pay the sum of ten thousand pounds to the duke of York and five thousand to the duke of Gloster<sup>2</sup>; which was a very good supply to their several necessities. And the King treated all the committee very graciously together, and every one of them severally and particularly very obligingly. So that some of them, who were [conscious]<sup>3</sup> to themselves of their former demerit, were very glad to find that they were not to fear any bitterness from so princely and so generous a nature.

240. The city of London had too great a hand in driving the King from thence not to appear equally zealous for his return thither. And therefore they did at the same time send fourteen of their most substantial citizens to assure his majesty of their fidelity and most cheerful submission, and that they placed all their felicity and hope of future prosperity in the assurance of his majesty's grace and protection, for the meriting whereof their lives and fortunes should be always at his majesty's disposal; and they presented to him from the city the sum of ten thousand pounds. The King told them he had always had a particular affection for the city of London, the place of his birth, and was very glad that they had now so good a part in his restoration, of which he was informed, and how much he was beholding to every one of them; for which he thanked them very graciously, and knighted them all; an honour no man in the city had received in near twenty years, and with which they were much delighted.

. 241. It will hardly be believed that this money presented to the King by the Parliament and the city, and charged by bills of exchange upon the richest merchants in Amsterdam, who had vast estates, could not be received in many days, though some of the principal citizens of London who came to the King went themselves to solicit it, and had credit enough themselves for much greater sums if they had brought over no bills of exchange. But this was not the first time (and of which somewhat hath been said before<sup>4</sup>) that it was evident to the King, that it is

<sup>1</sup> [Voted May 1.]

<sup>2</sup> ['conscience,' MS.]

<sup>3</sup> [Voted May 10, 11.]

<sup>4</sup> [book XII. § 48.]

not easy in that most opulent city, with the help of all the rich 1000 towns adjacent and upon the greatest credit, to draw together a great sum of ready money; the custom of that country, which flourishes so much in trade, being to make their payments in paper by assignations, and having very rarely occasion for a great sum in any one particular place. And so at this time his majesty was compelled, that he might not defer the voyage he so impatiently longed to make, to take bills of exchange from Amsterdam upon their correspondents in London, for above thirty thousand pounds of the money that was assigned; all which was paid in London as soon as demanded.

242. With these committees from the Parliament and from the city there came a company of clergymen, to the number of eight or ten, who would not be looked upon as chaplains to the rest, but, being the popular preachers of the city, (Raynolds, Calamy, Case, Manton, and others,) were the most eminent of the Presbyterians, and desired to be thought to represent that party. They desired to be admitted all together to have a formal audience from his majesty, where they were tedious enough in presenting their duties, and magnifying the affections of themselves and their friends, who, they said, had always, according to the obligation of their Covenant, wished his majesty very well, and had lately, upon the opportunity that God had put into their hands, informed the people of their duty; which they presumed his majesty had heard had proved effectual, and been of great use to him. They thanked God for his constancy to the Protestant religion, and professed that they were no enemies to moderate episcopacy, only desired that such things might not be pressed upon them in God's worship which in their judgment who used them were acknowledged to be matters indifferent, and by others were held unlawful.

243. The King spake very kindly to them, and said he had heard of their good behaviour towards him, and that he had no purpose to impose hard conditions upon them with reference to their conscience; they well knew that he had referred the settling all differences of that nature to the wisdom of the Parliament, which best knew what indulgence and toleration was

1660 necessary for the peace and quiet of the kingdom. But his majesty could not be so rid of them ; but they desired several private audiences of him, which he never denied ; wherein they told him, that the Book of Common Prayer had been long discontinued in England, and the people having been disused to it, and many of them having never heard it in their lives, it would be much wondered at, if his majesty should, at his first landing in the kingdom, revive the use of it in his own chapel, whither all persons would resort ; and therefore they besought him that he would not use it so entirely and formally, and have some parts only of it read, with mixture of other good prayers which his chaplains might use.

244. The King told them with some warmth, that, whilst he gave them liberty, he would not have his own taken from him ; that he had always used that form of service, which he thought the best in the world, and would not discontinue it, in places where it was more disliked than he hoped it was by them ; that when he came into England, he would not much inquire how it was used in other churches, though he doubted not he should find it used in many, but he was sure he would have no other used in his own chapel. Then they besought him with more importunity, that the use of the surplice might be discontinued by his chaplains, because the sight of it would give great offence and scandal to the people. They found the King as inexorable in that point as in the other ; and [he] told them plainly, that he would not be restrained himself when he gave others so much liberty ; that it had been always held a decent habit in the Church, constantly practised in England till these late ill times ; that it had been still retained by him ; and though he was bound for the present to tolerate much disorder and undecency in the exercise of God's worship, he would never in the least degree discountenance the good old order of the Church in which he had been bred by his own practice. Though they were very much unsatisfied with him, whom they thought to have found more flexible, yet they ceased further troubling him, in hope and presumption that they should find their importunity in England more effectual.

245. After eight or ten days spent at the Hague in triumphs and festivals, which could not have been more splendid if all the monarchs of Europe had met there, and which were concluded with several rich presents made to his majesty, the King took his leave of the States with all the professions of amity their civilities deserved, and embarked himself on the *Prince*, which had before been called the *Protector*<sup>1</sup>, but had been new christened the day before, as many other had been, in the presence and by the order of his royal highness the admiral. And upon the 24th day of May the fleet set sail, and, in one continued thunder of the cannon, arrived so early on the 26th near Dover that his majesty disembarked, and being received by the general at the brink of the sea, he presently took coach, and came that night to Canterbury, where he stayed the next day, being Sunday, and went to his devotions to the cathedral, which was very much dilapidated and out of repair; yet the people seemed glad to hear the Common Prayer again. Thither came very many of the nobility and other persons of quality to present themselves to the King; and there his majesty assembled his Council and swore the general of the Council, and Mr. Morrice, whom he there knighted, and gave him the signet, and swore him Secretary of State. That day he gave the Garter to the general, and likewise to the marquis of Hartford and the earl of Southampton, (who had been elected many years before,) and sent it likewise by Garter herald and king-at-arms to admiral Mountegue, who remained in the Downs.

246. On Monday he went to Rochester, and the next day, being the 29th of May and his birthday, he entered London, the ways from Dover thither being so full of people and exclamations as if the whole kingdom had been gathered. About or above Greenwich the Lord Mayor and aldermen met him, with all those protestations of joy which can hardly be imagined; and the concourse so great that the King rode in a crowd from the bridge to Temple Bar. All the companies of the city stood in

<sup>1</sup> [He embarked in the *Royal Charles*, which had formerly been called the *Naseby*. *Merc. Publ.*, No. 22, p. 342; Lower, p. 86.]

<sup>2</sup> [Clarendon postdates the embarkation and arrival by one day.]

Tuesday,  
May 22,  
O.S.

Wedn.  
May 23.<sup>2</sup>

Friday,  
May 25.<sup>2</sup> ]

May 27.

Saturd.  
May 26.

1650  
Jan.

1660 order on both sides, giving loud thanks for his majesty's presence. And he no sooner came to Whitehall but the two Houses of Parliament solemnly cast themselves at his feet, with all the vows of affection and fidelity to the world's end. In a word, the joy was so unexpressible and so universal, that his majesty said smilingly to some about him, that he doubted it had been his own fault that he had been absent so long, for he saw nobody that did not protest he had ever wished for his return.

247. In this wonderful manner, and with this miraculous expedition, did God put an end in one month (for it was the first of May that the King's letter was delivered to the Parliament, and his majesty was at Whitehall upon the 29th of the same month) to a rebellion that had raged near twenty years, and been carried on with all the horrid circumstances of parricide, murder, and devastation, that fire and the sword, in the hands of the wickedest men in the world, could be ministers of, almost to the desolation of two kingdoms, and the exceeding defacing and deforming the third. Yet did the merciful hand of God in one month bind up all these wounds, and even made the scars as undiscernible as in respect of their deepness was possible. And if there wanted more glorious monuments of this deliverance, posterity would know the time of it by the death of the two great favourites of the two Crowns, cardinal Mazaryne and don Lewis de Haro, who both died within three or four months<sup>1</sup>, with the wonder, if not the agony, of this undreamed of prosperity, and as if they had taken it ill that God Almighty would bring such a work to pass in Europe without their concurrence and against all their machinations.

'Mountpelier, 1 Aug. 1670.'

<sup>1</sup> [Mazarin died March 9, 1661, and de Haro Nov. 7, 1662.]

**TABLE OF READINGS**  
**CORRECTED IN THIS EDITION FROM THE MS.,**  
**COMPARED WITH THE READINGS OF THE**  
**EDITION OF 1849.**



.

.

.



## TABLE OF CORRECTED READINGS.

*Edit.* 1849.

*Present Edit.*

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| <p>I. 6. that in the fourth year (after the dissolution of [the] two former) these unseasonable . . . dissolutions</p> | <p>in the fourth year that (after the dissolution of two former) this unseasonable . . . dissolution</p>  |
| <p>10. naturally to follow</p>   | <p>naturally [inclined] to follow</p>   |
| <p>11. little beholden</p>   | <p>little beholding</p>   |
| <p>13, 14.</p>   | <p><i>Differently divided.</i></p>  |
| <p>17, 18.</p>   | <p><i>Differently divided.</i></p>  |
| <p>22. these two points</p>  | <p>those two points</p>   |
| <p>24. inadvertisements, [and] that</p>  | <p>inadvertisements; that</p>   |
| <p>30. he said no more</p>   | <p>he says no more</p>  |
| <p>34. forgot not</p>  | <p>forgot not</p>   |
| <p>40. such counsels</p>   | <p>such councils</p>  |
| <p>48. given by him</p>  | <p>[were] given by him</p>  |
| <p>49. ripped up</p>   | <p>[were] ripped up</p>   |
| <p>50. unusual as unheard of</p>   | <p>unusual and unheard of</p>   |
| <p>52, 53.</p>   | <p><i>Differently divided, the former edition continuing § 52 where a sentence ended, and ending it where there should only have been a comma.</i></p> <p><i>Words are supplied at the commencement of § 52 to complete the sentence.</i></p> |
| <p>62. respect of the exercise</p>   | <p>respect to the exercise</p>  |
| <p>65. it was [as] so many marriages in [the] highest passion</p>  | <p>it was so many marriages in highest passion</p>  |
| <p>66. without any reply</p>   | <p>[and] without any reply</p>  |
| <p>67. all they could and the other told him</p>   | <p>all he could the other told him</p>  |
| <p>71. or whence it will [as much] above other men and the tone</p>  | <p>and whence it will above other men and the tune.</p>   |
| <p>75. trustman</p>  | <p>truckman</p>   |
| <p>85. cheerful contribution</p>   | <p>cheerful sure contributions</p>  |
| <p>89. live a short time</p>   | <p>live [but] a short time</p>  |

## Edit. 1849.

98. but yet it was so happily tempered that his courtesy so transcendent reconciled to all men
112. Mr. Fern
119. could have a man
133. human learning
139. heir of Cope
145. Dr. Laud
147. at the break
- 147, 148.
154. next delinquents
162. in the royal diadem
163. exemplary piety  
worn a black gown  
miserable adjuncts  
*note, sub-sect. 4. general Ruther*
170. than confess
- 173, 174.
174. thwarteous humour  
appear to have [a] hand
182. archbishop of Saint Andrew's
196. connivance or favour
198. between the ministers
202. amongst the bishops
203. [make] accusation
206. next the archbishop's
211. his resolutions
- II. 8. which seemed rather  
8, 9.
14. by driving the rudest  
their devotions
15. that with difficulty
18. pursued their business
21. opposition [to] them  
by inflicting
24. exemplary fidelity
- 33, 34.
36. [and] they two
39. [and] by the testimony
46. after [the] first messenger's

## Present Edit.

- [yet] it was so happily tempered and his courtesy so transcended reconciled [him] to all men
- Mr. Tern
- could have [had] a man
- humane learning
- heir of [Sir Walter] Cope
- bishop Laud
- at the breach
- Differently divided, § 147 in the former edit. uniting the last words of one sentence to the beginning of the next.*
- next delinquent
- in the most royal diadem
- exemplar piety  
worn black gown  
unsociable adjuncts  
general Ruthen
- [rather] than confess
- Differently divided.*
- thwartover humour  
appear to have the hand
- archbishopric of St. Andrew's
- connivance of favour
- between the minister
- among the bishops
- make the accusation
- next the archbishop
- his resolution
- seemed rather
- Differently divided, § 8 in the former edition ending in the middle of a sentence.*
- by driving out the rudest  
their devotion
- that with great difficulty
- pursued the business
- opposition of them  
by taking
- exemplar fidelity
- Differently divided.*
- and they two
- by the testimony
- after his first messenger's

*Edit.* 1849.*Present Edit.*

50. if not [in] the parliament  
 52. was denied  
 65.
67. and that time  
 77. dispassionate men  
 81. Beedon forest  
 82. levies of horse and foot [there]  
 83. and indeed . . . . . [he had]  
 which used to be
101. and after[wards] was  
 104. to secure [himself by] withdraw-  
 ing  
 105. run any fortune  
 107. who the king said  
 115, 116.
- III. I. [not] many members
8. from the whole [house]  
 9. from [the] council  
 11. desired [that] he might  
 14. sharp conclusions [were made]  
 20. they [having] designed  
 22, 23.  
 26. who were not [discontented]  
 27. Yet [it]  
 36. This was the present temper and  
 constitution of both houses of  
 parliament upon their first com-  
 ing together, when  
 40. and [was] to be  
 42. The Scotch commissioners were  
 in this time come to London,  
 where they were magnificently  
 entertained, and one of the best  
 houses in the heart of the city  
 assigned for their reception, and  
 the neighbour church for their  
 devotion, whither so great a
- if not the parliament  
 [it] was denied  
*The last sentence omitted, as men-  
 tioned in the note.*  
 and [because] that time  
 dispassioned men  
 Needwood forest  
 levies of horse and foot here  
 and [who had] indeed  
 which use to be  
 and after was  
 to secure by withdrawing  
 run my fortune  
 who he said  
*Differently divided.*  
 many members. [*The not inserted  
 in consequence of a misunder-  
 standing of the sentence. Claren-  
 don apparently puts commas alike  
 after the words 'writs' and 'ab-  
 sent'*].  
 from the whole  
 from Council  
 desired he might  
 sharp conclusions  
 and they had designed  
*Differently divided.*  
 who were not  
 [it]  
 This temper and constitution of both  
 Houses of Parliament was very  
 different from the last, and upon  
 their first coming together,  
 and [who was] to be  
*Omitted, as mentioned in note.*

<sup>1</sup> Possibly there should not be a full stop in the text at 'writs,' but a comma here, and a semi-colon at 'absent.'

Edit. 1849.

Present Edit.

herd flocked on Sundays to hear Mr. Henderson and his fellow-chaplains that very many came to and sat in the church from the time that it was light, that they might receive the comfort of those lectures, which were not till the afternoon; for in the morning their devotions were private

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 47. those persons whence   | those persons from whence  |
| 65. presses at liberty   | presses [were] at liberty  |
| which, [being] neglected   | which, neglected   |
| 66. excess of [their] ecclesiastical                                   | excess of ecclesiastical   |
| 75. at their election  | For at their election  |
| 78. themselves to [do]   | themselves to make   |
| the act [for granting them] for life                                   | the Act for life   |
| 80. was grounded   | were grounded  |
| monarchical principles   | monarchic principles   |
| 85. hoping that  | hoping [that]  |
| 90. they agreed to pair  | they agreed to sever   |
| 92. which "as best   | which is best  |
| 103. a sectary   | [a] sectary  |
| 104. that right after[wards]   | that right after   |
| 113. kindness to him[self]   | kindness to him  |
| to come [to] England   | to come for England  |
| 122. somewhat unskillfully   | some unskillfully  |
| 130. to be received  | [to] be received   |
| 131. the beginning   | this beginning   |
| 133. and a <i>t</i> over   | and a <i>t</i> over it   |
| 136. to which his majesty  | to the which his majesty   |
| 153. which were like   | which are like   |
| 155. who presented it  | [to deliver] who presented it  |
| 157. the commitment of [the bill for<br>taking away] the court of York | the commitment of the Court of<br>York   |
| 158. emergent occasions  | immergent occasions  |
| 161. would not consent   | would not consent [to do]  |
| 166. would ever have   | would have ever  |
| 169. had been induced  | having been induced  |
| [so] the officers  | the officers   |
| 171-184.   | <i>Numbering of sections altered, 182-<br/>184 having been omitted in the<br/>numbering in the last edition.</i> |
| 172. [pragmatical]   | practical  |
| [your] majesty   | his majesty  |
| the peers  | [the] peers  |

*Edit.* 1849.*Present Edit.*

|  |  |
|--|--|
| 173. your wisdom   | your wisdoms   |
| 180. suspected to be crazy   | suspected to be crazed   |
| 183. upon the discovery  | upon discovery   |
| 191. any of the other  | any of the others  |
| 195. forejudge their counsels  | prejudge their counsels  |
| 204. at that time in any   | at that time in either   |
| 208. an universal  | a universal  |
| 215. successive king<br>his life   | successive king[s]<br>their lives  |
| 218. and [the] disadvantage  | and disadvantage   |
| 220, 221.  | <i>Differently divided, 220 formerly<br/>ending in the middle of a sentence.</i> |
| 221. some pleased themselves   | some pleasing themselves   |
| 225. as appeared   | as appears   |
| 227. could recriminate upon<br>be [freed] from                                       | could recriminate<br>be freed from   |
| 230. added nothing [to]  | added nothing  |
| 232. peers and [the] king<br>to [a] former resolution                                | Peers and King<br>to former resolution   |
| 243. consented to disband [it]   | consented to disband   |
| 245. lords lieutenants<br>such in [their] room                                       | lord lieutenants<br>such in the room   |
| 254. to lay the scene  | to lay the scheme  |
| 256. [it] had an equal   | had an equal   |
| 260. it made a progress  | [it] made a progress   |
| 261. passionate insinuations   | passionate insinuations  |
| IV. 2. [as] to be taken  | to be taken  |
| 6. So [when] they assumed<br>competent considerers                                   | So they assumed<br>competent considerants  |
| 7. From the liberty  | From this liberty  |
| 9. in those churches [where he had<br>jurisdiction]<br>and so avoided [coming there] | in those churches<br><br>and so avoided  |
| 12. any offers [of discovery]  | any offers   |
| 13. escaped commitment   | scaped commitment  |
| 14. exceedingly obliged  | exceedingly obliged by her   |
| 15. Some very  | And some very<br><i>Two lines omitted, as mentioned in<br/>note.</i>             |
| 19. [had] spent his time   | spent his time   |
| 22. concerned [at] it  | concerned in it  |
| 29. fewer English [there]  | fewer English  |
| 30. to be consulted [upon]   | to be consulted upon   |
| 36. in a diameter  | in diameter  |
| 38. masters of requests<br>where the[ir] policy                                      | Master of Requests<br>where the policy   |

| <i>Edit. 1849.</i>   | <i>Present Edit.</i>  |
|--|---|
| 40. [that such men] who knew<br>[that they] who might well know              | who knew<br>who might well know                                   |
| 43. in opposition [to]<br>[were] qualified<br>[were] adjudged                | in opposition<br>qualified<br>adjudged                            |
| 48. [than] the having received   | as the having received  |
| 50. as [could] possibly be done  | as can possibly be done   |
| 55. [from] the offering  | by the offering   |
| 58. encouraging [men]  | encouraging men   |
| 59. and to continue  | and to contrive   |
| 67. then unmentioned   | unmentioned   |
| 68. that they [had] abolished  | that they abolished   |
| 72.<br>assisted [by] some  | <i>The words of this island transposed.</i><br>assisted with some |
| 74. begin to execute them<br>[by which] these men                            | begin to execute<br>these men                                     |
| 75. [and] thereby  | and thereby   |
| 80. [and] for the removing   | for the removing  |
| 82. against whom there [could] be  | against whom there can be   |
| 85. no impression [on] them  | no impression in them   |
| 87. some apprehensions<br>by reason [that] those<br>still, by the resistance | some apprehension<br>by reason those<br>till, by the resistance   |
| 96. amusing most men   | amazing most men  |
| 97. committee ; said   | committee and said  |
| 103. degree of power [to some men]   | degree of power   |
| 111. liked well the visitations  | liked well the visitation   |
| 114. the lords again sent  | the Lords again send  |
| 115. justices of [the] peace   | justices of peace   |
| 116. justices [were] convened  | justices convened   |
| 126. preferment [that] could be con-<br>ferred<br>of what [had] passed       | preferment they could confer<br><br>of what passed                |
| 128. conceived to be difficult   | conceives to be difficult   |
| 128, 129.  | <i>Differently divided.</i>                                       |
| 129. [who] had been  | which had been  |
| 134. but [as has been before mentioned]<br>he defended                       | but he defended   |
| 135, 142. the house [of peers]   | the House   |
| 136. his own consent to [them]   | his own consent to it   |
| 140. indubitable right   | indubitate right  |
| 144. it was lawful [in the house of<br>peers]                                | it was lawful   |
| 145. to be covered<br>on their behalf  | so be covered<br>on their behalfs                                 |
| 146. [and] attended the houses   | attended the Houses   |

## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| 147. note, aversion from                                    | aversion to   |
| 148, 154, 173, 218. the lord [Kimbolton]                    | the lord Mandevill                                    |
| 149. so hardy to press                                      | so hardy [as] to press                                |
| 152, 153, 154, 155.   | <i>Differently divided.</i>                           |
| 158. was looked upon  | [and] was looked upon                                 |
| 160. if any thing   | if any things   |
| 167. [had made] the lord Falkland<br>and was dispersed      | called the lord Falkland<br>and [which] was dispersed |
| 168. as [well as] the propagation                           | [or] the propagation                                  |
| 169. that that case<br>[not] discountenanced<br>scandalized | that that ease<br>discountenanced<br>scandaled        |
| 184. their [own] privileges                                 | their privileges                                      |
| 187, 188.   | <i>Differently divided.</i>                           |
| 188. ought [to] attend                                      | ought attend  |
| 192. [Mr.] Strode   | Strowde   |
| 198. The trained-bands                                      | [As for] the train-bands                              |
| 205. that there [were]                                      | that there was  |
| 209. raised to them[selves]                                 | raised to them  |
| 211. assured both houses                                    | assures both Houses                                   |
| 215. as [were] necessary                                    | as was necessary                                      |
| 220. such [as] had adhered                                  | such who had adhered                                  |
| 237, 238.   | <i>Differently divided.</i>                           |
| 239. dispassionate answer                                   | dispassioned answer                                   |
| 242. as of his [own] life                                   | as of his life  |
| 246. disturbing [the peace] thereof                         | disturbing thereof                                    |
| 247. in the other [house]                                   | in the other  |
| 250. might [pro]claim                                       | might proclaim  |
| 255. [and] had with notable courage                         | had with notable courage                              |
| 266. grown insupportable<br>shall be forced                 | grown unsupportable<br>shall be enforced              |
| 277. none was in case                                       | [and] none was in case                                |
| 305. [or] the single power<br>would [never] have consented  | on the single power<br>would never have consented     |
| 322. to the king [at] Theobalds                             | to the King, to Theobalds                             |
| 330. emergent occasion                                      | immergent occasion                                    |
| 332. [on] his majesty                                       | in his majesty  |
| 341. [and] they said  | that, they said                                       |
| 344. to answer [them] particularly                          | to answer particularly                                |
| 350. present exigence                                       | present exigents                                      |
| 350, 351.   | <i>Differently divided.</i>                           |
| V. 2. [was] of so strange                                   | were of so strange                                    |
| 14. the removal [of them]<br>matter [for] an answer         | the removal<br>matter of an answer                    |
| 32. and [for] choosing                                      | and choosing  |
| 33. and ready to embark                                     | and [he] ready to embark                              |

*Edit. 1849.**Present Edit.*

|   |  |
|---|--|
| 37. abilities, in whom  | abilities as in whom   |
| 48. breach and privilege<br>the prosecution was [carried on]                          | breach of privilege<br>the prosecution was   |
| 50. exemplar[y]   | exemplar   |
| 51. declared this parliament  | declared [by] this parliament  |
| 52. alteration and innovation   | alterations and innovations  |
| 53. in the magazine   | in magazine  |
| 56. defence of [the] true   | defence of true  |
| 63. in [a] short time<br>an unanimous   | in short time<br>a unanimous   |
| 74. at their peril [be it]  | at their peril   |
| 83. resolved [on] his journey   | resolved of his journey  |
| 89. magazine there (which the houses<br>had ordered to be speedily sent<br>to London) | magazine there   |
| 92, 93.   | <i>Differently divided.</i>  |
| 97. gracious message<br>was not thought<br>all private interest<br>he had not         | gracious messages<br>[were] not thought<br>all private interests<br>he had not [refused] |
| 99. to [his] knowledge  | to their knowledge   |
| 100. were [not] only  | were only  |
| 102. apprentices  | prentices  |
| 104. The case, he said  | The cause, he said   |
| 119. the exception[s] to that bill ?<br>that [were] to the ordinance                  | the exception to that bill ?<br>that was to the ordinance                                |
| 122. presses swarmed [with]   | presses swarmed  |
| 126. out of tenderness<br>necessary [that] the business                               | out of the tenderness<br>necessary the business  |
| 132. when they [were] called  | when they called   |
| 147. of [their] care of his safety  | of the care of his safety  |
| 148. 2 Rich. II.  | 11 Rich. II.   |
| 152. this scene   | this scheme  |
| 153. against his parliament<br>[they] consent to any                                  | against the Parliament<br>consent to any   |
| 156. in the one, [filled] with all  | in the one, with all   |
| 166. there [had been]   | there had been   |
| 169. cause [of] his majesty's<br>Mr. Pollard  | cause for his majesty's<br>master Pollard  |
| 171. charge undiscovered  | charge [were] undiscovered   |
| 171, 172.   | <i>Differently divided.</i>  |
| 172. These things which were evil   | Those things which were evil   |
| 178. favourers [of] the Irish rebellion   | favourers to the Irish rebellion   |
| 185. present exigence   | present exigents   |
| 187. declaration [from] the King's<br>council   | declaration of the King's counsel  |



## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| 188. [such] a guard as they desired   | a guard as they desired it  |
| 190. bestowed [here] an admonition  | bestowed an admonition  |
| 193. Mr. Goring<br>and some other[s]  | master Goring<br>and some other   |
| 204. knotty part[s]   | knotty part   |
| 205. entirely communicate [them]  | entirely communicate  |
| 206.  | <i>The beginning of the section altered.</i>  |
| 221. which [were] indeed  | which was indeed  |
| 225, 226, 227.  | <i>Division of sections altered.</i>  |
| 229. <i>s'avisera</i>   | <i>l'avisera</i>  |
| 230, 231. interests   | interesses  |
| 233. apply [the] character  | apply that character  |
| 236. [should] ever force  | did ever force  |
| 239. happily  | haply   |
| 259. [six] members  | five members  |
| 260. such member  | such members  |
| 282. interest   | interests   |
| 286. Mr. Hooker related   | Mr. Hooker relates  |
| 289. irrecoverably<br>[that] queen Elizabeth<br>Were they not   | irrevocably<br>that Queen Elizabeth<br>Were not they  |
| 291. their conversion   | their conversions   |
| 310. forbidden him  | bidden him  |
| 315. that a parliament<br>whether he discharges   | that the Parliament<br>whether he discharge   |
| 318. [and] travelled<br>escaped   | [and] who travelled<br>scaped   |
| 330. indeed more proper<br>on their advices   | more indeed proper<br>on the advices  |
| 332. could have settled   | should have settled   |
| 333. [was] not left   | were not left   |
| 334. misdemeanour[s]  | misdemeanour  |
| 335. near   | nearest   |
| 340. And they all (truly there did not<br>appear four counsellors of another<br>opinion) declared to the king | And there were very few of all the<br>great lords who did attend upon<br>the King who did [not] declare |
| 341. they [the] more willingly  | they more willingly   |
| 348. [this] nation  | that nation   |
| 349. [these] eight months   | eight months  |
| 361. lords might have<br>conscience   | Lords might leave<br>consciencences   |
| 364. and so [was] received<br><i>note, § 11, the great</i>  | and so received<br>so great   |
| 364, 365.   | <i>Differently divided.</i>   |
| 365. whatever his opinion [were]<br>against [the] commission  | whatever his opinion<br>against that commission   |

## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| 365. argue [against] the ordinance   | argue the ordinance   |
| 366, 367.  | <i>Differently divided.</i>   |
| 369. magazine  | magazines   |
| 377. the only person [fit]   | the only person   |
| 378. and [that he] himself   | and himself   |
| 379. expected orders   | expecting orders  |
| 379, 380.  | <i>Differently divided.</i>   |
| 380. as they call it   | as they called it   |
| 382. And [this] his majesty [was] without                                  | and his majesty without   |
| done [without]   | done without  |
| 383. revenues of the king  | revenue of the King   |
| 385. make the scene  | make the scheme   |
| 388. the perfect horror  | a perfect horror  |
| 389. but of parliament   | but in Parliament   |
| 394. had [too] great reason  | had no great reason   |
| 411. and fixing  | and a fixing  |
| 412. [that] their messages   | their messages  |
| 417. men of the county   | men of the country  |
| 420. [imminent] danger   | eminent danger  |
| 425. [and] incapable   | incapable   |
| Where he hath with notable courage and constancy continued to this present | where with notable courage and constancy he continued almost to his death |
| 429. [a] foreign force   | foreign force   |
| 430. proceedings of [the] parliament                                       | proceedings of Parliament   |
| However [they] concluded   | however, concluded  |
| 432. ship escaped  | ships escaped   |
| hole of the bark   | hold of the bark  |
| 434. and [he] judged well  | and judged well   |
| only as a spy  | only as spy   |
| 436.   | <i>Commencement altered as shown in note.</i>                             |
| [which he had] so much reason there [was] every day                        | so much reason there were every day                                       |
| 437. message [before mentioned]  | message   |
| 438.   | <i>Commencement altered as shown in note.</i>                             |
| 439. [this] came to pass   | that came to pass   |
| 440, 441. lord Kimbelton   | lord Mandeவில்  |
| [was] with   | were with   |
| 441. to [that] lord  | to the lord   |
| <i>note 4, pursicants</i>  | purs[u]ivants   |
| 442. This declaration [of the governor] of a place                         | This declaration of a place   |
| 443. The king was in hopes   | the King was in hope  |

Edit. 1849.

Present Edit.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 444. that council                                  | that counsel   |
| 445. There will be no occasion to make any mention | there will be occasion to make mention ( <i>see note</i> ).                        |
| 446. so lively an instance                         | too lively an instance   |
| VI. 3. into consultation                           | into the consultation  |
| they could not [legally] draw                      | they could not draw  |
| 6. about six hundred                               | above six hundred  |
| 8. had quitted the kingdom                         | had quit the kingdom   |
| It was [farther] objected                          | It was objected  |
| <i>second note</i> , 1. [which] was not yet come   | was not yet come ( <i>the insertion of which completely altered the meaning</i> ). |
| [and] perform                                      | and perform  |
| 9. if it [prevailed]                               | if it oppressed  |
| 11. happily  | haply  |
| 18. still to interrupt                             | still [so] to interrupt  |
| 23. the other                                      | on the other   |
| 24. those orders                                   | these orders   |
| 30. and such a victory                             | And [if] such a victory  |
| 33. a dozen miles                                  | a dozen miles off  |
| 35. lord Kimbolton                                 | lord Maundevill  |
| escaped it   | scaped it  |
| 37. by [the] advice                                | by advice  |
| 40. There [were] more                              | There was more   |
| 42. were the only                                  | are the only   |
| 45. Six or seven cornets [of the enemy's]          | Six or seven cornets   |
| 50. the earl of Rivers                             | and the earl of Rivers   |
| 54. eminent necessity                              | inminent necessity   |
| 57. for their [common] use                         | for their use  |
| 59. a thousand pounds                              | a thousand pound   |
| 60. his lord[ship] treated                         | his lord treated   |
| 62. gave [his majesty]                             | gave him   |
| 65. depute Mr. Hyde                                | depute a person much trusted by him  |
| the [Roman] catholics                              | the Catholics ( <i>a frequent alteration in other places</i> ).                    |
| sent for Mr. Hyde                                  | sent for that person   |
| [and] who lived                                    | who lived  |
| 66. [and] who was looked upon of ErCALL            | who was looked upon of Hiarchall [High ErCALL]                                     |
| 72. of the gentleman                               | of the gentlemen   |
| 74. [was] made                                     | were made  |
| 79. <i>note</i> , p. 352, at any time              | in any time  |
| <i>note</i> , p. 354, whole up and down            | wheel up and down  |
| 80. a very strong garrison                         | a garrison   |

*Edit. 1849.**Present Edit.*

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 85. the prince [of Wales]   | the Prince   |
| 87. [with] which the country  | of which the country   |
| 92. mentioned before upon his dis-<br>course at Nottingham, which<br>was very ominous: [he] was | mentioned before, and was  |
| 93. Bletnezo  | Bletzo   |
| 94. Prisoners taken by the enemy<br>were  | Prisoners were taken by the enemy  |
| 97. very seasonably   | very seasonable  |
| 99. [the] having killed<br>or [taken] prisoners<br>[at] Woodstock                               | their having killed<br>or prisoners<br>to Woodstock  |
| 101. who were present [at the action]<br>the houses had [been]                                  | who were present<br>the Houses had done  |
| 102. might be secured   | might be secure  |
| 103. a notable supply [thereby]   | a notable supply   |
| 105. more evident strength  | more evidence, strength.   |
| 106. principal part<br>and in prosecution   | [prelatical] part<br>and [that] in prosecution   |
| 106, 107.   | <i>Differently divided.</i>  |
| 107. malignant council  | malignant counsel  |
| 108. he [so] corrupted  | he corrupted   |
| 112. in the first [war]   | in the first   |
| 113-118.  | <i>Beginnings of sections altered; in<br/>the series of numbers in the last<br/>edition 123 having been omitted.</i>                                   |
| 118. particulars<br>conduce [to]<br>conducibile [to]  | particular<br>conduce for<br>conducibile for   |
| 120. [yet] for their parts  | for their parts  |
| 124. they still   | they have still  |
| 125. great effects  | great effect   |
| 126. was well beaten<br>from [them]<br><i>note, armies used</i>                                 | was beaten<br>from them<br>armies use  |
| 129. petition [was] by them   | petition by them   |
| 134. retreat [made] very difficult  | retreat very difficult   |
| 138. massive body   | massy body   |
| 142. [and] published—[and] concluded  | published—concluded  |
| 143. kind [of] proposition  | kind proposition   |
| 145, 146.   | <i>Differently divided, the beginning of<br/>section 145 in the last edit. being<br/>the conclusion of the quotation in<br/>the preceding section.</i> |
| 158. loss [of that kind]  | loss   |
| 167. Oxford   | Oxon   |

*Edit.* 1849.*Present Edit.*

|                                     |  |
|-------------------------------------|--|
| 168. The [parliament's] army        | The army   |
| 171-173.                            | <i>The beginnings of the sections altered.</i>                   |
| 176. sometimes [to] prevent         | sometimes prevent  |
| 178. all [those] relations          | all the relations  |
| 179. since his master               | sure his master  |
| 180.                                | <i>Transposed to 186.</i>  |
| 181-185.                            | 180-184.   |
| 181 [180]. state here. Not to speak | State here, not to speak   |
| 184 [183]. [whilst] the bishops     | that the bishops   |
| 188. [proportions]                  | propositions   |
| 195. thought [was] so palpable      | thought so palpable  |
| thorough consideration              | through consideration  |
| 223. interested                     | interested   |
| 228. [so] entirely                  | so entirely  |
| 229. they only wanted               | they only waited   |
| 233. endeavour of peace             | endeavour of a peace   |
| [and] privileges                    | privileges   |
| 235. people of the county           | people of the country  |
| 238. [Mr.] George                   | George   |
| 267. a hundred                      | one hundred  |
| 273. [in] that they had done        | that they had done   |
| 276. without a word                 | without word   |
| 277. [he] being a bishop            | being a bishop   |
| 278. courage                        | courages   |
| 279. accordingly did                | accordingly did it   |
| 283. [he] took the ordnance         | took the ordnance  |
| [some] other men                    | other men  |
| 284. John Gell                      | J. Gell  |
| rites                               | rights   |
| dispassionate                       | dispassioned   |
| 293. contribution[s]                | contribution   |
| 296. mention [all] the              | mention any of the   |
| 301. might be so employed           | might be so likewise employed                                    |
| 304. of that kingdom                | for that kingdom   |
| 305. not without                    | and not without  |
| 315. [the] committee                | their committee  |
| 316. if they—that the day           | that if they—the day   |
| 319. [and] believed that            | believed that  |
| 324. it is certain                  | 'tis certain   |
| 325. so rigidly                     | too rigidly  |
| 326.                                | <i>The numbers in the text are now<br/>given in a foot-note.</i> |
| a hundred                           | one hundred  |
| 333. even [on the blood] of those   | even of those  |
| 334. compose [it]                   | compose  |
| quit[ted]                           | quit   |

## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 336. [the] present                                 | present  |
| 339. timously                                      | timeously  |
| 341. called  | calleth  |
| [a] preparation                                    | preparation  |
| belong, should                                     | belong, shall  |
| 343. free from mixture                             | free of mixture  |
| 347. now they have                                 | they have now  |
| 349. all our subjects                              | all [our] good subjects  |
| 351.   | <i>Date removed from text to foot-note,<br/>being added by Clarendon himself<br/>as a marginal note.</i> |
| 355. you only esteem                               | you will only esteem   |
| 356. would [not] be more welcome                   | would be more welcome  |
| 366. emergent                                      | immergent  |
| 368. need[ed] not ask                              | need not ask   |
| 369. Sir W. Armin                                  | Sir William Armin  |
| and [also] desired [on their be-<br>half]          | and desired  |
| 374. desire [to add] the strength                  | desire the strength  |
| 380. than [others] they [had] usually<br>old tried | than they usually<br>old and tried   |
| 383.   | <i>The end of the section transferred to<br/>a foot-note.</i>  |
| 386. melancholy                                    | melancholique  |
| 395. his [majesty's] own                           | his own  |
| 398.   | <i>Commencement of the section altered.</i>  |
| 400. the [King's] authority                        | the authority  |
| 401.   | <i>Passage in foot-note added.<br/>End of section transferred to foot-<br/>note.</i>                     |
| 407. [that] all means                              | that all means   |
| 408.   | <i>Commencement of the section altered.</i>  |
| lives of men                                       | life of men  |
| VII. 20. [the two houses] returned                 | they returned  |
| [some of them] were looked upon                    | were looked upon   |
| 26. his [lordship's] choice                        | his choice   |
| 31. and [there being] hopes                        | and hope   |
| 42. [had] averred                                  | averred  |
| 56. that [if] they would                           | that they would  |
| 59. before [that city]                             | before it  |
| 72. cantiousness                                   | cautelousness  |
| 77. [who] found                                    | which found  |
| 91. great terror                                   | greater terror   |
| 92. oxomplar[y]                                    | exemplar   |
| 98. by an army                                     | by any army  |
| 102. pallmall                                      | pell moll  |

Edit. 1849.

Present Edit.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| 106. amazing<br>quit[ted] their ground  | amating<br>quit their ground                           |
| 109. in the heads<br>amongst [whom]   | in the head<br>amongst which                           |
| 110. number slain   | numbers slain  |
| 112. over the country   | over the county  |
| 115. relation   | relations  |
| 116. [they] waited  | waited   |
| 118. conjunction<br>chased  | conjuncture<br>were chased                             |
| 119. [so] that all clouds<br>latter   | that all clouds<br>later                               |
| 121. <i>note</i> , vice-admiral of the Castle   | vice-admiral of Castle                                 |
| 122. [the earl, I say] retired  | retired  |
| 124. [they] seized all the ships  | seized all the ships                                   |
| 125. than in others   | than in other  |
| 129. all gentlemen  | all the gentlemen                                      |
| 135. Upon [the] news  | Upon news  |
| 137. and [their] army   | and army   |
| 138. have repaired  | had repaired   |
| 143. as [for] us<br>whosoever have  | as to us<br>whosoever hath                             |
| 145. of wonderful   | a wonderful  |
| 148. understanding[s]<br>attended [it]  | understanding<br>attended                              |
| 149. than afterwards<br>soldiers [who]  | than were afterwards<br>shoulders which                |
| 157. <i>The construction and sense of the<br/>latter part were entirely perverted<br/>by wrong division of sentences.</i> |  |
| 158. [what] such a messenger  | what such a messenger                                  |
| 161. hearts   | heart  |
| 174. at a place<br>[at] Petworth  | a place<br>to Petworth                                 |
| 176. part of it was   | part of it that was                                    |
| 180. most desperately   | the most desperately                                   |
| 181. reproaches [were] publicly   | the reproaches publicly                                |
| 187 [186]. breaking [of] it<br>what he would  | breaking it<br>what they would                         |
| 189 [188]. what was most<br>did visit him [again]<br>had [no] great success   | what is most<br>did visit him<br>had not great success |
| 193. towards the river  | towards Topsham the river                              |
| 195. their own body   | their body   |
| 200. incumbent [on] him   | incumbent to him                                       |
| 202. for the relief   | for relief   |

## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| 205. retiring before [him]<br>raise [the] siege                           | retiring before them<br>raise their siege   |
| 214. [and] some citizen's<br>there were [on the other]                    | as some citizen's<br>there were   |
| 216. This day [also]<br>and [he] had                                      | This day<br>and had   |
| 222. reason[s] of state   | reason of state   |
| 223. discerned [in them] a desire   | discerned a desire  |
| 224. was [in truth] so precise  | was so precise  |
| 226. that [are] used  | that is used  |
| 226, 227.   | <i>Division of the sections altered.</i>  |
| 231. [and] prevented  | prevented   |
| 232. that as he was   | as he was   |
| 233. of the kingdom   | the kingdom   |
| 234. in the lower<br>needs not care                                       | on the lower<br>need not care   |
| 235.<br>and [the] whole House   | <i>An added first line omitted.</i><br>and whole House  |
| 237. soldierly  | soldiery  |
| 241. The three earls [I before men-<br>tioned]<br>[and] where the general | The three earls<br><br>where the general  |
| 242. the [other] lords  | the lords   |
| 244. He [the earl] had a friend   | He had a friend   |
| 246, 247.   | <i>Division of sections altered; 246<br/>having been made to end in the<br/>middle of a sentence.</i> |
| 247. delayed [it so long]<br>than as a man                                | delayed it<br>as a man  |
| 251. and [that] the people  | and the people  |
| 253. amuse the English  | amuse them  |
| 256, 257.   | <i>Division of sections altered.</i>  |
| 262. drought  | drowth  |
| 264. all [these] things   | all things  |
| 265. of [the] persons<br>when they looked<br>[had] received               | of persons<br>when looked<br>received   |
| 270. and [thus] they should   | and they should   |
| 271. the duke explained   | the duke himself explained  |
| 272. by persuading [them]<br>so there was                                 | by persuading<br>so that there were   |
| 274. after he [had] altered   | after he altered  |
| 277. [service as]   | services [as]   |
| 279. [the] public ministers   | public ministers  |
| 281. [by] a greater number<br>to the secret                               | a greater number<br>to any secret   |



## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| 282. ushered [in] those promotions<br>and [were] believed<br>place committed                              | ushered those promotions<br>and believed<br>place [which] is committed                         |
| 290. [were] only intended   | only intended  |
| 291. Micippus   | Nicippus   |
| 304. perfect obedience  | their perfect obedience  |
| 310. nor an enemy   | or an enemy  |
| 311. the benefit  | a benefit  |
| 312. ended, <i>tum</i>  | ended, and <i>tum</i>  |
| 319. revered  | reverend   |
| [he] was powerful   | was powerful   |
| 320. who [by his]   | [who, his]   |
| 322. had been compelled with his<br>army  | his army had been compelled  |
| had [made] many   | had many   |
| 323. the[ir] seducers<br>of both [houses]   | the seducers<br>of both  |
| 324.  | <i>A passage transferred to the foot-<br/>note, and omitted lines inserted.</i>                |
| 326. by the chancellor  | <i>Transferred to foot-note.</i>   |
| 328. such [as]<br>league of Scotland  | such who<br>league with Scotland   |
| 336. out of England<br>easterly<br>cheese<br>supplies<br>before that we<br>though shame<br>to your honour | forth of England<br>easterny<br>cheeses<br>supply<br>before we<br>the shame<br>for your honour |
| 351. in answer [to]   | in answer of   |
| 354. habiliments of war   | abilliments of war   |
| 358. Lemster  | Leinster   |
| 365. Mountrose's  | Monroe's   |
| 369.  | <i>Order of words in the last three<br/>lines transposed.</i>                                  |
| 370. such as could not  | such who could not   |
| 393. so it is   | so is it   |
| 394. for [the] providing  | for providing  |
| 400. exemplar[y]  | exemplar   |
| action [for which]—notice [of]  | action—notice for  |
| 403. apprehension[s]<br>To give fresh life, &c. : 6 lines   | apprehension<br><i>Transferred to foot-note.</i>   |
| 404. less care<br>[had] made full   | less ear<br>made full  |
| 412. French ambassador, [which hath<br>been before mentioned]   | French ambassador  |

*Edit. 1849.**Present Edit.*

|   |  |
|---|--|
| VIII. 4. be [an] argument   | be argument  |
| 6. before there was<br>the provision . . . was                            | before they had<br>the provisions . . . [were]                                 |
| 9. they [had] used<br>apprentices   | they used<br>prentices   |
| 10. had provided  | had provided for   |
| 12. [that] disposition  | the disposition  |
| 20. joined by   | joined with  |
| 57. that peregrination  | that three weeks' peregrination<br><i>Words re-inserted as shown in notes.</i> |
| 60. whereupon   | upon which   |
| 62. and marched   | and marched out  |
| 66. Baker   | lieut. col. Baker  |
| 68. a hill adjoining  | a mill adjoining   |
| 73. joined him<br>such expedition   | joined the prince<br>that expedition   |
| 74. routed and defeated   | defeated and routed  |
| 75. to each other   | each to other  |
| 79. it was no wonder he lost  | that it was no wonder that he lost   |
| 83. he was made   | for he was made  |
| 90. [had] received  | received   |
| 91. not so much care<br>or be compelled<br>and impetuous<br>in his temper | not care<br>nor be compelled<br>and an impetuous<br>in his nature              |
| 92. there were with him   | there were   |
| 93. better expressions  | better expressions [than the officers]   |
| 94. or words<br>an ordinary officer                                       | or of words<br>an orderly officer  |
| 95. in Buckinghamshire  | at Buckingham  |
| 96. he was so indiscreet<br>their full magnitude                          | was so indiscreet<br>the full magnitude  |
| 114. which were sent  | and which were sent  |
| 120. custody of them  | custody of it  |
| 121. his majesty had given<br>Amongst them                                | he had given<br>And amongst them   |
| 130. but it was believed they lost many                                   | but believed to be many  |
| 132. to those of the king's   | to the King's  |
| 133. After this great victory<br>to look upon Plymouth<br>on either side  | After this victory<br>that he would look upon Plimmoth<br>of either side       |
| 134. my lord Vere   | tho lord Vere  |
| 137. that [they] can  | that can   |
| 138. [by] whose advice  | from whose advice  |
| 139. with a body  | with the body  |
| 145. marchod [eastward]   | marched outward  |

## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

145. The [king's] horse were harassed,  
and many [of them] dead
150. and so [he] resolved
151. sent him word
153. [but] instead
157. of Mr. Doleman's garden
159. so he sent
163. in[to] battalia  
the [king's] army
164. every trooper [was] to cast  
and to make
165. disservice. So much  
[This is a somewhat important difference in punctuation. The former edits.  
make the last line refer to Sir A. Aston, whereas it is only part of what he  
said about col. Gage.]
168. the [king's] army  
[he] had suffered  
wit's sake  
the ambition of both was
180. by whose advice
182. had [at] first cozened  
They bore  
troubled [them] more
192. but how to lay them aside [was  
the difficulty]
198. the king should send
199. object [against] this
203. The [two] lords  
they did [believe] or seemed
204. [This] method was not ingrateful  
to the [two] lords  
the [two] lords observing  
returned  
[not] at Oxford
205. no man [was] a greater  
[out] of those
206. yet all [reasonable] men
207. commanded [the chancellor of the  
exchequer]
208. When [the archbishop's] council
214. [private] animadversion  
[at last] they were contented
216. for all the [king's] commissioners  
any restrained
220. perusal of this [history]
- The horse[s] were harassed, and  
many dead  
and so resolved  
[and] sent him word  
and instead  
in Mr. Doleman's garden  
and so he sent  
in battalia  
the army  
every trooper to cast  
and then to make  
disservice, so much
- the army  
had suffered  
wit sake  
the ambitions of both were  
and by whose advice  
had first cozened  
And they bore  
troubled more  
*The bracketed words are an insertion  
that alters the whole meaning of  
the sentence.*  
the King would send  
object this  
the lords  
they did or seemed  
This method was not ingrateful to  
the lords  
the lords observing  
they returned  
neither at Oxford  
no man a greater  
of those  
yet all men  
commanded him
- When his counsel  
animadversion  
they were contented  
for all the commissioners  
any restraint  
perusal of this

## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 221. the king himself should take<br>the [king's] commissioners caused                           | the King himself would take<br>the commissioners caused  |
| 223. against the demands   | against the demand   |
| 224. [But] being a young man<br>speaking a word  | and, being a young man<br>speaking word  |
| 225. to their demands<br>delivered to [the others]<br>nor [they on the king's side] to<br>desist | to their demand<br>delivered to them<br>nor the others to desist                                 |
| 227. to the uniting  | to uniting   |
| 228. in the place [of it]  | in the place   |
| 229. passed [in] debate  | passed upon debate   |
| 234. all [the] envious   | all envious  |
| 235. necessary. [This] he did<br>war against him[self]<br>security of a cessation                | necessary; which he did<br>war against him<br>security of the cessation                          |
| 236. that the war [should] be<br>which [otherwise] he could not                                  | that the war shall be<br>which he could not  |
| 239. [he] being even   | being even   |
| 242. heads [of] their treaty   | heads for their treaty   |
| 243. treaty were broke [off]   | treaty were broke  |
| 250. [But] being unwilling   | and being unwilling  |
| 251. reflex<br>The king's commissioners  | reflecting<br>And the King's commissioners   |
| 253. melancholy  | melancholique. ( <i>This form of spelling for melancholic is used by Clarendon throughout.</i> ) |
| 257. [the] government<br>had [first] entertained   | that government<br>had entertained   |
| 259. making recruit[s]   | making recruit   |
| 261. [were] not passed   | was not passed   |
| 263. [had] stirred him up  | stirred him up   |
| 264. heir[ess]   | heir   |
| 266. if he would send  | if he could send   |
| 267. could disquiet<br>[who would therefore] undervalue  | would disquiet<br>and so he [the marquis] would<br>undervalue                                    |
| 268. that age knew   | that age knew any  |
| 269. note, relation [to him]<br>or [by] the queen  | relation<br>or the Queen   |
| 270. dissuade him [from affecting]   | dissuade him to affect   |
| 274. of the marquis<br>[and] that he had told  | of the marquis of Ormonde<br>that he had told  |
| 275. his [majesty's] service<br>unconstant nature  | his service<br>Inconstant nature   |
| 276. [and] considering   | considering  |

*Edit.* 1849.*Present Edit.*

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| 276. and the imagination  | and [in] the imagination  |
| 278. until the [marquis of] Antrim  | until the earl of Antrim  |
| 279. being [so] much as present<br>if [his majesty] had   | being as much as present<br>if he had   |
| 281. government. Besides that, they<br>had so<br>had invested [that lord]<br>marquis of Newcastle and [young<br>Hotham] | government, besides that they had<br>so<br>had invested him<br>marquis of Newcastle and him |
| 282. was so barbarous   | were so barbarous   |
| 283. could not but appear [in it]   | could not but appear  |
| 284. Irish frigates   | Irish frigates at sea   |
| 285. caused them  | had caused them   |
| IX. 1. [as well] as of those  | as of those   |
| 2. preserved [as the infamy]<br>discourse [of] all these particulars  | preserved as the infamous charge<br>discourse all these particulars                         |
| 3. and journal[s]<br>without [my] being   | and journal<br>without being  |
| 4. [yet] the ordinance<br>[the house of peers]<br>his [own] house   | the Ordinance<br>that House<br>his house  |
| 6. has been named<br>[than] had been expected<br>and [which if] unmastered<br>contest                                   | have been named<br>which had [not] been expected<br>and unmastered<br>contests              |
| 7. [so] that those parts<br>disorders [there]   | that those parts<br>disorders   |
| 10. [and] that those parts<br>[were] an army by [themselves]  | that those parts<br>was an army by itself   |
| 14. attended [in person] or [have]<br>presented   | attended or presented   |
| 16. shortly after [his highness]  | shortly after he  |
| 18. reflected upon him[self]<br>injury [done them]<br>upon [his highness]   | reflected upon him<br>injury<br>upon him  |
| 19. all [other] discontented persons<br>strangers to her [before], that they<br>took [care]                             | all discontented persons<br>strangers to her, that they looked                              |
| 21. they received [that] he had<br>affected   | they received as if he had affected   |
| 22. they had [before] not only<br>to settle [the] limits  | they had not only<br>to settle their limits   |
| 24. protecting [Syms] as a great in-<br>dignity to [himself]  | protecting him, as a great indignity<br>to him  |
| 25. [rode] to Exeter  | rid to Exciter  |
| 30. his [own] credit  | his credit  |

## Edtt. 1849.

## Present Edit.

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 30. lessen [the] credit and authority<br>[of the council]  | lessen their credit and authority   |
| 33. [were] made a prey   | being made a prey   |
| 35. <i>The section was made to end in<br/>the middle of a sentence, where<br/>only a comma was required.</i>   |   |
| 39. who had [till then] so much  | who had so much   |
| 42. [and] was indeed   | who was indeed  |
| 43. necessary for the prince [of Wales]<br>[with] a good garrison<br><i>A full stop after artillery, and<br/>new sentence commenced, dis-<br/>locating the sense of the passage.</i> | necessary for the Prince<br>and a good garrison<br><i>Comma after artillery, followed by a<br/>parenthesis.</i> |
| 44. [before] Taunton<br>might [re]present  | at Taunton<br>might present   |
| 47. relief [of it]<br>was forced himself to retire   | relief<br>was forced to retire  |
| 48. [and] not expressly  | not expressly   |
| 49. [it] was more<br>Mackworth having been   | was more<br>Mackworth being<br><i>Words transposed at the end of the<br/>section.</i>                           |
| 50. But [his highness] told them   | But he told them  |
| 52. none of [their] reasons  | none of the reasons   |
| 53. <i>nots</i> , spoken of<br>commanded me<br>take up arms<br>would not be<br>seeing Sir H. Windham   | spoke of<br>commanded<br>take arms<br>could not be<br>being Sir Hugh Windham                                    |
| 55. [one] particular   | a particular<br><i>Words transposed in the middle of<br/>the section.</i>                                       |
| 57. of [the enemy's] horse<br>secured [his]<br>next day he retired<br>infesting [his] march  | of horse<br>secured [ours]<br>next day retired<br>infesting their march   |
| 58. whilst [he] himself  | whilst himself  |
| 59. [as] alienated<br>bring him in   | that alienated<br>bring him   |
| 61. [his] command<br>he [himself] had  | that command<br>he had<br><i>Arrangement at end of section<br/>altered.</i>                                     |
| 62. upon which [he said] he had  | upon which he had   |
| 63. pay [a] penny  | pay penny   |
| 64. in [the] churches  | in Churches   |

*Edit. 1849.**Present Edit.*

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| <p>65. what he [himself] would have done<br/>[it] belonged</p> <p>68. importunate that [his majesty]</p> <p>69. upon [him to] think</p> <p>70.</p> <p>71. [could] be expected</p> <p>72. trust to [in those parts] that accusation</p> <p>73. quickly to [his highness]</p> <p>75. from him [Greenvil]</p> <p>76. and [he] would raise</p> <p>77. [a] very great misfortune and whispered the [choice of the] place</p> <p>82. dispersed [as hath been said] king and [the] parliament my lords [of the council] [from being] presented</p> <p>83. [one] morning he [had been] deceived the lord Wentworth where it should be if it were not his that [the prince]</p> <p>84. he [had] received</p> <p>85. his [majesty's] short stay which after that strictness to begin [in]</p> <p>86. and had absolutely</p> <p>87. The king [now] [his majesty] left upon [that] place</p> <p>88. defer [it] Berkley [castle]</p> <p>89. [he] sent orders</p> <p>90. not only forget</p> <p>91. miscarriages [of others]</p> <p>92. When the prince [of Wales] [Greenvil] seemed</p> | <p>what he would have done</p> <p>and [which] belonged importunate that he upon the King to think</p> <p><i>Words added at the end of the section.</i></p> <p><i>Many differences, as mentioned in a note.</i></p> <p>should be expected</p> <p>trust to their accusation</p> <p>quickly to him in the words it contained, <i>added at end of section.</i></p> <p>from him and would raise their very great misfortune had whispered the place dispersed King and Parliament my lords to be presented in a morning he was deceived my lord Wentworth when it should be if it should not be his that his highness he received his short stay that, after that swiftness to begin and he had absolutely The King he left upon the place defer that Berkley sent orders forget not only miscarriages When the Prince he seemed</p> |
|--|---|

## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 92. [very] marvellous license  | marvellous license  |
| 93. [he was] to receive orders   | to receive orders   |
| 94. to attend the[ir] rear<br>to the [lord Wentworth, his] major<br>general<br>[on the account of] any indisposi-<br>tion<br>command to any [person] | to attend the rear<br>to the major general<br>for any indisposition<br>command to any |
| 95. sent to [him from the counsellors]<br>was brought [back]   | sent to the King<br>was brought   |
| 99. that [his] army  | that the army   |
| 100. to a county<br>they [had] received<br>incensing the county<br>[that] he never called  | to a country<br>they received<br>incensing the country<br>he never called             |
| 101. all the enemy's designs   | all his designs<br><i>Words transposed at the end of<br/>the section.</i>             |
| 102. army with [prince Rupert]<br>he had always<br>of his nature<br>or else to keep  | army with him<br>he hath always<br>in his nature<br>or else by the other to keep      |
| 103. the pass being  | and the pass being  |
| 104. revenue of the duchy<br>to the enemy [in those parts]<br>written to [the governor]<br>if they had not [done]                                    | revenue of his duchy<br>to the enemy<br>written to him<br>if they had not been        |
| 106. kept [the city]   | kept them [the city]  |
| 107. to his [the lord Wentworth's]<br>quarter<br>which was [a] very hopeful [body]<br>and all order[s]   | to his quarter<br>which was very hopeful<br>and all order                             |
| 109. [about this time] Sir Thomas<br>Fairfax<br>and it [hath been] said<br>from [before] Plymouth<br>for which the county                            | Sir Thomas Fayrefax<br>and it is said<br>from Plimmoth<br>for which the country       |
| 116. [and] of the inconveniency<br>they [farther] informed<br>the continuing [him] still   | of the inconveniency<br>They informed<br>the continuing still                         |
| 119. the foot from [before] Chestor<br>unfit for horse to fight [in]   | the foot from Chester<br>unfit for horse to fight upon                                |
| 120. as [any] those counties are sup-<br>plied with, [his majesty] went<br>over  | as those counties are supplied with<br>he went over                                   |
| 121. the breaking of that cloud  | the breaking that cloud   |



## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| 121. [he] made haste   | made haste  |
| 125. marched with those  | he marched with those   |
| 126. he had [near] attained<br>to his [own] virtue   | he had attained<br>to his virtue  |
| 128. made [his majesty] resolve  | made him resolve  |
| 129. that he [himself] could not   | that he could not   |
| 130. with what had passed [before]   | with what had passed  |
| 131. on many considerations  | in many considerations  |
| 132. battle of Naseby  | battle at Naseby  |
| 133. wherein he [re]presented<br>[but] that he returned  | wherein he presented<br>that he returned  |
| 134. few [who] could do good   | few could do good   |
| 135. and [some] foot   | and foot  |
| 136. obey him [with]   | obey him with   |
| 137. straggled in the country  | straggled in the county   |
| 138. possessed of the county   | possessed of the country  |
| 140. eminently [well] affected   | eminently affected  |
| 141. and [was] certified   | was certified   |
| 143. being drawn up<br>5000 foot [to come] from thence   | and being drawn up<br>5000 foot from thence   |
| 144. joined with [them]<br>hour of [their] dissolving  | joined with him<br>hour of dissolving   |
| 147. [The prince] having stayed<br>[his] army being then retired                                     | The Prince having stayed<br>the army being then retired   |
| 148. publicly shewed<br>to venture [his highness]  | publicly shewn<br>to venture himself  |
| 149. sufficiently awakened   | sufficiently awaked   |
| 151. they concluded  | they conclude   |
| 152. and [was] committed<br>satisfied him in   | and committed<br>satisfied him [in]   |
| 153.   | <i>Commencement of section altered,<br/>the former division having been<br/>made in the middle of a sentence.</i> |
| [whereas] the chancellor<br>without [having given]<br>if he [himself] had<br>useful to [his majesty] | when the Chancellor<br>without giving<br>if he had<br>useful to him   |
| 154. might as soon   | he might as soon  |
| 155. were [made] to be suspected<br>content that [himself]   | were to be suspected<br>content that he [himself.]  |
| 157. and [then] intended   | and intended  |
| 158. friend of the governor  | friend to the governor  |
| 159. never be [a] treaty<br>[re]presenting to him  | never be treaty<br>presenting to him  |
| 160. do more good [for the king]<br>so [that] at the surrender                                       | do more good<br>so, at the surrender  |

*Edit. 1849.**Present Edit.*

160.  
 162. a resentment [of that] and [a] demand  
 163. conveyed [this] to some  
 164. way which [having been] never  
 169. and to that purpose [she] sent  
 172. who [had] reduced  
 174. [as] that the king  
 175. all [the] overtures
- X. 3. a fleet of [about] twenty-seven  
 that his [highness's] remove  
 5.  
 9. said to [his highness]  
 prevailed with [the prince]  
 10. imminent danger  
 21. that [his highness] should come  
 he [had] caused  
 24. rigid spirit which possessed  
 26. had appeared [to him] to be  
 30. they shall know his day  
 32.  
 [His majesty] had before sent to  
 [two] eminent commanders  
 38. and therefore [desired] that the  
 whole matter  
 39. were made there [as] he thought  
 40. if the court  
 that in [the] two months' time  
 42. [but] by unseasonable  
 45. in respect of the affairs  
 46. Mr. Ashburnham's opinion  
 47. he was to press  
 pursued by [Bellievre] which  
 those lords  
 or to be privy  
 49. with [such] a torrent [as] carried  
 down  
 50. the king's legal right[s]  
 51. and yet the Scots observed  
 all the ceremonies [as] could  
 which [they said] they would  
 manifest

*The last line now first inserted.*  
 a resentment, and demand

conveyed to some  
 [way] which being never  
 and to that purpose sent  
 who reduced  
 and that the King  
 all his overtures

*Ending of the section altered, the  
 former division having been in  
 the middle of a sentence.*

a fleet of twenty-seven  
 that his remove

*A line transposed in the middle of  
 the section.*

said to him  
 prevailed with him  
 eminent danger  
 that he should come  
 he caused

rigid spirit possessed  
 had appeared to be  
 they should know his day

*Beginning of section altered.*

He had before sent to eminent  
 commanders

and therefore that the whole matter

were made there which he thought  
 that, if the Court  
 in two months' time

by unseasonable  
 both in respect of the affairs  
 and Mr. Ashburnham's opinion  
 the ambassador was to press  
 pursued by him which those lords

or be privy

with that torrent that carried down

the King's legal right  
 and yet they observed  
 all the ceremony [which] could  
 which they would manifest

## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

- |                                       |   |
|---------------------------------------|---|
| 53. were shortly [after] communicated | were shortly communicated                   |
| 55. and in which his majesty          | in which his majesty                        |
| For [as hath been already said]       | For by his advice                           |
| by his advice                         |   |
| 57. took upon him[self]               | took upon him                               |
| 69. which [had] appointed             | which appointed                             |
| 75. [having] desired                  | and desired                                 |
| 77. very exemplary                    | very exemplar                               |
| 79. such [as] bitterly inveighed      | such who bitterly inveighed                 |
| 80. the earl of Essex [some months    | the earl of Essex                           |
| before this]                          |   |
| 81.                                   | <i>Beginning of section altered.</i>        |
| 82. and [when] they had no more       | and that they had no more                   |
| 83. disbanding of the army            | disbanding the army                         |
| 87. spirits of Fairfax                | spirit of Fayrefax                          |
| 89. having the night before           | [he had] the night before                   |
| 90. showed [him] his pistol           | showed them his pistol                      |
| Neither of the other [soldiers]       | neither of the other[s] spake               |
| spoke                                 |   |
| 91. or [from] any purpose             | or any purpose                              |
| 92. [well nigh] a full year           | a full year                                 |
| 93. [his majesty] sat still           | he sat still                                |
| 96. as well as their fame             | as well as their fames                      |
| 103. [the] two princesses             | two princesses                              |
| [at] a house                          | a house                                     |
| 104. which was [now] the scene        | which was the scene                         |
| 105. [the lords had] upon the very    | they had upon the very presentation         |
| presentation of a general accu-       | of general accusation                       |
| sation                                |   |
| sequestered from [their] house        | sequestered from the House                  |
| 106. [now] entirely presbyterian      | entirely Presbyterian                       |
| delivered [up] by the Scots           | delivered by the Scots                      |
| 107. or for [the] purchase            | or for their purchase                       |
| 108. letter to [the parliament]       | letter to them                              |
| and [the commons] presently           | and presently voted                         |
| voted                                 |   |
| 110. to vindicate [the army]          | to vindicate them                           |
| [to] withdraw themselves              | withdraw themselves                         |
| 112. the king and [the] army          | the King and army                           |
| oppose [the] king and parliament      | oppose King and Parliament                  |
|                                       | <i>End of section altered, by including</i> |
|                                       | <i>the beginning of 113.</i>                |
| 113. in[to] the houses                | in the Houses                               |
| [they] thanked him                    | thanked him                                 |
| then they adjourned                   | and then they adjourned                     |
| 118. to become [Roman] Catholic       | to become Catholic                          |

*Edit. 1849.**Present Edit.*

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <p>122. [they] were not at leisure<br/>for having deluded him<br/>a presbyterian settlement</p> <p>126. a restraint</p> <p>127. [being the eleventh of November]<br/>towards the [south-]west</p> <p>130. beholden to reports</p> <p>131. agitations in the army [were]</p> <p>134. [that] they both writ<br/>opiniatres</p> <p>138. [was] issued out<br/>upon strict search</p> <p>140. found with an ordinary</p> <p>141, 142.</p> <p>142. did declare</p> <p>142, 143.</p> <p>143. and [leave him] without any possibility</p> <p>145. at the head<br/>* [of their having brought] any man<br/>to deprive [him] of his life</p> <p>146. way of proceeding<br/>[from thenceforth] was<br/>fidelity to them[selves]</p> <p>148. and rejecting</p> <p>151. and sequestrators</p> <p>154. their fidelity</p> <p>158. who had contrived</p> <p>160. great apprehension</p> <p>165. for a compliment</p> <p>167. presbyterian counsels</p> <p>169. united [among themselves]<br/>odious [at first]</p> <p>170. There [now] seemed<br/>part of [it]<br/>by which [his majesty]</p> <p>171. some conditions<br/>when the king<br/>his [English] rebels<br/>they had not [had]</p> <p>173. they were permitted</p> <p>174. [yet] infected</p> <p>XI. 3. so long upon [this]<br/>4. engagemnt [lately mentioned]<br/>5. and [coming]<br/>6, 7.</p> | <p>were not at leisure<br/>of having deluded him<br/>a Presbyterial settlement</p> <p>[and] a restraint</p> <p>about the beginning of September<br/>towards the west</p> <p>beholding to reports</p> <p>agitation in the army was</p> <p>they both writ<br/><i>opiniatres</i></p> <p>issued out<br/>upon strict [search]</p> <p>found, himself, with an ordinary<br/><i>Division of sections altered.</i></p> <p>they did declare<br/><i>Division of sections altered.</i></p> <p>and without any possibility</p> <p>into the head<br/>that they had ever brought any man<br/>to deprive any man of his life</p> <p>way of proceedings<br/>but from thence he was<br/>fidelity to them</p> <p>and rejected<br/>sequestrators<br/>their fidelities</p> <p>who had to contrive<br/>great apprehensions<br/>for a complement<br/>Presbyterian councils</p> <p>united<br/>odious</p> <p>There seemed<br/>part of the army<br/>by which he<br/>some condition<br/>and when the King<br/>his rebels<br/>they had not<br/>that they were permitted</p> <p>infected</p> <p>so long upon it<br/>engagemnt<br/>and come<br/><i>Division of sections altered.</i></p> |
|---|--|

## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| <p>12. the parliament [there]<br/> 15. the [forementioned] lords<br/> 18. he [should] be<br/> 19. many alterations, his majesty in<br/>     all places<br/>     He had [now] no relation<br/> 20. hoisted sail<br/> 23. [and the rest] should stay<br/>     the ways by land<br/>     [being] very dangerous<br/> 25. to serve him too<br/>     what [now] fell out<br/> 26. And he observed<br/> 27. of the attempt<br/>     He [writ]<br/>     which [had] subdued<br/>     [against] their . . . . [against] a<br/>     conspiracy<br/>     [He added] that the affections<br/> 32. and [being] less beloved<br/>     [they] having expressed<br/> 33. [that,] they should not meddle<br/> 35, 36.<br/> 36. [and] was not at all<br/>     and thought to be<br/>     that way. Dr. Steward<br/>     sent from [the Scots]<br/> 40. had been prepar[ing]<br/>     and when [Pembroke]<br/> 42. [but he] was in the confidence<br/>     [and] the man<br/>     experience of war<br/> 45. went to [those] lords<br/>     till the heat of this dispute [was]<br/>     over<br/>     between [those two places]<br/> 49. strength of [that] nation<br/> 50. but [as hath been said] would not<br/> 52. the council [in Scotland]<br/>     and that [then] they should proceed<br/>     resolution to [the lords there]<br/> 55, 56.<br/> 58. and had [always] so great</p> | <p>the Parliament<br/> the lords<br/> he would be<br/> many alterations in all places, his<br/>     majesty<br/> He had no relation<br/> hoisted sail<br/> should stay<br/> and the ways by land<br/> were very dangerous<br/> to serve him<br/> what fell out<br/> and observed<br/> in the attempt<br/> He writes<br/> which subdued<br/> of their . . . . of a conspiracy<br/> that the affections<br/> and less beloved<br/> having expressed<br/> they should not meddle<br/> <i>Division of sections altered.</i><br/> nor was at all<br/> was thought to be<br/> that way, and Dr. Steward<br/> sent from thence<br/> had been prepared<br/> and when the town<br/> and was in the confidence<br/> but the man<br/> experience of the war<br/> went to the lords<br/> till the heat of this dispute were<br/>     over<br/> between them<br/> strength of the nation<br/> but would not<br/> the Council<br/> and that they should proceed<br/> resolution to them<br/> <i>Division of sections altered, 55 formerly ending in the middle of a sentence.</i><br/> and had so great</p> |
|--|---|

## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 59. with a numerous   | with the numerous  |
| 60. they were [all] joined  | they were joined   |
| 61. expect [a] conjunction  | expect the conjunction   |
| 67. there was [an] enterprise   | there was one enterprise   |
| 68. with [such] resolution, that  | with resolution, [so] that   |
| 69. the fleet [with him]  | the fleet  |
| 70. the narrowing [of] the river, as if<br>some [of his] ships  | the narrowing the river as if some<br>ships  |
| 71. the fault [upon] another  | the fault to another   |
| 72. [it] moved  | and moved  |
| [and] it was quartered  | that it was quartered  |
| 72, 73.   | <i>Division of sections altered, 72 formerly ending where there should only have been a comma.</i> |
| 76. Cromwell's horse [under Lambert]  | Cromwell's horse   |
| 77. had the [ill] fortune<br>English forces [under Langdale]  | had the fortune<br>English forces  |
| 78. [It may be proper now to mention<br>that] the lord Cottington<br>which he had [there]                   | The lord Cottington<br><br>which he had  |
| 81. The [prince of Wales's] court<br>[and] told them  | The Court<br>told them   |
| 86. [the] next day after  | next day after   |
| 86, 87.   | <i>Division of sections altered.</i>   |
| 87. [they] had raised   | had raised   |
| 89. [and] said he was<br>they had [then] been accustomed<br>to  | said he was<br>they had been accustomed to   |
| [The earl] replied<br>that he [himself] should hear<br>the victory [over the Scots]                         | He replied<br>that he should hear<br>the victory   |
| 90. [that what] might then [have been<br>fit]   | that [what] might then be fit  |
| [The earl] said   | He said  |
| 92. it was not [at first] believed<br>over [their] whole body<br>[or] that marched<br>who had [been] broken | it was not believed<br>over the whole body<br>and that marched<br>who had broken                   |
| 93. desired [the destruction of them<br>both]   | desired both their destructions  |
| 94. [saying], if he should  | and said if he should  |
| 96. and [some to] lose  | and lose   |
| 97. took [divers]   | took [some]  |
| 102. [To return to the state of the<br>King's affairs in England]   | <i>Omitted.</i>  |
| [There was] a great appearance  | a great appearance   |

## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 102. the answer [was]  | the answer  |
| 104. coming [to Kingston]<br>an hundred  | coming thither<br>a hundred   |
| 105. succeeded this<br>They sent [therefore]<br>[he] was contented<br>without [much] hurting                       | succeeds this<br>so that they sent<br>they were contented<br>without hurting                |
| 107. The council [of war] had con-<br>sidered  | The council had considered  |
| 108. younger brother of<br>[of] an ill understanding, [of] a<br>rough nature<br>the party                          | younger brother to<br>an ill understanding, a rough nature<br><br>the <i>tertia</i>         |
| 109. an ill orator [on]<br>they had [afterwards] the society   | an ill orator in<br>they had the society  |
| 110. near [half a year before]   | near two years before   |
| 111. shut up [about half a year]   | shut up within few months of two<br>years   |
| 113. extreme restraint [he was under]<br>before the treaty began   | extreme restraint<br>before the treaty begin  |
| 114. that nobody<br>no farther address[es] . . . . no<br>more addresses<br>had been [proposed] towards a<br>treaty | and that nobody<br>no farther address . . . no more<br>address<br>had been towards a treaty |
| 116. principal persons of the kingdom<br>an army was raised<br>the [other] northern counties                       | principal persons of that kingdom<br>one army was raised<br>the northern counties           |
| 117. some regiment[s]<br>introducing [of] a<br>grown elder   | some regiment<br>introducing a<br>grown older   |
| 122. with [the] neglect<br>reduce [Pontefract]   | with neglect<br>reduce them   |
| 123. others' horses<br>run him through   | other horses<br>ran him through   |
| 124. reclaim them<br>[but] he must require<br>whose lives  | rest[r]ain them<br>[but] that he must require<br>and whose lives                            |
| 127. his [own] family  | his family  |
| 128. [so] that it might<br>Upon which, [he] asking   | that might<br>Upon which, asking  |
| 129. [Prince Rupert]; <i>three times</i>   | The prince  |
| 130. [Prince Rupert]; <i>twice</i><br>concerning him[self]<br>after [his highness]<br>with all [his] force         | The prince<br>concerning him<br>after the prince<br>with all force                          |

## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| 131. destruction of [their] trade<br>the [most] proper application              | destruction of trade<br>the proper application                           |
| 132. her mind [then] so fixed<br>after [that lord's] coming                     | her mind so fixed<br>after his coming                                    |
| 133. in the[ir] port<br>[the earl] sent<br>use of [the] king                    | in the port<br>he sent<br>use of King                                    |
| 134. debauched  | deboshed   |
| 135. left the [prince's] fleet  | left the fleet   |
| 137. [for] the true worth<br>who should [be]                                    | to the true worth<br>who should  |
| 138. all [its] prejudice  | all the prejudice  |
| 140. would extend<br>that they [should be] gone                                 | would extend as well<br>that they were gone                              |
| 141. but [the duke]<br>served [both]  | but he [the duke]<br>served his highness                                 |
| 142. whither it [should] go   | whither it could go  |
| 144. [as] would put<br>circumstances of blood[iness]<br>[as] had dependance     | that would put<br>circumstances of blood<br>who had dependance           |
| 146. they concluded that [the English-<br>Irish]                                | they concluded that they   |
| 147. [Roman] catholic religion  | Catholic religion  |
| 148. to enrich him[self]  | to enrich him  |
| 149. [the fleet] must be carried  | it must be carried   |
| 150. whither [his royal highness] would<br>be pleased<br>who had long commanded | whither he would be pleased<br>who had long command                      |
| 156. emergent occasions   | immergent occasions  |
| 157. [a year's time]  | near two years ( <i>corrected in a note</i> ).                           |
| 158. except [the Scots]<br>to give a pass<br>[his majesty] delivered them       | except they [the Scots]<br>that they would give a pass<br>delivered them |
| 163. their not prosecuting any  | the not prosecution of   |
| 167. vexations  | vexation   |
| 169. lords bishops  | lord bishops   |
| 172. which the major part   | and which the major part   |
| 173. hereby they had [had]  | hereby they had  |
| 176. and [were in effect] compre-<br>hended                                     | and was comprehended   |
| 178. fit to send [it]   | fit to send  |
| 180. lands [was insisted on]  | lands  |
| 182. which [were]   | which was  |
| 185. deserved so well [of the parliament]                                       | deserved so well   |
| 187. that [as] he would join . . . so he<br>would secure                        | that he would join . . . [and] so he<br>would secure                     |



Edit. 1849.

Present Edit.

190. unchristian  
of prince and people  
If you thus use it  
For our subjects
192. you to your rights  
foul or unjust means  
what we have recommended  
*C. R.*
- 192, 193.
- 194.
193. republican government
196.  
and [who] was then
200. republican government  
no more address[es] to the king  
[from making] the like bold at-  
tempts
201. [were] taken notice of  
gainer by the trouble[s]
204. answers were satisfactory, or if  
[they] were not
210. [the] present parliament
213. [upon] the protestant religion
216. report [of] what the parliament  
intended
217. as peers [above twice or thrice at  
most]
220. and [divers] accepted the office  
and [said] he would then  
[and] a good sum of money
222. to [the] design  
could not [reasonably] deny him
224. which [they said] would be
225. and [that he] being once
226. that he [should] be  
would have [parties]
227. [and] said, they could  
he [ought to pay so] dear
231. bloody wars  
And [it was] prayed
238. interposition was eluded
239. [a] short character  
profane word
241. still of [that nation]
242. coming shortly [after]
243. if he were . . . if he [were]
- unchristianly  
for prince and people  
And if you thus use it  
For subjects
- you to your right  
foul and unjust means  
what we here recommend  
*Omitted.*
- Are united.*
- Is divided into 193, 194.*
- republican government  
*Section begins one line earlier.*  
and was then  
republican government  
no more address to the King  
to make the like bold attempts
- was taken notice of  
gainer by the trouble
- answer was satisfactory, or if it  
were not  
that present Parliament  
to the Protestant religion  
report what the Parliament in-  
tended
- as peers (*foot-note added*).
- and accepted the office  
and he would then  
a good sum of money  
to that design  
could not deny him  
which would be  
and [he] being once  
that he might be  
would have [a] party  
said, they could  
he should have paid too dear  
bloody war  
and prayed  
interposition was deluded  
the short character  
profane word in religion  
still of those  
coming shortly  
if he was . . . if he was

*Edit. 1849.**Present Edit.*

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 244. used in [England]   | used in that country  |
| 245. Upon the return of [king Charles<br>the Second]<br>[at the time of the interment]                           | Upon the return of the King<br><br>at that time [of the interment]  |
| 246. [who] would yet   | [many who] would yet  |
| 250. their own [seemed to be]<br>those monsters  | their own was<br>these monsters   |
| 251. who [had been] his ambassador<br>of a great price   | who was his ambassador<br>at a great price  |
| 254-264.   | <i>Numbers of the sections altered.</i>   |
| 254. upon [the late king]<br>[to] the crown<br>give him leave to live  | upon this King<br>from the Crown<br>give him leave  |
| 255. [no other of their lives]   | none of their other lives   |
| 259. more bitterness<br>concerning him[self]<br>whether [the speaker]  | the more bitterness<br>concerning him<br>whether he [the Speaker]   |
| 264. [but] at the foot of the scaffold<br>[his lordship]<br>as soon as [his lordship]                            | at the foot of the scaffold he<br><br>as soon as he   |
| 265. exemplar[y] piety   | exemplar piety  |
| 266. [His] memory  | whose memory  |
| 267. deserve best [of the English]<br>nation   | deserve best in that nation   |
| XII. 3. [his majesty] had not enough   | he had not enough   |
| 4. sent [his majesty] word<br>Charles, &c.<br>[But] they two<br>without being discovered, the earl<br>of Lanrick | sent him word<br>Charles<br>But they two<br>without being discovered if himself<br>did go on shore, the earl of Lan-<br>ricke himself |
| 6. [and had] reduced<br>sects and [libertinism]  | reduced<br>sects and liberty  |
| 8. then [they were] to enter<br>king [or] members  | then to enter<br>King and members   |
| 13. [he might] reverse   | [able] to reverse   |
| 14. and which always   | and [one] which always  |
| 15. into the Scottish army<br>in[to] Germany<br>murder of the [late] king  | in the Scots' army<br>in Germany<br>murder of the King  |
| 17. [and] those who had joined<br>who thought [the Scottish lords]   | those who had joined<br>who thought they  |
| 18. inhumanities [Mountrose] was<br>guilty of<br>[The earl] confessed  | inhumanities he was guilty of<br><br>He confessed   |
| 19. [he having] been   | that lord having been   |

## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 19. and [he] now   | and now  |
| 20. to visit [the duke]  | to visit him   |
| 29. oblig[ed] himself  | obliging himself   |
| 34. friend to [the crown of France]<br>was at Madrid<br>and [he repeated] some expres-<br>sions                      | friend to that Crown<br>was in Madrid<br>and some expressions                          |
| 35. [they] living and keeping house<br>benefit to [his majesty]<br>[and] if it were only<br>thought [this] discourse | living and keeping house<br>benefit to him<br>if it were only<br>thought the discourse |
| 40. [by] his own interest<br>without any [public character]  | in his own interest<br>without any <i>fausto</i>                                       |
| 43. [the chancellor] could not pre-<br>sume<br>Others [said, they] knew<br>others [that some] who were not<br>named  | he could not presume<br><br>Others knew<br>others who were not named                   |
| 44. the second reading   | a second reading   |
| 49. compliments [to him] from the<br>king  | compliments from the King  |
| 52. and [its] disability<br>which [the ambassadors] imputed  | and disability<br>which they imputed   |
| 53. When [the ambassadors] had<br>despatched<br>to find [now] more difficulties                                      | when they had despatched<br><br>to find more difficulties                              |
| 54. give her [that] satisfaction   | give her satisfaction  |
| 57. conte de Harcourt<br>set down  | count Harcourt<br>sat down   |
| 58. conde Fuensaldagna<br>counte de Garcies  | count of Fuensaldagna<br>count of Garcies  |
| 59. that [had] happened<br>retired [from her]  | that was happened<br>retired   |
| 59, 60.  | <i>Differently divided.</i>  |
| 60. ought to have [had]<br>for whom [his majesty]  | ought to have<br>for whom he   |
| 61. all which [his majesty]<br>[and] of the great credit   | all which he<br>of the great credit  |
| 62. [that] if he did not   | if he did not  |
| 63. prevail with [his majesty]   | prevail with him   |
| 64. that [his majesty] was   | that he was  |
| 65. the governors [there]  | the governors  |
| 66. would not submit   | would not submit [to]  |
| 68. [about thirty miles from] Dublin   | within ten miles of Dublin   |
| 72. [he] could act it<br>with the [hazard] of his life   | could act it<br>with the loss of his life  |

## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| 73. It [was] an incredible<br>they arrived [there]  | It is an incredible<br>they arrived   |
| 75. received by [that lord]<br>when he should require [them]  | received by him<br>when he should require   |
| 76. his [most Christian] majesty<br>the king [our master]   | his majesty [the French King]<br>the King [of England]  |
| 78. [the queen-mother of France]  | the Queen [of France]   |
| 79. [the ambassadors] declined  | they declined   |
| 80. his guards  | and his guards  |
| 81. to the [Taio] of Spain<br>out of the town<br>at the [Taio]<br>Girona  | to the <i>rayo</i> of Spain<br>out of town<br>at the <i>rayo</i><br>Jeren [Irun]                                  |
| 85. that nobody could attend  | [so] that nobody could attend   |
| 86. <i>fausto</i> of a Spaniard<br>rhodomontadoes   | <i>fausto</i> of the Spaniard<br>the rodomontados   |
| 87. their revenue[s]  | their revenue   |
| 89. two [men] run still together  | two run still together  |
| 90. clinquant<br>made the[ir] reverences<br>by the people<br>if he escapes<br>as a last refuge<br>remain perpetually maimed | clinkant<br>made the reverences<br>by people<br>if he scapes<br>as the last refuge<br>remained perpetually maimed |
| 92 ( <i>formerly</i> 98) most efficacious<br>terms [possible]   | most efficacious terms  |
| 100, 101.   | <i>Differently divided, having formerly<br/>been divided in the middle of a<br/>sentence.</i>                     |
| 101. and [that he] believed   | and believed  |
| 106. before his favours   | before his favour   |
| 107. <i>sumiller de corps</i><br>some estates<br>understanding [of] the affairs<br>much esteemed<br>the king [our master]   | <i>somelier de corps</i><br>some estate<br>understanding the affairs<br>[was] much esteemed<br>the King           |
| 108. a king [of England]<br>would think [proper] to send<br>they [had] desired  | a King<br>would think to send<br>they desired   |
| 114. the council [was] astonished   | the Council were astonished   |
| 116. entered the works<br>were hutchered  | entered the work<br>[they] were hutchered   |
| 121. might he [long] together<br>she knew well that [the court of<br>France]  | might be together<br>she knew well that France  |
| 122. ministers sent [from Scotland]   | ministers sent  |

Edit. 1849.

Present Edit.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 122. [His majesty] must not carry  | He must not carry  |
| 124. [yet] the hope  | the hope   |
| 126. importuned [that court] for a de-<br>-spatch  | importuned for a despatch  |
| 127. yet they found [his majesty]<br>bred [a] very warlike people  | yet they found he<br>bred very warlike people  |
| 129. and [he] had been compelled   | and had been compelled   |
| 130. [Mountrose] knew  | He knew  |
| 131. [it] being in March<br>he [conveyed] the arms<br>faithful to [the king]   | being in March<br>he brought the arms<br>faithful to him [the King]                              |
| 133. join with [Straghan]  | join with him  |
| 133, 134.  | <i>Divided differently, having formerly<br/>been divided in the middle of a<br/>sentence.</i>    |
| 135. to carry [them] in triumph<br>[which] was received<br>treated [the marquis]                                       | to carry him in triumph<br>and was received<br>treated him                                       |
| 136. declaration against him   | declamation against him  |
| 137. [that] when the king  | when the King  |
| 139. prejured<br>picture hang  | perjured<br>picture hung   |
| 142. [Mountrose] was in his nature   | He was in his nature   |
| 143. and so [his majesty] pursued  | and so he pursued  |
| 145. that [they] might well enough   | that might well enough   |
| 148. into the field [there]  | into the field   |
| 150. the spirits of all the loyal party were<br>which [then] they desired  | the spirit of all the loyal party was<br>which they desired                                      |
| 152. unfortunate action[s]   | unfortunate action   |
| XIII. 1. any accommodation [even]  | any accommodation  |
| 4. accustomed to do [their sabbath]  | accustomed to do   |
| 7. to [the] full dignity   | to their full dignity  |
| 12. insomuch [that] the street   | insomuch as the street   |
| 14. The [English] ambassadors  | The ambassadors ( <i>The ambassa-<br/>dors referred to are distinctly<br/>not the English.</i> ) |
| 15. [the prisoners] were proceeded<br>against  | they were proceeded against  |
| 19.  | <i>Commencement of section altered.</i>  |
| 20. [he] being destroyed there   | being destroyed there  |
| 22. Cromwell [lost very few men]   | Cromwell did not want twenty men   |
| 23. [which defeat had] put<br>[who] if they should<br>only a [stricter] confinement<br>that [his majesty] could not go | which had put<br>and if they should<br>only a more confinement<br>that he could not go           |

## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

24.

*Division of sections altered, sections  
23, 24 being formerly divided in  
the middle of a sentence.*

25. and [that the court]  
26. He [had] resolved  
27. he had not foreseen  
whilst the other [ambassador]  
28. to part [of what he said]  
30. He had a very fine  
great delight [than most of his  
quality]  
[He] left behind him  
33. He [had] found  
34. the other functions  
35. emergent occasions  
and [his] declared resolution  
[for our] King  
36. and [have] infused  
37. to be advised by  
38. beneficial to him[self]  
42. speak to him [about] it  
44. and that the [French] king  
He presumed [therefore]  
46. [However] he was very glad  
47. all [his] former professions  
48. easy [then] to be guarded  
51. in Scotland. By that time that  
Cromwell was ready to take the  
field [his majesty] was per-  
suaded  
52. major general [Brown]  
would [be able to] cut off  
[which,] how unfortunate  
53. with [promise of] large under-  
takings  
55. his [majesty's] march  
obliging [him] to march close ;  
[not] engaging his [own] party  
56. [Cromwell] resolved  
St. Johnston's or any [other] place  
57. When [Cromwell] had despatched  
59. and [besides] his motion was so  
quick that none [of them could  
repair] to him  
60. [Lambert] according to [his]  
order

- and they [the Court]  
He resolved  
he did not foresee  
whilst the other  
to part  
and had a very fine  
great delight  
and left behind him  
He found  
the other function  
immergent occasions  
and declared resolution  
[for] the King  
and infused  
to be advised by [them]  
beneficial to him  
speak to him in it  
and that the King  
He presumed  
He was very glad  
all former professions  
easy to be guarded  
in Scotland, by that time that Crom-  
well was ready to take the field.  
He was persuaded  
general major Bayly  
would cut off  
and [which,] how unfortunate  
with large undertakings  
his march  
obliging them to march close, with-  
out engaging his party  
He resolved  
[Sterling] or any place *See note.*  
when he had despatched  
and his motion was so quick that  
none repaired to him  
they [Lambert's troops] according  
to their order

*Edit. 1849.**Present Edit.*

61. in order to which [the earl]  
 64. lest they [themselves] should become  
 65. in which [there might be an opportunity for] several insurrections  
 66, 67.  
 68.
- 68 [82]. loyalty to the [late] king  
 69 [68]. and he [himself] might  
 71 [70]. [and] who repaired again  
 72 [71]. nothing could be less [so] confer it upon him [self]. At which [the king]  
 73 [72]. with stray shot which he [had] secured  
 77 [76]. the same pretence [for it]  
 80 [79]. where[ver] twenty horse and twenty [of them]  
 83. that evening [after the battle]  
 84. an oak which was in that wood  
 85. well [or] ill affected  
 92, 93.  
 93. [sir Thomas] Jermyn  
 96. and thereupon the day [was] appointed  
 106. had been advertised . . . . [and] sent though all [good] men  
 107. [was] too little  
 108. the king was pleased himself of [such] courage  
 110. [and was] of the same, or a greater pride  
 112. were shortly [after] prevailed  
 113. And for instance  
 114. had [been] issued out  
 115. or [being] assassinated [And though] he did not believe and [it was] in his power safely  
 116. marquis of Ormond would not [but] embarked himself  
 117. he [had] intercepted some letter[s]  
 120. emulations and ambitions  
 122. upon [that lord's] return
- In order to which they  
 lest they should become  
 in which there might be several insurrections  
*Division of the sections altered.*  
*Section 82 brought here into its right place.*  
 loyally to the King  
 and he might  
 who repaired again  
 nothing could be less [so] to it confer it upon him ; at which he  
 with ray-shot  
 which he secured  
 the same pretence  
 where twenty horse  
 and twenty  
 that evening  
 an oak, who was in that wood  
 well and ill affected  
*Division of the sections altered.*  
 Tom Jermin  
 and there upon the day appointed  
 [and] had been advertised . . . . . sent  
 though all men  
 too little  
 the King himself was pleased of courage  
 of the same, or a greater, pride  
 were shortly prevailed  
 And for an instance  
 had issued out  
 or to be assassinated  
 He did not believe  
 and in his power safely  
 marquis of Ormond who would not embarked himself  
 he intercepted some letter  
 emulation and ambition  
 upon his return

*Edit. 1849.**Present Edit.*

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <p>122. the king's return [from England]<br/>to his [highness's] glory<br/>under the direction<br/>[the other] had not enlarged</p> <p>123. amongst [whom] he knew<br/>[his highness] was confirmed<br/>[The king] knew</p> <p>124. [Berkley] took this refusal</p> <p>125. as he [himself] did at that time<br/>whatever [his majesty] might</p> <p>126. [Sir John Berkley] was not satisfied at all with the reason<br/>relations of his [own] actions<br/>[his majesty] affected not</p> <p>128. nor did [his majesty] in the least<br/>discover what he [himself] was<br/>inclined to<br/>that [his majesty] should not</p> <p>129. notice of [them]<br/>[Yet] if there had not been</p> <p>129, 130.</p> <p>130. [For] when the king<br/>resolved to hear [that].</p> <p>131. the king's return [into France]<br/>in that [the presbyterian] party<br/>to do [the king] service<br/>to persuade [the king] to change<br/>of [his] being restored<br/>an united force</p> <p>133. [it] was in a time<br/>people [now] had undeserved it<br/>[had] published an apology</p> <p>134. that [they thought] the professors<br/>it [had] yet ever suffered<br/>received from the king [himself]</p> <p>135. warrantably for his life</p> <p>135, 136.</p> <p>136. [This last] after<br/>[and] such advertisements</p> <p>138. He told [the king]</p> <p>140. He told [his majesty]<br/>from [that] trust</p> <p>141. If [his majesty] entertained it</p> | <p>the King's return<br/>to his glory<br/>as under the direction<br/>he had not enlarged<br/>amongst which he knew<br/>he was confirmed<br/>He knew<br/>He took this refusal<br/>as he did at that time<br/>whatever he [the King] might<br/>He [Berkley] was not satisfied at all<br/>in the reason<br/>relations of his actions<br/>he affected not<br/>nor did in the least discover what he<br/>was inclined to<br/>that he should not<br/>notice of it<br/>But if there had not been<br/><i>Division of sections altered.</i><br/>When the King<br/>resolved to bear it<br/>the King's return<br/>in that party<br/>to do him service<br/>to persuade him to change<br/>of the King's being restored<br/>a united force<br/>was in a time<br/>people had undeserved it<br/>published an apology<br/>that the professors<br/>it hath yet ever suffered<br/>received from the King<br/>warrantably . . . . . prisoners for<br/>his life<br/><i>Division of sections altered, 136<br/>formerly beginning, with altered<br/>text, in the middle of a sentence.</i><br/>who, after<br/>but such advertisements<br/>He told him<br/>He told him<br/>from the trust<br/>If he entertained it</p> |
|--|--|



## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 141. [Ae] to the general<br>incident to [that] nation  | To the general<br>incident to the nation  |
| 142. they [who] hitherto<br>all [their] king's commands  | they which hitherto<br>all the King's commands  |
| 143. visited [our] king<br>office of a brave general   | visited the King<br>office of a great general   |
| 144. So that in truth [our] king   | So that in truth the King   |
| 146. found no benefit [of this kind]   | found no benefit  |
| 147. he importuned [his majesty]   | he importuned him   |
| 148. no expedient so proper [for him]  | no expedient so proper  |
| 149. no degree straight<br>enlarging [on] all the benefits   | in no degree straight<br>enlarging all the benefits   |
| 152. that [his majesty] must expect<br>matter[s] of religion   | that he must expect<br>matter of religion   |
| 153. against the [French] king<br>to any countenance   | against the King<br>to any part of the countenance  |
| 155. [who,] disdaining   | which, disdaining   |
| 159. for, upon [the arrival of that ex-<br>press]<br>[and] more wounded  | for, upon his arrival<br><br>but more wounded   |
| 161. of a hundred  | of one hundred  |
| 163. Sir George Ayscue [being just re-<br>turned from the West Indies]<br>[were making] haste  | Sir George Askew<br><br>made haste  |
| 164. when [his majesty] imparted   | when he imparted  |
| 166. they thought it reason[able]  | they thought it reason  |
| 167. civilly with [the parliament]   | civilly with them   |
| 168. broke [their hearts]<br>[The Dutch having been beaten in<br>the month of October and Blake<br>having received a brush from<br>them in the month of December,]<br>in the month of February<br>sent a fleet of above one hundred<br>they found that the English | broke the hearts of all the Dutch<br>In the month of February<br><br>they sent a fleet of above a hundred<br>they found the English   |
| 169. [who] rejected the overture<br>all his [other] counsels<br>vengeance upon [the parliament]  | and they rejected the overture<br>all his counsels<br>vengeance upon them   |
| 170. Though [Cromwell] was exercised<br>having well defended [Jersey]<br>could [have] put<br>to give [his majesty] any assist-<br>ance<br>to fall into [Cromwell's] power<br>than to deposit them upon any<br>conditions into [French] hands                       | Though he was exercised<br>having well defended the same<br>could put<br>to give him [the King] any assist-<br>ance<br>to fall into its power than to deposit<br>them upon any conditions into<br>their hands |

## Edit. 1849.

171. Upon which  
 172. as well as [by] being  
 173. all the[ir] industry  
 174. there [had] happened  
 175. republic government  
 176. part of the [popish] clergy  
 178. all three [had been] of the king's  
 council  
 179. [The duke] writ  
 181. for the [popish] bishops  
 184. the [popish] bishops  
 186. and thereupon [the marquis]  
 and so [the marquis]  
 He left behind [him]  
 his own [ad]ministration
- XIV. 3. gave [the army] new matter  
 profession[s]
4. These addresses in the name of  
 the army, [heing] confidently  
 delivered
5.  
 [But] Mr. Martyn  
 that nobody could
- 6, 7.  
 9. all [the] members walked out  
 10. [But] that they had  
 12. in[to] the hands of men  
*salvus non esse possit*  
 14. he made [yet] no other council  
 16. and telling  
 20. against all who [had] called  
 24. would observe  
 27. Though during this [last year's]  
 unsettlement
34. [he] forced  
 [he] prosecuted  
 [the] utmost rigour  
 from the cit[ies]
39. Whereupon [the don] repaired  
 [and] entered
41. as he was [pleased]  
 43. was [then] generally looked upon  
 44. luok's sako  
 45. [Lenthall] was no sooner  
 [which alone had emboldened  
 him] to coummand

## Present Edit.

- Upon which he  
 as well as being  
 all the industry  
 there happened  
 republic[an] government  
 part of the clergy  
 all three of the King's Council
- He writ  
 for the bishops  
 the bishops  
 And thereupon he  
 and so he  
 He left behind  
 his own ministration
- gave them new matter  
 profession
- These addresses [being] in the name  
 of the army, and confidently de-  
 livered
- Divided into 5 and 6.*  
 Mr. Martin  
 that nobody would
- United in 7.*  
 all members walked out  
 That they had  
 in the hands of men  
*salvus esse non posset*  
 he made no other council  
 and telling them  
 against all who called  
 would observe [it]  
 Though during this unsettlement
- forced  
 prosecuted  
 utmost rigour  
 from the city
- Whereupon he repaired  
 he entered  
 as he was contented  
 was generally looked upon  
 luok sake  
 He was no sooner  
 which had been only that which  
 emboldened him to command

*Edit. 1849.**Present Edit.*

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| <p>45. council [of] officers</p> <p>47. depriving them</p> <p>50. like to reconcile [him]</p> <p>51. prosecution against [Lilburn]</p> <p>52. nor could [they] be persuaded<br/>[are] thought pertinent</p> <p>53. abroad, [or] from the friendship<br/>of [Cromwell's] power</p> <p>54. he had some advantage [with him]<br/>his majesty had [in France]<br/>[his majesty] resumed<br/>[And] Germany<br/>[what] fit place</p> <p>55. [It was most] suitable<br/>necessary, Wilmot pressed</p> <p>for that character<br/>[but] that if he had</p> <p>56. knocked [on] the head</p> <p>57. breaking off that uniu<br/>[he] excused himself</p> <p>58. advantageous. [And how could<br/>those now, drawn together by<br/>chance, half armed and undis-<br/>ciplined, be able to contend with<br/>victorious troops]</p> <p>with what they [had] got<br/>and [Middleton]</p> <p>was [assured he should] be enabled</p> <p>59. thither to him [through Scotland]<br/>with [the marquis]<br/>The king, [who] had much<br/>having heard [of his design].</p> <p>61. Many of the troop[ers]</p> <p>64. from whose affections [his majesty]</p> <p>65. [their animosities against him still<br/>breaking out one after] another<br/>[and the queen mother of France]</p> <p>66. [his majesty] writ<br/>queen [mother]</p> <p>69. in the [English] court<br/>and that [his highness]</p> <p>70. to which [it was] apprehended<br/>And therefore [his majesty]<br/>any thing [was] to have been done</p> | <p>council and officers</p> <p>depriving of them</p> <p>like to reconcile them</p> <p>prosecution against him</p> <p>nor could be persuaded<br/>were thought pertinent</p> <p>abroad, from the friendship<br/>of his power</p> <p>he had some advantage<br/>his majesty had there [in France]<br/>he resumed<br/>[as to] which, Germany<br/>some fit place</p> <p>Though it was more suitable<br/>necessary if he pretended to that<br/>character, [yet] Wilmott pressed<br/>for the character<br/>and that if he had<br/>knocked in the head<br/>breaking of that union<br/>excused himself</p> <p>advantageous than people now drawn<br/>together by chance, half armed<br/>and disciplined, were now like to<br/>contend [in] with victorious troops</p> <p>with what they got<br/>and the other<br/>was promised to be enabled<br/>thither to him<br/>with him [the marquis]<br/>The King, that had much<br/>having heard<br/>Many of the troop<br/>from whose affections he<br/>one breaking out after another</p> <p>who [the Queen Regent]<br/>he writ<br/>Queen [Regent]<br/>in the Court<br/>and that he<br/>to which he apprehended<br/>And therefore he<br/>any thing had been to have been<br/>done</p> |
|--|---|

## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| 71. [that] what treasure<br>and [that] the ships  | what treasure<br>and the ships  |
| 72. who [they thought] still had  | who still had   |
| 74. but [that] he undertook<br>the witness [herself]<br>to do [him] more justice  | but he [Longe] undertook<br>the witness<br>to do more justice   |
| 77. money for her journey [back]  | money for her journey   |
| 78. countenance of the [French] court<br>[yet if sold] he presumed  | countenance of the Court<br>he presumed   |
| 80. sale of those cannon  | sale of these cannon  |
| 82. and to communicate [to his<br>majesty] all<br>which [the king] did not desire   | and to communicate all<br>which he did not desire   |
| 84. [the king] declared his resolution<br>because of the [king his master's]<br>restraint<br>the matter to himself              | he declared his resolution<br>because of the [French] king's re-<br>straint<br>the matter to [the cardinal] himself |
| 86. daughter of the house [of Leices-<br>ter]   | daughter of the house   |
| 88. And this [happened in the latter<br>end of the year 1652, and] was<br>so well prosecuted<br>since he was [about a year] old | And this was so well prosecuted<br>since he was three months old  |
| 91. which [the keeper] could not  | which he [the Keeper] could not   |
| 93. he [himself] knew not how<br>so high [an] affront   | he knew not how<br>so high affront  |
| 94. which had been made [of him to]<br>her majesty  | which had been made before her<br>majesty   |
| 96. than [that] was in view   | then was in view  |
| 99. trusting only [to]  | trusting only   |
| 100, 101.   | <i>Division of the sections altered.</i>  |
| 103. [that assembly] was prevailed<br>with<br>elector [palatine]<br>great obligations<br>to have resisted [them]                | it was prevailed with<br>Elector of Heydleburgh<br>great obligations both<br>to have resisted                       |
| 106. kindness to him[self]<br>preserve it for him   | kindness to him<br>preserve [it] for him  |
| 107. in the [Cromwell's] council  | in the council  |
| 108. lazy and unactive  | laish and unactive  |
| 109. [that] news came   | before news came  |
| 111. who confessed that the trade   | who confess that the trade  |
| 112. [till] some ceremoni-<br>[from] which they might recede<br>[his majesty] made no scruple<br>duchess [of Newhurgh] went     | without some ceremonies<br>upon which they might recede<br>made no scruple<br>duchess went                          |

## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 116. since the elector [palatine]  | since the Elector of Heydlebergh                           |
| 118. [his majesty] knew the reproaches   | he knew the reproaches                                     |
| 119. with his [majesty's] directions   | with his directions  |
| 120. He [had] fomented   | He fomented  |
| [were] concerned   | was concerned  |
| [the nuncio] spake   | he spake   |
| 121. [but] that it was not in his power  | that it was not in his power                               |
| 122. wishes [for] the king's restoration   | wishes of the King's restoration                           |
| 123. for [more] commissions and instructions                                     | for commissions and instructions                           |
| 124. addressed [only] to the king  | addressed to the King                                      |
| worse satisfied  | worst satisfied  |
| [as] they had formerly done  | which they had formerly done                               |
| 125. distance [near enough] to countenance it                                    | distance to countenance it                                 |
| 127. And [with] this errand [the earl] left Cologne                              | And in this errand he left Cullen                          |
| [for] which he used  | in which he used   |
| frankly declared [to him]  | frankly declared   |
| 130. [whose] agents  | and their agents   |
| [It] was an argument   | And it was an argument                                     |
| 131. [according] to expectation  | to expectation   |
| 132. But [he] having not thought   | But having not thought                                     |
| 133. the [civil] power of that county  | the power of that county                                   |
| 134. desired to be presently released  | desired should be presently released                       |
| some honest [men's] houses   | some honest houses   |
| 135. [and] looked upon it  | [but] looked upon it                                       |
| the [ill] success at Salisbury   | the success at Salisbury                                   |
| 136. [The justice] commanded the keeper of the inn, one Gilvy out of [the] house | He commanded the keeper of the inn, one Kilby out of house |
| 137. whatsoever [his majesty] resolved to do                                     | whatsoever he resolved to do                               |
| [The king] did not at all wonder   | He did not at all wonder                                   |
| 138. [it] being an imposture as was dangerous news of [London]                   | being an imposture that was dangerous news of the town     |
| 140. [He] therefore told the king  | And therefore he told the King                             |
| 143. that of the latter date   | that of the later date                                     |
| 144. who arose   | who rose   |
| 149. that they [the king's party] might  | that they might  |
| 150. [whether] presbyterian none but [the king's] party                          | Presbyterian none but that party                           |
| 151. [and upon] the foulness that [it] obliged                                   | [and] the foulness that obliged                            |
| [who] was to be removed  | that was to be removed                                     |

## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| 151. use of [against him] in the next parliament   | use of in the next Parliament  |
| XV. 1. <i>Marius aspiciens</i>   | <i>cum Marius aspiciens</i>  |
| 2. He [then] beheld<br>by his [other] rebels   | He beheld<br>by his rebels   |
| 3. [Lastly,] England<br>that [little or] no part   | England<br>that no part  |
| 4. [but] with those  | and with those   |
| 5, 6.<br>[was] likewise  | <i>Differently divided.</i><br>were likewise                             |
| 6. nor [could he] make   | nor make   |
| 6, 7.  | <i>Differently divided.</i>  |
| 7. in whom [Cromwell]  | in whom they   |
| 9. [and] making prize<br>after a short stay  | making prize<br>after as short stay                                      |
| 10. [so] tired<br>to [the] bay   | so, tired<br>to their bay  |
| 11. making after[wards frequent] incursions  | making after incursions  |
| 12. whilst he [sent] out   | whilst he manned out   |
| 13. wished [the men] might be recalled   | wished it might be recalled  |
| 15. to contend with [him]  | to contend with them   |
| 16. deliverance [to be sent him] from Madrid   | deliverance from Madrid  |
| 17. the king [of Spain] ( <i>twice</i> )<br>marquis [of] Carracena<br>council was taken          | The King ( <i>twice</i> )<br>marquis Caracena<br>counsel was taken       |
| 18. both the [late]<br>that [his majesty] could bring  | both the former<br>that he could bring                                   |
| 19. came to [his majesty]<br>[The king] quickly<br>of the [English] army<br>between [don Alonzo] | came to him<br>and he quickly<br>of the army<br>between him [don Alonso] |
| 23. were not [much] lessened   | were not lessened  |
| 24. keep them [as] a guard   | keep them a guard  |
| 25. committed [to prison]<br>and [there was] no appeal   | committed<br>and no appeal   |
| 26. [Spanish West] India fleet<br>of the [English] fleet<br>so the [Spanish] admiral             | Indian fleet<br>of the fleet<br>so the admiral                           |
| 27. through the city<br>saw the [English] fleet  | through the city of London<br>saw the fleet                              |
| 28. [He] therefore resorted  | And therefore he resorted  |
| 29. [some of them] that they might   | that they might  |

*Edit.* 1849.*Present Edit.*

- |  |                                     |
|--|-------------------------------------|
| 30. than [that it should] appear                           | than to appear                      |
| 31. dignity of a king                                      | dignity of the king                 |
| 33. to the [present] government                            | to the government                   |
| 36. made by [upon] them                                    | made by them                        |
| 37. as he could establish                                  | as he would establish               |
| 43. absent than [oppose it]                                | absent than opposite                |
| 52. and so march   | and so marched                      |
| Montmedy [and St. Venant]                                  | Mon[tm]edy                          |
| 53. made a noise   | made the noise                      |
| [west] Indian fleet  | Indian fleet                        |
| 55. the general saw  | the generals saw                    |
| [he] resolved  | they resolved                       |
| [so] that they lay   | but that they lay                   |
| 56. [who] had destroyed                                    | which had destroyed                 |
| 57. no pomp [of funeral]                                   | no pomp                             |
| [among] the monument[s]                                    | in the monument                     |
| university [of Oxford]                                     | university                          |
| 63. prosecute his [other] designs                          | prosecute his designs               |
| 65. in the counties  | in the countries                    |
| inconvenient to him[self]                                  | inconvenient to him                 |
| 66. ordinary [occasion]                                    | ordinary cause                      |
| 71. to the king's [service]                                | to the King's                       |
| 73. condition to [his majesty]                             | condition to him                    |
| 75. [don Juan] still writ                                  | they still writ                     |
| who found [don Alonzo]                                     | who found him                       |
| 76. so, when the time                                      | so, that when the time              |
| treaty [with Cromwell, the French]                         | treaty, they                        |
| 77. in the [cardinal's] disgrace                           | in the other's disgrace             |
| ought to have [been]                                       | ought to have done                  |
| 78. rhymes and songs                                       | rhythms and songs                   |
| 80. [yet] the soldiers                                     | the soldiers                        |
| 82. with her brother[s]                                    | with her brother                    |
| 83. to give him[self] ease                                 | to give him ease                    |
| 84. sent from [England]                                    | sent from thence                    |
| 87. [his majesty] would not suffer                         | he would not suffer                 |
| till [the king's friends] should all                       | till they should all be ruined      |
| be ruined  |                                     |
| 88. concluded [that] they would                            | concluded they would                |
| 89. [as] would be able                                     | that would be sble                  |
| 95. enough against [himself]                               | enough against themselves           |
| brought to trial [was Mr. Mordaunt.] After his arrsignment | brought to trial, [Mordaunt,] after |
| and [which] he knew  | his impeachment was read            |
| that [the other] had done                                  | and he knew                         |
| 96. [He] was brought                                       | that he had done                    |
| strictly against him[self]                                 | and was brought                     |
|  | strictly against him                |

## Edit. 1849.

97. a friend of [hers]  
 98. [which having perused] he departed  
 commission of Stapley  
 [yet] he did it  
 [by one of the judges—the stone]  
 case [so] unheard of  
 99. which [it] was not possible  
 100. detest [the] violent and undutiful  
 behaviour [of that parliament]  
 104. amongst [those sectaries]  
 107. or vainly  
 steers and guides  
 110. the sweet harmony  
 the more glorious  
 113. a reflex view  
 upon our own sovereign  
 virgin liberty  
 117. we began  
 among ourselves  
 118. throns of your father  
 125. their councils  
 and return  
 in their infant  
 127. of the times  
 in this conjuncture  
 130. may it please your majesty, &c.  
 131. believed [that] these  
 He returned [into England]  
 132. [Whils these things were transact-  
 ing]  
 But [the Spaniards] sent  
 133. [His majesty] was no sooner  
 that [Sexby] might  
 the other [they that sent the ad-  
 dress] well knew  
 stupidity of that [Spaniard]  
 134. Nothing that was [yet] to come  
 In the beginning of [the year]  
 136. Jugurtha  
 in which time [he] should  
 137. [Our] king's foot  
 many of the [French] officers  
 138. [was now] resolved  
 [who], though he disordered [them,  
 wore] quickly

## Present Edit.

- a friend of his  
 and having perused it, he departed  
 commission to Stapely  
 he did it  
*Bracketed line omitted.*  
 case unheard of  
 which was not possible  
 detest their violent and undutiful  
 behaviour  
 amongst them  
 and vainly  
 steers, guides  
 that sweet harmony  
 the more gloriously  
 a reflexed view  
 upon our sovereign  
 virgin liberties  
 we began  
 amongst ourselves  
 throne of your fathers  
 their counsels  
 and to return  
 in this their infant  
 of [the] times  
 in this juncture  
*The full subscription instead of, &c.*  
 believed that these  
 He returned  
 In the mean time  
 But they sent  
 He was no sooner  
 that he might  
 the other[s] well knew  
 stupidity of that man  
 Nothing that was to come  
 In the beginning of May  
 Jugurth[a]  
 in which time they should  
 The King's foot  
 many of the officers  
 now was resolved  
 which though he disordered, was  
 quickly



## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| <p>140. When don Juan [had first] removed<br/>the king [had] renewed<br/>[His majesty] thereupon</p> <p>141. for [the] accommodation</p> <p>143. and [he] was still</p> <p>144. who he [believed] wished<br/>though he [had] got<br/>at the day [appointed]<br/>those troops [Cromwell]<br/>were [placed] upon the Tower-hill<br/>called [Syndercome]<br/>that he [himself] was more odious</p> <p>145. that which [chiefly] broke</p> <p>146. and then he declared<br/>he had [twice] triumphed<br/>and [the tempest] was so universal,<br/>that the [effects of it were terrible]<br/>for besides<br/>[were] cast away<br/>after [the] circumstance</p> <p>147.</p> <p>148. to be renewed</p> <p>150. expressions and sayings<br/>was of council</p> <p>155. Cromwell threatened [him]</p> <p>XVI. 1. interest in [it]<br/>such a conjuncture [as this]<br/>arising from [Cromwell's death]<br/>[and there was] the same</p> <p>2. [his friends] could never expect</p> <p>3. therefore [the new protector] sent</p> <p>4. by [the] keeper<br/>[than] there appeared the old<br/>republican spirit<br/>[and] into<br/>all that [revenue]<br/>to confirm [Richard]<br/>[and] the power<br/>They put [the house] in mind</p> <p>5. temper of the house [of commons]</p> <p>6. pay that [were] due</p> <p>7. [on] April 6th</p> | <p>When don Juan removed<br/>the King renewed<br/>and thereupon<br/>for accommodation<br/>and was still<br/>who he knew wished<br/>though he got<br/>at the day<br/>those troops he [Cromwell]<br/>were upon the Tower-hill<br/>called him<br/>that he was more odious<br/>that which broke<br/>and then declared<br/>he had triumphed<br/>and was so universal that there<br/>[were] terrible effects of it<br/>besides<br/>having been cast away<br/>after that circumstance</p> <p><i>Bracketed translations of the Latin<br/>quotations omitted.</i></p> <p>to be renew[ed]<br/>expressions and saying<br/>was of counsel<br/>Cromwell threatened them</p> <p>interest in the kingdom<br/>such a conjuncture<br/>arising from hence<br/>the same<br/>they could never expect<br/>therefore he sent<br/>by his Keeper<br/>but there appeared the old re-<br/>publical spirit<br/>enquired into<br/>all that money<br/>to confirm him<br/>the power<br/>They put them in mind<br/>temper of the House<br/>pay that was due<br/>in April</p> |
|--|---|

## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 7. [than] Tiohburn  | but Titchborne   |
| 8, 9.   | <i>Differently divided.</i>  |
| 9. These [officers] were men<br>nearness of their alliance<br>and [their] obligation  | These were men<br>nearness of their alliance<br>and the obligation   |
| 10. [likewise] of equal courage   | of equal courage   |
| 11. door of [their] house   | door of the house  |
| 12. which they therefore did<br>republican to [their] wish  | [this] they therefore did<br>republical to the[ir] wish  |
| 13. This [restoring the rump parlia-<br>ment] was the only way  | This was the only way  |
| 14, 15.   | <i>Differently divided.</i>  |
| 15. twenty-nine thousand six hundred<br>and forty pounds  | twenty-nine thousand pounds and<br>six hundred and forty   |
| 17. though [it happened] long after-<br>wards   | though long afterwards   |
| [and] indeed unknown  | indeed unknown   |
| 18. but that he [himself]<br><i>coquin</i>  | but that he<br>cockayn [ <i>coquin</i> ]   |
| 21. [when] they called to mind  | but they called to mind  |
| 23. and [to desire] that his majesty<br>[would]   | and that his majesty might   |
| 25. [that] would have<br>and [lain] concealed   | and would have<br>and lay concealed  |
| 27. that from thence  | that they might from thence  |
| 28. part of [his] affairs   | part of affairs  |
| 29. The gentleman accused [was sir<br>Richard Willis, who] had<br>been known [to Cromwell]  | The gentleman accused had<br>been known  |
| 30. would not [presently] depart<br>in [the] gentleman  | would not depart<br>in that gentleman  |
| 33. which [it] was  | which was  |
| 35. and [so] they found   | and they found   |
| 36. The night before [there] had<br>[been]  | The night before had   |
| 37. good fortune in it [to him]   | good fortune in it   |
| 38. yet [Sir George] being himself<br>to suppress all [there]   | yet being himself<br>to suppress all   |
| 44. account[s] every day from Eng-<br>land [of] what  | account every day from England<br>what   |
| 45. that whilst [his highness]<br>which seemed [now]  | that whilst he<br>which seemed   |
| 46. despair of his condition [resumed<br>a resolution he had formerly<br>taken to make a journey himself<br>to the borders of Spain, to solicit | despair of his condition, which was<br>discernible in everybody's coun-<br>tenance, insomuch as some persons<br>had advised the King to make |

## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

- more powerful supplies ; the two chief ministers of the two crowns being there met at this time. And indeed his majesty preferred] any peregrination
- the Spaniards [there]  
[both] natural and acquired
47.  
[47] 48. their thoughts [on]  
[48] 49. which the queen [mother]  
[49] 50. at a time [when] Spain without the rest [of the Spanish Netherlands]  
[50] 51. irrecoverable [irreconcilable] breach with her [majesty] this [last] winter [that] there would be [of this year 1659]  
[52] 53. and writ [to that purpose]  
[53] 54. The two particulars were [those concerning] Portugal  
[54] 55. interview, a little river [near] that place brought the [two] favourites  
[56] 57. propose [such] passes acquiesced with [this] profession  
[57] 58. the earl of Bristol, [Daniel O'Neile] would admit [of]  
[59] 60. which, [he said,] was necessary [then] that Portugal  
[60] 61. groundless rebellion [there] that the [catholic] king  
[61] 62. money [for what] they had laid out  
[67] 68. [whilst] O'Neile should go  
[68] 69. upon the [king of England's] entry melancholy had made him  
[69] 70. that was suitable  
[71] 72. on such a day  
[72] 73. upon [removing] all former mistakes
- a journey himself into Spain to solicit more powerful supplies, and to make Germany his way ; to which his majesty himself was not uninclined, preferring any peregrination
- the Spaniards  
natural and acquired  
74 transposed to this place.  
their thoughts  
which the Queen  
at a time that Spain  
without the rest  
irrecoverable breach with her  
this winter  
that there would be  
[of 1659]  
and writ  
The two particulars were, Portugal  
interview. A little river in that place  
brought the favourites  
propose passes  
acquiesced with the profession  
the earl of Bristol  
would admit  
which was necessary  
that Portugal  
groundless rebellion  
That the King  
money which they had laid out  
until O'Neale should go  
upon the King's entry  
melancholy made him  
as was suitable  
upon such a day  
upon all former mistakes

## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

[74.]

75. the king could [now] look for  
 76. which [his majesty] had  
 77. as [God] hath scarce  
 78. a thousand pound[s]  
 80. and concluded [with a desire]  
 87, 88.

88. root out [his majesty's] party; in  
 all other [things]

Vane [was] a man

89. and appeared [appear] willing  
 90. which [might] be necessary  
 91. [besides] three or four  
 93. lest it [should be] corrupted  
 republican party  
 94. to hinder [the garrison there]  
 95. [but] that the force  
 disunion. [He added] that he  
 96. lord of Ormond [were] so rough  
 98. fidelity to him [self Cromwell]  
 more depended  
 99. in which [they thought] he would  
 be sure

journey to [his brother]

101. be quickly overrun  
 102. all he cared for [from them]  
 103. [by] which imagination  
 benefit to him [self]  
 to [an] accommodation of peace  
 104. whither their generals [Haslerig  
 and Morley]  
 105. and [it was said] they caused  
 106. [and to] the covenant  
 Sir Harry Vane (*three times*)  
 [and one] whom they had raised  
 107. head[s] of their regiments  
 109, 110.  
 [111] 110. and [had] resumed  
 [112] 111. [had] neither received  
 any government [must] do  
 112.  
 113. possession of the [government]  
 114. courted him [at that time]  
 116. and giving [him] thanks

Now 47.

the King could look for  
 which he had  
 as he hath scarce  
 a thousand pound  
 and concluded  
*Differently divided, having formerly  
 been divided in the middle of a  
 sentence.*

root out his party. In all other  
 matters

Vane being a man

and [he] appeared willing  
 which should be necessary  
 three or four  
 lest it was corrupted  
 republical party  
 to hinder them  
 that the force  
 disunion; that he  
 lord Ormonde were so rough  
 fidelity to him he more depended  
 in which he would be sure

journey to him [his brother]

quickly be overrun  
 all he cared for  
 of which imagination  
 benefit to him  
 to accommodation of peace  
 whither their generals  
 and they caused  
 of the Covenant  
 Sir H. Vane (*three times*)  
 whom they had raised  
 head of their regiments  
*United.*

and resumed

neither received

any government was to do  
*Divided into 111, 112.*

possession of the power

courted him then

and giving thanks

Edit. 1849.

Present Edit.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| 116. his [Monk's] advance [into England]                                       | his advance   |
| 117. delivered to [Fairfax]  | delivered to him [Fairfax]  |
| 119. [and] though his professions most credit [with them] those two members    | though his professions most credit these two members                            |
| 120. under restraint [or absent]   | under restraint   |
| 122. observation he [had] made   | observation he made   |
| 124. This [refusal] would immediately [have] put                               | This would immediately put  |
| 125. deliberated [upon] the matter they [should] be apprehended                | deliberated the matter they might be apprehended                                |
| 131. [and] there can be  | There can be  |
| 133. to his quarter[s] he should think   | to his quarter [he] should think  |
| 133-135.   | <i>Differently divided.</i>   |
| 140. of [such] unreasonable presumption  | of unreasonable presumption   |
| 141. confidence [to his majesty]   | confidence  |
| 143. all he [his majesty had] heard dutiful answer [to it]                     | all he heard dutiful answer   |
| 144. [as] hard measure   | all the hard measure  |
| 145. [his party] having in all places  | that people having in all places  |
| 147. hands of his enemies [of which] he had experience control all his designs | hands of his enemy as he had experience of control all                          |
| 148. all his motion[s]   | all his motion  |
| 149. [Lambert] surprised [saw] his enemy                                       | Surprised he [Lambert] found his enemy  |
| 150. Oakes   | Okey  |
| 151. future counsels   | future councils   |
| 152. the most republican thought [it] not fit or safe to remove [Lawson]       | the most republical thought not fit or safe to remove him                       |
| 153. to the end of the war in love with [monarchy]                             | till the end of the war in love with that government [monarchy]                 |
| 154. of the first opportunity which [it was] reasonably hoped                  | on the first opportunity which were reasonably hoped                            |
| 155. provoked him to [the] engagements [he had been in]                        | provoked him to those engagements   |
| 156. the other person [admiral]  | the other person  |
| 157. the affections of the persons   | the affections of that place from whence, and of the persons                    |
| 158-161.   | <i>Differently divided, 159 formerly beginning in the middle of a sentence.</i> |

*Edit. 1849.**Present Edit.*

|  |  |
|--|--|
| 158. Lambert's invasion [upon the parliament]  | Lambert's invasion   |
| [159.] [This], together with<br>end to all [his doubts]  | which, together with<br>end to all the rest  |
| [160] 159. in his [majesty's] power  | in his power   |
| [161] 160. safe for them [then]<br>and therefore [it wera best]<br>to acquiesce  | safe for them<br>and therefore to acquiesce  |
| 161. [or uniformity] in the public exercise  | and in the public exercise   |
| 162. and [he] had been always<br>consulted freely [touching] all<br>so loudly of [them]<br>danger of naming [the king] | and had been always<br>consulted freely all<br>so loudly of it<br>danger of naming him             |
| 163. made in all [counties]<br>[as to] leave   | made in all countries<br>that they might leave   |
| 165. [he] had been obliged   | had been obliged   |
| 168. and [that,] for the public satisfaction   | and, for the public satisfaction   |
| 169. effects of the animosities<br>which [they thought] would  | effects of the several animosities<br>which would  |
| 171. and [had] their lands confiscated<br>as [their enemies] had<br>[Then] the complying<br>[had] sat as judges        | and their lands confiscated<br>as they [their enemies] had<br>[and] the complying<br>sat as judges |
| 172. declaration[s]  | declaration  |
| 174. detestation [of]  | detestation  |
| 179. As soon as [his majesty] came<br>was [about] the midway   | And as soon as he came<br>was the midway   |
| 180. and the [other letters with the]<br>Declaration   | and the Declaration  |
| 187. to make [the] king and people   | to make King and people  |
| 189. solicitous to redeem [it]   | solicitous to redeem   |
| 191. [have] been such  | hath been such   |
| 198. than that you are again   | than that we hear you are again  |
| 200. And we do earnestly desire<br>into your and their hearts  | And we do very earnestly desire<br>in your and their hearts  |
| 201. revolutions of late happened  | revolutions which of late have hap-<br>pened   |
| 202. without effusion of blood   | without further effusion of blood  |
| 203. of those our condescensions<br>in that particular   | of these our condescensions<br>in particular   |
| 204. The [two] gentlemen   | The gentlemen  |
| 206 were signed by all the considerable<br>persons   | were signed in [that, MS. 'the']<br>name, and signed by all the con-<br>siderable persons          |

## Edit. 1849.

## Present Edit.

207. was [allotted] to every man  
who were of that [province]  
out of their lands
208. wished [for] a safe opportunity to  
do him [his majesty] service
209. [He] sent over  
the state [in Ireland]
210. most men [about the court]
211. [he] pressed the acceptation  
the designs [it was laid for]
213. and [probably] had malice
214. the house [of commons] was pos-  
sessed of  
but [made] haste  
were [likewise] transported  
he [the general] managed
215. conditions of security [agreed on]  
[they] said they had proceeded
216. of [the]  $\frac{1}{4}$ th
217. [it] having been only
218. rather trust[ing] to your people
219. [and] the true protestant  
[would] restore your majesty
222. unanimously proclaim  
most humbly and faithfully do
223. [Even] before the general
224. desired that he [the king]
225. all the while [before]
230. the same invitation by [that  
lord]
231. invited by [the ministers of these]  
two great kings  
[had been] suffered to pass
232. who made demonstrations  
all this [was] before
234. and [providing] for the accommo-  
dation
235. [in the beginning of] May
236. provided for his [entertainment]  
at the States' charge
240. had [had] too great a hand
241. [they] having very rarely
242. They [entreated] to be admitted
243. said [that] he had heard
- was assigned to every man  
who were of that place  
out of their land
- wished a safe opportunity to do him  
service
- and sent over  
the State
- most men
- pressed the acceptation  
the designs
- and had malice
- the House was possessed of
- but make haste  
were transported  
he managed
- conditions of security  
and said they had proceeded
- of  $\frac{1}{4}$ th
- having been only
- rather trust to your people
- the true Protestant
- restore your majesty
- unanimously [acknowledge and] pro-  
claim
- do most humbly and faithfully  
Before the general
- desired that he
- all the while
- the same invitation by him
- invited by two great kings  
suffered to pass
- who made the first demonstrations  
all this before
- and taking care for the accommo-  
dation
- upon [Friday] the [fourteenth] day  
of May
- provided for his reception  
at the State's charge
- had too great a hand  
and having very rarely
- They desired to be admitted
- said he had heard.

*Edit. 1849.*

244. and [had never discontinued it]  
[he] told them plainly
245. That day he [his majesty]
246. the concourse [was] so great  
giving loud thanks [to God]
247. all those wounds

*Present Edit.*

- and would never discontinue it  
and [he] told them plainly
- That day he
- the concourse so great  
giving loud thanks
- all these wounds



## A P P E N D I X.

[See Preface.]

### BOOK I.

1. The alteration of the first line from its original form, 'If for no other reason, yet lest,' (which is noticed by Ranke, *History of England*, Oxford translation, vol. vi, p. 8), is shown in the facsimile, which forms the frontispiece to this volume.

158. The words respecting lord Littleton, 'been too much a solicitor—cause to defend,' are substituted for the following: 'been the most barefaced bawd for the prostitution of his brethren that any age hath brought up in that robe.'

166, note, 1. 'and at that time thought': *orig.*, 'and I believe.'

### BOOK II.

88. After the words 'earl of Northumberland, the general,' the following passage is struck out, and the remainder of the section is substituted in the margin—'and no less by an equal sickness of the earl of Strafford, who by that means was kept in London, and so the army in Ireland wanting his presence and authority, though nothing was left unperformed by the earl of Ormonde that could possibly be expected. If the earl of Northumberland's absence had been as well supplied here, the motion and growth of the enemy had been better marked and prevented. Upon the first sickness of the general, the lord Conway (as a man equal to the greatest design) was sent with all the horse towards Barwick, a good body of foot (which was likewise subject to his command) being sent to Newcastle. The first intelligence that came from him was an assurance of being well provided to attack the enemy if he should advance, and after that, frequent undertaking, upon sure intelligence, that the Scots could not be in a condition to advance that year, which is probable made the posture of those parts less considered. The continuance of the earl of Northumberland's sickness at London, and of the unactivity of the lord Conway in

the north, forced the King to enter upon a new consideration of putting some person of command in the head of his army; and thereupon the earl of Strafford, who was not yet freed from his sickness, nor long after from the dregs of it, was constituted by commission from the earl of Northumberland lieutenant-general of the whole forces (for I do not believe that employment was originally intended to him, but only the command of the army in Ireland, to which two thousand foot and five hundred horse were to be added out of England); but before he could arrive with the army, that infamous irreparable rout' [&c. *as in* § 89.]

95. The words 'was never known' are substituted by a secretary's hand for 'I have never been informed.'

98. After the words 'countenance of that whole party,' the words 'for which I could never find the least prudential motive' are struck out.

108. This section originally began thus:—'These commissioners being met at Rippon by men of an inferior quality, (for as, I remember, there was only the lord Lowden of the nobility) Mr. Henderson and some of the clergy and a citizen or two being part, a treaty was with great formality entered into, and after some few days, in which a cessation was made, and five and thirty (*altered to fifty*) thousand pounds a month agreed upon to be paid to the Scots for the support of their army in the quarters wherein they then were, the treaty was adjourned to London, and a safe conduct granted to the Scotch commissioners to repair thither, without which they could never have been able to have gone through their great work. This being done, and as much more agreed upon as was necessary till their next meeting, the lords return to York, and his majesty towards London, all preparations being for the Parliament, which was to commence so speedily.'

119. 'And it is very probable': *orig.*, 'And I am persuaded.' 'I say it is probable': *orig.*, 'I say I am persuaded.'

123. 'insomuch as many': *orig.*, 'insomuch as I myself spake with many.' 'then did (or ever after)': *orig.*, 'then did (and I verily believe yet do not).'

125. 'nor was there — gracious acceptance': *orig.*, 'for I yet never heard of any proposition made by them at the first or second treaty at Rippon which was not for the matter fully consented to: whereas if their lordships had been fully advertised of the whole truth, of the ground and motives of sending that book, and of the care and circumspection in the forming and commending it to them; that the cautions were but the injunctions and articles (that is, faithfully for the matter taken out of them) of their own Assembly's; that the High Commission was settled by Act of

Parliament; that all their petitions and addresses had found most gracious acceptance —.

127. The following lines are struck out after the words, 'name of their nation,' the second book having originally ended here. '—there needs no observation how prejudicial this last oversight proved in many particulars. And this shall suffice for the introduction to this History, which is to begin from the beginning of the Parliament which was now at hand.'

### BOOK III.

20. After the words 'whom they were to protect' the following lines are struck out:—'and else, though they made great show, and had great use of that appearance, of great fury against the Papist[s], they did intend really to do no public act of disfavour to them (as from that time to this the chief agents of them kept strict correspondence with some priests about London,) and so would not pursue the enquiry too strictly what had been done in their behalf; or it may be, they thought it more suitable to their dignity to proceed rigorously upon misdemeanours which were not before too well understood, and by rules of their own making, than upon known crimes, and by ordinary courses, in which other men might be as wise as themselves.'

47. 'The damage was not to be expressed, and the ruin': *orig.*, 'The damage, (that is too light a word) the ruin.'

104. 'amongst them the lord Littleton': *orig.*, 'amongst others one who is since dead.'

107. 'extrajudicial determination': *orig.*, 'extraordinary determination.'

225. 'a free communication': *orig.*, 'an idle and extravagant communication.'

### BOOK IV.

130. After the words 'brought upon them,' the following lines are struck out:—'And eleven of them (relying upon his great judgment and experience in the course and forms of Parliament) signed a parchment he sent to them, which he delivered on Thursday the thirtieth of December to the King as a protestation of the bishops against the freedom of the Parliament; the proceedings upon it being so extraordinary, and the Church receiving so great a blow by an act that posterity, without well weighing all circumstances and humours, will hardly censure, it will not be amiss to set down the instrument itself in terms, which was this.' [Then follows the protest.]

141. The following section is struck out, for the substitution of the parallel passage from the *Life*.

'The King no sooner received this protestation from the hands of the archbishop at Whitehall than (conceiving he had very well considered of the consequence of it) he delivered it to a lord presently, to be presented and entered into the House; which was no sooner done than those lords who were the most mortal and implacable enemies expressed great joy, and said 'this was *digitus Dei*,' and that God had brought that about by the bishops themselves which all their skill could not compass; and immediately they sent to the Commons for a conference upon a matter of very great concernment and importance to the peace of the kingdom, at which conference they only read the instrument, said it was that morning presented to the King, and by his majesty sent to the House, and so delivered it to the Commons to be considered of, without delivering any opinion at all, which they knew they needed not to do. It was no sooner read in the House of Commons than several speeches were made of their transcendent presumption, which they could never have been guilty of except they had been sure of good seconds; that without doubt there was a design to dissolve the Parliament, of which this protestation against the freedom of it, and that all acts done in their absence were null, as if the bishops were so essential a part of a Parliament that it could not consist without them, was but a forerunner; that the dissolution of this Parliament would inevitably prove the destruction of the three kingdoms of England, Scotland, and Ireland; and therefore they resolved to accuse them of high treason. Which was done accordingly the same day, and thereupon the twelve bishops sent for to the House of Peers, and presently committed to the Tower of London, the tumults having left the Houses that morning, as soon as they heard of the more powerful engine to compass their ends, the protestation.'

144. 'that they were committed to prison than that they durst not then sit in the House': *orig.*, 'that they cannot sit in that House now than that they durst not then.'

145. 'insomuch as in the whole debate in the House of Commons': *orig.*, 'insomuch as in the four hours' debate in the House of Commons which would prove the most infallible way of destroying them

In 237, 238, and 239 the lines relating to the Tower of London are struck out.

# INDEX.

The Roman numerals refer to the books, the Arabic figures to the sections.

## A.

- Aachen : *see* Aix-la-Chapelle.  
Abbot, George, archbishop of Canterbury; his death, i. 185, 188. unfavourable character of him, 185, 187. his remissness, 198.  
Aberdeen, flourishing state of its university, i. 172.  
Abergavenny, the King there, ix. 67.  
Abingdon, vi. 125, 155. vii. 45, 49. viii. 15, 26, 37, 46, 47, 50, 73 *n.*, 113, 120, 123 *n.*, 124, 129, 164, 165 *n.*, 279. quitted by the King's forces, viii. 38. and occupied by the earl of Essex, 39. unsuccessfully attacked by the King's forces, 45.  
Ablin, Jacob, vii. 347.  
Aboyne, John Gordon, lord, accused the duke of Hamilton of treason, vii. 369 *n.* 4.  
Achish, vii. 312.  
Acland, sir John, vii. 103.  
Acton, Cheshire, vii. 403.  
Acton, Middlesex, vi. 134, 136. vii. 255 *n.*  
Ælian cited, vii. 291.  
Agitators in the army, x. 83, 122, 136, 140, 147. xi. 195, 210, 221, 227. xiv. 42, 48. xv. 133. *See* Levellers.  
*Agreement of the People*, the, xi. 210. xii. 8.  
Aix-la-Chapelle [Acen, Aquisgrane], xiv. 106, 107, 110. xvi. 62. here the king of the Romans ought to receive his first iron crown, xiv. 105. famous for its hot baths, *ib.* Charles II and his sister go there, *ib.*  
Alberquerque, duke of, xiii. 17.  
Albert, archduke, i. 104. viii. 122.  
Alcavendas, Spain, xii. 85. xvi. 51.  
Alcibiades, vi. 42.  
Aldermaston, Berks, viii. 127, 129.  
Alexander VII, pope, xiv. 120, 121, 122. xv. 152. xvi. 64-5.  
Algiers, an Act of Parliament concerning the captives of, v. 85. forced by admiral Blake to submit to conditions, xv. 9, 12, 23, 26.  
Allen, captain, xii. 111.  
Alonzo, don : *see* Cardenas.  
Alresford, battle at, viii. 14, 137. xiv. 138.  
Altar; the word 'enviously' used, iii. 56.  
Altinius, Cassius, vii. 310, 312.  
Alton, hattle at, viii. 9, 12.  
Ambassadors' houses searched for priests, iv. 41 *n.*  
Amboyna, xiv. 33.  
America : *see* New England.  
Amesbury, viii. 1 *n.*  
Amsterdam, iv. 352. v. 323. vii. 347. xi. 130. xii. 48. xiii. 108, 165. xvi. 241.  
Amyrault, Moses, xiii. 133.  
Anabaptists, v. 441 *n.* 4. vi. 24, 161, 200, 204, 217, 234, 357. x. 106, 122, 162, 174. xi. 44. xiv. 1. xvi. 152. address to Charles II in exile, xv. 103. their propositions annexed to it, 118.

- Anderton, — iv. 204 n.
- Andover, Waller defeated there, viii. 149, 150.
- Andrewes, Lancelot, bishop of Winchester, i. 186.
- Andrews, Thomas, sheriff of London, vi. 143, 145.
- Anglesey, ix. 120. xi. 41.
- Anne, daughter of Charles I, x. 115 n.
- Anne of Austria: *see* queen of France.
- Annesley, — iii. 111.
- Annesley, Arthur, afterwards first earl of Anglesey, president of the council of state, xvi. 143.
- Antelope*, the, a ship, xi. 150. xiv. 71.
- Antinomians, x. 162.
- Antrim, Randal Macdonnel, second earl of, married the widow of the duke of Buckingham, viii. 264. his character, *ib.* joined the Irish rebels, *ib.* afterwards comes to the King at Oxford, 265. has great acquaintance with the earl of Montrose, *ib.* undertakes an expedition from Ireland in concert with Montrose into Scotland, 265-278. made a marquis, 277. hoped to be made lord lieutenant of Ireland through the Queen's favour, x. 154.
- Antwerp, i. 130. xii. 38, 48, 49, 53, 57, 103 n. xiii. 31, 46, 108, 178. xiv. 111 [119 n.], 142. xv. 20. xvi. 176, 177, 179, 180.
- Appleby castle surrendered to the Parliament, xi. 96.
- Appledore, Devonshire, vii. 197.
- Appleyard, sir Matthew, ix. 33.
- Apprentices, iv. 204 n. a petition in their name against papists and prelates, iv. 105. v. 23, 187. invited by the Parliament to take arms, vi. 103. a tumultuous petition of them and others to both Houses concerning the militia, x. 108. they rise, but are suppressed by Hewson, xvi. 105.
- Apsley, sir Allen, ix. 20 n., 43.
- Aquisgrane: *see* Aix-la-Chapelle.
- Arcos, duke of, xii. 105.
- Ardglass, earl of: *see* lord Cromwell.
- Argyle, Archibald Campbell, seventh earl of, being a Roman Catholic, is compelled by the King to give up his estates to his son, and retires beyond sea, ii. 58. warns the King against him, *ib.*
- Argyle, Archibald Campbell, eighth earl of, vi. 112. viii. 265. x. 159. xi. 11, 15, 16, 42, 43, 46, 91, 94, 100, 153 n. xii. 125, 130, 132, 133, 134, 143. xiii. 7, 19, 20, 23, 58, 108, 138. sides with the Covenanters notwithstanding his obligations to the King, ii. 58. transactions in Scotland respecting him, Montrose, and Hamilton, iv. 15 n., 20. made a marquis, 22, 46. head of the violent party, vii. 404. hated and contemned by the marquis of Montrose, viii. 263. xii. 142. his principles and politics, ix. 4. his conduct with regard to the Scotch Parliament of 1648, xi. 9, 13. supposed to have invited Cromwell into Scotland, 98. whom he welcomed there, 98, 99. was master of Scotland, 101. was the creature of Cromwell, 158. his part in the Scottish affairs of 1649, xii. 6-10, 21. clogs the proclaiming Charles II with a clause for the Covenant, 12. his object in so doing, 12, 13, 21. his reasons for inviting the King into Scotland, 118, 125. sends fresh conditions, which miss the King, xiii. 1. receives him respectfully, 3. his behaviour to him, 5. his power on the decline, 47. the King escapes from him, 48. he treats the King better after his return, *ib.* displeased at the King's favouring Hamilton and Lauderdale, 49. made to believe that the King would marry one of his daughters, 50. dissuades the King's marching into England, 53.
- Argyle, ninth earl of: *see* lord Lorne.
- Arians, x. 162.
- Aristotle quoted, iv. 305.
- Armagh, archbishop of: *see* Usher.
- Arminian points, contentions concerning, i. 194-5.
- Arminians, x. 162.
- Arminius, Jacobus, i. 195, 196. vii. 410.
- Armorer, sir Nicholas, xiv. 136.

Armorer, sir William, xii. 18. xiii. 80. [xiv. 145 n.] xvi. 178.

Army. The King raises an army against the Scots, ii. 25. discovery of an alleged army-plot, iii. 167. the petition intended to be subscribed by the officers, 170. the meeting thereupon, and proceedings on its discovery, 171-178, 218, 223-229. proceedings about the disbanding the Scottish and English armies, 232. iv. 1, 4. the armies disbanded, iv. 14. differences between the Parliament and army, through Cromwell's instigation, x. 79. divers sects increase in the army, *ib.* Cromwell the real head of the army, 81. the army erects a kind of parliament within itself, 82. agitators, as well as a council of officers, appointed by the army, 83. their first resolutions, *ib.* the Parliament's declaration thereupon, 87. afterwards rased out of their journal book, *ib.* a committee of the Parliament appointed to treat with a committee of the army, *ib.* Cromwell's behaviour at first in these mutinies, 88. the army seize upon the King, 90-2. alarm of Parliament upon notice of the army's coming towards London, 92. different designs of the Parliament and army relating to the King, 101-2. the army wholly disposed to Cromwell's designs, 104. impeached eleven members of the House of Commons, 105. the two Speakers of Parliament, with other members, join the army on Hounslow-heath, 108-110. the city submits, 112. Fairfax brings back the Speakers and other members, 113. the army quarters upon the city, 114. begins to be less regardful of the King, 122, 125. Levellers grow up in the army, 126, 140. the Large Remonstrance of the army to the Parliament, xi. 184, 202. another declaration of the army to them, 204. Fairfax marches to London, *ib.* consultations among the officers about the King, 224-7. the

army desires the Parliament to dissolve, xiv. 3, 4. a new council of officers, who consult about the government, xvi. 6. their address to Richard Cromwell, *ib.* who at their instigation dissolves the Parliament, 11. the Long Parliament restored by them, 12. which appoints all military commissions to be signed by their Speaker, 20. petition and proposals of Lambert's army, 79-80. the council of officers prepare a petition to Parliament, 81. the Parliament makes void all money acts, that there may be nothing to maintain the army, 82. cashiers Lambert and eight other officers, and appoints seven commissioners to govern the army, *ib.* Lambert prevents the Parliament from sitting, 84-5. the officers appoint certain general officers, 86. a committee of safety constituted by the army, 90. Cobbett sent to persuade Monck to concur with the army, and another sent to the army in Ireland, 92. Monck declares for the Parliament, 94. Lambert sent against him, *ib.* several troops declare for the Parliament, 104, 107, 110. Lambert's army is dissolved, 110. Charles II's letter to general Monck and the army, 181-192. their glad reception of it, 214.

Arny, sir William, one of the committee sent with the King into Scotland, iii. 255. one of those sent by Parliament to treat with him at Oxford, vi. 318, 369. one of the commissioners sent by Parliament into Scotland for relief, vii. 135.

Arpos, vii. 310.

Arragon, xvi. 68.

Arran, Isle of, xiii. 2.

Arras, account of the siege of, xv. 136.

Array, commissions of, attempted to be revived by Charles I, v. 364.

Arundel, Thomas Howard, earl of, ii. 48. v. 48. vi. 401. vii. 369 n. 6. his character, i. 118, 119. married one of the heiresses of the earl of Shrewsbury, 119. purchased sta-

- tues, &c., in Italy, i. 119. general of the army against the Scotch Covenanters, *ib.* ii. 25. how he received their letter to him, 44. made Lord Steward, 66. not employed in the second expedition to Scotland, 81. presided at Strafford's trial, iii. 101. died in Italy, i. 119. his religion doubtful, *ib.*
- Arundel, earl of: *see* lord Mowbray.
- Arundel, (Alethea Talbot,) countess of, i. 119.
- Arundel of Wardour, Thomas, lord, wounded at Lansdown, vii. 109.
- Arundel, John, of Trerice, governor of Pendennis, vi. 244, 397. vii. 121 *n.*, 390. ix. 147, 152, 158. x. 73. his daughter, vii. 121 *n.*
- Arundel, John, his son, vii. 121 *n.*
- Arundel, colonel Richard, another son, afterwards lord Arundel of Trerice, vii. 121 *n.* ix. 105, 147. x. 73. xiv. 143. xvi. 26.
- Arundel castle, taken by lord Hop-ton, vii. 401 *n.* viii. 3, 6. retaken by sir W. Waller, vii. 401 *n.* viii. 10, 12.
- Arundels, the, x. 77.
- Ascham, Anthony, sent agent into Spain by the Parliament, xiii. 8, 9. killed by some officers at Madrid, 10, 25. what was done in consequence, 11-16.
- Asculum, vii. 131.
- Ashburnham, colonel, v. 432, 437, 441 *n.* 2. vi. 7, 245, 246, 249. viii. 281, 432 *n.* *sæpe*. ix. 20 *n.* 48. concerned in the alleged army-plot, iii. 192 *n.*, 224, 225, 226. iv. 4. v. 440 *n.* governor of Weymouth, viii. 60. quitted it upon the approach of the earl of Essex, *ib.*
- Ashburnham, John, ix. 164. x. 12 *n.*, 22, 46, 115. sent to lord Deincourt for money, vi. 59, 60. one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, viii. 211. entirely trusted by the King, x. 22, 130. attended him when he rendered himself to the Scottish army, 33. being forbidden to attend the King, he went to Paris, 21, 36, 51 *n.* his return, 97. not favoured by the Queen, *ib.* his and sir J. Berkeley's transactions with some officers in the army, x. 98-100, 122, 125. confers with and depends upon Cromwell, 115, 134; how far concerned in the King's leaving Hampton Court, and putting himself into the hands of col. Hammond, 127-134, 136. wrote an apology for his conduct, 134. he and sir J. Berkeley became enemies in consequence of this business, 133. acquitted both by Charles I and Charles II of any treasonable intentions in the matter, *ib.* his marriage, 132.
- Ashburton, Devon, ix. 106, 107. lord Wentworth's horse beaten at, ix. 117.
- Ashby-de-la-Zouch, vi. 275. ix. 42.
- Ashley, colonel sir Bernard, at the siege of Bristol, vii. 127. wounded there, 133. viii. 155.
- Ashley or Astley, sir Jacob, afterwards lord, iv. 2, 14. v. 4, 169, 193. vi. 1, 74. vii. 201 *n.* viii. 5, 46, 48, 109. ix. 161. made major-general of the King's foot, v. 375, 441 *n.* 3. wounded at Edge-hill, vi. 94. governor of Plymouth, vii. 290. takes possession of Reading, vii. 212, 237. much consulted by the King on military affairs, viii. 28. his character, 32. at the second battle of Newbury, 157. made a baron, ix. 37. his part in the battle of Naseby, 37, 39. the command of the *posse comitatus* of the Welsh counties given to him, 71, 161. defeated near Stow-on-the-Wold, ix. 146. x. 31.
- Ashton, colonel, executed in 1658, xv. 102.
- Assembly of divines, 1642, iv. 72. v. 135. vi. 231. vii. 23, 52, 175, 263, 414. viii. 186, 226. ix. 163. x. 123, 162. xiv. 51.
- Assembly of the Kirk of Scotland: *see* Scotland. 4
- Assizes forbidden by Parliament to be held in Lent term, 1643, vi. 378-380.
- Association of eastern counties formed under the earl of Manchester, viii. 18. association in the west, of which the prince of Wales is made governor, 256.
- Astley: *see* Ashley.



- Aston, lord, his death, ii. 52.
- Aston, sir Arthur, vii. 24, 121 *n.* made colonel-general of the King's dragoons, vi. 74. a papist, 75, 287. his part in the battle of Edge-hill, 82, 85. made commissary-general of the horse, 155. and governor of Reading, 126 *n.*, 155. besieged there and wounded, vii. 28, 38 *n.* of much greater reputation than he deserved, 38 *n.*, 121 *n.* believed not to be so badly wounded as he pretended, 42. made governor of Oxford through the Queen's influence, viii. 121. unfavourable account of him, *ib.* his hatred of colonel Gage, 122. loses his leg by an accident, 165. pensioned and discharged from service, in consequence, *ib.* endeavours to hinder Gage's appointment as his successor, *ib.* governor of Tredagh, xii. 74.
- Athens, v. 284.
- [Atherton Moor, the battle of, vii. 135 *n.*]
- Atkins, sergeant, vi. 231.
- Attorney-general usually advanced to be Keeper of the Great Seal, i. 96. not usual for him to be a member of Parliament, iii. 82.
- Aubigny, George Stewart, lord d', fell at Edge-hill, vi. 88 *n.*, 89. vii. 61. xi. 222. a suspicion that he was killed by one of his own officers, vi. 88 *n.*, 91. notice of him, *ib.* his son succeeded as duke of Richmond, *ib.*
- Aubigny, Catherine Howard, lady d', vii. 42. concerned in the design of Mr. Waller and Mr. Tomkins, 61, 65, 72. imprisoned by the Parliament in consequence, 64. xi. 222. and would have been put to death had she not escaped to Oxford, *ib.* married lord Newburgh, 221-2. escaped afterwards to the Hague, xii. 19. where she died, 22. her character, and share in the King's affairs, 20.
- Auboyne : *see* Ahoyno.
- Auburn Chase, battle there, vii. 207-8.
- Augier, or Aulgier, R., an agent of the Parliament in France, vi. 176.
- Aumigeu, John, signed the Levelers' address to Charles II, xv. 118.
- Austria, archduke of: *see* Leopold.
- Aviliaua, princess of, married the duke of Medina de las Torres, xii. 107.
- Avon, river, viii. 50, 53, 55.
- Axtell, colonel, xvi. 150.
- Aylesbury, vi. 322. vii. 122, 204. viii. 58 *bis.* xiv. 136.
- Aynho, vi. 98.
- Ayscue, sir George, takes or sinks thirty sail of the Dutch merchants, xiii. 163. fights the Dutch fleet near Plymouth, *ib.* Scilly delivered up to him, 173.

## B.

- Bacon, Francis, judge in K. B., vi. 231. vii. 317.
- Badajoz, xii. 105.
- Baggot, colonel, made governor of Lichfield by prince Rupert, vii. 34.
- Bagshot, Surrey, viii. 139. the King there, xi. 221-3.
- Bainton : *see* Baynton.
- Baker, colonel, taken prisoner at Cropredy-bridge, viii. 66.
- [Balcanquall, Walter, iv. 43 *n.*]
- Balcarras, Alexander Lindsay, lord, afterwards earl of, desired Hyde's removal from Charles II, xiv. 63. urges the King to go to Scotland, 108.
- Balfour, sir William, [lieutenant of the Tower, iii. 200 *n.*]. dismissed by Charles I from being lieutenant of the Tower, iv. 101, 147. how the House of Commons took his dismissal, 102. observations on his discharge, 147. in command of the Parliament horse at the battle of Edge-hill, vi. 79 *and n.*, 81, 92. vii. 75. reminded by the earl of Lindsey of his obligations to the King, 92. ordered to observe sir W. Waller's commands, viii. 9. present with him at the battle of Alresford, 13. escapes with Essex's horse through the King's army in Cornwall, viii. 96 *n.*, 115, 131.
- Ball, sir Peter, one of the commis-

- sioners for the county of Devon, ix. 17. desires that lord Goring should be lieut.-gen. to the Prince, 20. concerned in the design of a petition to the Prince to propose peace, 82 n.
- Ballard, colonel, v. 446 n.
- Balthazer, colonel, xv. 24.
- Baltic, the, xiv. 27.
- Bampfild, or Bampford, colonel, notice of, viii. 10. desires to become governor of Arundel castle, *ib.* aids the escape of the duke of York beyond sea, xi. 19, 20. made groom of his bedchamber, 21. indignant at sir J. Berkeley being made the duke's governor, *ib.* concerned in the factions in the Prince's fleet at Helvoetaluys, 33-35, 127. dismissed from attendance on the duke, for infusing into him a desire to command the fleet, 141.
- Bampfild: see Bampfild.
- Banbury castle, v. 441 n. 2. vi. 79 n., 80, 83, 155, 274, 278, 283, 397. vii. 49, 204. viii. 26, 63, 162. ix. 122, 132. xii. 151. taken by the King, vi. 98, 99, 101. besieged by col. Fiennes, viii. 148. relieved by the earl of Northampton, 152.
- Bancroft, Richard, archbishop of Canterbury, eulogium of, i. 186.
- Banks, sir John, vi. 231, 396. Attorney-general, made C. J. Common Pleas, iii. 82. an idea of making him Keeper of the Great Seal, v. 209. notice of his character, *ib.* vi. 396. signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. his house, Corfe castle, defended by his lady, vii. 191.
- Barbados, xiv. 134. xv. 9. xvi. 78. delivered up to the Parliament forces, xiii. 172.
- Barclay, Rob., one of the Scottish commissioners at Uxbridge, viii. 211.
- Bard, sir Henry, governor of Campdon house, ix. 32.
- Barebone, Praise-God, a leather-seller, an eminent speaker in the Parliament which was named after him, xiv. 15. presents a petition to Parliament from the fanatics, xvi. 127. for which they are thanked, 128.
- Barnet, Hertfordshire, xiv. 61.
- Barnstable, vii. 194, 196. ix. 22, 27, 43, 44, 48, 49-53, 57-60, 63, 66, 75, 103, 113, 117, 139. yielded to colonel Digby, vii. 197. viii. 147.
- Barrow, col., sent into Ireland by the Committee of Safety, xvi. 92.
- Basing, Hants, viii. 34.
- Basing-house, the seat of the marquis of Winchester, attempt to surprise it, viii. 139. besieged, but relieved by col. Gage, viii. 123-130. again besieged and relieved, 148, 153, 164. taken by Cromwell, ix. 162.
- Basingstoke, Hants, viii. 123 n., 129.
- Bassadonna, Pietro, Venetian ambassador at Madrid, xii. 94. xiii. 10, 11, 14, 27.
- Basset, sir Arthur, governor of the Mount in Cornwall, ix. 158.
- Basset, sir Thomas, major-general of the Cornish foot, vii. 88, 127.
- Bastile, the, vii. 299.
- Bastwick, John, M.D., his prosecution in the Star-chamber, i. 197. iii. 57 n., 60. his character, iii. 57 n., 60. punished for libelling, 62. petitions on his behalf, 63. entry into London on his release from prison, 57 n., 64. taken prisoner by the King at Leicester, v. 418-9.
- Bath, vi. 3. vii. 101-105, 110, 123. viii. 72. ix. 7 n., 11, 14, 20, 50. the King and prince Rupert there, viii. 159.
- Bath, Henry Bouchier, fifth earl of, iii. 159. signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. sent with the marq. of Hertford into the West, 385. committed to prison by the Parliament, vi. 36. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 n. 6.
- Bath and Wells, bishop of: see Pierce, Will.
- Batten, captain William, surveyor-general of the navy, made vice-admiral, v. 44, 382. hostile to the King, 44, 378, 382. notice of his rise and character, 377 n. his part in preventing the fleet from

- declaring for the King, *ib.* his ships fire on the Queen at Burlington Bay, vi. 267. dissatisfied at Rainsborough's appointment to be admiral of a fleet, xi. 24. joins the Prince of Wales, is knighted, and made rear-admiral, 36. his appointment not liked by the sailors, 36, 139, 142. his conduct greatly censured, 84. retires with the leave of Charles II, 139.
- Bavaria, Wolfgang William, duke of, i. 37, 67.
- Bayly, major gen., xiii. 52.
- Bayly, — xvi. 139.
- Baynton, Mr. Edward, v. 22.
- Baynton, Sir Edward, vi. 196.
- Bayonne, xii. 81. xvi. 67.
- Beacon Hill, Cornwall, viii. 110.
- Beale, William, dean of Ely, xiii. 27.
- Beauchamp, Henry Seymour, lord, viii. 99, 100.
- Beaufort, duc de, governor of Paris, xiii. 144.
- Beaumont, Anthony *and* Mary, i. 15 *n.*
- [Beaumont, — R. C. priest, xi. 124 *n.*]
- Beauvais, xii. 121. xiii. 36.
- Beckly, colonel, vii. 80.
- Beckwith, — a gentleman of Yorkshire, endeavoured to effect the delivery of Hull to the King, v. 155.
- Bedford, vil. 205. x. 108. taken by prince Rupert, vii. 288.
- Bedford, Francis Russell, fourth earl of, iii. 178, 212 [255 *n.*]. iv. 122. vi. 66 *n.*, 95 *n.*, 410. a commissioner to treat with the Scots at Ripon, ii. 107, 108. his character, iii. 25, 192. Pym wholly devoted to him, 30. St. John intimately trusted by him, 32. sworn a Privy-Councillor, 50. one of the leaders in the House of Lords, 55 *n.* was proposed to be Treasurer, 84, 88. vii. 411. gets St. John made solicitor-general, iii. 85. supported the bill for tonnage and poundage, 88. did not desire alteration in Church government, 144. laboured to save Strafford's life, 160 *n.* conversation with Hyde concerning Strafford and the King's desires, 161-2. desirous of healing the breaches between the King and the people, 175. undertook to save lord Strafford's life, 192. his death and character, 191-2.
- Bedford, William Russell, fifth earl of (afterwards duke of), vi. 239. vii. 184, 186, 187, 246. sent by the Parliament against the marquis of Hertford in Somerset, v. 441 *n.* 2. vi. 7. challenged by him to fight a duel, vi. 33. vii. 185. drives him from thence, vi. 33, 34. at the battle of Edge-hill, 79, 81. goes over to the King, vii. 174, 201 *n.* debate how he should be received, 178-180, 183-5; his reception, 189, 190. sued out his pardon, 245. present with the King at the battle of Newbury, 241, 308 *n.* returns to the Parliament, 248, 308. his estates in Devonshire granted to sir R. Greenville by the King, ix. 62, 63. a member of Magd. Coll., Oxford, vii. 189.
- Bedfordshire, vi. 93, 327. vii. 288. viii. 18, 37.
- Bedingfield, sir Thomas, committed to the Tower by the House of Lords for refusing to defend the Attorney-general, v. 47.
- Beeston castle taken by lord Byron, vii. 401.
- Bellasis, Henry, M.P. for Yorkshire, committed to the Tower in 1640, v. 162. signs the articles of neutrality agreed on in Yorkshire, vi. 257.
- Bellasis, John, afterwards lord, joins, with a regiment, the King at Nottingham, vi. 62 *n.*, 257. present at the siege of Bristol, vii. 128. where he was wounded, 121 *n.*, 133. put in command of York, and the county, 400. defeated and taken by sir T. Fairfax at Selby, *ib.* vii. 415. viii. 201. appointed governor of Newark, ix. 129, 131. ordered by the King to surrender it, x. 34.
- Bellièvre, Nic. fixed upon by Queen Henrietta and card. Mazarine as ambassador into England, x. 18. his instructions, 47. his negotiations at London, and after-

wards at Newcastle with the King, 54-56.  
 Bellingham, — killed at the battle of Edge-hill, vi. 97.  
 Bellingham, sir Henry, xi. 93, 94.  
 Belvoir castle, ix. 128, 131, 132.  
 Benedictines, some privilege granted by Charles II, out of gratitude, to the, xiii. 109.  
 Bennet, sir Henry, secretary to the duke of York, xiii. 40-42. sent envoy to Madrid, xv. 81. mention of him, xvi. 56, 58, 66, 69, 170.  
 Bennett, colonel, vii. 194.  
 Bennett, sir Humphrey, distinguished himself at the second battle of Newbury, viii. 159.  
 [Bentley hall, Staffordshire, xiii. 88 n.]  
 Benyon: *see* Binion.  
 [Bergen-op-Zoom, i. 130 n.]  
 Berkeley, Gloucestershire, vi. 322. ix. 88. the castle taken, ix. 120.  
 Berkeley: *see* Barclay.  
 Berkeley, colonel, wounded and taken prisoner at Chalgrove, vii. 80.  
 Berkeley, sir Charles, ix. 18 [*misprinted* Bonkley], 77 n.  
 Berkeley, George, twelfth lord, one of the committee sent to Charles II at the Hague, xvi. 239.  
 Berkeley, sir John, vii. 294. ix. 27, 61, 63, 64, 76, 92. x. 125. xiii. 40, 121 n. sets out for Holland, being obnoxious to the Parliament, v. 432. but returns, *ib.* sent into the west, 385, 443. joins the marquis of Hertford at Sherborne, vi. 7. sent by him into Cornwall, 33. joined in the command of the western parts, 245, 246. advances with others to Tavistock, 249. overruns Devon, 250. at the battle of Stratton, vii. 88, 89. at the skirmish at Chewton, 101. sent back into Devonshire, 103. besieges Exeter, 151, 192, 193. sends colonel Digby into the north of Devon, 194. reinforces lord Hopton in Hants, vii. 401 n. viii. 1. governor of Exeter, viii. 147. takes command of sir R. Greenville's forces, ix. 15. captures Wellington-house, *ib.* besieges

Taunton, 16. sir R. Greenville hostile to him, 15, 22, 24. his complaints against Greenville, 25. how Greenville had been benefited by him, 61. cause of their animosities, 24, 64. colonel-general of Devon and Cornwall, 25. ordered to carry on the siege of Plymouth, 26, 27, 43, 56, 60. gives it up to Digby, 93. sent by the Prince of Wales to confer with lord Goring, 48. attends the Prince at Barnstaple, 54. after his surrender of Exeter waits upon the Queen at Paris, x. 96. sent by her to the King, *ib.* his and Mr. Ashburnham's transactions with some officers of the army, 98-100, 122, 125, 135. his part in the King's escape from Hampton-court and going to the Isle of Wight, 127-8, 136. some notice of him, 130. wrote an apology for his conduct as to the King's escape, 134. he and Ashburnham became enemies in consequence of this affair, 133. acquitted both by Charles I and II of any treasonable intentions, *ib.* transports himself again into France, *ib.* made governor to the duke of York in the absence of lord Byron, xi. 21. not agreeable to the duke, 33. his conduct in this post, 127. xiii. 122. being superseded by lord Byron, he does not accompany the duke to Brussels, xiii. 41. favoured by the Queen, 122. urges the duke to join the French army, *ib.* claims the Mastership of Wards, 124. Hyde tries to dissuade him, 125, 126. the King denies it him, 126. whereupon he breaks with Hyde, 127. Charles I had not a very good opinion of him, 125. on lord Byron's death has the management of the duke of York's affairs, 148. suggests madlle. de Lengueville for the duke's wife, 149. discussions thereon, 150-1.  
 Berkeley, sir William, governor of Virginia, surrenders it to the Parliament forces, xiii. 173. suffered to remain there as a private man, *ib.*

- Berkeley, sir Robert, judge K. B., committed to the Tower and fined, vii. 262.
- Berkes, the, near Berwick, ii. 38, 51, 123. vi. 393.
- Berkshire, vi. 155, 237, 322. vii. 298. viii. 39.
- Berkshire, Thomas, lord Howard of Charlton, first earl of, ix. 148. a commissioner to treat with the Scots at Ripon, ii. 107. signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. committed to the Tower by the Parliament, vi. 36. notice of his character, 390. made governor of the Prince of Wales, vii. 324. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, 369 n. 6. the King regrets having appointed him his son's governor, viii. 180. at variance with the Prince's council, ix. 18 n., 19, 53 n., 77. jealous of the Prince's intention of going into France, 147. or into Jersey, x. 5. returns into England from Jersey upon the Prince's going into France, 48.
- Berkshire, second earl of: *see* lord Howard of Charlton.
- Berwick. ii. 84. iv. 11, 207 n. vii. 201, 369 n. 7. ix. 123. x. 160, 164, 171. xi. 18, 45, 49, 71, 94. xvi. 94, 103. [*App. vol. vi. p. 293.*] taken by the earl of Essex, ii. 30. *and note to* i. 166. the King encamps near it, ii. 38. taken by sir M. Langdale, xi. 48, 50-1. delivered to the Parliament, 95.
- Betteley, —, executed in 1658, xv. 102.
- Beverly, v. 91, 385, 386, 387, 388, [420 n.], 432, 434 n., 436, 437, 441 n. 2, 443. vi. 3. xi. 231.
- [Beverning, Hieron., ambassador from Holland, xiv. 29 n.]
- Bewdley, vi. 45 n. viii. 54, 55. ix. 43.
- Beza, Theodore, xi. 171.
- Biboni, Franc., Polish ambassador at Madrid, xii. 95.
- Bideford, Devon, vii. 194, 196. surrendered to col. Digby, 197.
- Biffi, Geronymo, minister of the archduke of Innsbruck at Madrid, xii. 97.
- Billeting of soldiers opposed in 1627, i. 87.
- Binion or Benyon, George, disfranchised, imprisoned, and fined by Parliament for contriving the London petition against their settling the militia, v. 51.
- Birmingham, vi. 76. a town 'generally wicked' towards the King, vi. 83. vii. 31. taken by prince Rupert, vii. 31-33.
- Bishops: *see* Episcopacy; Scotland. How their attendance at the earl of Strafford's trial was set aside, iii. 102. wrong in acquiescing, 104. a bill passed by the Commons to take away the bishops' votes, 66, 148. vii. 229. rejected by the Lords, iii. 153. a bill brought into the Commons for extirpating bishops, &c., 155. laid by, 156. revived and committed, 240. laid aside, 231 n., 242. bishops censurable for not advising the King to persist in his refusal to sign the bill condemning the earl of Strafford for treason, 199. abuses in exercise of their power, 258, 260. a new bill in the Commons to take away their votes, iv. 33, 94 n. depending in the House of Lords, 104. the Commons move to address the King to make no more bishops, 35. the bishops intimidated by the mob from attending the House of Lords, 119. assaulted, 129 n., 139. ill-advised by archbp. Williams to protest against the proceedings of the House during their absence, 139. [*App. vol. vi. p. 295.*] their protest, 140. censure of this measure, 145. twelve that subscribed accused of treason by the Commons, and sent to the Tower, 142. [*App. vol. vi. p. 296.*] the bill depriving them of their votes pressed by the Commons, iv. 214. passed by the Lords, 274. passed by the King, 302. notice of the objections to their votes, xvi. 4. the twelve imprisoned bishops bailed by the House of Lords, iv. 312. but re-committed to the Tower by the Commons, *ib.*
- Blackheath, the Kentish royalists' rendezvous at, xi. 56, 57, 59.

- Blague, colonel, governor of Wallingford, vii. 201 n.
- Blake, admiral Robert, [xii. 112 n.] xvi. 153. encounters the Dutch fleet, xiii. 159. takes their fishing boats and guardships, 162. beats their fleet again, 168. appointed one of the three admirals of the fleet in 1653, though not thought to be enough devoted to Cromwell, xiv. 27. the Dutch beaten by this fleet, 28, 31. sent with a fleet in 1655 into the Mediterranean, 7, 9. forces Algiers to submit, 12. burns the fleet of Tunis, *ib.* ordered to watch for the Spanish plate-fleet, 14. captures part of it, 26. Mountague joined in commission with him, *ib.* beats a Spanish fleet at Santa Cruz, 53-6. dies on his way home, 57. his burial and character, *ib.*
- Blake, colonel, vi. 126 n.
- Blandford, Dorsetshire, viii. 60, 148.
- Blavett, —, xii. 81.
- Blay, France, xii. 81.
- Bletchington, Oxfordshire, viii. 47, 50.
- Blunt, sir Charles, viii. 38.
- Boarstall house, Buckinghamshire, retaken by colonel Gage for the King, viii. 58. successfully defended, ix. 34, 36.
- Boconnock, Cornwall, viii. 102, 103, 108, 109, 117, 131, 132.
- Bodmin, vi. 247, 248. vii. 87, 90. viii. 108, 109. ix. [65 n.], 108, 140, 144, 149.
- Bohemia, Elizabeth, Queen of, vi. 95 n. vii. 148. xii. 40. xiv. 129.
- Bois: *see* Boys.
- Boles [Bowles], colonel, killed in an action at Alton, viii. 9.
- Bolingbroke, Oliver St. John, earl of, vi. 93. one of the parliamentary commissioners for the new great seal, vii. 315. one of the few peers who attended Parliament, 369 n. 5, 375.
- Bolton, Lancashire, viii. 73. [xiii. 68 n.]
- Bolton, sir Richard, chancellor of Ireland, [iii. 93 n.] vii. 366.
- Bond, —, of Dorchester, iv. 36.
- Bonkley, sir Charles, *misprint for* Berkeley, *q.v.*
- Bonn, castle of the Elector of Cologne there, xiv. 111.
- Booth, sir George, xvi. 45, 76, 154, 155, 158. undertakes to possess himself of Chester for Charles II, 26. seizes it, 38, 44. issues a declaration, 39. fears that he was premature, 40. Lambert sent against him, 41. who routs his army and takes Chester, *ib.* he escapes, but is taken and sent to the Tower, *ib.* released from prison, and chosen a member of the new Parliament, 151. one of the committee sent to wait on the King at the Hague, 239.
- Bordeaux, Ant. de, French ambassador to England, xiii. 167. xvi. 230.
- Borsel, sir Will., Dutch ambassador at Paris, xiii. 165.
- Borgia, Cæsar, x. 168.
- Borlase, sir John, vii. 366. made a lord justice in Ireland, iv. 41 n. vi. 314.
- [Boscobel, Staffordshire, xiii. 79 n., 86 n.]
- [Bossiney, Cornwall, iii. 5 n.]
- Boston, Linc., v. 434 n., 437.
- Boswell, sir William, the King's resident in Holland, xi. 213.
- Bosworth, Leic., x. 28.
- Boteler, sir William, killed in the battle at Cropredy, viii. 66.
- Boulogne, xvi. 35, 45.
- Bourchier, George, hanged for conspiring to deliver up Bristol to the King, vii. 53.
- Bourdeaux, xii. 81. xvi. 17.
- Bourton-on-the-Water, Worcestershire, viii. 49.
- Bowing at the name of Jesus, complaints against clergy for, iii. 56. forbidden by Parliament, iv. 8.
- Boys, *or* Bois, colonel, governor of Donnington castle, vii. 212. bravely defended it, viii. 113, 151, 161. knighted, 152.
- Boysivon, P. de, French agent in Scotland, vii. 307.
- Brabant, xv. 140, 141.
- Brabant, —, unjustly hung by sir R. Greenville, ix. 55.
- Brabazon, Edward, vii. 366.
- Brachamonte, don Diego de, xii. 108.
- Brackley, Northamptonshire, vii. 205. viii. 63.

- [Bracy, Mary, vii. 85 n.]  
 Bradford, Yorkshire, vi. 261.  
 Bradford-on-Avon, Wilts, vii. 104, 108.  
 Braddock-down, battle of, vi. 248. a skirmish there, vii. 91.  
 Bradshaw, John, made lord president of the court to try King Charles, xi. 220. notice of him, *ib.* his conduct in the trial, 232, 234. and at the trial of lord Capel, 257. to have been excepted from pardon, xii. 45.  
 Braganza, duke of: see Portugal, King of.  
 Brainford, or Brentford, earl of: see Brentford.  
 [Bramhall, J., archbp. of Armagh, iii. 93 n.]  
 Bramston, sir John, chief justice, vi. 76, 231.  
 Braudenburgh, Frederick William, elector of, xiv. 113, 115.  
 Brandon, Charles, duke of Suffolk, ix. 72.  
 Brandon given to col. Gerard, the title of baron, ix. 72.  
 Brecknock, the King there, ix. 72, 73.  
 Breda, xii. 52, 55, 56, 121, 122, 132, xiii. 46. xiv. 106, 129, 137. xv. 140. xvi. 168, 173, 176, 179, 180, 212, 223, 228, 230, 232, 233, 234, 235. the King's letters, &c., from thence, 181 *et seqq.*  
 Brent, sir Nathaniel, a commissioner to reform the university of Oxford, x. 123.  
 Brentford, Middlesex, vi. 126 n., 134-142, 153, 154, 235, 245. vii. 231. x. 111. the battle there, vi. 135. xiv. 50.  
 Brentford, or Brainford, earl of; Ruthven, Patrick, afterwards earl of Brentford, earl of Forth in Scotland, vii. 74 n., 75, 279, 376, 392. viii. 96 n. ix. 106, 133, 148, 376, 388. governor of Edinburgh castle, i. 166 n. ii. 55. made field-marshal, vi. 74. appointed general of the King's army on the death of the earl of Lindsey, 98. unsuccessful at Reading, vii. 35. conducts the siege of Gloucester, 164, 201 n. writes to the earl of Essex, 388.  
 great friendship between him and lord Hopton, viii. 12. was present with him at the battle of Alresford, 13. made earl of Brentford, 28, 94. much consulted by the King on military affairs, 28. his character, 29, 30, 94, 168. present at Cropredy, 64. wounded in the second battle of Newbury, 160. prince Rupert made general in his stead, 163, 168, 258. an ill keeper of secrets, ix. 77.  
 Breton, sir William, M.P. for Cheshire, hostile to the Church, vi. 269. marches into Cheshire, *ib.* fortifies Nantwich, 270. notice of his character and conduct, 272. present at the battle of Hopton-heath, 278. his and sir J. Gell's unreasonable demand for ransom for the earl of Northampton's body, 284. the strength of his forces, vii. 368. joined by sir T. Fairfax, 403.  
 Bretagne, Britany, x. 74. xiv. 68. xvi. 44.  
 Brett, captain Edward, viii. 108.  
 Brett, colonel, vi. 291.  
 Bridgeman [sir Orlando], notices of him, iv. 204 n. vi. 270. viii. 211. one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, viii. 211, 233.  
 Bridgenorth, vi. 75, 76, [351 n.] viii. 54, 55. ix. 120, 121.  
 Bridges, captain, viii. 1.  
 Bridges, major, drowned, viii. 50.  
 Bridgewater, vii. 101. viii. 114, 147. ix. 10, 13, 16-20, 22, 23, 28, 30, 31, 44, 49, 50, 57, 58, 80. x. 75. taken by the marquis of Hertford, vii. 97, 100. retaken by sir T. Fairfax, ix. 68, 100.  
 Brighthelmstone, Sussex, xiii. 105, 108.  
 Brill, Buckinghamshire, vi. 155, 316, 322.  
 Brill, the, xi. 30. given up by King James, i. 144.  
 Bristol, vi. 3, 7, 288, 322. vii. 29, 100, 101 n., 102, 110 *bis*, 118, 138, 151, 152, 156, 157, 158, 163, 164, 176, 177, 181, 188, 191, 199, 200, 201 n., 237, 239, 264 n., 265, 290, 294, 298, 319-21, 368, 369 n. 4, 8, 396, 401 n., 408. viii. 1,

- 42, 72, 86, 89, 148, 180, 254, 257, 258, 279, 286. ix. 6. 7 *n.*, 10, 11, 13-16, 19-21, 23, 28, 42, 44, 49, 57, 66-68, 76, 80, 81, 91, 92, 98, 100, 120, 121, 128, 151. xiii. 90. xvi. 25, 96. a design of giving up the city to prince Rupert discovered, vii. 53, 121 *n.* besieged by him, and surrendered, 121 *n.*, 123-134. xv. 57. The King goes there, viii. 146, 147. prince Rupert appointed governor, and Hopton lieutenant-governor, 147. dismay of Parliament at its loss, 165. the plague there, ix. 43. besieged by Fairfax, 87, 88. delivered up by prince Rupert, 84, 85, 89, 90. Charles II goes there in his escape after the battle of Worcester, xiii. 91.
- Bristol, John Digby, first earl of, i. 79. v. 434 *n.* 3. vi. 6. ix. 27 *n.*, 93. xii. 61. as ambassador extraordinary in Spain negotiated the marriage between prince Charles and the infant, i. 20. duke of Buckingham's reflections against him respecting this match, 38. vi. 388. the real reason of his being recalled from Madrid, i. 39, 41. King James's opinion of him, *ib.* accused of treason and committed to the Tower, 46. v. 48. accuses Buckingham of treason, i. 46. Buckingham quarrels with him in Spain, 75. a commissioner to treat with the Scots at Ripon, ii. 107. sworn a privy-councillor, iii. 50. committed to the Tower by Parliament, v. 52. signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, 346. excepted by Parliament from making their peace on any terms, vi. 50. his dismissal from the King's councils proposed by Parliament, 231. his character, 388. committed to the Tower again, *ib.* signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6. retired into France at the end of the war, vi. 388. summoned from Caen to attend Prince Charles, xi. 23. by whom he was less regarded, owing to Mr. Elliot, xii. 60. died in France, vi. 388.
- Bristol, second earl of: *see* Digby, lord George.
- Broadway, Worcestershire, viii. 50, 56.
- [Broad Windsor, Dorset, xiii. 102 *n.*]
- Broghill, R. Boyle, lord, afterwards first earl of Orrery, x. 153. as president of Munster, was disposed towards Charles II from hatred of Lambert, xvi. 208, 210.
- [Bromyard, Herefordshire, ix. 87 *n.*]
- Brooke, Fulke Greville, first lord, Chancellor of the Exchequer, i. 104.
- Brooke, Robert Greville, second lord, iii. 55 *n.*, 128. iv. 204 *n.* refuses to make the protestation of loyalty at York, ii. 36. *and note to* i. 166. a commissioner to treat with the Scots at Ripon, ii. 107. concurred in the prosecution of Strafford and Laud, iii. 28. a positive enemy to the whole fabric of the Church, 146. governed for the Parliament in Warwickshire, v. 441 *n.* 2. vi. 83. driven thence by the earl of Northampton, 283. mentioned as one whom the King would indict for treason, 441 *n.* 4. certain counties associated against the King under his command, vi. 274. shot in besieging the Close at Lichfield, 276. his character, 277.
- Brooke, Robert Greville, fourth lord, one of the committee sent to wait on Charles II at the Hague, xvi. 239.
- Broughton castle, near Banbury, vi. 79 *n.* taken by the King, 98.
- Browne, colonel, x. 90.
- Browne, major-general, commanded the Parliament garrison at Abingdon, viii. 120, 123 *n.* a stout and vigilant officer, *ib.* one of the committee appointed by Parliament to receive Charles I at Newcastle, x. 70. one of the leading men in the House of Commons, 104. committed to prison by the House, xi. 208.
- Browne, Jeffery, one of the commissioners of trust in Ireland, sent to treat with the duke of Lorrains, xiii. 176.
- Browne, sir John, viii. 157. [xiii. 52 *n.*]



- Browne, Samuel, vi. 231. one of the Parliament commissioners intrusted with the new great seal, vii. 315.
- Browniete, v. 441 n. 4. vi. 24, 161, 200, 204, 217, 234, 357. x. 162.
- Brownrigge, Ralph, made bishop of Exeter, iv. 34.
- Bruce of Kinloss, Edward, lord, slain in a duel with the earl of Dorset, i. 130.
- Bruce, Robert, lord, one of the committee sent to wait on Charles II at the Hague, xvi. 239.
- Bruges, xv. 66, 67, 70, 75, 77, 78, 81, 82, 86, 101, 131, 132, 142. Charles II removes there from Cologne, xv. 20-22.
- Brussels, vi. 176. viii. 122. xi. 251. xii. 15, 49, 50, 51, 53, 57, 59, 108. xiii. 31, 34, 40, 41, 42, 178. xv. 18, 19, 20, 70, 74, 79, 80, 81, 132, 134, 140, 142. xvi. 23, 32, 34, 35, 46, 58, 73, 112, 138, 139, 156, 165, 168, 170, 176, 209, 210, 228, 229, 230, 232.
- Bruton, Somerset, xiii. 30.
- Buck, colonel sir Brutus, at the siege of Bristol, vii. 127. killed there, 121 n., 127, 132. notice of him, 121 n., 132.
- Buckhurst, Thomas Sackville, lord, created earl of Dorset by King James, i. 129. educated his grandchild Edward, *ib.*
- Buckhurst, Richard Sackville, lord, afterwards fifth earl of Dorset, committed to prison by Parliament, vi. 203.
- Buckingham, viii. 70, 71, 95. ix. 36. the King there, viii. 61.
- Buckingham, George Villiers, first duke of, i. 104, 124, 141. iii. 27, 35. iv. 100 n., 127. v. 204. vi. 66, 396. vii. 133. viii. 264. x. 148. xi. 240. xiii. 83. advised the dissolutions of the two first Parliaments of Charles I, i. 9. to escape impeachment, 9, 50. this advice the cause of his murder, 50. his conduct easily accounted for, 10. blasphemously called our Saviour by sir E. Coke, *ib.* his rise, first owing to the handsomeness of his person, 14. which was universally admired, 81. he was a younger son of sir G. Villiers, 14. partly educated in France, 15. succeeded the earl of Somerset as the favourite of James I, 17. made cupbearer to him, 18. his numerous promotions, *ib.* had the disposal of all honours and offices, *ib.* how he dispensed them, *ib.* warden of the Cinque Ports, vi. 395. many thought that James grew weary of him, and would, had he lived, have deprived him of his power, i. 19. this not probable, *ib.* James never well pleased with him after the Prince's journey to Spain, 20, 31, 41. why and how he contrived the journey, 20. this the beginning of the confidence between him and the Prince, 21. his behaviour to the King on this occasion, 19. usually called Stenny by King James, 29, 141. his behaviour to sir Fr. Cottington, who opposed the journey to Spain, 30. behaviour to the earl of Bristol, 75. having offended the King in the breaking off of the Spanish match, he resolves to court the Parliament and people, 34. vi. 409. his account to Parliament of Charles's journey, i. 35. he reflects therein against the earl of Bristol, 38. whom he crushed, vi. 388. was the cause both of the rise and fall of the earl of Middlesex, i. 42, 43. offended King James by the impeachment of the earl, 43. the King's prophetic declaration respecting parliamentary impeachment, i. 44. continues King Charles's favourite after his accession, 45. and has the disposal of every thing, 48. brought Charles's bride from France, 51. general at the descent upon the isle of Rhé, *ib.* his brave conduct there, 65. assassination by Felton, at Portsmouth, 52-60. how the King received the news of his death, 62, 64. his character, 65-88; his respect to his mother, 83, 93. origin of his enmity to the earl of Oxford, 66. occasion of his enmity to sir Fr. Cottington, 67. how far afterwards reconciled, 69. his never

- gaining a true friend a chief cause of his misfortunes, 70. inherited a vast fortune by his wife (Catharine Manners), 71. two particulars most hurtful to his reputation, 73. the first, his engaging King James in a war with Spain, in consequence of his quarrel with Olivarez, 74, 75, 77. the second, his involving him in a war with France, owing to [his passion for the French Queen], 81. these two wars the cause of his ruin, 88. endeavoured to estrange Charles from his wife, 82, 83. an account of a prediction of his death, 89-93. the bishop of Lincoln removed from the Keepership of the Great Seal owing to his displeasure, 96. he made Weston Lord Treasurer, 101. the earl of Manchester rose by his favour, 116. vi. 407. and the earl of Holland, i. 137. and sir D. Carleton, 144. guided by Laud in the disposal of the Church preferment, 145. his cousin married to earl of Manchester, iii. 27. vi. 407. his niece married to lord Howard of Escrick, iv. 17. his daughter married to the duke of Richmond, vi. 384. he sought the friendship of lord Say, but soon cast him off, vi. 409. disfavoured H. Vane the elder, 411. favoured sir R. Greenville, viii. 134-5.
- Buckingham, George Villiers, second duke of, xii. 124. xiii. 49, 58, 83, 138. joins the earl of Holland in his rising, xi. 5, 102. escapes into Holland, 104. the only English person of quality allowed to be about the King in Scotland, xiii. 3. gave himself wholly up to the marquis of Argyle, 47, 58. having broken off his friendship with duke Hamilton and the earl of Lauderdale, 49, 58. commissioned to raise regiments of horse and foot, 58. solicits the King whilst at Worcester to make him general in chief, but is refused, 72.
- Buckingham, Mary Beaumont, countess of, i. 83, 93.
- Buckingham, Catharine Manners, duchess of, i. 71. viii. 264, 277.
- Buckinghamshire, v. 339. vi. 155, 316, 322 *bis*. vii. 74, 80 *n*. viii. 58. xvi. 147, 148. petition to the House of Commons, iv. 200. to the House of Lords, 203. and the King, *ib.*, 210.
- Buckland Monachorum, Devon, ix. 62, 63.
- Bulkeley, Lancelot, archbishop of Dublin, vii. 366.
- Buller, sir Richard, vi. 239, 241, 242.
- Bull-fights at Madrid, xii. 90.
- Bullingbrook: *see* Bolingbroke.
- Bullingdon, *or* Bowlingdon, Green, near Oxford, viii. 162.
- Bunkly, lieutenant-colonel, viii. 129.
- Burford, Oxfordshire, viii. 49, 50, 51, 57. [xii. 151 *n*.]
- [Burgess, col. Roger, xiii. 170 *n*.]
- Burgess, Dr. Cornelius, his influence in Parliament, iv. 33.
- Burgos, xii. 84 *n*, 90 *n*.
- Burgundy, xii. 55, 81.
- Burlacy: *see* Borlase.
- Burleigh-on-the-Hill, ix. 132.
- Burley, captain, refuses to obey the earl of Warwick as admiral, v. 381. stirs up the people in the Isle of Wight for Charles I, x. 145. is condemned and executed, *ib.* xi. 198.
- Burlington Bay, v. 374, 377 *and n*., 378. vi. 266.
- Burrow, Somerset, ix. 57.
- Burton, Henry, his prosecution in the Star-chamber, i. 197. iii. 57 *n*. 62. his character, iii. 61. punished for libelling, 57 *n*., 62. entry into London on release from prison, 57 *n*., 64. his sermon entitled *The Protestation protested*, iv. 104. v. 23, 187, 273.
- Burton-upon-Trent, x. 28, 30.
- Bushell, Browne, executed by Cromwell, xiii. 117.
- Bussy-Rabutin, Roger, xiv. 95.
- Butler, lieutenant-colonel, viii. 117.
- Byron, sir John, afterwards lord, vi. 33, 43, 44, 66 *n*. xi. 51 [185 *n*.] xiii. 123. made lieutenant of the Tower, iv. 102, 147. the House of Commons petition for his removal, 183, 205, 237-8. the House of Lords refusing to join them, 237. his character, *ib.* the

- King dismisses him at his own request, 284. commanded the reserve in the King's army at Edge-hill, vi. 79 *n.*, 82. his part at Roundway-down, vii. 118. at the first battle of Newbury, vii. 234. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6. notice of him as governor of Chester and Shropshire, vii. 401-403. ix. 32. his defeat at Nantwich, vii. 401 *n.*, 403, 415, 416. viii. 201. made governor of the duke of York, xi. 21. gets possession of Anglesey, and disposes North Wales to aid the King in 1648, 41. accompanies the duke of York to the duke of Lorraine at Brussels, xiii. 41. not consulted about the duke's going there, 40. or about his proposed marriage, 42. opposed by sir J. Berkeley, 122. desired a military life for the duke of York and himself, *ib.* his death, 148.
- Byron, sir Nicholas, v. 446 *n.* vi. 74, 80. wounded at Edge-hill, 94. made governor of Chester, 270. notice of him, *ib.*
- Byron, sir Thomas, notice of, v. 441 *n.* 5. wounded at the battle of Hopton-heath, vi. 281.
- C.
- Cabinet Council, ii. 61, 99, 118, 131.
- Cadillac, near Bordeaux, xii. 81.
- Cadiz [Calice, Cales], xiii. 9. xv. 26, 53. unsuccessful attempt against, i. 5, 51, 85, 87. iv. 60. viii. 134.
- Caen, x. 151 *n.*, 175. xi. 23. xii. 60. xiii. 116.
- Cæsar, Julius, iv. 20.
- Cæsar, sir Julius, Master of the Rolls, i. 112.
- Cæsar, Robert, story with relation to him and the earl of Portland, i. 112-114.
- Calais, iii. 15 *n.*, 16 *n.* vii. 357, 360. xi. 23, 31, 32, 78. xiii. 163. xiv. 60. xv. 139. xvi. 27, 35, 44, 230.
- Calamy, Edmund, one of the presbyterian divines who had audience of Charles II at the Hague, xvi. 242.
- Cales: *see* Cadiz.
- Callander, James Livingstone, first earl of, iv. 46. vi. 111.
- Calvin, John, i. 187, 190, 191, 194, 195, 196. xi. 171.
- Calvinist party, notice of the, i. 186, 189.
- Cambray, xii. 57, 58. xiv. 98. xv. 70, 134.
- Cambridge, university of, xiv. 48. xv. 131. contributions of plate and money for the use of Charles I, vi. 57.
- Cambridge, earl of: *see* duke of Hamilton.
- Cambridgeshire, vi. 327. vii. 172, 177. viii. 18.
- Campden house, Worcestershire, burned by sir H. Bard, ix. 32. [Campion, sir W., ix. 34 *n.*]
- Canaries, the, xv. 53, 54.
- Cannæ, vii. 310.
- Canon Frome, Somerset, ix. 67.
- Canons, Scottish: *see* Convocation, Liturgy.
- Cansfield, sir John, wounded in the second battle of Newbury, viii. 156, 160.
- Canterbury, archbishop of: *see* Abbot Bancroft, *and* Laud.
- Canterbury, vi. 181. xvi. 245.
- Canticroy, countess of, xiii. 41.
- Capel, Mr., M.P., iii. 90.
- Capel, Arthur, lord, vii. 368. viii. 254. ix. 11, 77, 103, 105, 106, 133, 135, 136, 147, 158 *n.* x. 12 *n.*, 46, 74, 121. signed the declaration, that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. sent to borrow money of the earl of Kingston for the King, vi. 59. made lieutenant-general of Shropshire, Cheshire, and North Wales, vi. 272, 274. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6. appointed one of the Council to the prince of Wales, viii. 180. one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, 211. sent to Taunton, ix. 15. and to Exeter, to investigate complaints against sir R. Greenvil, 23, 24. goes to Sicily, 150. x. 3. sent with Colepepper to Paris to dissuade the Queen

- from sending for the prince of Wales to France, 9. only partially prevailed, 21, 22. his opinion against the prince's going, 39, 40. remains in Jersey after his departure, 48. goes to the prince in France, x. 120. returns and waits on the King at Hampton Court, *ib.* was in the most secret part in all the intrigues in the King's favour, xi. 22. writes several letters to Hyde, *ib.* joins the rising in Essex, 60. is shut up in Colchester, 102. remonstrates in favour of his fellow-prisoners at Colchester, 107. how treated by Fairfax, 109. sent to the Tower, *ib.* tried in a high court of justice, 252. his behaviour at his trial, 255. condemned, 257. his escape and recapture, 260. his wife's petition rejected, chiefly through Cromwell, 261. nevertheless he was highly praised by Cromwell, 261, 266. beheaded, 265. his speech on the scaffold, 264-5. his character, 266-7. his wife, 266.
- Capuchin friars, attendant upon the Queen, sent back to France by the Parliament, vi. 47.
- Caracena, marquis of, xv. 70. xvi. 75, 76, 176, 177. governor of Milan, xv. 79. appointed to command the Spanish army in Flanders, xv. 17, 21. receives the marquis of Ormonde with great civility, 71. and the earl of Bristol, in spite of the great prejudice against him, 78, 79. he and don Juan neglect the prince of Condé's advice, 135. and lose the battle of Dunkirk in consequence, 138. he procures the recall of don Juan, xvi. 46. and obtains the government of Flanders for himself, *ib.* his intention of seizing Charles II, 178. twice invites him back to Brussels, but in vain, 228-9.
- Carbery, Richard Vaughan, second earl of, baron Vaughan in England, signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, viii. 369 n. 6.
- Cardenas, don Alonso de, ambassa-
- dor from Spain in England, iii. 252. xii. 8, 9, 15, 52, 85, 107, 148. xiii. 8, 26. xv. 8, 18. xvi. 178, 229. treats with the parliament, ix. 173. xi. 251. malignant towards the King, xi. 251. buys many of his pictures, &c. after his murder, xi. 251. xiii. 25. makes it believed at Madrid that the King's affairs were desperate, xii. 108. xiii. 24. ordered by Cromwell to leave England, xv. 15. his intrigues with the Levellers, 19, 20. draws up the Spanish treaty with the King, 20, 21. Hyde sent to confer with him at Brussels, 70, 75. won over by the earl of Bristol, in spite of detesting him, 79. urges the King to make a conjunction with the Levellers, 133. don Juan recalled through his influence, and Caracena's, xvi. 46. continues firm to the Levellers, 166, 177. and possessed the Court of Madrid with the same spirit, 170.
- Cardiff, ix. 123, 161. the King there, 68-73.
- Cardinas, Antonio de, xii. 52, 81.
- Careless, captain, persuades Charles II to hide himself in the oak, xiii. 84. and conducts him thence to a place of safety, 85-7.
- Carew, sir Alex., vi. 233, 241. Governor of Plymouth fort for the Parliament, vii. 293-4. treats for surrendering it to the King's forces, but is arrested, 294.
- Carey, Elizabeth, wife of John Mordaunt, xv. 93, 97, 98.
- Carisbrooke Castle, x. 129, 138, 144, 145, 166, 167. xi. 50, 83, 111, 160, 203. xiv. 86, 87.
- Carleton, sir Dudley, afterwards viscount Dorchester, Secretary of State, i. 141. his character, 143. his previous occupations, *ib.*
- Carlingford, earl of: *see* Taaffe.
- Carlisle, ii. 84. iv. 11, 207 n. vii. 401. viii. 78. x. 160, 164, 171. xi. 18, 45, 48, 51, 54, 94, 95. delivered to the Scots, ix. 72. taken by Sir P. Musgrave, xi. 48, 50. ordered to be surrendered to the Parliament, 96.
- Carlisle, James Hay, first earl of,

- previously visc. Doncaster; his character, i. 132-136. first gentleman of the bedchamber to Charles I, 168. married, first, Lord Denny's daughter, 133. afterwards the earl of Northumberland's daughter, i. 134. vi. 398. and obtained the earl's release from prison, vi. 398.
- Carlisle (Lucy Percy), countess of, vi. 79 n. xi. 65, 137. betrays the Queen's secrets, iv. 14, 78 n., 149 n.
- Carlos, don, Infante of Spain. i. 75-78.
- [Carnarvon Castle, iii. 62 n.]
- Carnarvon, Robert Dormer, first earl of, v. 441 n. vii. 94. signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. excepted by Parliament from peace on any terms, vi. 50. present at the battle of Edge-hill, 79 n. his gallant conduct at Chewton, vii. 101, 102. his part in the battle at Lansdown, 106. and at Roundway-down, 101 n., 116, 118. marches into Dorsetshire, 155, 191. Dorchester, Weymouth, and Portland, surrender to him, *ib.*, 199. quits his command because the articles of surrender were violated, 192. slain at the battle of Newbury, 216. his character, *ib.*
- [Carne, —, one of the Six Clerks, i. 112 n.]
- Carnwath, Robert Dalzell, second earl of, ix. 124. turns the King's horse out of the field of battle at Naseby, 40. marches with lord Digby to Doncaster, 124. after the defeat at Sherborne goes into Ireland, 126.
- Carpio, marquis of, father of don Luis de Haro, xii. 106, 107.
- Carr, —, governor of Cirencester, taken prisoner, vi. 238.
- Carr, major, viii. 114.
- Carrickfergus, iv. 285.
- Carrington, lord, viii. 15.
- Carteret, or Cartwright, captain, afterwards sir George, x. 74. xi. 23 n. refuses the vice-admiralty under the earl of Warwick, v. 44, 382. supplies the King's forces in Cornwall with ammunition, vi. 253. had the command of Jersey under lord Jermyn, xii. 75. which he defended as long as he could, xiii. 170. ordered by the King to surrender on conditions, 171.
- Carteret, sir Hugh, xi. 121.
- Carthage, xv. 1.
- Carthage, xii. 111, 112, 113, 114.
- Cartwright: *see* Carteret.
- Casal, Italy, ix. 172.
- Case, Thomas, one of the Presbyterian divines who had audience of Charles II at the Hague, xvi. 242.
- [Casniobury, Herts, xi. 266 n.]
- Cassel: *see* Hesse Cassel.
- Castile, xii. 84.
- Castile, admirante of, xii. 89, 91.
- Castile Rodrigo, marquis de, one of the Spanish council of state, xii. 105. notice of him, 107.
- [Castle Cary, Somerset, xiii. 96 n.]
- Castlehaven, James Touchet, earl of, xiii. 185.
- Castleton, George Saunderson, lord, one of the committee sent to wait on Charles II at the Hague, xvi. 239.
- Castrilio, condé of, one of the Spanish council of state, xii. 105. notice of him, 107.
- Catalonia, vii. 299. xii. 106, 148. xiii. 10. xvi. 64.
- Catherine, Abbot of St.: *see* Henin, S. de.
- Catiline, vii. 73, [84 n.]
- [Catz, J., ambassador from Holland, xiii. 160 n.]
- Cavaliers, v. 336, 364 n. 19. vi. 31, 36. origin of the term, iv. 121. all are banished twenty miles from London in 1659, xvi. 21.
- Cavendish, Charles, afterwards sir Charles, sent by the earl of Newcastle into Lincolnshire, vi. 268. present at the battle of Marston-moor, viii. 75. notice of him, *ib.*
- Caversham, Oxon, x. 103.
- Cawood, Yorkshire, vi. 264, 268.
- Cecil, sir Robert, xiii. 30.
- Cessation agreed on at Ripon, ii. 116. cessation of arms concluded for a year in Ireland, 1643, vii. 340. disowned by Parliament, *ib.*

Chafin, —, D.D., i. 125.  
 Chagford, Devon, vi. 251.  
 Chalgrove-field, the action there, vii. 74 n., 77-81.  
 Chaloner, —, vii. 171. xi. 222. his trial and execution for a royalist plot in London, vii. 71, 171.  
 Chancellor of the Exchequer: *see* Hyde.  
 Chancellor of Scotland: *see* earl of Loudoun.  
 Chancels ordered by Parliament to be levelled, iv. 8, 13.  
 Chandos, George Bridges, sixth lord, Sudeley-castle, his sent, vii. 206. notice of him, viii. 53.  
 Chantilly, xiv. 76.  
 Chard, Somerset, vii. 96. the King there, viii. 147, 148.  
 Charenton, the church there frequented by English ambassadors, vi. 184. xiii. 132. the ministers press Charles II to go to their church, xiii. 131. seconded by lord Jermyn, 132. Hyde dissuades him, 133. he refuses to go, 134.  
 Charles I.  
*As Prince of Wales*, i. 139. iii. 61. vi. 388. how the duke of Buckingham induced him, when Prince, to go to Spain, i. 20. which was the commencement of the confidence between them, enmity previously existing, 21. how James's consent to the journey was obtained, 21-30. his reasons against it, 25. (Charles usually called Baby by King James), 29. sir Francis Cottington's opinion against it, 30. the Spanish match was broken off in consequence of this journey, 31. Buckingham's account of the journey to Parliament, 35. one statement was, that the Spaniards tried to persuade Charles to turn Papist, 36. the Parliament's resolution against Spain, 40. a pillar erected by the King of Spain where he and the Prince parted, 78. King James's prophetic declaration to his son concerning Parliamentary impeachments, 44. a treaty set on foot

for his marriage with a daughter of the King of France, 47. the Parliament insinuated in 1648 that he had conspired against his father's life, x. 148.

*As King*, iii. 160, 228. iv. 99, 102, 208, 209. v. 440. vi. 86, 305. vii. 61, 133, 134, 178, 180, 206, 223, 242. 243, 308, 324, 325. viii. 83. ix. 16, 20 n., 21, 27. x. 96. xi. 22, 85. xii. 60, 62, 121, 151. xiii. 69, 122. xiv. 70, 86, 103, 120. xvi. 141, 142, 159, 211, 217, 222-5. great joy at his accession, 1, 48. state of the country then, 5. peace concluded with Spain and France, 5, 146. causes of an exhausted exchequer, 5. expedients for its replenishment, *ib.*, 147. Charles's declaration at the close of the Parliament in his fourth year, 6. its ill effects, 147. who advised the dissolutions of the three first Parliaments, and why, 10. how he would have been benefited by not preventing Parliament from impeaching any of his servants, 11. state of the court about that time, 13. how he received the news of Buckingham's death, 62-4. respected his memory, 94. the marquis of Hamilton had great influence with him, 96. he twice paid the debts of lord treasurer Weston, 108. makes money by knighthood, 148. revives the forest laws, *ib.* levies ship-money, *ib.* notice of his character, 163. his journey into Scotland to be crowned, 166, 167, *and note*. his reception, 169. his intention of introducing the English liturgy into Scotland, 173, 179, *and note* to 166. his attachment to the Church of England, 172, 173. opposed to Romanism and Presbyterianism, 172, *and note* to 166. and to the Calvinists, 190. his feeling towards the Scotch nation, 179. ii. 17. erects the bishopric of Edinburgh, i. 182. unseasonably prefers some bishops in Scotland to secular officers, 183. his return to England, 185. his passion for hunt-

## Charles I.

ing, 208. makes a park between Richmond and Hampton Court, *ib.* in opposition to the advice of Juxon and Cottington, 209. and Laud, 210.

The disturbance in Scotland by the Covenanters the first interruption of the peace and prosperity of his reign, ii. 21. issues his *Declaration at Large*, 22. raises forces against the Covenanters, 25. appoints the earl of Arundel general, the earl of Essex lieutenant-general, and the earl of Holland general of horse, 25-27. provides a fleet under the marq. of Hamilton, 27. goes to the borders of Scotland, 38. supposed only to have intended a show of war, 46. concludes a treaty, 49. melancholic at the disgrace of this expedition, 54. calls a Parliament, April, 1640, 62. chiefly by advice of Strafford, i. 166 *n.* 5. offers to it to give up ship-money for twelve subsidies, ii. 70. i. 166 *n.* 5. dissolves it, owing to misrepresentations, ii. 76. i. 166 *n.* 5. to his own great regret, 79. money lent him, *ib.* i. 166 *n.* 7. prepares for a new war against the Scotch, 80-83. arrives at York, 91. summons a great council of peers at York, 95. allows the marq. of Hamilton to ingratiate himself with the Scotch Covenanters, 104-106. declares his intention of calling a Parliament, 107. appoints Commissioners to treat with the Scots at Ripon, 107. advised by Strafford to prosecute the war, 114. adjourns the treaty to London, whither he returns, 115, 117, 127.

Receives the Scotch Commissioners at London, iii. 37. allows the Privy-councillors to be examined about the earl of Strafford, 46. passes a subsidy-bill, &c. 1641, 77, 78. appoints several of the Parliamentary party to office, in hopes of saving Strafford, 89. present at Strafford's trial, 105. willing to have him imprisoned for life, or banished, 161. approves of a

proposed petition from some officers in the army, 174. copy of the petition, 170-3. he declares before Parliament that he could not sign the bill for Strafford's attainder, 193-4. which is represented by the Commons, 195. the mob endeavour to intimidate the King, 197. who is advised on all sides to give consent, 197-200. signs it by commission, 201. signs the bill giving to Parliament the power of dissolving itself, 206, 210. and the bills abolishing the Star-Chamber and High Commission, 211. effects on the Commons, 230. the King makes the earl of Essex lord-chamberlain, 213. proposes to go to Scotland, 232. petitioned by Parliament to defer his visit, 243. he begins his journey, 247. the reasons for his journey to Scotland, 249-50. arrives at York, iv. 1. why anxious to go to Scotland, iii. 249. attended into Scotland by a committee of Parliament, 255. iv. 16. prevailed on by Parliament to recall his leave to the disbanded Irish army to enlist for foreign service, iii. 252. bills passed by him, 256-71.

His conduct when Argyle and Hamilton are accused of treason, iv. 15 *n.* expects no farther trouble from Scotland, 23. refers the Irish rebellion to the consideration of Parliament, 29, 41 *n.* charged by some with having fomented it, 31, 41 *n.* fills up vacant bishoprics, 34. why weary of his visit to Scotland, 42. passes all the Acts presented to him, 46. and confers honours, *ib.* returns to England, *ib.* had no servant of ability in the House of Commons, 75. his reception in London upon his return from Scotland, 78. the Remonstrance presented to him with a petition, 80. his answer to the petition, 82-4. he resides at Whitehall on the petition of the corporation of London, 78 *n.*, 86, 121. his right of pressing abrogated by an Act of Par-

## Charles I.

liament, 88-92. his interference whilst any bill was pending declared a breach of privilege, 92. answer to the petition of the Commons for a guard, 108. some officers form a body-guard for him, 121. he appoints lord Falkland Secretary of State, 122. vii. 224. and sir J. Culpeper Chanc. of the Excheq. iv. 122. professes he will be guided by Falkland, Culpeper, and Hyde with regard to the House of Commons, *ib.* confided much in lord Digby, 127. unfortunately sends the bishops' protestation respecting their absence from Parliament to the Lords, 139, 141, [*App.* vol. vi. p. 296.] his situation at this period, 149 *n.* injudiciously accuses lord Kimbolton and five members of the Commons of treason, 148. advised thereto by lord Digby, 146, 155, 193. the articles against them, 149. the Commons refuse to give up the accused members, 152. the King demands them in person, *ib.* goes after them into the city, 157. his indifferent reception there, *ib.* the King distressed at his imprudent steps, 159. his going to the House of Commons voted to be the highest breach of privilege, 164, 165. his answer to the House of Commons' former Remonstrance, 167. declaration of his attachment to the Church of England, 168. the city's petition to him, 173. his answer, 174. declaration of the Commons touching the five members, 186. evil consequences of the King's imprudent measures, 191-3, 218. the King and royal family remove to Hampton Court, 195. neither the earl of Essex nor the earl of Holland attend him, although hound by their offices, 196. v. 116 *n.* the Buckinghamshire petition to him, iv. 203. in consequence of several more of the same nature he removes to Windsor, 210. message to both Houses from thence, 211. unnoticed by them, 212. his intun-

tion to secure the magazine at Hull prevented by the Commons, who appoint sir J. Hotham governor, 215, 216. his forlorn condition, 217. what line of conduct he should have pursued, *ib.* a new Remonstrance prepared against him, 219. his proposition and message to both Houses, 229. both Houses petition him about the five accused members, 230. his answer, *ib.* the Commons petition him to intrust the Tower of London and other forts to persons recommended by them, 238. his answer, 239-43. both Houses petition him touching the Tower of London, forts, and militia, 275. his intention of removing further from London, 278. his answer to the Parliament's petition as to the militia, 283. makes sir J. Conyers lieutenant of the Tower at their request, 284. vii. 202. aspersions cast on him and the Queen, iv. 285. he demands reparation for an expression in the printed speech of Mr. Pym, 287. the answer of the House of Commons, 288. his reply, 290. he appoints the marq. of Hertford governor of the Prince of Wales upon the earl of Newcastle's resignation, [208 *n.*], 294. reasons suggested to him for passing the bill removing bishops from the House of Lords, 297-300. he passes it, chiefly at the persuasion of the Queen, 301-2. ill-effects of this step on his cause, 303. passes the bill for pressing, 302. his answer respecting the militia, 311. the reply of the Commons, *ib.* the Commons endeavour to prevent the Prince's meeting him at Greenwich according to his order, 314. his farther answer concerning the militia, 317. votes of both Houses upon it, 322. and petition to him, *ib.* his answer, 326. resolutions of both Houses upon it, 329. an intention of Parliament to take the Prince away from him by force, 331. their declaration to the King, *ib.* and their reasons for his con-



## Charles I.

tinnance near the Parliament, 342. his answer to both, 344. his message to both Houses on his way to York, 346. he consents to the Parliament's propositions for adventurers in Ireland, 355.

His reception at York, v. 1, 31. his declaration from York, 2. observations on it, 11. petitions of the Lords and Commons to him, March 26, 1642; 14. his answer, 19. its effect on the Commons, 30. agreeably to his promise to the Queen he removes the earls of Essex and Holland from their posts about him, 34-5, 116 n. the Commons disposed to have an admiral of the fleet appointed without applying to the King, 36. he interferes, *ib.* a message to him from both Houses upon the matter, 37. his answer, *ib.* the earl of Warwick appointed notwithstanding, 39. the King not willing that any officers whom he valued should serve under him, 44. unfortunate result, *ib.* petition of Parliament for removal of the magazine from Hull, 53. his answer, 54. the magazine removed notwithstanding, 57. his message to both Houses, April 8, 1642, offering to go in person to Ireland, 59. their answer, 64. his reply, 68. observations on this design, 78. his message to both Houses concerning his refusal to pass the bill for the militia, April 28, 80. petition from gentlemen of Yorkshire for his securing the magazine at Hull, 89. particulars of his attempt to secure Hull, 88-91. his messages to both Houses concerning Hull, 91, 92. his answer to their declaration and votes, 97. their answer to his two messages, 107. his reply, 111. his declaration in answer to that which the Parliament had circulated respecting the militia, 122. makes provisions against the approaching storm, 137-8. three votes of Parliament in consequence of his appointing a guard for his own person, 142. their petition to him to dissolve his guards, 144. his

answer, 147. observations hereon, and on the vote that the King intended war against the Parliament, 150-2. the King summons Skippon to repair to York, 155. who is forbidden by Parliament to attend, *ib.* the King orders the term to be adjourned to York from Westminster, *ib.* counter-ordered by Parliament, *ib.* declaration of both Houses of what had been done amiss throughout his whole reign, May 19, 157. Lord Keeper Littleton deserts the Parliament, and joins the King at York with the Great Seal, 203. which the King had been dissuaded from taking from him, 211. a fresh remonstrance of both Houses to him, May 26, 217. many members of both Houses join him at York in consequence of it, 249. his answer to their declaration, 250-79. and to their remonstrance, 280-317. nineteen propositions sent to him by both Houses, 320-2. his answer to them, 326-32. observations on his not putting himself in a posture of safety, 339. his declaration to the lords attending him at York, June 13, 342. the promise of the lords thereupon, *ib.* his declaration and profession, disavowing any intention of war, June 15, 344. declaration of the lords and councillors present with him, 346. his declaration thereupon, 348. he issues commissions of array, 364 *and n.* published a declaration concerning the militia, and asserted his right to grant commissions of array, *ib.* which is declared illegal by Parliament, *ib. n.* the Parliament's petition to him in favour of the Yorkshire petition, which he had refused, *ib.* his answer, *ib.* the Parliament's declaration to the city of London upon the King's letter to the lord mayor and aldermen, 368. his reply, 369. why he could not earlier have recourse to arms, 372. he grants commissions to raise troops, 375. appoints generals of his army, *ib.* account of

## Charles I.

his attempt to secure the fleet, on revoking the earl of Northumberland's command, 376-381. he anticipates the Parliament in the seizure of Newcastle, 385. sends persons into several counties to execute the commission of array, *ib.* his proclamation from Beverley, 385-6. goes to Newark, Lincoln, and back to Beverley, 387. the Parliament's petition to him there, July 15, 389. his answer, 394. his refusal to return a more gentle reply, 412. he goes to Doncaster, Nottingham, and Leicester, where he is favourably received, 416-7. he returns towards Hull, 420. the Parliament's replication to his answer, 421. all thoughts of further overtures laid aside, 423. his preparations for war, 430. his pecuniary distress, *ib.* his fruitless design against Hull, although encouraged by sir J. Hotham, 436. for which purpose he had gone to Beverley, *ib.* he returns to York, 438. his first measures for war, 441 *n.* observations on his proclamation forbidding the Papists to join his army, *ib.* his declaration to the people, *ib.* observations on his setting up his standard at Nottingham instead of York, 444. unfortunately dissuaded from seizing lord Fairfax and sir T. Fairfax, 446. he goes to Nottingham, 446 *n.*, 447. marches to Coventry, where the gates are shut against him, 446 *n.*, 447. his standard erected at Nottingham, Aug. 22, 446 *n.*, 449. vi. 1.

His condition at Nottingham, vi. 1. strongly averse to sending a message for peace, 8 *and n.*, 9. the message, 11. the answer, 14. advised by some to repair to Parliament himself, 15. his second message, *ib.* the answer, 18. and the Parliament's declaration to the kingdom, 20. he removes to Derby, 21, 23. his third message to Parliament in answer to their last reply, 22. his speech and protestation at the head of his forces at

Wellington, 24. goes to Shrewsbury, 29, 64. goes to Chester, and returns to Shrewsbury, 45 *n.*, 62. a petition of Parliament to him sent to their general to be presented, 51-2, 66 *n.* sever formally delivered, 66 *n.*, 70. the two Universities contribute their money and plate to him, 57, 58, 125, 167. expedients for raising money, 59-61, 65, 66. his revenues sequestered by Parliament, 55. substance of his speeches in the counties through which he passed, 68. his demeanour wins many to him, 69. strength of his army at Shrewsbury, 71. its great want of arms, 73. he marches towards London, 75, 76. faction begun in his army owing to prince Rupert, 78. who was too much listened to by the King, *ib.* battle of Keinton or Edge-hill, 79-97. he appoints Ruthven general of his army on the death of the earl of Lindsey, 98. Banbury castle surrenders to him, *ib.* his reception at Oxford, 99, 125. where he recruits his army, 125. from time to time sent full accounts of affairs to the Council in Scotland, 109. answer in 1641 to a proposal from Scotland for uniformity in religion, 115. why he should not have proceeded onward to London, 125. marches to Reading, and Colnebrook, 125, 129. a petition from both Houses to him, 129. his answer, 132. his advance to Brentford and the battle there set aside the peaceable intentions of Parliament, 136, 143. he draws off to Kingston, 139. thence to Reading, 140. his message to Parliament, 141. another petition to him from Parliament, Nov. 24, 149. his answer, 150. he marches to Oxford, 155. message to the Privy-Council of Scotland on occasion of the Parliament's declaration to that kingdom, 160-4. his means to raise money, 166-7. makes new sheriffs, 169. indicts prisoners for high treason, 170. forbids payment of tonnage and

## Charles I.

poundage, 171. the inclinations of foreign states towards him or the Parliament, 177-9. his declaration on occasion of the Parliament's ordinance for raising money, 196-206. petition of the city of London to him to return to the Parliament, 210-12. his answer, 215-21. the Parliament's propositions of peace to him, Feb. 1, 1643, 231. his answer, 233-4. difference of temper in the common people who supported his cause, and such as were for the Parliament, 273. observations on his appointing lord Herbert, a Roman catholic, general of South Wales, 287-289. false reports that he favoured the Irish rebels, whereas he always regarded the rebellion in Ireland as most groundless and wicked, 295. his communications to Parliament on Irish affairs and their replies, 297-301. petition to him from some Irish officers and his reply, 307-12. the King had information every day of what passed in Parliament, 316. he puts Parliament in mind of his proposition for a cessation of arms, *ib.* both Houses agree there should be a treaty, and send for a safe conduct, 317. which he grants to all they name but lord Say, 318. the Parliament's terms for a cessation, 320. different opinions of his Privy-Council as to his accepting them, 323. his proposals of alterations in them, 328. petition to him from the General Assembly of the Kirk of Scotland, 337-44. his answer, 346-58. the Scotch commissioners offer to be mediators, and desire a Parliament in Scotland, 359-61, 364. his answer to them in both particulars, 363, 366. the treaty begins at Oxford upon the proposals of cessation, but takes no effect, 370-5. the King might have derived advantage from assent to these proposals, 376. the Parliament's advice to him concerning gaol-delivery, 378. his answer, 379. the assizes forbidden by an ordi-

nance of Parliament, 380. an account and character of the privy-councillors at this time attending the King, 382-397.

Debates upon the first articles of the treaty at Oxford, vii. 1-14. his message to Parliament thereon, April 12, 1643, 15-20. they return no answer, 20. what good effect his appointment of the earl of Northumberland to be lord high admiral might have produced, 21, 22. the King unsuccessful in attempting to relieve Reading, 35. his proclamation against one clause of the articles of surrender at Reading, 40. sends a message to Parliament, May 20, 50. his messenger committed by the Commons, 51. and the Queen impeached by them for assisting him in the war, 52. he appoints the marq. of Hertford and prince Maurice to command in the west, 85 *n.* meets the Queen near Keinton, she coming with a great recruit, 101 *n.*, 115, 121, 122. considers with the Council how the capture of Bristol might procure a peace, 134-7. his Declaration after his late successes, 138. jealousies respecting the government of Bristol, 144-6. goes there to compose them, 121 *n.*, 147. reasons against uniting both his armies, 151-5. the King marches to Gloucester and summons it, 159. besieges it, 164. sends a message to the earl of Newcastle about marching towards London, 177. comes to Oxford to consult about the reception of the earls of Holland and Bedford, 177, 180, 201 *n.* debates thereon, 178-180. the King returns to the army, 186. is with difficulty persuaded to make sir A. A. Cooper governor of Weymouth, 200. prosecutes the siege of Gloucester, 201. which is raised by the earl of Essex, 205. the King goes to Sudeley and Evesham, 206. he intercepts the earl of Essex's return to London by reaching Newbury first, 209. fights an indecisive battle there, 210-215.

## Charles I.

temper of the army and court at Oxford upon the King's return, 238-40, 264 *n.* the King's reception of the earls of Holland, Bedford, and Clare, 241-43. is obliged to break his resolution of conferring no honour or office until the end of the war, 277. inconveniences that arose to himself from his affability, 284. his negotiations with the French ambassador, comte d'Harcourt, 306-7. his unfavourable reception of those who had deserted the Parliament hurtful to his cause, 309. he revokes St. John's Solicitorship, 315. adjourns the law-courts to Oxford, 317. summons a Parliament at Oxford, 328, 369 *n.* 7. his intentions with regard to Ireland, 329. authorises Ormonde to treat with the rebels for a cessation, 337. a cessation of arms for a year concluded, 339. disowned by Parliament, 340. the King sends for English troops from Ireland, 368. issues a proclamation forbidding trade with London, 369 *n.* 8. substance of his speech to the Parliament at Oxford, 371. his message to both Houses at Westminster for a treaty, March 3, 1643, 390. their answer, 392. raises money on his forests and parks, 395. the earl of Montrose comes to inform him of the state of Scotland, 404. bad state of his affairs, 415.

He assembles his army at Marlborough, viii. 22. prorogues the Parliament at Oxford, 23. undecided as to his plan of operations, 26. notices of his chief advisers on military affairs, 28-33. Reading quitted by his forces, 34. he returns to Oxford from Reading, 35. Abingdon quitted by his forces, 38-9. his deplorable condition at this time, 40. is advised to surrender himself to the earl of Essex, 47. his night-escape from Oxford to Worcester, 49, 50. thence proceeds to Bewdley, 54. returns towards Oxford, 55-7. marches

from Witney to Buckingham, 61. Wilmot advises the marching towards London, 62. the King fights at Cropredy with sir W. Waller, 64-70. marches towards the west, as the earl of Essex was before Exeter, where the Queen then was, 71-73. said by Prince Rupert to have ordered him to fight the Scots, as he did at Marston Moor, 79. his successful campaign in Cornwall against Essex, 89-119. badly followed up, 131. makes an overture to Essex, which is declined, 96 *n.*, 99-101. sends a message of peace to the Parliament, which was not noticed, 133. goes from Plymouth to Exeter, 144. marches to Chard, 147. thence to Sherborne, 148. thence to Salisbury, 149. defeats Waller at Andover, 150. relieves Donnington castle, 151. goes to Newbury, 150, 152. thence to Bath, 159. and thence to Oxford, *ib.* relieves Donnington castle again, 162. returns to Oxford, 164. his fruitless discussions with commissioners sent from Ireland, 175-7. anxiety about the Prince of Wales, 179, 253. appoints a council to attend the Prince into the west, 180. makes fresh overtures of peace, 198-9. by the duke of Richmond and the earl of Southampton, 199, 202. sends archbishop Laud a pardon under the Great Seal, 207. declared by Parliament to be of no effect, 208. the Parliament agrees to a treaty at Uxbridge, 210. the names of the King's commissioners, 211. [see Parliament.] the end of the treaty at Uxbridge without effect, 252. the King melancholy at the state of his affairs, 253, 259. proposes to send Montrose into Scotland, 263, 267. and Antrim into Ireland, 267.

He marches from Oxford to Evesham, ix. 32. takes Hawkesley-House, *ib.* storms and takes Leicester, 33. marches back towards Oxford, 35. is defeated at Naseby, 37-42. his cabinet taken by the enemy and many letters

## Charles I.

afterwards garbled and published to his prejudice, *ib.* he retires by Lichfield to Bewdley and Hereford, 42. he should have retired into the west, *ib.*, 67. goes to Abergavenny, thence to Ragland-castle, 67. thence to Chepstow and Cardiff, 68. his letter to prince Rupert against treating of peace at that time, 70. he removes to Ludlow with intention of joining Montrose in Scotland, 72, 85. his letter to the Prince of Wales, ordering him to retire into France, if in danger of falling into the rebels' hands, 74. France objected to by the Prince's council, 77. the King's answer persisting in France, 96, 97. the King goes to Welbeck and Doncaster, 83. thence to Newark, 86. thence to Oxford, 87. thence to Ragland and Hereford, *ib.* his letter to Prince Rupert upon his surrender of Bristol, 90. revokes his commission, 91. through lord Digby's influence, 121. letters to Prince Charles, recommending him to withdraw to Denmark, 112, 114. approves of delay in the Prince's departure, 146. marches to Chester, where his horse are routed by Pointz, 118-9. retires to Denbigh, 120. thence to Bridgenorth, *ib.* persuaded by lord Digby to go to Newark instead of Worcester, 121. state of the garrison there, 122. appoints Digby general for the north and sends him to join Montrose, 124. he retreats to Oxford, 132. his letter to the Prince's council about the Prince's going beyond seas, 146. the King's last stay at Oxford, 161. he sends some messages for peace which were not noticed by Parliament, 162-3. sends again for a safe conduct for the duke of Richmond and others, 164. the answer, *ib.* sends to desire a personal treaty at Westminster, *ib.* the answer, 165. he sends again frequently, 166. ordinance of Parliament thereupon, *ib.* he tries in vain to deal with the Independents, 167.

a treaty with the Scots set on foot by the interposition of France, 169. the King will not yield on the point of church-government, 176, 177.

Letter from the King to the Prince, enjoining him never to yield to any dishonourable conditions, not even to save his (the King's) life, x. 4. letter to the same exhorting him to continue firm in his religion, 8. said to write a letter directing the Prince to go to France, 22. Montreuil's negotiations with the King and the Scots, 23-31. the paper he sent to the King, being a promise for the Scots receiving him, 27. the King leaves Oxford and goes to the Scottish army, 11, 33. his treatment by the Scots, 34-6, 50-1. orders Newark to be surrendered to them, 21, 34. that they might march northwards, 34. he is prevailed upon to order Montrose to lay down arms and leave the kingdom, 52. Henderson employed to dispute with him concerning Church government, 53. Belliever, the French ambassador, comes to him to negotiate, 54-6. the Queen sends sir W. Davenant to persuade him to give up the Church, but in vain, 56-7. upon the Scots' desire he orders the surrender of Oxford and all his other garrisons, 62. his answer to propositions from the Parliament, 63. the Scots urge these propositions, 64, 65. his answer to them, 66. the Parliament demand the King and the Scots deliver him up, 67-69. [the unpopularity of this act in Scotland, xii. 6.] a committee and servants appointed by Parliament to attend him, 69. he is brought to Holmby, 70. his request for the attendance of his own chaplains refused, 71. seized at Holmby by the army, 90-92, xiv. 48. his chaplains allowed him by the army, x. 93. he removes according to the marches of the army, *ib.* visited by Fairfax, Cromwell, and Ireton, 95. sir John Berkeley sent from the

## Charles I.

Queen to him, 96. Mr. Ashburnham comes to him, 97. the different designs of the Parliament and army relating to him, 101-2. he is allowed to see his children, 103. removed to Hampton Court, 109. treated with respect there, and visited by Cromwell, 115. his children allowed to come to him, *ib.* his conversation with them, 116-8. lord Capel waits upon him, 120. writes to the Queen and to Hyde, *ib.* xi. 22. the marquis of Ormonde visits him often, 121. and the Scotch commissioners. *ib.* he rejects proposals from the army, 122. which begins to change behaviour towards him, 122, 125-6. major Huntington tells him that Cromwell would destroy him, if not prevented, 125. Cromwell complains that he cannot be misled, *ib.* he escapes from Hampton Court, 127. confides himself to colonel Hammond, in the Isle of Wight, 128, 129. is lodged in Carisbrooke castle, 129. observations on this whole business, 130-6. the Parliament send to him to pass four bills, 141. which are protested against by the Scotch commissioners, 142. his answer, 143. his old servants removed, to prevent his further escape, 144. captain Burly's vain attempt at his release, 145. how his answer is received by Parliament, and Cromwell's speech thereupon, 146. a vote and declaration that no more addresses be made to him, *ib.*, 148-50. the declaration odious to the people in general, 151. he thanks Hyde for answering it, *ib.* z. a meeting of Cromwell and his officers, wherein they resolve on the King's death, 147. the Scotch commissioners' private treaty with him, 160. observations on it, 161. substance of this treaty, 162-7. the King's condition in the Isle of Wight, 173.

The duke of York escapes, by his direction, to Holland, xi. 19, 20. he recommended Dr. Steward to the Prince of Wales as his

church instructor, xi. 36. the Parliament resolves on a personal treaty with the King, 111. substance of their message to him, 112. his answer, 113. the vote against making any more addresses to him repealed, 114. the treaty to be at Newport, *ib.* the King's altered appearance, 157. the commissioners for the treaty arrive in the Isle of Wight, 153. the preliminaries, 154-6. the first proposition for revoking all the King's declarations, etc., 159. his answer, 160. disputes concerning the preamble, 161. he consents to it, 164. debates on the second proposition concerning religion and the Church, 165-171. his concessions on this point, 172. the third proposition concerning the militia, 173-5. the fourth proposition concerning Ireland, 176-7. his proposition now sent to Parliament by the commissioners, 178. a declaration required of him against the marquis of Ormonde, *ib.* his answer, *ib.* the treaty continued fourteen days longer, 179. the demand against Ormonde renewed, *ib.* his answer, *ib.* a further demand about the Church, 180. his answer, 181. the Parliament's votes upon his former proposition, 182. the treaty prolonged till November 25, 183. new propositions against delinquents, especially Ormonde, 185. the King's answer, *ib.* the treaty further prolonged for a day, 186. proposition concerning Scotland, 187. his answer, *ib.* another touching the Church, *ib.* his final answer, 188. sum of his letter to the Prince concerning the treaty, 189. the conclusion in his own words, 190-2. his attempt at an escape, 193-7. he is removed from Carisbrooke castle to Hurst castle, 203. votes of the Commons thereupon, 204. they vote that the King's answer was a ground for peace, 205. a contrary vote, 206. vote of no more addresses renewed, 208. a committee appointed to prepare a

## Charles I.

charge of high treason against the King, 211. the charge against the King approved by the Commons, 217. rejected by the Lords, *ib.* the Commons constitute a high court of justice, 218. the King sent for from Hurst castle, 221. a plan for his escape not tried, 222-3. he is brought to St. James's, 223. the several consultations among the officers before and after this time, what to do with him, 224-7. concluded to have him publicly tried, 227. the King's usage at St. James's, 230. he is brought to trial, 231. the sum of his charge, *ib.* brief account of the trial, 232-8. disturbance in the court by lady Fairfax, 235.

The King's character, xi. 239-243. a great lover of the Scotch, 241. unwilling to think ill of those of whom he once thought well, ii. 130. said by Romanists to hate the Puritans, iv. 204 *n.* approved of Hyde's writing his *History*, and furnished materials, ix. 3. x. 120. beloved by his subjects in general when he was murdered, xi. 243. his funeral at Windsor, 244. why his body was not removed to Westminster in the time of Charles II, 245. his pictures and goods bought by several foreign princes, 251. xiii. 25. the news of his murder received with horror in Holland, xii. 1. exception of his murderers from pardon, xii. 43, 45. while in prison committed the care of the duke of York to the Queen, xiii. 36. once thought of sending the duke to Ireland, 38. had refused the Mastership of Wards to sir J. Berkeley, giving it to lord Cottington, 124-5. high praise of him by some of the Levellers, xv. 110. the names of his judges printed in red letters in 1659, xvi. 6. Cromwell, when in Scotland, supposed to have agreed with Argyll to keep him in perpetual imprisonment, xii. 10. condition of his family after his death, xiv. 85.

## Charles II.

*As Prince of Wales*, iv. 32, 78, 149 *u.*, 324, 332, 337. v. 11, 430. vi. 37, 49. vii. 179. ix. 21, 30, 31, 65, 102, 104, 106, 152. x. 115 *n.*, 118, 120, 133, 153, 154, 156. xi. 18, 22, 129, 130, 142, 143, 160, 185, 208, 231.

A troop of horse called the Prince of Wales's, ii. 53. vi. 281. the earl of Newcastle his governor, iv. 215. vi. 389. whom the marquis of Hertford succeeds, iv. [208 *n.*] 294. vi. 385. who is succeeded by the earl of Berkshire, vii. 324. meets his father at Greenwich, notwithstanding an order of Parliament, iv. 314. intention of Parliament to remove him from the King by force, 331. appointed captain of a troop of horse for defence of the King's person, v. 140. present at the battle of Edge-hill, vi. 79 *n.*, 85. signed a letter from the Parliament at Oxford to the earl of Essex, vii. 375.

Removes with the King from Oxford, viii. 49. present at Cropredy, 64. marquis of Hertford had an extraordinary devotion for him, 83. the King thinks it necessary to separate the Prince from himself, 179, 253. a council appointed to attend him into the west, 180. made general of the King's forces and of the western association, 256-8. removes to Bristol, 254, 279, 286. ix. 7 *n.* reasons why, 286. ix. 6, 7 *n.* no preparations to receive him, 10. his proceedings there, *ib.* narrative of proceedings generally in Somerset and Devon, 11-28. summons the commissioners of the four western counties to Bridgewater, 16. diverted from business by Mrs. Windham, 18. sends three commissioners to Exeter to inquire into the complaints against sir R. Greenvil, 23. removes from Bristol to Barnstaple, 43, 48. transactions there, 48-53. goes to Launceston, 57, 92. ordered by the King to retire into France if in danger of

## Charles II.

falling into the rebels' hands, 74. France objected to by his council and Ireland or Scotland preferred, 77. the King's answer persisting in France, 96-7. a design to petition him to propose peace prevented, 82. refuses lord Goring's demand of being next in command to himself, 84. movements in Cornwall, 92-108. goes from Truro to Bodmin and Tavistock, 108. to Totness, 109, 110. the King's letters to him, recommending him to withdraw to Denmark, 112, 114. reasons against his immediate departure, 115. which step his council decide against, 98, 116. their decision approved of by the King, 146. goes to Launceston, 117. state of his affairs in the west, 133. he commits sir R. Greenvil to prison, 138. directed by his father to go beyond seas, 146. report of a plot to seize him, 147. *x.* 12 *n.*, 18. goes to Pendennis, *ix.* 147. thence to Scilly, 149. *x.* 2.

The King's letter to him, enjoining him never to yield to any dishonourable conditions, not even to save his (the King's) life, *x.* 4. he removes to Jersey, 3-5, 12 *n.*, 18. letter from the Queen pressing his removal from Scilly, 6. a letter to him from the King, exhorting him to be constant to his religion, 8. he is inclined to go to France, 9. the lords Capel and Colepepper sent to dissuade the Queen from sending for him into France, *ib.* their instructions and arrival at Paris, 10. lord Digby goes to Jersey to persuade him to remove to Ireland, 13. thence to France to gain the Queen's consent to this, 14. whence, being cajoled by Mazarine, he returns to Jersey to persuade the Prince to remove into France, 15-19. the Queen sends for him, 22, 37. debates in the Prince's council concerning his going, 38-41. the Prince resolves to go, 43. all his council, except lord Colepepper, dissent, and stay behind, 44. his de-

parture, 44, 48 *n.* the Prince's treatment and condition in France, 58-9, 175. his presence desired in Scotland, but refused by the King, 160.

He leaves France, *xi.* 22, 31, 32. goes to Helvoetsluys to take the command of the fleet that had revolted from Rainsborough, *xi.* 24, 32, 35. factions in his fleet, 33-5, 63. he comes into the Downs with his fleet, 35, 110. an unsuccessful enterprise there, 67. thence into the Thames, 37. Scottish commissioners sent to him, 44, 86. he takes several ships, 64. the city send to him with a petition for return of the ships, 65. he writes to the city, 66. he writes and sends to the earl of Warwick in vain, 69, 70. went towards Holland without fighting with the earl, 70, 71. who follows him, *ib.* the Prince comes to the Hague, 79. his good reception there, 80. divisions in his court, 81. the letter of the Parliament of Scotland to him, 87. deliberations in his council about it, 89. his and the duke of York's condition at the Hague, 127. the ill condition of his fleet in Holland, 131, 133, 136, 139. urged by the Queen to go to Scotland, 132. he has the small-pox, 135, 150 *n.* sells prize-ships, 137-8. letter to him from his father, 189-93. the army demand his surrendering himself, 202. he prevails with the States of Holland to intercede with the Parliament for his father, 212-16. sends a letter to Fairfax and the council of war on his behalf, 219. which was read and laid aside, *ib.*

*As King*, *xii.* 15, 47. *xiii.* 143. *xiv.* 55, 58, 59, 66, 68, 71, 73, 80, 84, 91, 139, 140. *xvi.* 18, 33. Proclamation against proclaiming him King, *xi.* 246. praised in lord Capel's dying speech, 265.

His condition at the Hague, *xii.* 1. the States condole with him, *ib.* his new council sworn, *i.* the Queen's first message to



## Charles II.

him, *ib.* he thinks of going into Ireland, 3, 28-9, 31, 33, 36, 54. proclaimed in Scotland, and commissioners sent from thence to him, 4, 13. circumstances that made his departure from Holland expedient, 25, 26. he delivers a memorial to the States, 27-8. deliberations respecting his movements, 30-33. conference between Cottington and Hyde concerning his sending an embassy to Spain, 35. he appoints them to be his ambassadors, 38. writes to the King of Denmark and other princes for help for Montrose, 40. Hyde appointed by him to make a declaration relating to England, 41. different opinions in his council about it when read, 44. upon which it was laid aside, 46. he removes to Breda, 55. thence to Antwerp, 57. thence to Brussels, *ib.* has an interview with the archduke near Valenciennes, 58. meets his mother at St. Germain's, 59. unwilling that she should interfere in public affairs, *ib.* Mr. Thos. Elliot comes to him, 60. his influence over him, *ib.* Hyde mediates between him and his mother, 61-3. diverted from his purpose of making Mr. Windham secretary, 63-4. Cromwell's arrival and success in Ireland hinder his going there, 75, 117-120. he removes to Jersey, 77. stays some months there, 98. again invited to Scotland upon the old conditions, 119, 123. his answer, that he would have a treaty with them in Holland, 120. the Queen advises him to agree to the terms, 121. he meets the Queen at Beauvais, *ib.* xiii. 36. meets the Scotch commissioners at Breda, xii. 122. resolves for Scotland, 124. arguments of some against this step, 125. receives the news of the death of the marquis of Montrose, but nevertheless embarks for Scotland, 143. low condition of his party in England, 150, 152.

Argyll sends him new proposi-

tions, which miss him, xlii. 1. he arrives in Scotland, and takes the Covenant, 2. Argyll receives him with great respect, 3. most of his English servants removed from him, *ib.* the Scotch clergy always about him, 4. their sermons before him, *ib.* the marquis of Argyll's behaviour to him, 5. his condition, *ib.* obtains more liberty through the Scots' defeat by Cromwell, 23. his condition believed in Spain and France to be desperate, 24, 32. his loss in the death of the Prince of Orange, 35. believed in France to be dead, 39. state of his affairs in Scotland, 47. he withdraws to the Highlands, but returns the next day, 48. a Scotch Parliament summoned in his name, *ib.* an army raised, of which he is general. 49. his coronation, 23, 48, 50. professes an inclination to marry one of Argyll's daughters, 50. in consequence of Cromwell's army gaining a pass in his rear, he marches forward into England, 53. Argyll dissuaded it, and stayed behind, *ib.* Lambert sent after the King, 55. Cromwell follows three days after, 57. Massey sent to precede the King, 58. the earl of Derby meets him in Lancashire, 60. Lambert follows, but is forced to retire, *ib.* the King summons Shrewsbury in vain, 64. well received at Worcester, *ib.* where he is proclaimed King, *ib.* favourableness of this post, 65. he refuses the duke of Buckingham's application to be made general, 72. the ill disposition of his officers, 73. his defeat at Worcester, 75-6. his retreat and concealment, 78. did not believe general Lesley to be false, 81. a price set on his head, 82, 89. particulars of his escape, as he related them to Hyde, 84-108. he arrives in Normandy, 106. and goes to Rouen, 83, 106. Hyde meets him at Paris by his order, 108. and the marquis of Ormonde, 116. his

## Charles II

necessities at Paris, 120. appoints a Privy Council, 123. refuses to make sir J. Berkeley a councillor, or Master of the Wards, 123-26. his opinion with respect to the duke of York's going into the French army, 128. six thousand livres per month assigned him by the French Court, 129. money sent him from Moscow and Poland, 130. invited to attend the Huguenot church at Charenton, 131. urged to it by the Queen and lord Jermyn, 131-2. dissuaded by Hyde, 133. refuses to go, 134. proposals to him from friends in Scotland, 138. did not expect much from them, 139. appoints Hyde to make all the despatches for Scotland, *ib.* who desires not to be employed, *ib.* his reply and Hyde's submission, 141. he negotiates at Paris on behalf of the French King with the duke of Lorraine, 143. he and his mother remove from the Louvre to St. Germain's, 144. solicitations for places in his court, 146. disapproves of the proposed marriage of the duke of York, 150. Mademoiselle d'Orleans thought of for the King, 151. the marquis of Ormonde's and Hyde's exceptions against this match, 152. the King well inclined to it, *ib.* both these designs come to nothing, 153. offers to join the Dutch in their war with the English Parliament, 164, 165. his proposal declined, 165. careful to keep Guernsey and Jersey from falling into the hands of the French, 170. orders sir G. Carteret to surrender Jersey to the Parliament, 170. allows the marquis of Clanricarde to retire from his government of Ireland, 185.

Cromwell's severity to his party, xiv. 34. he desires his friends in England to remain quiet, 36, 101, 107. his condition abroad, 53, 78. knows not whither to retreat out of France, 54. makes Willmot earl of Rochester, and sends him to the Diet at Ratisbon. 55. sends a commission

to the earl of Glencairne in Scotland, 57. frustrates designs of Presbyterians and Roman Catholics against Hyde, 65. discourse with cardinal de Retz, 66. disappointments and difficulties about Prince Rupert's fleet, and the sale of the cannon, 68, 78-81. makes sir E. Herbert Lord Keeper 70. refuses to reappoint Mr. Long Secretary of State, 72. acquits Hyde of the charges of having conferred with Cromwell, and of having asperged himself, 74, 77. reasons for his removal into Germany, 82. money sent to him from England, *ib.* receives all his arrears from France, 83. Stephen Fox appointed to manage his household and money, 89. leaves the duke of Gloucester with the Queen at her desire, 92. quits Paris, 95. a foolish project for his marriage, 96, 97. his reception at Cambrai, 98. messengers from England meet him at Mous, 99. and at Aix, 107. arrives at Spa, where he meets the Princess of Orange, 102. a small subsidy granted him by the Diet in Germany, 103, 112, 116, 117. good management of his family expenses, 104. removes to Aix-la-Chapelle, 105. gives the signet to Secretary Nicholas, 106. is urged to go again to Scotland, 108. his reply to Hyde thereon, 109. removes to Cologne by invitation of the citizens, 110. his way of life there, 115. entertained by the duke of Neuburg at Düsseldorf, 112-15. sends for the duke of Gloucester from France, as his mother was attempting to make him a Roman Catholic, 118. his declaration to the duke of Neuburg as to enforcement of the penal laws in England, 121. an insurrection designed by some of his party in England, 123-25. he goes to Zealand to be ready to embark for England, 128. returns to Cologno on the failure of the rising, 137. fetitious information of his designs given to Cromwell by Manning, 138-45.

## Charles II.

He stays at Cologne about two years, xv. 1. goes into Flanders, and treats with the archduke, 18-20. makes a treaty with Spain, 21. removes to Bruges in consequence, 22. his title renounced by Parliament in Sept. 1656, 29. pension granted him by Spain, 67. raises four regiments of his subjects in Flanders, 68. declines for the future the pension from France, 69. appoints sir H. Bennet his envoy to Madrid, 81. makes Hyde Lord Chancellor, 83. urges his friends in England to be wary, 84. address of the Levellers to him, 103-18. their propositions annexed to it, 119. the result, 131. Sexby, another Leveller, treats with him, 133. his desire of joining the Spanish army refused, 132, 140. present in an attack upon Mardike, 132. removes from Bruges to Brussels, *ib.* retires to Hochstraten, 140. returns to Brussels upon hearing of Cromwell's death, 142.

Designs of the royalists communicated to him, xvi. 23. informed of the treachery of sir Richard Willis, 28-30. removes to Calais, afterwards to the coast of Bretagne, to be ready to go into England, 27, 35, 44. proposes to go to Spain and Germany, 46. resolves to attend the treaty between Don Juan and Mazarin, 56, 58. Mazarin advises against it, 57. begins his journey, 58. goes to Saragossa, 68. and thence to Fuentarabia, 69. well received by don Luis da Haro, 70. but Mazarin would not see him, 71. returns to Brussels, 72, 73. de Haro supplies him with some money, 73. a good understanding restored with his mother, *ib.* no prospect for him but that of remaining in Flanders, 75. promises of troops from France and Spain, 76. the unpromising condition of his affairs, 112-14, 137, 141-2. hears of the agreement between Monck and the city, 138, 139. his hopes revived, 143. Monck sends sir

J. Greenvills to negotiate with him, 169. his deliberations upon the terms proposed, 171-5. removes to Brada, 176, 179. the Spaniards' design to seize him discovered, 178. his letter to the general and army, 181. and to the House of Commons, 184. his declaration, 193. his letter to the House of Lords, 198. and to the fleet, 199. and to the lord mayor and aldermen of London, 201. he is invited into Ireland, 209, 210. his letter and declaration joyfully received by Parliament, 213. and by the city, army, and navy, 214. the answer of the House of Commons to him, 216-19. extraordinary change in his favour, 220. is proclaimed King, 221-2. many addresses to him, 223. perplexed by the case of col. Ingoldsby, 224-6. Montagu's message to him, 227. the marquis of Caracena invites him back to Brussels, 228. his answer, 229. invites him again, but in vain, *ib.* cardinal Mazarin invites him into France, 230. his answer, 231. the States General congratulate his coming to Breda, and the States of Holland invite him to the Hague, 233. whither he goes, 235. his reception and entertainment there, 236, 245. a committee of Lords and Commons wait on him there, to invite him to return to the throne, 239. also a deputation from the city, 240. and certain Presbyterian divines, 242. their public audience, *ib.* and private discourses with him, 243. his reply to them, 244. embarks for England, 245. arrives at Dover, *ib.* goes to Canterbury, *ib.* and from Rochester to London, 246. goes through the city to Whitehall, *ib.* where the two Houses wait on him, *ib.*

Why he did not remove his father's body to Westminster Abbey, xi. 245. was taught writing by Massonet, xiv. 73. (*See* Ireland; Parliament; Scotland.) Charles Louis, Elector Palatine: *see* Palatine.

- [Charmouth, Dorset, xiii. 98 n.]  
 [Charteris, capt. Alex., xii. 141 n.]  
 Chartley House, vi. 62 n.  
 [Chastillon, duchesse de, xiv. 96 n.]  
 Chater, colonel, xi. 94.  
 Chaucer, Geoffrey, Donnington castle, near Newbury, his house, vii. 212.  
 Chelsea, Middlesex, x. 114, 158.  
 Chepatow, vii. 176 n., ix. 68.  
 Cherry, sir William, vi. 79 n.  
 Cherwell river, Oxford, viii. 43, 45, 47, 63, 67.  
 Cheshire, v. 335. vi. 66 n., 67 *ter.*, 268-274. vii. 298, 400, 401. viii. 17. xi. 51. xiii. 60, 61. xv. 6. xvi. 26. articles of neutrality agreed on, but annulled by Parliament, vi. 269.  
 Chester, v. 61, 68. vi. 21, 23, 64, 66, 67 *bis*, 272, 286, 300, 301, 304, 306, 314, 387, 397. vii. 86, 176 n., 368, 401 *and n.* 1, 2, 403, 417 n. viii. 26, 77. ix. 32, 129. xi. 41, 220. [xiii. 68 n.] xvi. 96, 155. the King goes there, vi. 45 n., 62, 67. firm to the King, 270. sir N. Byron made governor, *ib.* besieged, ix. 29. the King goes there, 118. his horse routed there by Pointz, 119. seized by sir G. Booth for Charles II, xvi. 26, 38, 44. retaken by Lambert, 41.  
 Chesterfield, Philip Stanhope, first earl of, in prison for his loyalty, vii. 369 n. 6.  
 Chewton, Somerset, sir W. Waller's troops defeated there, vii. 101-2.  
 Cheynell, Francis, one of the commissioners on ecclesiastical matters at Uxbridge, viii. 226.  
 Chichester seized for the King, vi. 235. but surrendered to sir W. Waller, 236, 292.  
 Chichester, Arthur lord, iii. 114.  
 Chichester, earl of: *see* lord Dunsmore.  
 [Chiesly, sir John, xii. 7 n.]  
 Chigi, cardinal, chosen pope, and assumed the name of Alexander VII, xiv. 120.  
 [Childersley, Cambr., x. 91 n.]  
 Chillingworth, William, his book against the Church of Rome, i. 163. vii. 401 n. his death, vii. 401 n. viii. 10.  
 [Chinnor, Oxon, vii. 76 n.]  
 Chippenham, vii. 101 n., 110 *bis*, 111.  
 Chipping Campden, Gloucestershire, viii. 56.  
 Chipping Norton, Oxfordshire, viii. 50.  
 Chirk Castle, Derbyshire, the King there, ix. 96. taken by Lambert, xvi. 42.  
 Cholmeley, *or* Cholmondeley, sir Hugh, iii. 35. active in Parliament, iii. 157. iv. 19. defended Hyde in Parliament, iv. 54. sent to the King with the answer of Parliament about Hull, v. 106. revolts to the King, after having done great service to the Parliament, vi. 268. vii. 121 n. had espoused that party, owing to his friendship with Hotham, vi. 268. reappointed governor of Scarborough by the earl of Newcastle, *ib.*  
 Cholmeley, sir Henry, sent to the King with the answer of Parliament about Hull, v. 106. one of the committee sent to wait on Charles II at the Hague, xvi. 239.  
 [Cholsey, Berks, viii. 126 n.]  
 Christ-Church, Hants, ix. 7.  
 Christian IV: *see* king of Denmark.  
 Christian Royalists, who so called, xv. 125.  
 Christina, Queen of Sweden, purchased the choice of the medals and jewels, and some pictures, that belonged to Charles I, xi. 251. received Cromwell's agent with great pomp and civility, *ib.* xii. 129. made an alliance with him, *ib.*  
 Christmas-keeping, iv. 129 n.  
 Chudleigh, sir George, vi. 242, 243. vii. 87, 90, 91.  
 Chudleigh, James, son of George, major-general of the Parliament forces in the west, vi. 250. vii. 86. his courage at the battle of Stratton, 89. accused by the earl of Stamford of betraying him, 91. goes over to the King in consequence, *ib.* some account of him, 92. killed at Dartmouth, 297.

- Chulmleigh, Devon, ix. 139, 142.
- Church of England, character of clergy and preachers, i. 165. bad condition of churches, 198. revenues sequestered by Parliament, vi. 54. notice of the relations of the Church with foreign Protestants in England, 182-85. King Charles's attachment to it, 172. hostile feeling entertained against it, for engrossing civil situations, 206. feeling of the leaders of the popular party towards the Church, iii. 143-147. *See* Bishops; Clergy; Episcopacy; Parliament; Scotland.
- Churches, foreign, in England, notice of their origin, vi. 182. checked, 184.
- Churches attacked and injured, iv. 13.
- Clute forest, Hampshire, i. 108.
- Cicero, vii. 73; quoted, 84, 130, 224.
- Cinna, vii. 84. xv. 147.
- Cinque Ports, iv. 262. wardenship of, iii. 237, 239. iv. 257. vi. 395. vii. 4, 7.
- Cirencester, vi. 291, 322, 411 *n.* viii. 72. [xiii. 90 *n.*] threatened by the marquis of Hertford, vi. 237. taken by prince Rupert, 238. seized by surprise by the earl of Essex, vii. 206.
- Civil Law, no reason for its having more connection with the Church than Common Law, iv. 38.
- Civita Vecchia, xv. 152.
- Clanricarde: *see* St. Albans.
- Clanricarde, Ulick de Burgh, marquis of, earl of St. Albans, his proxy in Parliament entrusted to the earl of Essex, iv. 41 *n.* notice of his character, xiii. 115. he is made deputy of Ireland by Ormonde, *ib.*, 120 *n.* narrative of the Irish affairs while he was deputy, 176-185. and of the treaty with the duke of Lorraine, 176-182. sends the earl of Castlehaven to give an account of all to the King, 185. the King sends him leave to retire, *ib.* he goes into England, and dies shortly afterwards, 186.
- Clare, John Holles, second earl of, signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. joins the King at Oxford, vii. 174, 187, 188. had been with him at York, and by his leave had gone to London, 187. notice of his character, *ib.* present at the siege of Gloucester, 190. and at the battle of Newbury, 241, 308 *n.* allowed to attend the councils of war, *ib.* returns to the Parliament, 248, 308.
- Clarendon, earl of: *see* Hyde.
- Clarendon park, Wilts, viii. 150.
- Clarges, Thomas, M.D., xvi. 95, [98 *n.*]
- Clarke, —, i. 79, 141.
- Clarke, sir William, killed in the fight at Cropredy, viii. 66.
- [Clavering, colonel, viii. 75 *n.*]
- Claypole, Mrs., Cromwell's favourite daughter, her death, xv. 145.
- Clement IX, pope: *see* Rospiglioso.
- Clergy, high character of, in the reign of Charles I, though somewhat indiscreet in their court sermons, i. 165. petitions against them, iii. 56, 66. appellation of 'scandalous clergy' often applied to the best, 56. animosity of certain great lawyers against the clergy, iv. 38. how far they brought it on themselves, *ib.* remarks on this feeling, 38-41. how they were treated by the puritanical party, v. 136. the puritanical clergy chiefly instrumental in infuriating the people against the King, vi. 39. instances of their violence, 40, 41.
- Clerk of the market of the King's household, Act respecting the, iii. 266.
- Clerks: *see* Six Clerks.
- Cleve, duchy of, xiv. 113, 115.
- Cleveland, vi. 263.
- Cleveland, Thomas Wentworth, earl of, viii. 116; signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6. notice of his character, viii. 45. makes an unsuccessful attempt upon Abingdon, *ib.* his part in the fight at Cropredy, 64-66, 73 *n.* taken prisoner at the second battle of Newbury, 157. taken prisoner

- at the battle of Worcester, xiii. 80.
- Clobery, —, appointed by Monck a commissioner to treat with the officers of the army at London, xvi. 95.
- Clogher, bishop of: *see* Mac-Mahon.
- Clotworthy, sir Jehn, iv. 25. inveighs in Parliament against the earl of Strafford, iii. 5. committed to prison by the House of Commons, xi. 208.
- Clubmen in Somerset and Dorsetshire, ix. 49-51, 57, 100.
- Cobbett, colonel, sent by the committee of safety into Scotland to Monck, xvi. 92. imprisoned by him, 94. taken prisoner when Lambert's party were dispersed, 150.
- Cohham, John Brook, lord, signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6.
- Cohogan, father: *see* Geoghegan, Ant.
- Coke, sir Edward, blasphemously called the duke of Buckingham our saviour, i. 10.
- Coke, George, bishop of Hereford, signed the bishops' protestation in 1641, iv. 140.
- Coke, sir John, Secretary of State, his character, i. 141, 142. ii. 48. charged with the failure of the Scotch expedition, ii. 54. removed from his post, *ib.* though supported by Strafford, *ib.*, 101.
- Colchester, v. 51. vi. 37, 38. xi. 114, 131, 153 *n.*, 208. occupied by the Kentish royalists, xi. 61, 66, 110. besieged by Fairfax, 62, 102, 103. surrendered, 105.
- Coleford, Gloucestershire, vi. 291.
- Colepepper, *or* Culpeper, iv. 204 *n.* [301 *n.*] v. 206 *n.*, 432 *n.* vii. 200, 370 *n.* 2. viii. 33, 62, 179. ix. 11, 58, 74, 77, 78, 79, 82 *n.*, 83 *n.*, 84, 94, 95, 96, 103, 105, 106, 115, 137, 147, 151, 158. x. 3, 5, 6, 7, 12 *n.*, 39, 44. xiii. 108. member for Kent, iv. 122. made Chancellor of the Exchequer, *ib.*, 167. his character, 122, 167. vi. 394. xi. 127. refutes a report of his being a Roman catholic, iv. 125. one of those styled by the rabble 'persons disaffected to the kingdom,' 129 *n.* inclined through the King's imprudence to take no part in public affairs, 158. signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. urged the sending a message of peace from Nottingham, vi. 8 *n.* one of those who carried the message for peace to Parliament, *ib.*, 10, 12. present at the battle of Edge-hill, 79 *n.* dissuaded the King from drawing off the field, *ib.* made Master of the Rolls, vi. 382. viii. 28, 213. censured for being in favour of the siege of Gloucester, vii. 181, 239. one of those appointed to inquire into the charges against the duke of Hamilton, 405. one of those whom the King consulted in military affairs, viii. 28, 33-93. Wilmot hostile to him, 30, 61, 94, 95. prince Rupert also hostile to him, 168. xi. 63, 127. made a baron, viii. 170, 213. appointed by the King to be one of the Prince's council, 180. one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, 211. sent to settle disputes at Taunton, ix. 15. and to Essex to examine allegations against sir R. Greenville, 23, 24. waits on the King at Breckneck, 72. sent from the Prince to the Queen in France, 149. conversation with Hyde as to the King's liberating the duke of Hamilton, 159 *n.* changed his opinion about the Prince of Wales's going to France, x. 9. but sent with lord Capel to dissuade the Queen from sending for him, *ib.* with little success, 21-2. he alone of the Privy Council accompanied him into France, 44. the King said he had no religion, 57. attends the Prince to the fleet, xi. 32. trusted by the Queen to keep the Prince firm in his dependence on the Presbyterian party, 36. accused of corruption, 82. his quarrel with prince Rupert respecting sir R. Walsh, 128-130. offended at not being appointed one of the am-

- bassadors to Spain, xii. 38. though he and Hyde had no great friendship for each other, yet he could agree with no other man so well in business, *ib.* sent to Moscow to borrow money, xiii. 130.
- '*Colloquintida*,' iii. 92.
- Collumpton, Devon, ix. 94.
- Colnbrook, Middlesex, i. 125. iii. 57 *n.* vi. 126 *n. bis*, 129, 134, 136, 318.
- Cologne, xiii. 142. xiv. 124, 125, 127-129, 136-138, 142, 143, [145 *n.*], 151. xv. 1, 4, 18, 21, 22, 69, 84, 87, 102. xvi. 62, 231. description of the city and inhabitants, xiv. 110, 111. Charles II fixed his abode there by invitation of the citizens, 111. where he remained about two years, xv. 1.
- Cologne, Elector of, xiii. 142. his character, xiv. 111, 116.
- Columb-John, Devonshire, vii. 103.
- Colville, James and William, commissioned from Scotland to the French king, ii. 60, and *n.*
- Committee of Safety constituted by the army, xvi. 90-1. their operations, 92-95. they are suppressed, 109-111: *see* Parliament.
- Common-Prayer, Book of, vi. 217, 234, 239. vii. 141, 175. xi. 165, 172. xii. 45. xvi. 243, 245. a bill for its disuse negatived in the House of Commons, iv. 7. and its observance ordered by the Lords, 8. its use forbidden by Parliament, viii. 217. Cromwell's daughters married by it, xv. 51. *See* Kent.
- Commons, House of, forty members required to make a house, iv. 10. *See* Parliament.
- Commonwealth's men, who so called, xv. 125.
- Communion-table, disputes about its removal from the body of the church, i. 199-202. Laud zealous for the alteration, 200. opposed by bishop Williams, 201. ordered by the House of Commons, notwithstanding the dissent of the House of Lords, to be again altered, iv. 8.
- Compton, lord: *see* Northampton.
- Compton, sir Thomas, married the countess of Buckingham, i. 93.
- Compton, sir William, xi. 60. bravely defended Banbury, viii. 148.
- Con, —, agent from Rome, ii. 98. iii. 15 *n.* iv. 65.
- Condé, prince of, x. 18. xii. 76, 78, 79, 81. xiii. 142, 143, 153. xiv. 96. xv. 136, 137, 138. xvi. 52. imprisoned, 93, 99. had won the battle of Rocroix, 107. marquis of Lusignon styled his ambassador at the Spanish court, xiii. 18. liberated, 142. visited Charles II and his mother, with professions of civility, 143. his altered conduct, 144. dissatisfied with the Spaniards in Flanders, xv. 15. tells the Spaniards what steps Turenne would take at Dunkirk, 135. but is not hearkened to, *ib.* present at the siege of Arras, 136. difficulty in the Spanish and French treaty relative to him, xvi. 54-5, 60, 61. how settled, 64.
- Condé, in Flanders, besieged and taken by the Spaniards, xv. 70, 71, 75, 78, 80.
- Connaught, v. 62. vii. 361. xiii. 112. xvi. 207, 209.
- Constant Reformation*, the, a ship, xi. 150. xiv. 68.
- Constant Warwick*, the, a ship, xi. 36, 136.
- Constantinople, vi. 396.
- Couti, prince of, imprisoned, xii. 93, 99. liberated, xiii. 142. governor of Languedoc, xvi. 17. anecdote of his conversation with Richard Cromwell, 18.
- Convention: *see* Council.
- Convertine*, the, a ship, xi. 151, 152.
- Convocation, its sitting continued after the dissolution of Parliament, ii. 97. makes canons, *ib.* iii. 69. which are allowed by the Council, 70. but condemned by the House of Commons, 72.
- Conway Castle, iv. 137.
- Conway, Edward, first viscount, removed from the Secretary's office, i. 141.
- Conway, Edward, second viscount, vii. 188, 248, 347. general of the horse in the second expedition against the Scotch Covenanters, ii. 81. notice of him, 83. highly esteemed by many, 82, 83, 84.

- shamefully routed at Newburn, 89. supposed to have been corrupted, ii. 90 *n.* how far concerned in Waller's and Tomkins' design, vii. 57, 63. tried for it, 73. left London and went to the King at Oxford, 174, 187. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6.
- Cony, —, refused to pay a tax imposed on London by Cromwell, xv. 150.
- Conyers, lord: *see* lord Darcy.
- Conyers, sir John, iv. 2, 14. v. 169, 193. vii. 202. recommended by the House of Commons to Charles I for the lieutenancy of the Tower, iv. 205, 284. who at last appoints him, 284. vii. 201. had been lieutenant-general of the horse in the last Scottish expedition, and governor of Berwick, vii. 202. goes into Holland, *ib.*
- Cooke: *see* Coke.
- Cookin, captain [or Gookin], vii. 129.
- Cooper, sir Anthony Ashley, afterwards earl of Shaftesbury, xvi. 106. notice of him, vii. 199. appointed governor of Weymouth after some dispute, 199, 200. joined the Parliament in consequence of his removal from that post, viii. 60. the command of the Tower intrusted to him and others by Parliament, xvi. 109. one of the committees sent to wait on Charles II at the Hague, 239.
- Coote, sir Charles, defended Londonderry for the Parliament, xii. 146. [defeated the R.C. bishop of Clogher, and hanged him, xiii. 112 *n.*] president of Connaught, xvi. 209. favourably disposed towards Charles II, *ib.*, 210.
- Cope, Isabel, daughter of sir Walter, countess of Holland, i. 139.
- Copenhagen, xvi. 155, 157.
- Copley, colonel, defeats lord Digby at Sherborne, ix. 125. imprisoned by Parliament, xi. 208.
- Corbett, colonel, xvi. 209.
- Corfe castle, Dorsetshire, vii. 191.
- Cortton, —, one of the commissioners for the county of Cornwall, ix. 17.
- Cork, [xi. 148 *n.*] xii. 65 *n.* basely delivered up to Cromwell, xii. 117.
- Cork, Richard Boyle, first earl of, iii. 109.
- Cornish soldiers reviled by Goring, ix. 100.
- Cornwall, vi. 33, 34, 238–256, 385, 397. vii. 85 *n.*, 86–93, 99, 101, 103, 108, 121 *n.*, 132, 148, 151, 194, 290, 293, 294, 298, 369 *n.* 8. viii. 89–91, 96, 103, 132, 134, 138, 142, 145, 153, 169, 182, 255, 256, 262. ix. 8, 12, 16, 17, 18, 22, 25, 43, 53–55, 57, 58, 62–65, 73, 76, 77, 81, 82, 84, 92, 101, 103–105, 108, 109, 133, 135, 137, 138, 143, 145, 146, 149, 151, 152, 173. x. 1, 3, 6, 13 *n.*, 76. xiv. 143. xvi. 26, 164.
- Cornwallis, sir Charles, xiii. 30.
- Coronation oath, form of the, v. 226, 294–304.
- Corunna, xi. 251.
- Cosin, John, afterwards bishop of Durham, forbidden to officiate to the Protestants in the Queen's family at Paris, xiii. 44. the Queen had some personal exceptions against him, *ib.*
- Costeloe, viscount: *see* visc. Dillon of Costello.
- Cotswold Hills, viii. 49, 72.
- Cotterell, colonel, Parliamentary governor of Pontefract castle, xi. 116, [126 *n.*] he is taken prisoner in bed, 120.
- Cottington, sir Francis, afterwards lord, iii. 133. vii. 189. viii. 123 *n.* xi. 39 *n.*, 86, 127, 128. xii. 42, 56. selected to attend Prince Charles in his journey to Spain, i. 28. what situations he had filled, *ib.* his opinion against the journey, 29. the duke of Buckingham's behaviour to him in consequence, 30. his advocating the Spanish match the cause of Buckingham's hostility to him, 67. his reply to the duke's avowal of hostility, 68. how far afterwards reconciled, 69. Chancellor of the Exchequer, 205. thwarts archbishop Laud as a commissioner of the treasury, *ib.* and exposes his irascibility, 207–212. opposes the King's making a park



at Richmond, 209. one of the chief of the committee of State, ii. 99. unpopular, from being suspected of favouring the Papists, 102. made Master of the Wards, xiii. 125. why he resigned the Chancellorship of the Exchequer, and the Mastership of the Wards, iii. 84, 86, 138, 192 n., 213. iv. 122, 167 n. recommended by the earl of Strafford for the Lieutenancy of Ireland, iv. 41 n. evidence at Strafford's trial, iii. 119. [lieutenant of the Tower, 200.] signed the letter to the Privy-Council in Scotland, vii. 369 n. 6. resident at Rouen, xi. 23. had still the office of Lord High Treasurer of England, *ib.* goes to Dieppe, *ib.* after being captured and plundered joins the Prince at the Hague, 78, 79. desires to go to Spain and to be relieved from attendance on the King, xii. 34. conference with Hyde concerning the King's sending them on an embassy to Spain, 35-7. he and Hyde are appointed ambassadors through his management, 38. how provided with money for their embassy, 47, 48. they set out, 49. visit the duke of Lorraine at Brussels, *ib.* his dexterity prevails with the duke to furnish a loan, 50. they go to St. Germain's, 59. Cottington's ingenious dissuading the King from making col. Windham Secretary of State, 64. their departure from St. Germain's, 77. his conference with cardinal Mazarin, 80. the ambassadors begin their journey for Spain, 81. their journey to Madrid, 81-86. interview with don Luis de Haro, 88. they are present at the *toros*, &c., 89, 90. their audience with the King and Queen, 100-3. the King showed more favour to Hyde than to him, 102 n. they have a house assigned them, 103. their private audience, 108. they acquaint the King of Spain with their master's resolution for Scotland, 126. they expostulate with don Luis about Ascham's coming to Spain as

agent of the English Parliament, xiii. 9. they write to him about Ascham's murder, 11. his answer, *ib.* they are desired by the King of Spain to be gone, 25. Cottington's desire of remaining in Spain, 26. reason of the discountenance he met with at the Spanish Court, 27. had turned Roman Catholic when formerly in Spain, and reverted to Protestantism on his return to England, *ib.* reconciled again to the Church of Rome, *ib.* he is allowed to live at Valladolid, *ib.*, 29. his death, *ib.* his character, 30. was of an incomparable temper, i. 68, 207. and of the most profound dissimulation, *ib.* xiii. 30.

Cotton, sir Thomas, v. 35. xi. 262.

Council: *see* Privy Council. Great Council of peers summoned to York, ii. 95, 107, 122. ill consequences of the disrespect towards Charles I's Council of State, vii. 278. a council settled for the Prince of Wales, viii. 180. Council of officers: *see* Army. Common-Council: *see* London.

Courage, observations respecting, vii. 264 n.

Courtney, sir William, ix. 45.

Covenant, the Scottish, ii. 20. xi. 170, 172, 228, 252. xii. 6, 7, 8, 12, 13, 20, 21, 38, 45, 118, 122, 123, 124, 136, 137. xiii. 59, 118. xvi. 106, 215, 242. a covenant against prelacy proposed by the Scots between the two kingdoms, and agreed to, 251. a copy of it, 259. strictly enjoined, 313. pressed by Parliament, x. 122. condemned by the university of Oxford, 123. adored in Scotland, xi. 13, 17. pressed upon the English royalists, xi. 43-5, 52. taken by Charles II, xiii. 2. new printed in London in 1660, xvi. 162.

Covenant: a vow and covenant taken by both Houses of Parliament upon discovery of Mr. Waller's and Tomkins' design, vii. 67, 68. and throughout the city and army, 70.

Covenanters, Scottish: *see* Scotland.

Coventry, vi. 1, 83 *bis*, 274, 276, 301.

- viii. 61, 63, 148, 152. x. 31. the King refused entrance there, v. 446 n., 447, 448.
- Coventry, sir Thomas, afterwards first lord, ii. 103. iii. 205. v. 204. viii. 136. his character and rise, i. 96-100. his high reputation as Keeper of the Great Seal, ii. 64. opposed the iron monopoly, ii. 103. often opposed by the earl of Manchester, i. 117. his death, i. 101. ii. 64.
- Coventry, Thomas, second lord, vii. 177 n. signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. sent into the western parts, 443. went beyond sea, vii. 369 n. 6.
- Coventry and Lichfield, bishop of: *see* Wright, Rob.
- Cowes, Isle of Wight, xi. 183.
- Crane, sir —, vi. 62. knighted, vi. 45 n.
- Cranfield, Lionel: *see* earl of Middlesex.
- Cranford, Middlesex, v. 214.
- [Cranmer, Will., Rotterdam, iv. 352 n. v. 18.]
- Craven, William lord, afterwards earl, vii. 369 n. 6. x. 103.
- Crawford, col., vii. 343.
- Crawford, Ludovick Lindsay, fifteenth earl of, vii. 101 n., 109, 113. had inveterate hatred to the marquis of Hamilton, iv. 15 n. one of those who accused him of treason, vii. 369 n. 4. taken prisoner at the battle of Worcester, and sent to the Tower, xiii. 135.
- Crawford, earl of: *see* earl of Lindsay.
- Crediton, [Kirton,] Devon, viii. 145. ix. 105, 109.
- Creed, major, xvi. 84, 150.
- Crequy, duke of, xv. 139.
- Creswell, sergeant, vi. 231.
- Crew House taken by lord Byron, vii. 401.
- Crew, John, iii. 240. committed to the Tower in 1640, v. 162. one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, viii. 211. notice of him, 248. was in favour of the Self-denying Ordinance, 261.
- Crispe, sir Nicholas, a citizen of London who held correspondence with the King at Oxford, vii. 59, 60, 61.
- [Croft Bridge, ii. 114 n.]
- Crofts, William, afterwards lord, iv. 222. xi. 70. sent to Poland for money, xiii. 130. (as lord) xiv. 96.
- Cromwell, Frances, her marriage, xv. 51.
- Cromwell, Henry, xvi. 208. made by his father Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, xiv. 41. xv. 50. very popular there, xiv. 101. xvi. 16. submits to the Parliament, and resigns his Lieutenantancy, xvi. 16, 208.
- Cromwell, Mary, her marriage, xv. 51. intercedes in vain with her father to save Dr. Hewet's life, 101.
- Cromwell<sup>1</sup>, Oliver, ii. 90. vi. 403, 408. viii. 185, 186, 219, 250, 260. ix. 24, 28, 30. x. 99, 104, 106, 125, 128, 135, 138, 140, 141, 149, 161, 168. xi. 8, 24, 31, 74, 75, 91, 92, 94, 110, 114, 115, 123, 125, 144, 153, 158, 171, 173, 194, 195, 210, 217, 251. xii. 6, 9, 13, 17, 19, 21, 35, 74, 115, 118, 125. xiii. 19, 23, 24, 32, 35, 39, 41, 47, 48, 51, 61, 65, 66, 110, 171, 174, 175. xiv. 11, 61, 64, 73, 74, 77, 79, 80, 82, 84, 103, 124, 136, 141, 142. xv. 9, 17, 18, 19, 23, 27, 76, 77, 86, 87, 88, 90, 95, 98, 101, 102, 131, 134, 141, 146, 147. xvi. 1, 4, 9, 12, 18, 19, 21, 22, 28, 45, 52, 53, 78, 80, 86, 94, 98, 99, 105, 113, 121, 148, 173, 204, 207, 211. conversations with Falkland in Parliament, where he was little noticed, in 1641, iv. 51. 52. his declaration that he would have left the country, if the Remonstrance had not passed the Commons, 52. appointed to command the horse of the association of eastern counties under the earl of Manchester, viii. 18. wounded at the battle of Marston-moor, where he com-

<sup>1</sup> The name is always written *Cromwell* by Clarendon.

Cromwell.

manded the horse with Fairfax, 74, 76. breach between him and the earl of Manchester, and their counter-charges, 182-185. The Scotch commissioners jealous of him, 186. he and Vane and Ireton leaders of the Independents, 186, 260. ix. 168. his speech in favour of the Self-denying Ordinance, viii. 195. recommends sir T. Fairfax for general, 201. how he retained his commission notwithstanding the Self-denying Ordinance, ix. 5. with Fairfax new modelled the army, *ib.* goes into Wilts, 9. retires from the west, 11. commanded the right wing of the horse at the battle of Naseby, 39. the discipline of his and Fairfax's troops, 41. takes Winchester and Basing, 162.

His friendship with cardinal Mazarin, x. 59. xi. 251. xiv. 82. xv. 76. instigates the army against the Parliament, x. 79. the real head of the army, 79, 81. his behaviour at first in the mutinies of the army against Parliament, 88. frustrates the Parliament's intention of seizing him by returning to the army, 88-89. appears in the council of officers, 93. Fairfax entirely resigned himself to him, 95. often visits the King, *ib.*, 115. the earl of Manchester particularly hated by him, 110. he and Ireton resolved never to trust the King or to do any thing towards his restoration, 125. called therefore a villain by Huntington, *ib.* here in they outwitted Ashburnham, 132. whom Cromwell afterwards imprisoned, *ib.*, 136. is troubled by the Agitators or Levellers in the army, 126, 140. suppresses meetings of the Levellers, 140. his speech in Parliament on the King's refusing to pass four Acts sent to him, 146. resolves at a meeting with his officers on the King's destruction, 147. the greatest dissembler living, and gained his ends by his craftiness, 168-9. his first public declar-

ation, 169. at first favoured the Presbyterians, *ib.* incensed the English against the Scots, 170. was a great preacher, 174.

Lord Lisle sent Lord Lieutenant into Ireland through him, xi. 2. opposes sir W. Waller's being appointed to succeed lord Lisle, and proposes Lambert, 3. the marquis of Argyll a fast friend, 9. held the Scots in perfect contempt, 49. advances against them, 58, 73, 74. leaving Ireton to watch Fairfax and the army in Kent, 62. defeats sir M. Langdale near Preston, 75-76. and routs duke Hamilton at Uttoxeter, 76. marches into Scotland, 91, 97. welcomed by Argyll, 98. his declaration of his intentions, 99. is solemnly received at Edinburgh, and entertained, 99, 100. returns to England, 100. master of England, 101. endeavours to prevent the Parliament from repealing their votes of no more addresses to the King, 114, 153 *n.* leaves the siege of Pontefract castle to Lambert, 115, 116, 122. his great loss in Rainsborough, 123. placed much confidence in Harrison, who owed his rise to him, 221. overwitted Fairfax in compassing the King's death, 235. employed and contemned sir J. Danvers, 237. influences the rejection of the duke of Hamilton's petition for his life, 259. as also of the earl of Holland's, *ib.* and especially of lord Capel's, 261.

Supposed to have agreed with Argyll when in Scotland, to keep the King in perpetual imprisonment, xii. 10. was to have been excepted in a proposed declaration by Charles II, 45. made Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, 69, 70. how brought about, 71. provides forces for his going thither, 73. arrives at Dublin, 74. takes Drogheda by storm, 116. marches into Munster, 117. Cork betrayed to him, *ib.* the whole province submits to him, *ib.* France grew every day into

## Cromwell.

closer correspondence with him, 121. Christina, Queen of Sweden, expressed great esteem for him, 129. he makes great use of the animosities amongst the Irish, 147. tried to gain over the marq. of Ormonde, *ib.* gives the Irish leave to transport themselves into any foreign prince's service, 148. removed numbers to the most inland part of Connaught, xvi. 207. his conduct with regard to the Levellers, xii. 151.

Resolves to invade Scotland, xiii. 19. leaves Ireton his deputy in Ireland, 19, 110. is made general upon Fairfax's resignation, 20. enters Scotland, 21. routs the Scots at Dunbar, 22. enters Edinburgh, *ib.* gains a pass and gets behind the King's army, 52. the King thereupon marches into England, 53. Cromwell's resolutions upon this news, 54. orders Lambert to follow the King with a body of the horse, 55. leaves Monk in Scotland, 56, 138. and follows the King three days after, 57. defeats him at Worcester, 75-6. supposed by some to have corrupted the King's general, Lesley, 80. an argument against it, 81. received with universal joy at London, 82. discountenances the Presbyterians from the time of his being chosen general, 117. causes several high courts of justice to be erected, 119. greatly vexed at the escape of Middleton and Massey, 137. St. John his confidant, 154. influenced for the war with the Dutch by St. John, 169. his great power out of England, 170. Ireton by his obstinacy often prevailed over Cromwell, 175. and had he lived would have opposed his schemes, *ib.*

The Parliament not so obedient to him as he expected, xiv. 1, 2. dissolves Parliament, 8. his behaviour on this occasion, 9. his declaration to the people, 10. what would have been the consequence had not Cromwell have

made himself a tyrant, 12. he and his Council choose a new Parliament, 14. he calls them together by his own warrant, 16. his address to them, 17. and delivers them an *Instrument* for their authority, 18. they dissolve and deliver up the *Instrument* to him, 21. he is made Protector by his Council, 22. and by Lambert's support, xvi. 78. installed according to an *Instrument of Government*, xiv. 23. takes an oath to observe it, 24. proclaimed, 25. entertained by the city, *ib.* his fleets twice victorious against the Dutch, 28-31. his reception of Dutch commissioners, 29. makes peace with the Dutch, 33, 41. makes Portugal send an ambassador for peace, 34, 41. prosecutes the King's party, 34. general discontents in the nation against him, 35. a supposed plot against his life, 36. has the brother of the Portuguese ambassador beheaded for a murder, 40. makes his son Henry Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, 41. xv. 50. makes alliance with Denmark, xiv. 41. opposed by the Independents, 35, 41. and the Levellers, 42. calls a Parliament after a new method, 43. substance of his speech to them, 44. designs Lenthall for their Speaker, *ib.* his speech on their questioning the validity of his government, 46. admits none into the House but such as subscribe an engagement to him, *ib.* dissolves them, 47. his conduct with respect to Wildman, 48, 49. and to Lilburn, 50-52. his treaty with France, 53. his friendship desired by Spain, 54, 98. falsely suspected of having poisoned the princess Elizabeth, 86. allows the duke of Gloucester to transport himself beyond sea, 87. disaffection of the army to him, 99. Lambert thought to be before him in the army's affections, 101. manifestation of general aversion to his government, 130. alarmed at the rising

## Cromwell.

at Salisbury, 133. his proceedings after its failure, 134. information of the King's designs given him, 137. by Manning, 142. his advantage by the risings of the King's party, 147. his order for decimating the property of the King's party, 148. his declaration in justification, 149, 150. an answer to which was made by Hyde, 151.

The condition of Scotland under Cromwell, xv. 1. of Ireland, 2. of England, 3. he sends out two fleets, one under Penn, the other under Blake, 5-7, 23. their orders, 10. the marquis of Leda sent ambassador by Spain to him, 8. he is unusually discomposed at the failure at Hispaniola, 13. commits Penn and Venables to the Tower, *ib.* sends reinforcements to Jamaica, *ib.* makes alliance with France, 14. is disturbed with the divisions in his army, 24. purposed to have a Swiss body-guard, *ib.* constitutes a body of major-generals, *ib.* their power, 25. summons a Parliament in Sept. 1656, 28. imposes a subscription upon the members, *ib.* attempts on his life made high treason, 29. he is jealous of Lambert, 30. courted the nobility, and spoke moderately of bishops, 31. a proposition in Parliament to make him King, *ib.*, 41. discussions in Parliament and with him thereon, 32-39. he at length refuses to be made King, 40. his greatness had been foretold in a vision, *ib.* is thereupon confirmed as Protector by the *Humble Petition and Advice* of Parliament, 43-4. his speech on passing it, 45. his inauguration, 47. adjourns his Parliament thereafter, 49. his sons, and their appointments, 50. his daughters disposed of in marriage, 51. allows them after the public marriage to be privately married according to the Book of Common Prayer, *ib.* buries admiral Blake with great pomp, 57. addresses the Parliament on its

meeting again, 59. dissolves the Parliament, as it was disposed to question his authority, 62. turns Lambert out of the army, 64. abridges the power of the major-generals, 65. requires the city of London to be guarded against a plot of the cavaliers, 66, 91. apprehends many persons, 91. examines Mordaunt and Stapley, 94. greatly offended at Mordaunt's acquittal, 98. his severities towards the royalists, 102. finds new enemies amongst the sectaries, 103. execrated by the Levellers, 113, 116, 119, 121. Sexby so intimate with him that he was frequently his bedfellow, 133. a familiarity he often admitted those to whom he employed in any great trust, *ib.* appointed Lockhart governor of Dunkirk, 139.

Alliance with Sweden, xvi. 3, 153. his apprehensions of personal danger, xv. 143. family troubles, 145. his death, 142, 146. buried at Westminster, xvi. 2. appointed his son Richard his successor, xv. 146. a terrible storm on the day of his death, *ib.* his character, 147-156. two instances of his influence with foreign princes, 155. praised by the prince of Conti, xvi. 18. Monck had remained firm to him, 98. Montagu completely gained over by him, 153. anecdote of his guiding Ingoldsby's pen in signing the death warrant of Charles I, 225. one daughter married to lord Warwick's heir, vi. 404. xv. 145. his daughter, Mrs. Claypole, xv. 145. another daughter married first to Ireton, afterwards to Fleetwood, xiii. 19. xv. 145.

Cromwell, Richard, xvi. 52, 148, 153, 208, 224. made a privy councillor by his father, and chancellor of the univ. of Oxford, xv. 50. appointed by his father to be his successor, 149. quiet beginning of his government, xvi. 2. calls a Parliament, 3. differences in it, 4. a council

of officers address him about the government, 6. are seconded by the city militia, 7. votes of the Parliament upon it, 8. the officers advise him to dissolve the Parliament, 9. in spite of advice to the contrary, he issues a proclamation to that purpose, 10, 11. is thereon no longer regarded as Protector, *ib.* submits to the authority of the Parliament, 15. the seals used by him are broken, 20. his incapacity very soon discerned, 28. Lambert proposes his restoration, 149. goes abroad after the King's restoration, 16. anecdote of his visit to the prince of Conti, 18. his wife, xv. 50.

Cromwell, Thomas, fourth lord, earl of Ardglass in Ireland, signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 n. 6.

Crook, justice, iii. 15 n.

Cropredy Bridge, fight at, viii. 64-70, 73 n., 112.

Crown, jewels of the; the Parliament's order against pawning them, v. 323.

[Cucklington, Dorset, ix. 12 n.]

Cuirassiers, Haslerigge's regiment of, nicknamed *lobsters*, vii. 101 n., 104.

Culham bridge, Berks, viii. 166.

Culpeper: *see* Colepepper.

Culworth, vi. 79 n.

Cumberland, ix. 118, 119, 126. xi. 14, 51, 72, 92, 94.

Cumberland, Henry Clifford, last earl of, signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. put by the King in command of York-shire at the request of the gentry, 441 n. 5, 445. his character, 445. vi. 260. viii. 84. excepted by Parliament from being included in any conditions of peace, vi. 50. offers to give up the command in York-shire to the earl of Newcastle, 261.

Cunningham, ---, assists the earl of Lanrick to escape from Oxford, vii. 408.

Customs: *see* Tonnage and Poundage. [Cutts, sir John, x. 91 n.]

## D.

Dacres, lord, one of the few peers who attended Parliament, vii. 369 n. 5, 375.

Dalbeer, ---, commissary-general of horse under the earl of Essex, xi. 104. the earl of Holland assisted by him in his rising, *ib.* killed at St. Neot's, *ib.*

Dalkeith, Agnes Keith, lady, afterwards countess of *Morton*, q. v.

Danby, Henry Danvers, earl of, xi. 237.

Danvers, sir John, notice of, xi. 237.

Darcy and Conyers, Conyers lord, signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 n. 6.

Darcy, Marmaduke, xiv. 130, 135.

Darmstadt: *see* Hesse Darmstadt.

Dartmouth, vii. 369 n. 8. ix. 22, 27, 59, 99, 109 n., 110, 117, 139, 159. taken by Prince Maurice, vii. 296-7.

Dausk, captain, vii. 360.

Davenant, sir William, sent by the Queen to Charles I to endeavour to persuade him to give up the Church, x. 56. the King's indignant answers, 57.

Daventry, ix. 36, 132. xvi. 147.

[Deal, Kent, xi. 67 n.]

Dean, forest of, vi. 291 *bis*.

Deane, admiral, originally a common mariner, appointed one of three admirals in command of a fleet by Cromwell, xiv. 27. killed in an engagement with the Dutch, 28.

Decimation-tax imposed on the royalists, xiv. 148-150.

Dee, river, ix. 119, 120.

Deering, sir Edward, v. 187. brings in a bill for extirpating bishops, deans, &c., iii. 155, 240. which is laid aside, 156, 231 n. 242.

*Defender of the Faith*, the title, xii. 27.

Deincourt, Francis Leake, lord, afterwards earl of Scarisdale, anecdote of an application to him for money for the King, vi. 59, 60, 61. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 n. 6.

- Delft, xii. 24.  
 'Delinquents,' iii. 231. iv. 279. vi. 31. viii. 242. xi. 163.
- Denbigh, William Feilding, first earl of, a volunteer at the battle of Edge-hill, vi. 79. killed at Birmingham, vii. 33.
- Denbigh, Basil lord Feilding, afterwards second earl of, v. 428. xi. 262. present on the Parliament side at the battle of Edge-hill, vi. 79. one of the few lords who attended Parliament, vii. 369 *n.* 5, 375. one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, viii. 211. notice of him, 246. detested the desperate designs of his party, and would have served the King if he could have benefited him, *ib.* dispossessed of his command by the Self-denying Ordinance, ix. 4, 5, 16. one of the commissioners sent to the King about his passing four bills, x. 142.
- Denbigh, the King there, ix. 120.
- Denbighshire, ix. 120.
- Denmark, iv. 352. v. 18, 349. vi. 387. ix. 97, 112, 114, 115. x. 7. xii. 40, 129. xiv. 41. xvi. 3, [19], 76, 153.
- Denmark, Christian IV king of, x. 12 *n.* xii. 129.
- Denmark, Frederick III king of, xvi. 157. favourably disposed to Charles II's cause, xii. 40, 129. why unable to give him much pecuniary aid, 129. not so much esteemed, because not so much feared, as his father, *ib.*
- Denny, lord, his daughter, Honora, married visc. Doncaster, afterwards earl of Carlisle, i. 133.
- Depopulation, commission about, i. 204.
- Derby, James Stanley, seventh earl of, thought to have more power in Cheshire and Lancashire than he really had, vi. 45 *n.*, 62 *n.*, 269, 270. succeeds as earl of Derby, vi. 45 *n.*, 62, 269. accused of high treason by the Commons, 67. undertook to reduce Manchester, *ib.* and to suppress all commotions in Lancashire and Cheshire, 269, 272. his ill success and unfitness, 271. vii. 415. besieged at Lathom, viii. 17, 42. retired to the Isle of Man at the end of the war, xiii. 53. meets Charles II in Lancashire, 60. is sent by him to raise forces, 61. his defeat at Wigan, 66. wounded, *ib.* taken prisoner at the battle of Worcester, [67 *n.*] executed, 68. his character, *ib.*
- Derby, Charlotte de la Tremouille, countess of, xiii. 68.
- Derby, William Stanley, sixth earl of, vi. 67.
- Derby, the King there in Sept. 1642, vi. 21, 23, 62 *n.* fortified for the Parliament by sir John Gell, 274.
- Derbyshire, vi. 29, 261, 274. vii. 400, 403. ix. 85.
- Desborough, —, xiii. 103. opposed Cromwell's being made a king, xv. 34, 39. advises Richard Cromwell to dissolve the Parliament, xvi. 9. and prevails on him to do so, 10. appointed commissary-general of the horse by the officers of the army, 86. one of the committee of safety constituted by the army, 91.
- Deserters, observations respecting, vii. 310.
- Devereux, Robert : see *Essex*.
- Devizes, the marq. of Hertford and Prince Maurice go there, vii. 111, 112, 121 *n.* besieged by sir W. Waller, but relieved, 101 *n.*, 113–118, 129. taken, ix. 120.
- Devonshire, v. 385. vi. 7, 34, 36, 239, 240–3, 246, 327. vii. 86, 93, 96, 103 *sæpe*, 151, 192, 194, 297, 298. viii. 1, 71, 91, 132, 138, 256. ix. 8, 9, 15, 16, 26, 27, 43, 55, 58, 61, 62, 76, 80, 81, 84, 93, 94, 100, 103, 106, 117, 133. x. 31. xiv. 18, 134, 143. xvi. 26, 96, 99, 162, 164, 211. the commissioners of the county, viii. 145. ix. 12, 17, 20, 22, 27, 52–54, 80, 94.
- Devonshire, countess of, iii. 251 *n.*
- Devonshire, Mountjoy, earl of, i. 137.
- Devonshire, William Cavendish, third earl of, vi. 268. signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. and

the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6.

De Witt, John, pensioner of Holland, an enemy to the prince of Orange, xiii. 166. opposed Charles II's joining the Dutch in their war with Cromwell, *ib.*

D'Ews, lieutenant-colonel, killed at Reading, vii. 27.

Dieppe, [x. 154 *n.*] xi. 23, 78.

Digby, George, lord, afterwards second earl of Bristol, iii. 35. iv. 147, 154, 163 *n.* vi. 44, 66 *n.* viii. 62, 96, 179, 180, 281, 282. ix. 25, 30, 43, 44, 57, 133, 135, 157, [167 *n.*], [xi. 185 *n.*] opposes the bill of attainder against Strafford, though not his friend, iii. 139. much trusted by the King, iv. 127. his character, 127, 128. viii. 33. ix. 126. x. 13. instrumental in promoting Falkland, Colepepper, and Mr. Hyde to the King's favour, iv. 128. advises the King to accuse certain members of Parliament of treason, iv. 146, 154, 155. his treacherous conduct on the occasion, 154. advises the King to go to the city after them, 155. offers to seize them himself, *ib.* the King's measures as to these members imputed to him, 193. the most universally odious man in the kingdom, *ib.* accused of high treason by the Commons upon pretence of his levying war at Kingston, 205. order of both Houses about him, 210 *n.* escaped to Holland, 308. certain of his letters intercepted and opened by the Commons, *ib.* mention respecting him in several communications between the King and the Parliament, 332. v. 6, 18, 94, 100, 196, 197, 234, 237, 243, 271, 276. vi. 231.

Particulars of his return to England in disguise, of his capture, and escape through sir John Hotham's connivance, v. 432-435, 441 *n.* 2. persuades Hotham to favour the King's cause, 435-7. did not reverence his father, vi. 388. wounded at Lichfield, vii. 34. slightly wounded at Auburn

Chase, 208. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6. one of those appointed to examine into the charges brought against duke Hamilton, 405. much consulted by the King on military affairs, (being now Secretary of State,) viii. 28, 93. his ascendancy over sir John Colepepper, 33. lord Wilmot's hostility to him, 30, 61, 94, 95. prince Rupert a great enemy to him, 168. the King informed that the Parliament would not treat if he were one of the commissioners, 204 *n.* furthers the earl of Antrim's project of transporting troops from Ireland into Scotland, 266-7, 270-274, 276. the principal cause of the King's revoking prince Rupert's commission, ix. 121. advises that the King should retire to Newark, 121, 122. is appointed general of the forces north of the Trent, 124. marches to Doncaster, *ib.* routed at Sherborne, 125. goes to Dumfries and thence to the Isle of Man and Ireland, 126. called a traitor by lord Gerard, 130. after his disbanding in Scotland, went into Ireland, x. 13. thence to Jersey, *ib.* tries to persuade the Prince of Wales to go into Ireland, *ib.* goes into France to persuade the Queen to approve of this, 14. his interviews there with the Queen and cardinal Mazarin, 15, 17. which alter his views, and he returns to Jersey to persuade the Prince to go into France, 18, 19, 22, 38. his arguments for this step, 41, 42.

Charles II partly estranged from him, by Mr. Elliot, xii. 60, 61. against whom he had prejudiced Charles I, 62. (as earl of Bristol) serves as a lieutenant-general in the French army, xiv. 96. courts the [duchess de Chastillon], *ib.* proposes that the King should marry her, 96, 97. ordered to leave France, and comes to Bruges to the King, xv. 77. goes to the Spanish army, although hated by them, 78. ingratiates himself



- with them notwithstanding, 79. instrumental in recovering St. Ghislain to the Spaniards, 80. advises the King to send sir H. Bennett to Madrid, 81. urges Hyde to accept the Great Seal, 83. attends the King to Calais, xvi. 35. and afterwards to Fuentarabia, 58. persuades him to go into Spain, 68, 69. removes all don Luis de Haro's prejudice against him, who takes him to Madrid, 72. resigns the signet on becoming a Roman Catholic, 180.
- Digby, colonel, afterwards general, sir John, vi. 6. vii. 151. ix. 12 *n.*, 55 *n.*, 133. as sheriff of Nottinghamshire collects forces for the King, vi. 1, 6. sent into Cornwall, vi. 33. commanded the horse at the battle of Stratton, vii. 88. routs the Parliament's forces at Torrington, 194-196. Barnstable and Bideford yielded to him, 197. attacks Plymouth, 197, 289, 295. where he is joined by prince Maurice, 297. who left him to block up the town, viii. 140. ix. 93, 108. where he is dangerously wounded, viii. 142. ix. 55, 61. joins the royalists at Pontefract, xi. 121. chosen governor there, 122. excepted from mercy by Lambert, 124. escapes, 126.
- Digby, Kenelm, the eldest son of sir Kenelm, killed at St. Neot's, xi. 104.
- [Dillon, Robert, lord, iv. 41 *n.*]
- Dillon, Thomas, viscount of Costello, or Costeloe, vi. 300, 302.
- Directory, The*, discussed in the treaty at Uxbridge, viii. 221, 232. confirmed in the Scottish treaty in the Isle of Wight, x. 162. and proposed in the Parliamentary treaty there, xi. 165, 172.
- Diurnal, The*, xiv. 138, 140.
- Dives, sir L., or Dyves, *q. v.*
- Doddington, sir Francis, viii. 114. [xi. 185 *n.*]
- Doleman, —, viii. 154, 157.
- Dominicans, i. 195.
- Domitian, xi. 268.
- Doncaster, xi. 124, 125. the King goes there, v. 416. again, ix. 85-6.
- Doncaster, viscount: *see* earl of Carlisle.
- Donnington castle, Berks, viii. 154, 157, 159, 162, 164. once the residence of Chaucer, vii. 212. garrisoned for the King, *ib.* unsuccessfully attacked by Middleton, viii. 113. relieved from a siege by the King, 148-151. again unsuccessfully attacked, 161.
- Dorchester, vii. 155, 216. ix. 11. surrendered to the King's forces, vii. 191, 192, 199.
- Dorchester, marquis of: *see* viscount Newark.
- Dorchester, viscount: *see* Carleton, sir D.
- Dorislau, Isaac, LL.D., sent from the Parliament to the States General, xii. 3, 24. killed at the Hagne by some Scottish men, 24, 141.
- Dorset, Richard Sackville, third earl of, i. 131.
- Dorset, Edward Sackville, fourth earl of, vi. 66 *n. bis*, 70, 79 *n.* lord lieut. of Middlesex, iv. 109, 110. his character, i. 129, 130. killed lord Bruce in a duel, 130. signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 345, 346. one of those that carried the King's message for peace to the Parliament, vi. 8 *n.*, 10. a friend of the earl of Lindsey, vi. 90 *n.* signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6.
- Dorset, fifth earl of: *see* lord Buckhurst.
- Dorset, Mary Curzon, countess of, i. 129. three of the King's children intrusted to her care, x. 103, 115 *n.*
- Dorsetshire, iv. 329. vi. 2, 7, 246. vii. 94 *bis*, 95, 151, 154, 191. viii. 59, 148, 239, 256. ix. 7, 8, 11, 13, 17, 56. xiii. 92, 97. xiv. 134.
- Dort, synod of, i. 143.
- [Douglas, sir Arch., ii. 114 *n.*]
- Douglas, sir Joseph, xii. 4, 13.
- [Dove, col. John, xiv. 132 *n.*]
- Dover, iii. 64. iv. 301, 311, 315.

- v. 116 n., 374. xiii. 163. xiv. 28, 61, [87 n.], 124. xvi. 139, 245, 246.
- Dover Road, battle there with the Dutch, xiii. 159.
- Dover, Henry Carey, first earl of, signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. in the King's guard at the battle of Edge-hill, vi. 79. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 n. 6.
- Dover, earl of: *see* viscount Rochford.
- Dowcett, Abr., employed to aid the King's attempt at escape from Carisbrooke, xi. 196, 197.
- Downing, Dr., one of the Parliament chaplains, vi. 154: *see* Marshall.
- Downs, the, v. 374, 377 and n., 378. xi. 26, 27, 28, 30, 35, 67, 78, 79, 110, 132, 134, 138. xiii. 26. xiv. 27. xv. 14, 237, 245.
- Drake, sir Francis, his estates in Devon granted by the King to sir R. Greenville, ix. 62, 65.
- Drogheda: *see* Tredagh.
- Dublin, iv. 24-28, 41 n. vii. 335, 336, 349, 368, 401 n. viii. 267, 270. x. 13, 153. xi. 153 n. xii. 3, 28, 65 n., 68. xiii. 114. xvi. 209. surrendered by Ormonde, x. 121. xi. 148. blocked up by him, xii. 69. his army beaten in a sally, *ib.*, 73. he retires before Cromwell's arrival, 74.
- Dublin, archbishop of: *see* Bulkeley.
- Dumfries, ix. 126.
- Dunbar, Cromwell's victory there, xiii. 22.
- Dunbar, Henry Constable, earl of, first recommended archbishop Abbot to King James, i. 185.
- Duncombe, colonel, vi. 257.
- Dundalk taken by Ormonde, xii. 68.
- Dundee taken by Monk, xiii. 138.
- Dunkirk, xi. 78, 79. xiv. 127. xv. 14, 52, 132, 140. xvi. 52. taken by the Spaniards, xiii. 167. xiv. 53. besieged by the French army, xv. 134-5. the Spanish under don Juan defeated there by Turenne, 137. surrendered to the French, 138-9. the French King delivers it to the English, *ib.*
- Dunse, rencontre of Scotch and English armies at, ii. 39-41, 46.
- Dunsmore, Francis Leigh, lord, afterwards earl of Chichester, a commissioner to treat with the Scots at Ripon, ii. 107. signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. notice of his character, vi. 391. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 n. 6. (as earl of Chichester) one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, viii. 211. notice of his creation as an earl, 213.
- Dunstable, viii. 73 n.
- Dunster castle, Somerset, vi. 33. ix. 44. taken by the marq. of Hertford, vii. 97, 100. the plague in Dunster in 1645, ix. 44. surrendered in 1646, xiii. 95.
- Duppa, Brian, bishop of Salisbury, ix. 53 n., 96. tutor to the Prince of Wales, 74, 96.
- Durham, city, ii. 89, 91, 120. bishop of: *see* Morton, T.
- Durham, county, vi. 262. vii. 322. xi. 51, 93.
- Dusseldorp, xvi. 112, 113.
- Dutch war: *see* Holland.
- Dyves, or Dives, sir Lewis, iv. 147, 309. v. 18, 89 n., 196, 243. ix. 57. brother-in-law to lord Digby, iv. 308. present and wounded in the encounter at Worcester, vi. 44, 45. at Newport Pagnell, vii. 288. made commander in chief of Dorsetshire, viii. 148. surprises Weymouth, 239-40. ix. 7. able only to protect a small part of the county, ix. 8.

## E.

- E. R., letter to Mr. Anderton, iv. 204 n.
- Earle, or Earles, Dr. John, chaplain to the Prince of Wales, xl. 36. xvi. 138.
- Earle, sir Walter, iii. 55 n. iv. 204 n. vi. 7. vii. 191.
- Earnly, sir Michael, governor of Shrewsbury, killed when the town

- was betrayed to the Parliament, viii. 239.
- Edgecombe, —, ix. 144.
- Edgecott, or Edgeworth, vi. 79 *n. ter*, 80, 96.
- Edge-hill, or Keinton, particulars of the battle of, vi. 79-97, 135. mentioned, vi. 151, 170, 240, 245, 269, 274, 285, 306, 386. vii. 24, 25, 61, 75, 230. viii. 63, 84, 235. ix. 41. xi. 222, 231. xiv. 50. the King and Queen meet there, vii. 121.
- [Edgeman, Will., x. 27 *n.* xi. 32 *n.*]
- Edinburgh, iv. 15 *n.*, 20, 25. vii. 261, 264, 405. ix. 123. x. 121. xi. 15, 16, 18, 40, 45, 47, 51, 52, 98, 99, 100, 101. xii. 129, 130, 132, 135, 136, 138, 146. xiii. 21, 48, 56. xvi. 99. the city writes to Laud about the riot in the cathedral, ii. 21. taken by Montrose, ix. 86. entered by Cromwell, xiii. 22, 24. — the castle, i. 166 *n.* ii. 55. xvi. 94.
- bishopric of, erected by Charles I, i. 182. disliked by the people, 183: see Holyrood; Forbes, W.; Lindsay, D.; Struther, W.
- Edward the Confessor, v. 296.
- Edward III, iii. 80, 124, 125. v. 104, 181, 225, 227, 240, 241, 292, 313, 315, 418, 441 *n.* 4. vi. 170. vii. 313. xi. 160.
- Edward IV, iii. 215. v. 319.
- Edward VI, iii. 120, 127. vi. 181.
- Elector: see Palatine.
- Eliot, sir John, iv. 62.
- Elizabeth, Queen, i. 4, 116, 155. iii. 2, 18, 21, 126, 158, 257. v. 4, 129, 289. vi. 181, 354, 398. xi. 145, 254. xiii. 30. her times compared with those before the Long Parliament, i. 160. a saying of hers quoted, i. 166 *n.*
- Elizabeth, princess, daughter of Charles I, notice of, x. 117. her father's advice to her, *ib.* committed by the Parliament first to the care of the earl of Northumberland, and then of the countess of Leicester, xiv. 85. afterwards removed to Carisbrooke castle, 86. where she died, *ib.* the report of Cromwell's having her poisoned false, *ib.*
- Elizabeth, Queen of Bohemia, q. v.
- Ellesdon, or Ellison, William, aids the escape of Charles II after the battle of Worcester, xiii. 97-99.
- Elliot, Thomas, xii. 60, 61, 62. sent by the King to fetch the Great Seal from lord Littleton to York, v. 203 *n.*, 212. his own account of the matter, 203 *n.*, 214. aids in the arrest of lord Wilmet, viii. 96. groom of the bedchamber to Charles II in France, xii. 60. his influence over him, *ib.* instigates him against the earl of Bristol and lord Digby, *ib.* married col. Windham's daughter, *ib.*
- Elsinore, v. 18.
- Ely, viscount: see Loftus.
- Ely, bishop of: see Wren, Matth.
- Enclosures opposed by Laud, i. 204.
- England: see Charles I, Charles II, Cromwell, and Parliament.
- Ensham, Oxfordshire, viii. 47.
- Episcopacy; Pym, Burten, and Bastwick its most notorious opponents, i. 197. petition to Parliament against episcopacy, iii. 66. a bill brought into the Commons for extirpating bishops, deans, and chapters, 155, 231 *n.* laid by, 156. revived and committed, 240. again laid aside, 242. a new bill brought into Parliament to take away bishops' votes, iv. 33, 104, 129 *n.* episcopacy abolished in Scotland, 44. petition of apprentices against prelates, 105. the Commons procure the assent of the Lords to the bill for abolition of episcopacy, vi. 229, 335. a covenant for the extirpation of prelacy proposed by the Scots between the two nations, and agreed to, vii. 251-257. copy of it, 259. ordered to be generally taken, 261, 313. its passing the Parliament chiefly owing to sir H. Vane the younger, 266. arguments of the Parliamentary commissioners at Newport against episcopacy, and the King's replies, xi. 169-171, 180-1.
- Erasmus quoted, vi. 42.
- Erskine, sir Charles, one of the

Scottish commissioners at Uxbridge, viii. 211.

Esau, v. 327.

Esdras, second book of, quoted, vi. 66 n.

Esperson, duke of, x. 12 n. hated by the city of Bourdeaux, where he was governor, xii. 81.

Essex, vi. 37, 327. vii. 172, 177. viii. 18. ix. 55, 59, 60. xi. 237. xii. 86. xv. 87. xvi. 45. petition from the county to Parliament, iv. 247. v. 401.

Essex, col. Charles, vi. 7. killed at Edge-hill, 93, 95 n.; 99. notice of him, 93.

Essex, sir William, taken prisoner by the King's forces at Edge-hill, vi. 94.

Essex, Robert Devereux, third earl of, ii. 48. iii. 89, 244. iv. 2, 11, 22, 93, 149 n., 204 n., 256. v. 203, 372, 394, 415, 428, 429, 440 n., 441 and n., 446 n., 447. vi. 14, 34, 37, 43, 45 n., 53, 66 n., 70, 76, 78, 79 and n., 84, 88, 90, 93, 101, 125, 126 and n., 134, 139, 141, 156, 196, 204, 207, 219, 236, 238, 257, 258, 262, 269, 274, 276, 292, 294, 297, 301, 316, 323, 324, 334, 357, 400. vii. 21, 22, 26, 30, 31, 36, 39, 41, 46, 49, [73 n.], 74, 75, 77, 78, 84, 85, 94, 100, 115, 121, 122, 167, 174, 183, 187, 188, 203, 230, 238, 249, 253, 257, 264 n., 265, 279, 321, 369 n. 5. 371, 375, 376, 388, 389, 392, 398. viii. 9, 11, 12, 19, 25, 34, 35, 58, 60, 63, 71, 89, 91, 92, 96, 103, 109, 110, 112, 114, 123, 131, 132, 133, 142, 148, 150, 153, 154, 155, 183, 184, 190, 199, 201, 235, 240, 241, 243, 247, 250, 255, 260, 261, 262, 284, 285. ix. 4, 16, 41, 62, 173. x. 70, 94, 104, 169. xi. 40, 104. xii. 24. xiii. 135.

Made lieut.-gen. of the army against the Covenanters, ii. 26. takes Berwick, 30, and note to i. 166. the Covenanters' letter to him, 43. how received, 44, 48. merited well in this expedition, yet slighted by the King, 52. not employed in the second expedition, 80, 81. it would have been better if he had, 80. an

enemy to the earl of Strafford, and why, 80, 101. iii. 27, 162. and to Laud, iii. 27. a commissioner to treat with the Scots at Ripon, ii. 107, 108.

How won over by the Puritans, iii. 28. sworn a privy-councillor, 50. one of the leaders in the House of Lords, 28, 55 n. devoted to the Prayer Book, and not hostile to the bishops in general, 145. yet in favour of taking away their votes in Parliament, 148. Hyde's fruitless conversations with him in behalf of Strafford, 163-5. made Lord Chamberlain, 213-4. ought to have been appointed general to disband the army, 233. iv. 78 n. made lieut.-gen. south of the Trent, iii. 248.

Appoints a guard for the security of the Parliament, iv. 15 n., 22. being trusted with the earl of St. Alban's proxy, often voted one way himself, giving the proxy the other way, 41 n. resigns his commission as general on this side Trent, 78. moved that the House of Peers should mediate with the King on behalf of the members of Parliament accused of treason, 153. though Lord Chamberlain, is dissuaded by the earl of Holland from attending the King to Hampton-court, 196. v. 32, 116 n. reason of his enmity to the earl of Newcastle, iv. 293. was lord lieut. of Yorkshire, 329.

Desired that the proceedings of Parliament should be more moderate, v. 30. deprived of the office of Lord Chamberlain for refusing to attend the King at York, 31-2, 35, 116 n. this was one great cause of the future mischiefs, 33, 116 n. appointed general of the Parliament's forces, 91 n., 388. x. 76. his object in accepting the command, vi. 402. declared a traitor by the King, v. 441 n. 3.

Joins the army at Northampton, vi. 17, 21, 30. moves with it from thence, 43. his instructions from Parliament, 49. his house and park at Chartley ordered by the King not to be touched by

his troops, 62 n. goes to Worcester, 63. attainted of high treason, 76, 381. marches after the King, 79. the battle of Kainton or Edge-hill, 79 n., 81-97. his colours orange-tawny, 86. retires to Warwick castle, 96. condition of his army after the battle, 100. sends an account of the battle to London, 101. marches towards London, 129, 134. opposes the King's army at Brentford, which retires, 137, 138. appointed sole general for the Parliament, 146. declaration by Parliament of his acceptable service, 147. fixes his head quarters at Windsor, 207. the marquis of Hertford his particular friend, having married his sister, 385.

Besieges Reading, vii. 24, 46 n. which is surrendered on articles, 36, 37. the probable result had he marched to Oxford, 38, 45, 46 n. his conduct at Reading not satisfactory to his party, 46 and n. his army impaired by sickness, 74. marches to Thame, *ib.* from Thame towards London, 85, 122, 165. cause of the enmity between him and sir W. Waller, 120. dissatisfied with the Parliament, 121. advises the procuring peace, 135, 165. the Parliament let him discern that they had another general to trust to, viz. the earl of Manchester, 172. viii. 18. but also try to recover him by praise to his former vigour, vii. 172. he is altered from his desire of peace, 173. chiefly by Pym, 413. what use was endeavoured to be made of him by the moderate party, 186, 187. raises the siege of Gloucester, 203-5. and seizes Cirencester in his return, 206. fights a drawn battle at Newbury, after which he proceeds to London, 209-212. his reception there, 214, 235, 237. reconciliation between him and sir W. Waller, 236. courted popularity too much, 279. removes his head quarters from Windsor to St. Alban's, 288. letter to him from the Parliament at Oxford,

370 n. 2, 372. his answer, directed to the earl of Forth, 377. another letter to Forth, 388. never prospered after having taken the Covenant and writing this letter, 386. one of the few peers who still sat in Parliament, 375.

His movements against Abingdon, and Oxford, viii. 36-50. marches towards the west, 51, 73 n. notwithstanding the contrary orders of Parliament, 52. good discipline of his army, 59. his own popularity, *ib.* takes Weymouth, 60. relieves Lyme, *ib.* narrative of his unsuccessful campaign in Cornwall, 89-119. refuses the King's overture of peace, 96 n., 101. rejects also an overture from the King's officers, 106. his cavalry escape the King's, his foot surrender, 96 n., 115-119. escapes himself to Plymouth by sea, 96 n., 117. complained against by Waller, 112. took Taunton castle, 146. he and the Parliament dissatisfied with each other, 182, 190. writes to prince Rupert about treatment of prisoners, 284. gives up his commission, in consequence of the Self-denying Ordinance, 285. ix. 4. his death, x. 80, 81. his character, vi. 402.

Eton College, xiv. 18.

Eugenio, don, xii. 108.

Evelyn, sir John, excepted by the King from pardon, vi. 128, 129, 318.

Evers, sergeant, Speaker of the House of Commons at Oxford, vii. 370 n. 1.

Evesham, x. 31. the King there, vii. 206, 209. viii. 50, 55, 56, 73 n. ix. 32. and Waller, viii. 53. taken by the Parliament forces, ix. 32.

'*Evil Counsellors*,' iii. 236-9. v. 116 n. *ter*, 282. vi. 31.

Ewre, colonel, xi. 203, 204.

Exchequer, by what means exhausted at the beginning of the reign of Charles I, i. 5. expedients for replenishing it, 5, 49.

Excise, imposition of, designed by the earl of Bedford, iii. 192.

hitherto considered by the English as a mark of slavery, and never feared by themselves, vii. 48. imposed by the Parliament at Westminster, 396. and by that at Oxford, *ib.* enquired into by Parliament in 1659, xvi. 4.

Exeter, vi. 246, 250. vii. 89, 90, 93, 101, 103, 151, 194, 197, 289, 290, 294, 296, 297, 369 *n.* 8, 401 *n.*, 408. viii. 60, 71, 73 *n.*, 90, 93, 96, 114, 146, 150, 279. ix. 9, 15, 20 *n.*-25, 27, 59, 64, 68, 79-84, 92, 93, 99, 103-107, 113, 116, 117, 139, 162. x. 31, 96, 98. xiv. 134. besieged, vii. 192-193. ix. 106, 109. the Queen comes there, viii. 21. she leaves, 89. the King goes there, 144. he leaves, 147. surrendered to prince Maurice, vii. 198, 237. designs there in favour of Charles II, xvi. 26.

Eyres, captain, vii. 129.

## F.

Fabius, vii. 310, 312.

Fabricius, vii. 130.

Fairfax, Ferdinando, lord, vi. 274, 324, 336. vii. 135, 138. sent to the King with the answer of Parliament about Hull, v. 106. one of the chief of those who were active for the Parliament in Yorkshire, v. 446. vi. 257. signs the articles of neutrality agreed on in Yorkshire, *ib.* reprehended for it by Parliament, 258. if properly assisted, would have been master of Yorkshire, 261. made general in Yorkshire for the Parliament, 262. his operations, 263-4, 268. vii. 121 *n.* defeated at Atherton Moor, vii. 135, 264 *n.*

Fairfax, sir Thomas, afterwards lord, iii. 244. vii. 121 *n.*, 415, 416 *n.* viii. 250, 281. ix. 11, 28, 29, 30, 34, 35, 47, 49, 51, 82 *n.*, 84, 94, 101, 142, 147, 150, 164, 165. x. 2, 31, 32, 33, 34, 62, 87, 88, 93, 162. xi. 8, 56, 58, 110, 177, 206, 255, 257. xii. 70, 71. xvi. 153. presents a petition to the King at York, which was not accepted, v. 364 *n.* 4, 10. one of the chief of those who were

active in Yorkshire for the Parliament, v. 446. vi. 257. first distinguished himself by defeating col. Bellasis at Selby, vii. 400. defeats lord Byron at Nantwich, 401 *n.* 2, 403. victorious but wounded at the battle of Marston-moor, viii. 74-6. made general in the room of the earl of Essex, 201. ix. 4, 16. new modelled the army, 5. sits down before Oxford, 32. draws off again, 36. defeats the King at Naseby, 37-42. his troops well disciplined, 41. enters Somersetshire, 57. defeats lord Goring near Lamport, *ib.*, 67. having retaken Leicester, 67, takes Bridgewater, 68. besieges and takes Bristol, 87-89. besieges Exeter, 109, 162. routs lord Hopton's forces at Torrington, 142-3. thought himself a presbyterian, 168.

Sends a summons to the Prince at Scilly, x. 3. Cromwell the real head of the army, though he continued general in name, 81. continued a member of the House of Commons notwithstanding the Self-denying Ordinance, 82. writes to the Parliament in behalf of the army, 86. the Parliament not jealous of him, though Cromwell had the ascendant over him, 88. did not suspect Cromwell's designs against the King, *ib.* his account to the Parliament of the King's being seized at Holmby, 91. marches towards London, 92. visits the King, 95. applies to Parliament for permission for the King to see his children, 103. writes a sharp letter to the Parliament upon the petition of apprentices and others to Parliament concerning their militia, 108. the Speakers of both Houses, and others, join him at Hounslow, 109. the city sends six aldermen to him, and submits, 112. he brings back the Speakers to Parliament, *ib.* refuses a gold cup offered by the city, *ib.* wished nothing that Cromwell did, and yet contributed to bring it all to pass, 140. xi. 235.

- Declared he would not march against the Scots, xi. 8, 58. sent against the royalists in Kent under the earl of Norwich, 55, 56, 59. besieges them in Colchester, whither some of them had gone, 62. the town delivered up to him, 105. visits the prisoners there, 109. marches for London, 204. his haughty treatment of Parliament, 206. did not authorize the exclusion of members from the House of Commons, 207. the Prince writes to him, 229. did not sit in the court that condemned Charles I, 235.
- Suppresses a mutiny of the Levellers, xii. 151. gives up his commission, xiii. 20. occupies York, with an intention of declaring for Charles II, xvi. 111, 116. dismisses his troops on finding Monk not disposed to concur, 117. one of the committee sent to Charles II at the Hague, 239.
- Fairfax, Anne Vere, lady, her interruption of the court at the trial of Charles I, xi. 235.
- Falconbridge, (Fauconberg), Thomas Bellasis, first viscount, vi. 62 *n.*, 257. vii. 400. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6.
- Falconbridge, Thomas Bellasis, second viscount, afterwards earl, married Cromwell's daughter Mary, xv. 51, 101. intercedes in vain with the Protector to save sir H. Slingsby and Dr. Hewet, 100, 101. sent on an embassy to France, 139. hostile to his father-in-law's interest, 145.
- Falkland, Henry Carey, first viscount, iii. 114. vii. 222. lord deputy of Ireland, 218.
- Falkland, Lucius Carey, second viscount, iv. 36, 52, 125. v. 34, 204 *n.*, 206 *n.*, 209, 211. vi. 8 *n.*, 15, 17, 60, 78, 128, 394. vii. 65, 71, 72, 200. alone in the House of Commons interposed for the earl of Strafford, iii. 8. but still against him, vii. 222. attacks lord Finch as the promoter of ship-money, iii. 15 *n.* vii. 222.
- always sat with Hyde in the House of Commons, iii. 151. speaks (in opposition to Hyde) in favour of the bill to remove the bishops from Parliament, 152. afterwards changed his opinion, *ib.* iv. 94 *n.* saying of his about the House of Commons and the bishops, iii. 241. iv. 73 *n.* conversations with Cromwell in Parliament, iv. 51, 52. made Secretary of State, iv. 122, 167. his character, 122. vii. 217-234. his scruples about accepting office, iv. 123. overcome by Hyde, 124. would not notice a charge of being a Roman Catholic, 125. his reasons for accepting the seals, vii. 225. classed by the rabble among persons *disaffected to the kingdom*, iv. 129 *n.* inclined through the King's imprudence to take no part in public affairs, iv. 158. by the King's command demands the staves of office from the earls of Essex and Holland, v. 35, 116 *n.* signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, 346. wrote to Selden about the commissions of array, v. 365. excepted by Parliament from peace on any terms, vi. 50. present at the battle of Edge-hill, 79 *n.* his conduct as a soldier, *ib.* drew up the King's declaration respecting his advance to Brentford, vi. 126 *n.* slain in the battle of Newbury, vii. 217, 234. the alteration produced in him by the war, 231. sayings of his, i. 171. iii. 241. his mother, brothers, and sisters were Roman Catholics, vii. 221.
- Falkland, Henry Carey, third viscount, one of the committee sent to Charles II at the Hague, xvi. 239.
- Falkland, Elizabeth Tanfield, lady, vii. 221.
- Falmouth, vii. 132. viii. 89. ix. 77. x. 74.
- Familists, x. 162.
- Fanatics*: when this appellation came to be used, viii. 185. x. 82.
- Fanning, Patrick, headed a tumult

- at Limerick, xiii. 113. his fate, 113.
- Fanshaw, Richard, [vii. 388 n.] ix. 60, 92, 104, 105, 148. [xiv. 99 n.]
- Faringdon, Berks, viii. 37, 164. ix. 7 n.
- Farnham castle, taken by Waller, vi. 158. garrisoned and defended by him, vii. 401 n. viii. 1, 5, 8, 9, 13. [the King carried there, xi. 221 n.]
- Farr, colonel, xi. 60.
- Falconberg: *see* Falconbridge.
- Featly, Dr., his prosecution and death, vii. 254-5.
- [Fécamp, Normandy, xiii. 106.]
- Feilding, colonel Richard, vi. 74. vii. 35. viii. 57. the command devolved upon him at Reading when the governor was wounded, vii. 28. tried for surrendering the place, 39-42. sentenced to lose his head, 43. pardoned by the King, but deprived of his regiment, *ib.* had a principal command in another army, yet never recovered this blemish, *ib.* made captain of the ship Constant Reformation, xi. 150.
- Feilding, visc.: *see* earl of Denbigh.
- Felton, John, his situation and family, i. 52, 53. on what grounds hostile to the duke of Buckingham, 53. his assassination of the duke, 54-6. his behaviour afterwards, 59-61.
- Ferdinand II: *see* Germany.
- Ferdinand III: *see* Germany.
- Ferne, Henry, afterwards bishop of Chester, one of the commissiioners on ecclesiastical matters at Uxbridge, viii. 226.
- Ferté Imbault, M. de la, the French ambassador, iii. 253. iv. 6. vi. 47. courts the Parliament, vi. 179. vii. 299. recalled, vii. 299.
- Fettyplace, col. John, vi. 238.
- Field, Theophilus, bishop of St. David's, i. 125.
- Fiennes, colonel John, v. 441 n. 2. viii. 148, 152.
- Ficinus, Nathaniel, i. 166 n. iv. 15 n. vii. 123, 130. his character, iii. 33. a leader in the House of Commons, 55 n., 204 n. viii. 260. for 'root and branch,' as to the Church, iii. 147. one of the committee sent with the King into Scotland, 255. routed by prince Rupert near Worcester, vi. 43-6. his courage generally disesteemed, vii. 121 n., 123. governor of Bristol, vii. 53. surrendered Bristol to prince Rupert, 121 n., 129. tried and condemned for this surrender, but pardoned, 319-21. goes abroad in consequence, 321. keeper of the Great Seal to Richard Cromwell, xvi. 4, 11.
- Fifth monarchy men, who so called,* xv. 125.
- Finch, sir John, afterwards lord, iii. 81. iv. 68. v. 204, 205. x. 105. made ship-money odious by his speech, i. 153. first L. C. J. of the C. P., then Lord Keeper, 156. ii. 64. his character, i. 158. his extravagant declaration about the authority of the Council, *ib.* speech at opening of Parliament April 1640, ii. 66. one of the King's council at York, ii. 113. withdraws beyond sea to escape impeachment, iii. 15 *and n.* lord Falkland severe against him, iii. 15 n. vii. 222.
- Fisheries on the coasts of Scotland and the isles of Orkney, a source of great trade to Holland, xiii. 162.
- Fitch, col., xvi. 109.
- [Fitz, sir Thomas, viii. 135 n.]
- Flanders, iii. 252. iv. 6. v. 432 n. vi. 176. vii. 412. viii. 16, 121, 126, 273. xi. 251. xii. 15, 35, 55, 76, 86, 87, 93, 99, 105, 107, 108, 121. xiii. 38, 43, 83, 121 n., 122, 143, 159, 176, 177. xiv. 97, 98, 127, 136. xv. 8, 14, 15, 16, 17, 21, 52, 63, 66, 68, 69, 76, 78, 79, 84, 90, 133. xvi. 6, 58, 60, 61, 62, 64, 72, 75, 168, 173, 179, 231. great storm there on the day of Cromwell's death, xv. 146.
- Flax trade established in Ireland by Strafford, iii. 109.
- Fleet: Charles I raises one against Scotland, ii. 29. his failure to secure the fleet in 1642, v. 376-83. revolt of part of the fleet to the King, xi. 24. Rainsborough



- and other officers put on shore by the seamen, 30. the revolted ships go over to Holland, *ib.* and receive the Prince of Wales, 32. factions in the fleet, 33-5, 63. the Prince comes into the Downs with it, 35. thence into the river Thames, 37, 64. the Parliament prepares a fleet against this under the earl of Warwick, 68, 71. dissatisfaction as to the management of the Prince's fleet, 83, 84. its ill condition 131, 133. notice of officers, ships, &c., 150-2. a fleet in 1653 sent forth under three admirals, xiv. 27. a fleet sent out under Penn, with a land army under Venables, xv. 5. another fleet sent out at the same time under Blake, 7. Lawson and the fleet declare for the Parliament against the committee of safety, xvi. 105. Parliament reforms the navy by making Monck and Montagu admirals, 152. Charles II's letter to the fleet, 199. gladly received, 214. the fleet under Montagu comes on the coast of Holland, 237. the duke of York, as admiral, takes possession of it, 238. the ships new named, *ib.* the King embarks for England, 245. the fleet sails May 25, *ib.* and lands the King at Dover, May 26, *ib.*
- Fleetwood, Charles, vi. 66 *n.*, 70. x. 32 *n.* [xiii. 174 *n.*] xvi. 80. originally a trooper in the earl of Essex's guards, vi. 70. opposed Cromwell's being made king, xv. 34. delivers the address of the council of officers about the government to the Protector Richard, xvi. 6. advises him to dissolve the Parliament, 9. notice of him, 80. appointed by Parliament one of seven commissioners to govern the army, 82. chosen general by the officers, 86. one of the committee of safety constituted by the army, 91. his recourse to prayer in difficult cases, 108.
- Fleetwood, sir Miles, vi. 66 *n.*
- Florence, duke of, xi. 106. xii. 94. xiv. 66. xvi. 75.
- Flushing, xi. 39 *n.*, 79. given up by King James, i. 144. the *City of Rouen*, an inn there, xiv. 125, 128.
- Fly, the: *see* Vlie.
- [Fogg, capt. Richard, v. 381 *n.*]
- Forbes, sir Arthur, xvi. 209, 210.
- Forbes, William, first bishop of Edinburgh, notice of, i. 182.
- Ford, sir Edward, x. 134. high sheriff of Sussex, viii. 3. governor of Arundel castle, vii. 401 *n.* viii. 3, 7. married Ireton's daughter, x. 134.
- Foreign kings and states, inclinations of, in the contest between the King and Parliament, vi. 177.
- Forest laws revived, i. 148. Act to ascertain the limits of forests in England, iii. 265.
- Fortescue, sir Faithful, vi. 297. came from Ireland to the Parliament, 84. deserts to the King in the battle of Edge-hill, *ib.*, 86.
- Forth, earl of: *see* Brentford.
- Foster, justice Robert, vi. 231.
- Foulke, —, vi. 216, 225.
- Fontaine, —, viii. 257. ix. 10.
- Fox, Stephen, chamberlain of the household to Charles II, xiv. 89.
- Foxe, John, *Book of Martyrs*, xiv. 50.
- Foy, Cornwall, viii. 93, 109 *sæpe*, 111, 115, 117, 118, 119. ix. 159 *n.*
- France: *see* Huguenots. iii. 182, 252, 253. iv. 6, 147, 259, 352. v. 349, 432 *n.*, 433. vi. 93, 176, 181, 253, 384, 387, 388, 395. vii. 75, 216, 223. viii. 21, 89, 99, 227. ix. 20 *n.*, 21, 74, 77, 114, 143, 147, 149, 158, 173. x. 2, 7, 115 *n.*, 133. xi. 193. xii. 2, 3, 15, 31, 32, 34, 35, 36, 56, 58, 60, 75, 85, 93, 121. xiii. 7, 8, 83, 89, 97, 137. xiv. 1, 88, 102, 104, 106. xv. 78, 90, 93, 152. xvi. 17, 19, 56, 59, 173. war declared against, i. 50. its origin chiefly owing to the duke of Buckingham, 80. the feeling of the country with respect to it, 84. peace concluded with France, and why, 5, 146. France encourages the disaffected in

- Scotland, ii. 55. vi. 178. ix. 171. the Covenanters write to the King of France, i. 166 n. ii. 60. xi. 101. France favours the Parliament against the King, vi. 179. favours the rebellion in Ireland, vi. 309. condition of affairs with reference to England, vii. 299. ambassador sent to mediate for King Charles with the Scots, ix. 169. another to mediate with the Parliament, x. 16, 18. affairs in France whilst Charles II was at Paris, xii. 76. France countenances Cromwell, 121. many Irish enlist in the French service, 149. the Huguenot congregation of Charenton, xiii. 131-4. troubles of the French Court, 1652, xiii. 142. a French fleet seized by the English commonwealth, 167. xvi. 52. the French send an ambassador into England, xiii. 167. xiv. 34, 41. Cromwell's treaty with France, xiv. 53. xv. 14. great storm there on the day of Cromwell's death, xv. 146. observations on the French war with Spain, xvi. 47. the Queen mother of France designs to end it by a treaty and marriage between the two crowns, 48. she advises cardinal Mazarin to concur, *ib.* his arguments against it, 49. why he afterwards yielded, 51. two particulars of difficulty in this treaty referred to a conference between Mazarin and don L. de Haro, 52. how settled, 59.
- Ambassadors from France : *see* Bellèvre ; Bordeaux ; Ferté Imbault ; Harcourt ; Montreuil.
- France, Francis I, King of, xvi. 55.
- France, Henry IV, King of, xiii. 72.
- France, Louis XIII, King of, iv. 332. v. 6. vii. 299-303. ix. 172.
- France, Louis XIV, King of, ix. 172. x. 6. xi. 251. xii. 76. xiii. 143, 153. xv. 139. xvi. 49, 51, 230.
- France, Anne of Austria, Queen of, vii. 301, 302, 305, 307. ix. 169, 171-176. x. 6, 177. xii. 76, 78, 79, 102. xiii. 44, 142, 143, 153. xiv. 65, 66, 67, 117. xv. 76, 77. xvi. 59. the duke of Buckingham when in France fell in love with her, i. 81. is made regent, vii. 299. warmly espoused the cause of Charles I, *ib.* ix. 169, 174. was a very worthy lady, xiv. 67. urges the ending the war between France and Spain, xiv. 48-51, 60.
- Franciscane, i. 195.
- Frazer, Dr., physician to Charles II, ix. 99 n., 159. much contributed to his journey into Scotland, xiii. 47. contrived the design of his withdrawing to the Highlands, 48. desired Hyde's removal from the King, xiv. 63.
- Frederick III : *see* Denmark, King of.
- Freeman, sir Ralph, i. 92, 94.
- Frome, Somerset, vii. 104.
- Fryer, colonel sir Thomas, i. 56, 60.
- Fuensaldagna, conde of, xii. 58. xiii. 31. xv. 15, 18, 19, 21, 136. he and the conde of Pignoranda governed the councils at Brussels, xii. 51. xiii. 17. xv. 16. removed to the government of Milan, xv. 17. notice of him, xii. 51.
- Fuentarabia, xii. 81. xvi. 55, 56, 59, 66, 68, 69, 72, 112.
- Fulham, Middlesex, x. 114.
- Furnes, Flanders, xv. 138, 142.

## G.

- Gage, colonel sir Henry, viii. 162, 164. takes Boarstall House, 58. notice of him, 121-2. relieves Basing House, 123-130. aids in relieving Banbury Castle, 152. and Donnington Castle, 161. made governor of Oxford, 165. knighted *ib.* a Roman Catholic, *ib.* shot in attempting to break down Culham bridge, 165 n., 166.
- Gage, sir John, K.G., viii. 122.
- Galloway, William, xvi. 178.
- Galway, xiii. 179, 184.
- Garcies, count de. governor of Cambray, xii. 58.
- Gardiner, sir Thomas, recorder of London, designed by the King to be Speaker of the House of Commons, 1640, but was not returned a member, iii. 1 and n. committed to the Tower by the House of Lords for refusing to

- defend the Attorney General, v. 47. the King's Solicitor-General, vii. 315. viii. 207, 213. one of his commissioners to treat at Uxbridge, viii. 211, 233.
- [Garmouth, xiii. 1.]
- Garraway, captain, v. 109.
- Gascoigne, sir Bernard, joins those who rose in Kent for Charles II, xi. 60. taken prisoner at Colchester, 105. spared from being shot through being a Florentine, 106, 107.
- Gell, sir John, vii. 368. possessed Derbyshire for the Parliament, vi. 261, 274. disquieted by colonel Hastings, 275. took Lichfield Close, 276-7. he and sir W. Bruerton routed on Hopton-heath, 278-82. refuses to give up the body of the earl of Northampton, except on exorbitant ransom, 284.
- Geneva, iii. 33, 34. xvi. 17.
- Genoa, xii. 86.
- Geoghegan, Anth., a Franciscan in Galway, xiii. 184.
- George, —, M.P. for Cirencester, vi. 238.
- [Gerard, Anne, daughter of Thomas, xiii. 95 n.]
- Gerard, colonel Charles, afterwards general and lord, viii. 148, 162. ix. 35, 42, 119, 127, 128, 130, 161. xiv. 36. wounded at Edgehill, vi. 94. and again at Lichfield, vii. 34. present at the siege of Bristol, 121 n., 128. general of South Wales, ix. 42, 67. his unpopular conduct as governor there, 67, 71, 72. the King removes him in consequence of complaints, 72. but creates him baron Brandon in compensation, *ib.* entertained extreme malice against lord Digby, 121. calls him a traitor in the King's presence, 130. charges Hyde with having spoken ill of the King, xiv. 76, 77.
- Gerard, sir Gilbert, iii. 35. iv. 12.
- Gerard, John, xiv. 39. tried for holding correspondence with Charles II, xiv. 36. condemned, 37. headed, 38, 40.
- Germany, ii. 55. v. 286, 375. vi. 179, 181. vii. 75 *bis.* viii. 227. xi. 251. xii. 15, 128, 129, 130. xiii. 142. xiv. 54, 80, 82, 88, 90, 92, 103, 114, 122. xv. 17, 86, 87. xvi. 46, 47, 62, 66. invaded by the Swedes, i. 146. the Jesuits there possess ascendancy over all other men, xiv. 122.
- Germany, Ferdinand II, emperor of, i. 37, 67.
- Germany, Ferdinand III, emperor of, xii. 92. xiv. 54, 90, 103. did not contribute to the subsidy granted by the Diet in Germany to Charles II, 104.
- Gibraltar, xv. 26.
- Gillingham, Dorset, ix. 12.
- Gilvy, —, xiv. 136.
- Glanorgan, earl of: *see* lord Herbert.
- Glamorganshire, vi. 33.
- Glanville, John, sergeant, chosen Speaker of the House of Commons, 1640, ii. 66. well qualified for it, *ib.* notice of his speech about a supply, 73, 74, 75.
- Glasgow, General Assembly at, ii. 51, 58.
- Glemham, sir Thomas, v. 441 n. 5, 445. vii. 400. ix. 72. his character, v. 445. left by the King governor of York, at the request of the gentry, vi. 257. viii. 77. which he surrenders, 78. and goes to Carlisle, *ib.* surrenders Carlisle after a brave defence, ix. 72. made governor of Oxford, 121.
- Glencairne, William Cunningham, ninth earl of, commissioned by Charles II to collect troops in the Highlands, xiv. 57. makes his peace at last with Monck, *ib.*
- [Glendonning, William, xii. 7 n.]
- Gloucester, vi. 288 *bis.* 291, 292, 294, 322. vii. 29, 30, 100, 175, 176, 177, 181, 190, 191, 238, 239, 241, 253, 264 n., 274, 287, 298, 319, 405. viii. 50, 57, 63. ix. 87. x. 31. xiii. 58, 73. xvi. 37. account of the King's siege of it, vii. 157-164, 201, 233. the siege raised by the approach of the earl of Essex, 205. the Vineyard, vi. 291. design of seizing the town in 1659 for Charles II by Massey, xvi. 25, 31.
- Gloucester, bishop of: *see* Goodman.

- Gloucester, Henry, duke of, son of Charles I, xvi. 73, 75, 176, 229, 235. committed by Parliament to the care of the earl of Northumberland, x. 103, 115. xiv. 85. how treated by him, 103, 115 *n.* had been before with the countess of Dorset, 115 *n.* his father's discourse with him when about seven years old, 118. xiv. 86. placed by Parliament with the countess of Leicester, xiv. 85. well instructed by Mr. Lovell his tutor, 86. removed to Carisbrooke castle under captain Mildmay, *ib.* his promising character, 87. allowed by Cromwell to go beyond sea, *ib.* joins his mother at Paris, 88. Charles II leaves him with his mother in France, 92. account of her endeavours to pervert him in his religion, 117. Charles II sends for him in consequence to Cologne, 118, 119. sends for him to come to Bruges, xv. 22, 82. pension allowed him by Spain, 67. fought at the battle of Dunkirk, 137. five thousand pounds sent to him to the Hague by the English Parliament, xvi. 239.
- Gloucestershire, vi. 3, 237, 322 *bis.* vii. 110, 157, 176 *n.*, 201 *n.* viii. 149. ix. 67, 88, 120.
- Glynn, John, opposed the Self-denying Ordinance, viii. 260. a leading man in the House of Commons, x. 104.
- Godolphin, Sidney, shot at Chagford, vi. 251. his character, *ib.*
- Godolphin, colonel William, vi. 249. vii. 88.
- Goffe, colonel, offers to stand by the Protector Richard against the council of officers, xvi. 10. removed from his command by them, 12.
- Goffe, Dr. Stephen, chief agent of lord Jermy, xi. 32. intrigues for him in the Prince's fleet, *ib.*, 34, 35. has a share of the money sent from Moscow for Charles II, xiii. 130. changes his religion, *ib.*
- Golden Fleeces, order of the, xii. 97.
- Goodman, Godfrey, bishop of Gloucester, [a sermon of his *ſi.* 164.] signed the bishops' protest in 1641, iv. 140.
- Goodwin, or Goodwyn, Robert, one of the committee sent to Dublin by the Parliament, vi. 315, vii. 363.
- Gookin: *see* Cookin.
- Goree, xi. 79.
- Gorges, Dr., a chaplain to Charles II, xiii. 92, 94.
- Gorges, lord, viii. 150.
- Goring, lord: *see* earl of Norwich.
- Goring, colonel [Charles, afterwards second earl of Norwich], ix. 144.
- Goring, George, lord, viii. 20, 73, 75 *n.*, 94, 111, 131, 149, 180, 286. ix. 8, 9, 12, 22, 29, 34, 43, 56, 59, 66, 67, 81, 82, 88, 92, 94, 96, 97, 98, 103, 117, 133, 135. served in Holland, v. 440 *n.* xvi. 96. was lame from a wound received there, v. 440 *n.* concerned in the correspondence between the Court and the army in 1641, iii. 176-177, 224-226. v. 169, 193, 202. made himself a favourite member of Parliament by discovering these designs, v. 440 *and n.* vii. 92. governor of Portsmouth, iv. 279. ingratiates himself again with the King and Queen, *ib.* v. 440 *and n.* declares for the King, 439, 441 *n.* his character, 440. viii. 169. Portsmouth taken by the Parliament forces through his neglect, vi. 2, 32 *and n.* appointed lieutenant-general of the horse at York, 264. made general of the horse in the room of prince Rupert, viii. 95, 96 *n.*, 98. Wilmot his mortal enemy, 98. signed a letter to the earl of Essex urging him to treat, 105. the earl of Essex's horse escape through the King's army by his neglect, 96 *n.*, 115-6. his success in the second battle of Newbury, 157. the King did not intend him to be with the Prince of Wales, 254. ix. 7. sent with a command into Hampshire, viii. 254. ix. 7. beaten off with loss from Christ Church, *ib.* outrages of his horses, *ib.*, 9. Weymouth taken through his want of vigilance, 8. his conduct and movements in those parts, 10-15.

- complaints against his horse, 10. his design to have the command of the west, 20, 21. Hyde resolved never to be with him in any action or counsel of trust, notwithstanding his civility, 20 *n.* spoke contemptuously of the King and Queen, *ib.* sent for by the King to Oxford, 28, 29. prince Rupert, being jealous of him, promotes his views respecting the west, 30, 31. whither he is sent back with full command, 31, 43. expressed all possible contempt of the council attending the Prince, 44, 78. ordered to march into Northamptonshire, 44, 47. his mismanagement at Taunton, 45, 47. his popularity in spite of his mismanagement, 46. his extravagant demands, 48, 58. his conduct towards the garrison at Lamport, 49. the Prince of Wales directs him to reform the disorders of his army, 50, 51. he draws off from Taunton upon sir T. Fairfax's entering Somersetshire, 57. beaten by him near Lamport, *ib.* retires to Barnstable, *ib.* makes propositions to the Prince, 75. which are granted, 76. his demands of the Prince, 78, 79. his conference with Hyde, 83, 84. his conduct at Exeter, 80, 84, 99. styles himself general of the west, 84. gives over the thought of defending Devon, 94. retires into France, 99, 100. discourses against him, 100. had rendered the Cornish hostile to him, *ib.*, 103. reasons for and against the believing him guilty of treachery, 101, 102.
- Gosworth [*or* Gosford] bridge, near Oxford, viii. 45, 46, 47, 59.
- Gowre, colonel, vi. 257.
- Graham, James: *see* marquis of Montrose.
- Grammont, marshal de, xvi. 51.
- Grana, marquis of, the Emperor's ambassador at Madrid, notice of, xii. 92.
- Grandison, William Villiers, viscount, iii. 114. v. 441 *n.* 3. vi. 66 *n.* takes Nantwich, vi. 67. present at the battle of Edge-hill, 79 *n.*, 85. taken prisoner at Winchester, vi. 158, 411 *n.* died of wounds received at the siege of Bristol, vii. 121 *n.*, 128, 133. his character, 133.
- [Grangemouth, xiii. 1 *n.*]
- Grantham, ix. 127. taken by the King's forces, vi. 268.
- Grantham, colonel, reinforces Essex after the battle of Edge-hill, vi. 87.
- Gravesnor: *see* Grosvenor.
- Great Council of Peers: *see* Council.
- Great Seal: new seals made by Parliament, vii. 314, 316. xi. 249. new one made by Charles II, xiv. 70. *See* Littleton, E.
- Greece, vii. 291.
- Greenland House, Oxon, viii. 126.
- Greenville, sir Bevil, vii. 101 *n.*, 121 *n.*, 132. viii. 134. active for the King in Cornwall, vi. 239, 244, 249. vii. 86, 132. the most beloved man in the county, vi. 244. he and others beat the earl of Stamford near Stratton, vii. 88-90. killed in the battle of Lansdown, 101 *n.*, 106. his character, 101 *n.*, 108. recommended his family to the care of Mr. Morrice, xvi. 165.
- Greenville, sir John, xvi. 26, 99. a son of sir Bevil, 165. wounded in the second battle of Newbury, viii. 160. governor of Scilly, xi. 149. which he delivered up to sir G. Ayscue after a vigorous defence, xiii. 173. allowed by Parliament after this surrender to enjoy his estate, xvi. 165. introduced to Monck by Mr. Morrice, 166. commissioned by him to go to Charles II at Brussels, 168. his transactions there, and return with the King's letters, 169-180, 183, 202. being called for by the Parliament, delivers the letters, 212, 214. the answer of the House of Commons delivered to him with a reward, 220.
- Greenville, sir Richard, viii. 103, 131. ix. 7 *n.*, 76, 81, 106, 135, 158. [xi. 185 *n.*] beats a party of the earl of Essex's horse at Bodmin, viii. 108. takes lord Roberts' horse at Lanhetherick,

109. left by the King to block up Plymouth, 133. his character, and account of his life, 134-143. was a younger brother of sir Bevil Greenville, 134. his conduct and movements in the west, ix. 11-15, 17. wounded at Taunton, 15. the commissioners of Devon complain of him, 22. his conduct inquired into, 23-27. appointed major-general of the army in the west, 43. complaints against him at Barnstaple, 52-54. his cruelty and injustice, 54, 55. yet popular with many, 55. the Prince of Wales's intentions with regard to him, 56. he grows troublesome again, 59. returns his commission of field-marshal, 60. particulars respecting the estate he obtained by his wife, 61. and his military promotion, *ib.* a great plunderer, 62. protection granted to his house and estate, 60, 63. his arrogant conduct after he had given up his commission, 64. the Prince remonstrates with him, 65. cooperates with lord Goring in his designs, 75. but soon quarrels with him, 76. obtains command of the remains of the western army, *ib.*, 92. reasons for and against his being sent to continue the blockade of Plymouth, 93. his movements, *ib.*, 94, 103-108. his behaviour towards the Prince, 104, 105. and at Tavistock, 133. appointed to command the foot in the west under lord Hopton, 136, 137. whom he himself had recommended as general in chief, 133. yet notwithstanding refuses to act under him, 137. whereupon he is committed to prison by the Prince, 138. an unpopular act, notwithstanding his previous oppression and tyranny, 140, 141. his wife, viii. 135-6. ix. 61.
- Greenwich, iv. 314, 315, 317. v. 116 *n.*, 377. xi. 59. xvi. 246.
- Gregory XV, pope, i. 36.
- Grey, Anchetil, one of the commissioners for the county of Dorset, ix. 17.
- Grey, Thomas, lord, had the command in Leicestershire for the Parliament, vi. 274. is opposed there by Henry Hastings, 275. joins the earl of Essex on his march to relieve Gloucester, vii. 204.
- Grey of Ruthin, Michael Longueville, lord, signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346.
- Grey of Warke, William, lord, one of the few lords who attended Parliament, vii. 369 *n.* 5, 375. committed to the Tower by Parliament for refusing to go as a commissioner to Scotland, 135. as Speaker of the House of Lords signs a letter to the Lords Justices in Ireland, 342. and another to the King, 393.
- Griffith, —, iv. 315.
- Grime, sir Richard, equerry to Charles I, vi. 79 *n.*
- Grimstone, sir Harbottle, speaks against ship-money in the House of Commons, ii. 68. and against archbishop Laud, iii. 15 *n.* one of the commissioners in the treaty in the Isle of Wight, xvi. 211. chosen Speaker of the House of Commons in 1660, *ib.* signs, as Speaker, the answer of the House to Charles II's letter, 219.
- Grocers' hall, both Houses of Parliament appoint committees to sit there, from pretended danger at Westminster, iv. 212.
- Grosvenor, or Gravesnor, —, killed in Wales, xi. 56 *n.*
- Grove, Hugh, concerned in the rising at Salisbury for Charles II, xiv. 131. taken prisoner and beheaded, 134.
- Groynes, the, xiii. 25.
- Guernsey, iii. 62. reduced by Cromwell's forces, xiii. 170.
- Guipuscoa, xii. 81, 84.
- Gunpowder, Act for the free making of, iii. 268.
- Gunpowder-Plot, vii. 342.
- Gunter, colonel, killed on the Parliament's side in the fight at Chalgrove field, vii. 79.
- Gunter, colonel, provides a ship for the escape of Charles II after the battle of Worcester, xiii. 105.
- Gurney, sir Richard, lord mayor of

London, his loyalty and courage, iv. 78, 156, 182. reckoned in consequence a malignant and his house attacked, 120. unable to prevent the city from petitioning the King, 173. The King's encomium of him, on the exclusion of his name by Parliament from the militia bill, v. 85, 125. committed to the Tower for causing the King's proclamation against the militia to be publicly proclaimed, v. 394, 401, 425.

Gustavus Adolphus, king of Sweden, viii. 87. xi. 42, 262.

Guzman, Spanish family of, xii. 107.

Guzman, Louisa de: *see* Queen of Portugal.

## H.

Haarlem, xii. 48.

Hague, The, xi. 21, 32, 33, 35, 79, 81, 85, 86, 91, 127, 130, 133, 142, 150 *n.*, 152. xii. 1, 3, 4, 13, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 23, 24, 34, 40, 47, 48, 49, 52, 55, 60, 99 *n.*, 121, 141. xiii. 27, 43, 46, 83. xiv. 88, 99, 110. xvi. 233, 235-7, 239, 245.

Hales, sir Edward, grandfather of the following, xi. 26, 38, 39.

Hales, Mr., afterwards sir Edward, engaged in the commotions in Kent for Charles I in 1648, xi. 26, 27, 39. escapes into Holland, 39. his wife very zealous for the King, 27.

Halifax, vi. 261, 268.

Hall, Joseph, bishop of Norwich; the earl of Essex had great reverence for him, iii. 145. signed the bishops' protestation in 1641, iv. 140.

[Halling, capt., v. 426 *n.*]

Hambledon, Hants, xiii. 106.

Hamburg, viii. 75 *n.*, 77. xii. 40, 128, 129.

Hamilton, —, ix. 152.

Hamilton, James Hamilton, third marquis, afterwards duke, and earl of Cambridge, iii. 83, 133. iv. 41 *n.*, 47. vii. 405. x. 159. xi. 9, 18, 43, 45-7, 50, 96, 99, 109, 261. xii. 4, 6, 65 *n.*, 124. xiii. 20, 47. xiv. 64. had the greatest power

with Charles I, i. 166 *n.* xi. 241. master of the horse to him, i. 168. his sole adviser in all Scotch affairs, i. 169, 171. ii. 17. his affection to the King suspected, i. 170. unpopular in Scotland, 171. has the command of the fleet against the Scotch Covenanters, ii. 29. his suspicious conduct, 46. not at all acceptable to the earl of Essex, 43. nor to the earl of Holland, 48. nor to his countrymen, 43, 48, 51, 109. finds fault with the treaty with the Covenanters, *ib.* gets sir H. Vane made Secretary of State, 54. supposed to have obtained lord Loudoun's release from imprisonment to endear himself to the Scotch, 87. one of the Committee of States, 99. why more hateful to the English than any other person, 103. had been accused of a design of making himself king of Scotland, *ib.* induces the King to allow him professedly to help the Covenanters, 104-6. one of the King's council at York, ii. 113. his removal desired by the Scotch commissioners, 109. how he gained them over, iii. 40. advises the King to appoint some of the popular party Privy-councillors, 49, 83. evidence at Strafford's trial, 119. Hyde prevailed with not to accuse him as an evil counsellor, 238-9. v. 116 *n.* transactions in Scotland respecting him, Argyll, and Montrose, iv. 15 *n.*, 20. made a duke, 23. vii. 369 *n.* i. signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. sent into Scotland by the King from York, vi. 110. sir H. Vane no friend to him, 411. his conduct with respect to the Scotch Parliament called by the Covenanters, vii. 268-71, 275. 369 *n.* goes to the King at Oxford, 275, 369 *n.* 4. accused of treason, 369 *n.* 4, 405. inquiry into his conduct, 405-408. he is committed to prison, 369 *n.* 4, 408. viii. 263. particulars respecting his being set at liberty, and conference with Hyde at

- Pendennis castle, ix. 151-160. removed to Scilly, 158. goes from Chelsea into Scotland, x. 158. is made general of the Scottish army, xi. 42. enters England with the army, 63, 71, 72, 87. his careless march, 72, 74. is routed at Preston and Uttoxeter, 75-6. and taken prisoner, 76. tried by a high court of justice, 252, 253. tried in England as being earl of Cambridge, not as a Scottish peer, 253. condemned, 257. his petition for life rejected in the House of Commons, 259. beheaded, 262. his mother, ii. 46. vii. 406.
- Hamilton, second duke: *see* earl of Lanrick.
- Hamilton, Anne Cunningham, marchioness, ii. 46. vii. 406.
- Hamilton, sir James, vii. 103, 105. [xiv. 145 n.]
- Hamilton House, x. 158.
- Hammond, —, mayor of St. Ives, ix. 141.
- Hammond, Dr. Henry, [one of the Assembly of Divines, v. 135 n.] one of the commissioners on ecclesiastical matters at Uxbridge, viii. 226. allowed to attend the King as one of his chaplains, x. 93. uncle of colonel Hammond, 128.
- Hammond, colonel Rob., x. 136, 138. xi. 114, 194, 197, 198, 204, 226. governor of the Isle of Wight, x. 128. nephew of doctor Hammond, *ib.* receives Charles I at Carisbrooke upon his escape from Hampton-court, 128-130. removes the King's old servants from about him, 144. imprisons Burly for attempting the King's release, 145. removed from the charge of the King's person, xi. 203.
- Hampden, Alexander, vii. 51 n., 65, 71.
- Hampden, John, i. 153. ii. 68, 72, 93. iii. 82, 89, 92. iv. 15 n., 52, 76, 193, 315. vi. 70. vii. 267, 320. xi. 126. his opposition to the ship-money, i. 148, 153. ii. 72. the most popular man in the House of Commons, *ib.* where he was a leader, iii. 55 n. commended and courted by Solicitor-general Herbert, ii. 68. iii. 82. was for *root and branch*, as to the Church, 147. how he induced lord Falkland to vote for removing bishops from Parliament, 152. remarked on Falkland's subsequent change of opinion, iv. 94 n. one of the committee sent with the King into Scotland, iii. 255. iv. 17. articles of treason charged against him and five others, by order of the King, 148-9 [*see* Parliament]. again charged by the King with treason, v. 441 n. 4. has a regiment conferred on him by Parliament, 429. reinforces the earl of Essex after the battle of Edge-hill, vi. 87. unsuccessful in an attempt against Brill, 316. advised the besieging of Oxford, where the King was, rather than Reading, vii. 38. mortally wounded in the fight at Chalgrove field, vii. 74 n., 79, 80 n., 81, 122. his character, iii. 31. iv. 18. vii. 80 n., 82-4. x. 160. notice of the place of his death, vii. 81. lord Falkland long thought highly of his uprightness and integrity, 223. Pym much governed by him, 411. a daughter of his married colonel Hammond, x. 128. was cousin to, and bosom friend of, Cromwell, 169.
- Hampshire, iii. 64. v. 441 n. 1. vii. 264 n., 298, 368, 401 n. viii. 2, 123, 254. ix. 7, 21. x. 127. xiii. 102, 106. xiv. 131. xv. 50. xvi. 94.
- Hampton Court, iv. 78 n., 79, 121, 195, 196, 197, 205, 210, 228, 314. v. 32, 116 n., 236, 237, 271, 310. vi. 126 n., 139, 140. x. 109, 111, 114, 115, 120, 121, 122, 131, 132, 136, 138, 139, 147, 153, 160. xi. 14, 19, 22 n., 112, 113, 114, 157, 158, 195, 222, 224. xii. 20. xv. 143, 146.
- Hampton Court conference, i. 186. [Hamalerdike, xii. 152 n.]
- Handborough, Oxfordshire, viii. 49. [Hannay, James], dean of Edinb., ii. 14.
- Hannibal, vii. 310, 312.
- Hanwell, Oxfordshire, viii. 67.
- Harborough, Leic., ix. 36, 37. x. 28.



- Harcourt, comte d', x. 20. arrives as ambassador extraordinary from France, vii. 298. his fruitless negotiation, 300-307. besieges Cambrai, xii. 57. raised the siege, 58.
- Harding, Rich., viii. 100. [x. 33 n.]
- Haro, don Luis de, xii. 34, 80, 89, 93, 99, 103, 105, 107, 110. xiii. 24, 25, 28, 29, 31. xvi. 56, 66, 68, 69, 71, 72, 74. his intercourse with Charles II's ambassadors at Madrid, xii. 82, 83, 86, 97, 99, 100, 110. xiii. 10, 14, 25, 31. his first interview with them, xii. 88. his character, 106. xvi. 61. the ambassadors expostulate with him about an agent of the Parliament sent into Spain, xiii. 9. his answer, *ib.* they write to him about the murder of this agent, 11. his answer, *ib.* his speech to them concerning it, 16. he and cardinal Mazarin meet at Fuentarabia, to settle a treaty between Spain and France, xvi. 51, 55. advises Charles II to attend, 56. was against the earl of Bristol accompanying him, 58. who however wrought himself into his good graces, 72. account of his treating with Mazarin, 60-65. his reception of King Charles, 70. presents him with money, 73. his death, 247. his son: *see* Leche.
- Harris, major-general, ix. 133.
- Harrison, colonel Thomas, xi. 229, 230. a member of the House of Commons, notwithstanding the Self-denying Ordinance, x. 82. conducted Charles I from Hurst castle to St. James's, xi. 221-223. his origin and character, 221. much trusted by Cromwell, *ib.* was in favour of the King's being publicly tried, 227. removed from the army by Cromwell, xv. 42.
- [Hart, Richard, LL.D., xii. 115 n.]
- Hartfordbridge, Hants, viii. 34.
- Hartlepool, x. 164.
- Harvey, —, a London silk-man, vii. 171.
- Harwich, xi. 131.
- Hasdunck, —, ix. 115, 148.
- Haselrigge, sir Arthur, iii. 35, 156, 242. iv. 192, 239. viii. 13. xvi. 93, 104. brother-in-law to lord Brooke, iii. 128. prefers a bill in the Commons for attainting of the earl of Strafford, *ib.* and another for settling the militia, 244. the tool of his party, 128, 244. one of the five members of the Commons accused of high treason by the King's order, iv. 148-9 [see Parliament]. again charged, v. 441 n. 4. his regiment of cuirassiers called *lobsters*, vii. 104. viii. 13. wounded in the battle of Roundway-down, and his regiment of cuirassiers routed, 101 n., 118. a leader of the Independents in Parliament, viii. 260. is re-admitted into the House of Commons by virtue of a clause in the *Petition and Advice*, xv. 60. having been excluded for refusing to sign the recognition of the Protector, *ib.* the petition of Lambert's army discovered to him, xvi. 80. acquaints the Parliament with it, 81. he and Vane governed Parliament, 82. appointed one of seven commissioners to govern the army, *ib.* his views, 89. urges Monck to adhere to the Parliament, 93. goes to Portsmouth, in opposition to Lambert, and is well received, *ib.* marches towards London, 107. general Monck conversed most freely with him, 161.
- [Hastings, x. 154 n.]
- Hastings, Lord: *see* Huntingdon.
- Hastings, colonel Henry, made high sheriff of Leicestershire, v. 417. his services there, vi. 274-5. present at the battle of Edge-hill, 274.
- Hastings, sir Walter, governor of Portland, surprised Weymouth, ix. 7.
- Hatfield House, viii. 245.
- Hatton, sir Christopher, afterwards lord, notice of, vi. 396. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 n. 6. one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, viii. 211. had been made a lord, 213. resident at Paris, xiv. 119.
- Havre, x. 5. xii. 65 n. xiii. 142.

Hawarden Castle taken by lord Byron, vii. 401.

Hawkesley House, Worcestershire, taken by the King's forces, ix. 32, 34.

Hawkins, colonel, viii. 126.

Hawley, sir Francis, vi. 6.

Hay, sir Francis, of Dalgetty, taken with the marquis of Montrose and executed, xii. 141.

[Hay, sir John, iv. 43 n.]

Haydon: *see* Heyden.

Hayward, justice, iii. 180.

Hazell, —, a messenger of the King, vii. 65, 71.

Heath, sir Robert, v. 48. vi. 76.

Hedworth, John and Randelph, signed the Levellers' address to Charles II, xv. 118.

Heenvliet, *al.* Henflett, John de Kerckhoven, lord of, xii. 48.

Heidelberg, Elector of: *see* Palatine.

Hele, or Heals, Wilts, xiii. 104.

Helvoetsluys, xi. 32, 33, 35, 64, 71, 79, 133, 134, 136, 141, 150-152.

Henderson, Alexander, vi. 345. one of the Scotch commissioners to treat at Ripon, ii. 108. goes as such to London, iii. 37. a popular preacher there, *ib.* meddled much in temporal affairs, iv. 33. comes to Oxford as commissioner from the General Assembly to the King, vi. 335. presented a petition from the Assembly, 345. and receives the answer, *ib.* refused to hold discourse with divines at Oxford, *ib.* addressed the two Houses on their taking the Covenant, 260. one of the Scottish commissioners at Uxbridge in matters relating to the Church, viii. 211, 221, 226. his speech, 227. sent to dispute with the King concerning Church government, x. 53. the King too hard for him, *ib.* partly convinced of the mischief he had been the author of, *ib.* dies shortly after, *ib.*

Henin, Stephen de, abbot of St. Catharine's, agent in Ireland of the duke of Lorraine, xiii. 179-183.

Henley, Oxfordshire, vi. 322.

Henly, James, v. 13.

Henrietta Maria, wife of Charles I, mentioned as Queen, iii. 83, 202, 226, 228. iv. 14, 49, 66, 78, 136, 195, 204 n., 210 n., 279, 282, 315, 332. v. 5, 11, 30, 73, 116 n., 175, 196, 243, 255, 268, 319, 434 n., 440 and n., 441 n. 3. vi. 173, 176, 305, 344, 356, 393. vii. 31, 115, 135, 179, 180, 188, 201 n. *bis*, 204, 208, 264 n., 299, 324 n., 325, 369. viii. 72, 86, 180, 264. ix. 20 n., 21, 96, 169, 174, 175. x. 4, 5, 7, 8, 11, 13, 59, 97, 115 n., 117, 149, 153, 154, 156, 158, 160, 173. xi. 18, 21, 33, 44, 55, 82, 185. xii. 49, 55, 56. xiii. 7, 32, 35, 37, 40, 41, 106, 107, 108, 121 n., 128, 143, 144, 149, 177, 178. xiv. 67, 84, 91, 97. insulted by the duke of Buckingham, i. 103. treated with rudeness by the earl of Portland, 110, 140. obtains the Secretaryship for sir H. Vane, ii. 54. recommended the Catholics to contribute money for the war against the Scots, 98. iii. 15 n. advised the King to call the Parliament in 1640, ii. 107. her power with the King complained of by the Scotch commissioners, 109. and generally disliked, 130. disliked both Laud and Strafford, *ib.* withdraws her favour from the earl of Holland, *ib.* present at Strafford's trial, iii. 105.

Becomes odious to the people, iv. 3, 31. the earl of Holland, who had been her creature, neglects her and spreads malicious reports, 14, 78 n. still courted by some, and why, 14. charged by some with fomenting the rebellion in Ireland, 31, 85, 285. deserted by lady Carlisle, who revealed all she knew about her or the King, 14, 78 n. jewels sold for £3000 to be given to sir W. Balfour, 101. notices of her in the Parliament's Remonstrance, 1642, 220-225. full of fears, chiefly on hearing of an intention of accusing her of high treason, 279, 280. the object of this rumour, 280. compelled to sell her plate and jewels to supply her wants, 281. v. 324. sells some to fortify and victual Ports-

## Henrietta Maria.

mouth, v. 440 *and n.* vi. 32 *n.* persuades the King to sign the bill depriving the bishops of their votes in the House of Lords, iv. 301. letter from lord Digby to her opened by the House of Commons, 308. goes to Holland, 281, 311, 314, 372 *n.*, 374. xiv. 88. mention of her in the Parliament's Declaration, 1642, 332.

Made the King promise to remove the earls of Essex and Holland from their situations, v. 31, 34. purchases and forwards arms and ammunition in Holland for the King, 138, 372 *and n.*, 374, 432 *n.* vi. 265. with what difficulty, v. 373. her Capuchin friars sent back to France by Parliament, vi. 47. favoured Goring, 264. and specially the earl of Newcastle, 265. returns to England, 266. her danger on landing from the Parliament fleet, 267. goes to York, 268.

Her chapel and lodgings plundered by authority of Parliament, vii. 22. sends a supply of arms and ammunition to Oxford, 85 *n.* impeached by the House of Commons, 52. joins the King near Keinton, 101 *n.*, 115, 121, 122. bringing a great recruit, 122. was against the King's attempting the siege of Gloucester, 177. from what motives, 182. jealous of prince Rupert, *ib.* the earl of Holland again offers his service to her, 188. Jermyn prevails with her to accept it, *ib.* how she behaved towards the earl on his arrival at Oxford, 189, 241, 242, 308 *n.* why offended with the marquis of Hertford, 242. how many paid court to her, 240. lived in Merton college, 242. chooses the comte d'Harcourt to be the French ambassador to negotiate between the King and the Parliament, 299. whatever was done by Papists was ascribed to her zeal, 340.

Retires from Oxford to Exeter, viii. 21. delivered of a daughter there, 71, 73 *n.* goes from thence to France, 89. Percy and Wilmot

made barons on her intercession, 94 *n.*, 97, 269. her troop of guards, 108, 156. prevailed with the King to make sir A. Aston, a Roman Catholic, governor of Oxford, 121. solicitous for O'Neill to be made groom of the bed-chamber, 269, 275. her and the King's letters fell into their enemies' hands at the battle of Naseby, ix. 41. garbled and published by them, *ib.* cardinal Richelieu prevented her going into France, when she first went abroad, 171. admitted there by cardinal Mazarin on her leaving England a second time, 173. advised the King to promise the Scotch to establish Presbyterianism in England, 175. x. 47.

Her letter to Hyde concerning the Prince of Wales's removal into France, x. 6. writes to the Prince urging it, 11, 13. the lords Capel and Colepepper sent to dissuade her from sending for the Prince into France, 9, 10. how far prevailed upon, 12, 21. why not disposed that any money arrangement should be settled for the Prince, 12 *n.* lord Digby's interview with her in France, 15, 18. she nominates Bellièvre as ambassador from France to the Parliament, 18. sends for the Prince, 22, 37. urges the King through Bellièvre to give up the Church, 47. sir W. Davenant sent by her to the King to persuade the same, 57. sir J. Berkeley sent from her to him, 96. the King writes to her from Hampton Court, to send for Hyde, 120. xi. 22. she is gained over by the Scottish commissioners, x. 158. xi. 132. how she treated the Prince at Paris, x. 175. lord Jermyn her chief officer, *ib.* the earl of Holland is again countenanced by her, xi. 5. summons Hyde to attend the Prince, 23. the Prince disposed by her to depend wholly upon the Presbyterian party, 36. the countess of Carlisle gains confidence again with her, 65. sends for the duke

## Henrietta Maria.

of York to Paris, 150 *n.* sends a paper to the Parliament, upon report of their intentions against the King, but it was laid aside, 216.

Her first message to the Prince, as King, xii. 2. who resolved not to resign himself entirely to her governance, 3. why she coldly received the marquis of Montrose, notwithstanding his great services, 15. why some urged and others dissuaded the King's seeing her on his intended journey to Ireland, 32-3. Hyde not at all in her favour, 36, 37. and why, 54. why angry at the King's project of going into Ireland, *ib.* her interview with him at St. Germain's, 59. he tells her plainly that he would not be governed by her, *ib.* Mr. Elliot, though under great obligations, had little reverence for her, 60. Hyde communicates between her and the King, 61-3. not solicitous for the King's stay in France, as she could not rule him, 75. removes to the Louvre, 77. against Hyde's going as ambassador into Spain, 77 *n.* her opinion of his talents and loyalty, *ib.* anecdotes to his credit of a conversation of hers, *ib.* advises the King to agree with the Scots upon their terms, and why, 119, 121. desired that the kirk of Scotland might triumph over the Church of England, 121. meets the King at Beauvais, *ib.*

Why lord Cottington was ungracious to her, xiii. 26. both Charles I and Charles II left the duke of York in her charge, 36. her unwise management, *ib.* complains to Hyde of the Lorraines marriage scheme proposed to the duke of York, 43. Dr. Cosin forbidden to officiate to the Protestants in her family, 44. her answer to Hyde about it, *ib.* how she received the duke of York on his return from the duke of Lorraine, 46. she is consulted as to the King's marrying a daughter of the marquis of Argyll,

50. her pecuniary difficulties, 107, 129. her relations to the dnks of York's household, 122. lord Jermyn appointed by the King one of his new Council to please her, 123. earnestly presses, but in vain, for sir John Berkeley to be made one also, 123, 124. did not bear the charge of the King's table, 129. xiv. 84. why she countenanced the King's attending the Huguenot church, xiii. 131, 134. how her prejudice against Hyde was increased, 135, 140, 141. the Scottish royalists desire that no designs may be communicated to her, 138, 139. supposed to have approved marrying the duke of York to Mdlle. de Longusville, 150. consults Hyde about it, 151. favoured the idea of marrying the King to Mdlle. de Montpensier, *ib.*

Instances of her displeasure against Hyde, xiv. 62, 64, 65. though hitherto averse from sir E. Herbert, now recommends him to the King as Lord Keeper, who appoints him, 69, 70. solicits that Long might be restored to the Secretaryship of State, of which he had been deprived at her desire, but is refused, 72. prevails with the King to send the duke of Gloucester to her at Paris, 88. and to leave him with her, 92. Hyde's parting audience with her, 93. she endeavours to pervert the duke of Gloucester in his religion, 117. is obliged to let him go to the King, who had sent for him in consequence, 119. consults Mazarin about the King's attending the treaty between France and Spain, xvi. 57. a good understanding restored between her and the King, 73. at Mazarin's request sent lord Jermyn to invite the King into France, when his restoration was near, xvi. 230. persuaded the King to make Jermyn earl of St. Alban's, *ib.*

Henrietta, princess, daughter of Charles I, ix. 27. xiii. 129. xv. 82. born at Exeter, viii. 71, 73 *n.*

- x. 115. under the care of the countess of Morton, viii. 93. conveyed by her into France, x. 115 *n.* xiv. 85. married the duke of Orleans, viii. 71, 73 *n.*
- Henry III, vi. 85. xvi. 215.
- Henry IV, iii. 125. v. 142, 148, 226, 364 *and n.*
- Henry VI, iii. 109.
- Henry VII, iii. 109, 264. iv. 305. v. 105, 246, 247, 315. xi. 245. xv. 33, 57.
- Henry VIII, i. 116. iii. 125, 126, 158. xi. 244.
- Henry, prince, son of James I, i. 31. xi. 254.
- Henry, duke of Gloucester: *see* Gloucester.
- Henry IV, K. of France: *see* France.
- Henry, Prince of Orange: *see* Orange.
- Herbert, sir Edward, Attorney-General, v. 62, 79, 163, 164, 171, 172, 260. xi. 142. xii. 44. speaks, as Solicitor-General, in the House of Commons on ship-money, ii. 68. opposes Hyde's question on the King's proposition respecting it, 75. misrepresents the proceedings of Parliament therein to the King, *ib. and note to* i. 166. made Attorney-General, iii. 82. opposes the preamble of the bill for impressing, iv. 89. accuses lord Kimbolton, and the five members, of high treason, 148, 154. a committee appointed by the Commons to prepare a charge against him for accusing the five members, 204. the Commons examine him, 208. his answer, *ib.* they vote a charge against him, *ib.* impeached by them, 310. a letter from the King in his favour, v. 46. differences between the Lords and Commons respecting counsel being allowed him, 47. his defence, 48. decision of the Lords in his favour, *ib.* altered to please the Commons, 49. had more influence than any person over prince Rupert, xi. 63. xiv. 69. his quarrelsome temper, xi. 63. concerned in the divisions in the Prince of Wales's court, 81, 84. embitters prince Rupert against lord Colepepper, 127, 129, 130. he and sir G. Ratcliffe have great interest with the duke of York, xiii. 38. they propose to him a marriage with the duke of Lorraine's daughter, 41. concerned in the factions in the duke's family, 46, 122. lord Jermyn courts him after their being enemies to each other, xiv. 69. made Lord Keeper at the Queen's solicitation, 70. advised Mr. Long to petition to be restored to the Secretaryship, 72. his opinion as to the charge against Hyde of intercourse with Cromwell, 74. accuses him of having spoken ill of the King, 75, 76. ill satisfied with the result, 77. instrumental in making prince Rupert leave Charles II and go into Germany, 90. resigns the Great Seal to the King, 91. and never afterwards saw him, *ib.* his death, xv. 83.
- Herbert, lord: *see* Worcester.
- Herbert, Edward Somerset, lord, of Ragland, afterwards earl of Glamorgan, and subsequently second marquis of Worcester, vi. 231 *bis*, 287, 291, 294. vii. 29, 100, 176 *n.* made general of South Wales, vi. 286. observations on this appointment, 287-9. a Papist, 289. his appointment complained of by Parliament, 231. who request he may be removed from Court, *ib.* raises a little army, 290. is surprised by sir William Waller, and routed, 292. vii. 100. cost of his preparations, vi. 293. persuaded to decline the command of Wales, vii. 164. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6.
- Herbert, Henry, lord, afterwards duke of Beaufort, xvi. 239.
- Hereford, vi. 238. ix. 43, 67, 72, 154. taken by sir W. Waller, vi. 294. taken again by him, vii. 29. again besieged by the Scots, ix. 71, 86. relieved by the King, 87. the King there, 89, 90, 118. x. 4.
- Hereford, Walter Devereux, fifth viscount, xvi. 239.
- Hereford, bishop of: *see* Coke, G.

- Heron, captain Henry, vi. 222 *n.*, 223.
- Hertford, William Seymour, earl of, afterwards marquis of, and duke of Somerset, iii. 162, 163. iv. 321. vi. 237, 239, 245, 246, 286, 287, 392. vii. 93, 98, 100, 101, 109, 111, 148, 173, 192, 247, 308. viii. 90, 240. x. 132. xiv. 82. xv. 57. a commissioner to treat with the Scots at Ripon, ii. 107. sworn a Privy-Councillor, iii. 50. made a marquis, 162. made governor to the Prince of Wales, iv. 294. vi. 389. his reason for accepting the office of governor, iv. 296. vi. 385. ordered by Parliament to take all care of him, iv. 32. not to suffer him to go out of the country, 208. his character, 294-296. vi. 385. vii. 155, 156. concurred not in the proceedings against Strafford, although he had no love for him, iv. 294. vi. 385. carried the Prince to the King at Greenwich by his command, though prohibited by Parliament, iv. 314. removed from his office with the Prince, vii. 324. signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. appointed lieutenant-general of all the western parts, 385. vi. 240. sent thither, v. 443. his actions in Somersetshire, v. 441 *n.* z. vi. 3-7. retires to Sherborne, z, 7. the earl of Bedford comes against him, *ib.* his challenge to fight not accepted by the earl, vi. 33. vii. 185. his proceedings in the west, vi. 33. goes thence into Glamorganshire, *ib.* he and prince Maurice, as his lieutenant-general, with their forces, join the Cornish army at Chard, vii. 96. whither they had been sent by the King, 84 *n.*, 93. jealousy on the part of princes Rupert and Maurice, as to his having the chief command, 85 *n.*, 98. takes Taunton, Bridgewater, and Dunster castle, 97, 100. he and prince Maurice prepare their march for Oxford, 100. followed by sir W. Waller, 100-105. they beat Waller at Lanedown, 101 *n.*, 106, 107. they come to Oxford, 113, 115. and go thence to the siege of Bristol, 121 *n.*, 123. jealousies between him and prince Rupert, about the government of Bristol, 121 *n.*, 144. sir Ralph Hopton firmly devoted to him, 148. removed from the army to attend the King, 155. against his inclination, *ib.*, 177 *n.* observations on this change, 156. difference between him and prince Maurice relative to appointing the governor of Weymouth, 199, 200. returns to the King at Oxford, 200, 242. made groom of the stole, 247. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6. one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, viii. 211. attended the King at the treaty at Newport, 113. attended his funeral, xi. 244. the Garter conferred on him by Charles II on his restoration, xvi. 245. dies shortly after, xi. 245.
- Hertford, Frances Devereux, marchioness of, viii. 123.
- Hertfordshire, vi. 93. vii. 172. petition from the county to Parliament, iv. 247, 253.
- Hesse, cardinal of, xii. 94.
- Hesse Cassel, Landgrave of, did not contribute to the subsidy granted by the Diet to Charles II, xiv. 104.
- Hesse Darmstadt, Elizabeth Amelia, daughter of the Landgrave of, married the duke of Neuhurg, xiv. 114.
- Hewitt, or Hewet, Dr., tried for his share in a royalist plot, xv. 95. refused to plead, *ib.* condemned and executed, 99. notice of him, 101.
- Hewson, colonel, suppresses a rising of the city apprentices, xvi. 105.
- Heydon, sir John, vi. 1, 71.
- High-commission court, the discipline exercised there, i. 196. dissolved by Act of Parliament, iii. 211, 257. *App. vol. vi.*, p. 294. its origin and object, iii. 257. how it had exceeded its bounds, 258-260.
- Hilghnam, Gloucestershire, vii. 29.

Hill, colonel Arthur, vi. 307.  
 [Hinchinbrooke, Cambridgeshire, x. 91 n.]  
 Hinchuan, Dr., prebendary of Salisbury, assists the escape of Charles II, xiii. 104, 105.  
 Hinton, —, ix. 16 n.  
 Hipposley, sir John, i. 62.  
 'Hippocrates' twios,' iv. 140. v. 441 n. 4. [See S. Aug. *De Civitate Dei*, lib. v. cap. 2, quoting a lost work by Cicero.]  
 Hispaniola, xv. 26. the English fleet and troops unsuccessful in an attack, xv. 9, 10.  
 Hochstraten, in Brabant, Charles II goes to, xv. 140. description of the village, 141.  
 [Holburne, lieut.-general, xiii. 52 n.]  
 [Holdsworth, Dr. Richard, iv. 34 n. v. 135 n.]  
 Holland, iii. 60. iv. 198, 281, 301, 308. v. 340, 372 n., 374, 375, 432 n., 436, 440 n. vi. 62 n., 73, 93, 204, 266. vii. 201, 208, 264 n., 347, 349, 351, 353, 357, 360, 414. viii. 227. ix. 114, 171, x. 115 n., 116. xi. 20, 23, 30, 32, 33, 35, 39, 67, 71, 78, 79, 96, 132, 138, 152, 208, 235. xii. 4, 15, 24, 33, 34, 48, 108, 118, 119, 120, 124, 128, 129, 152. xiii. 3, 7, 34, 35, 58, 67, 83, 122. xiv. 1, 68, 69, 71, 88, 102, 104, 105, 106, 110, 112, 129. xv. 87. xvi. 96, 134. xvi. 173. the privilege long allowed to the English ambassador of voting in the States General discontinued, i. 144. Holland enters into correspondence with the Covenanters, ii. 55. and assists them, v. 373. Queen Henrietta goes to Holland, iv. 311, 314. and buys arms and ammunition there, v. 138. vi. 265. the States hostile to Charles I, v. 373. substance of the declaration of the Parliament to the States General, vi. 173-75. the Prince of Wales desires the States to intercede with Parliament for his father, xi. 212, 213. their answer, 214. they send an ambassador, 215. who was not admitted to an audience till after his death, 216. the States General, and the States

of Holland, condole with Charles II on his father's murder, xii. 1. the States General greatly offended at the murder of Dorislaus, 26. the King delivers a memorial to the States, 27, 28. the States unwilling that he should return to the Hague, 121. or that the duke of York should remain there, xiii. 46. invited by the English Parliament to a strict union, 154. without effect, 155. thereupon the Act of navigation passed against them, 156. their ships ordered not to strike to the English, 158. a war is begun on this account, 159. message of the States to Parliament, 160. their answer, 161. Blake takes the fishing boats and guard ships of Holland, 162. Ayscue takes or sinks thirty sail of their merchants, 163. and fights their fleet near Plymouth, *ib.* they decline the offer of Charles II to join them, 166. their fleet beaten by Blakes, 168. the States of Holland and Friesland send to the Parliament for peace, 169. Cromwell never zealous for this war, but influenced by St. John, *ib.* great expense of the war, xiv. 2. the Dutch fleet beaten again, 1653, 28. they send four commissioners to treat of peace, 29. how received, *ib.* their fleet again beaten, and their admiral Van Tromp slain, 31. Cromwell makes peace with them, 33. they are bound not to admit Charles II, 54. Dutch ships seized by Penn for illegal trading, xv. 9. the States General congratulate the King's coming to Breda; and the States of Holland invite him to the Hague, xvi. 233. his reception and entertainment there, 236, 245. the fisheries on the coasts of Scotland and the isles of Orkney a source of great trade to Holland, xiii. 162.  
 Holland, Henry Rich, first earl of, ii. 114. iii. 244. iv. 14, 15 n., 22, 48 n., 256. v. 203, 391, 413, [424 n.], 428, 434 n. 3, 437. vi. 101. vii. 186, 248. xi. 65, 66, 69, 109, 110, 137. xii. 124.

His family, i. 137. served in the war in Holland, *ib.* became acceptable to the duke of Buckingham, *ib.* special friend to the earl of Carlisle, 137. married [Isabel] Cope, 139. one of the bedchamber to the Prince of Wales, *ib.* made earl of Holland, &c., *ib.* had the Queen's good opinion, 140. was consequently an enemy to the earl of Portland, *ib.* mis-executed his office as C. J. in Eyre, iii. 234, 265. v. 31. made general of the horse against the Scotch Covenanters, ii. 27. marches to Dunse and retreats, 39-41. how he received the Covenanters' letter to him, 44. neither loved the marq. Hamilton, Wentworth, nor Laud, nor almost any thing in Church or State, 48. challenged by the earl of Newcastle, 53. iv. 293. not employed in the second Scotch expedition, ii. 81. irreconcilable to the earl of Strafford, *ib.*, 107. and why, 101. a commissioner to treat with the Scots at Ripon, 107, 108. one of the King's Council at York, 113. the Queen's favour withdrawn from him, 130. v. 34.

Appointed general to disband the English and Scotch armies, iii. 232. the misfortune of his appointment, 233-34. iv. 78 *n.* his conduct on the King's refusing to let him make a baron, iv. 2, 78 *n.*, 149 *n.* letter to Parliament, 2. declares for the factious party, 14, 78 *n.* will not attend the King to Hampton Court, though groom of the stole, 196. v. 116 *n.* and dissuaded the earl of Essex from attending, *ib.* v. 32. sent to the King by the Parliament, with their declaration; iv. 343-44. observations on his rise and conduct, v. 31. vi. 405. deprived of his office of groom of the stole, v. 31, 34, 35, 116 *n.* presented the Parliament's petition to the King at Beverley, 388. deprecated the severity of the King's answer, 411. the King's censure of him, 412. which increases his hostility

to the King, 415. sent by Parliament to the King with propositions of peace, vi. 230. notice of him, 405. weary of the war, vii. 121. goes into the King's quarters, 174. debate how he should be received, 177-180, 183-86. had from the time of the Queen's return from abroad privately made offer of his service to her, and renewed his old friendship with Jermyn, 188. particulars respecting his going to Oxford, 180 *n.*, 188-9, 201 *n.* waited on the King at the siege of Gloucester, 180 *n.*, 190. behaved bravely in the battle of Newbury, 241, 308 *n.* account of his dissatisfaction at Oxford, 241-46. returns to the Parliament, 247, 308. committed to prison by Parliament, 311.

Prepares to rise in favour of the King, xi. 5, 39, 102. commissioned by the Prince, 5. goes to Kingston, 103. is routed there, 104. escapes to St. Neot's, where he is taken, *ib.* tried by a high court of justice, 252, 254. condemned, 257. his petition for his life rejected by the Commons, chiefly through Cromwell's animosity, 259. beheaded, 262. a daughter mentioned, vii. 189.

Holland, sir John, one of the committees appointed by Parliament to present their petition to the King at Beverley, v. 388. one of their commissioners to treat with him at Oxford, vi. 318, 369. one of the committee sent to wait on Charles II at the Hague, xvi. 239.

Hollis, Denzil, iv. 76, 270. v. 341, 364 *n.* 15, 441 *n.* 4<sup>s</sup> x. 90. his character, iii. 35. a leader in the House of Commons, *ib.*, 55 *n.* x. 104. [impeaches Laud, iii. 15 *n.*] proposal to make him Secretary of State, 20, 86, 191. not hostile to the Church, 147. one of the five members of the Commons accused of high treason by the King's order, 148, 149. [see Parliament.] sent down by Parliament into the west with the earl of



- Bedford, v. 441 n. 2. vi. 7. lieutenant of Bristol, vi. 3. one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, viii. 211. his feeling with respect to the Presbyterian and Independent parties, 248. opposed the Self-denying Ordinance, 260. quarrels with Ireton, x. 104. one of the eleven members impeached by the army, 105. withdrew, with the rest, beyond the seas, 110. Monck confers with him and other leaders of the Presbyterian party, xvi. 160. one of the committee sent to wait on Charles II at the Hague, 239.
- Holmby House, Northamptonshire, x. 67, 70, 78, 90-92, 94, 103, 107, 162, 170. xii. 8. xiv. 48.
- Holt bridge, Chester, ix. 119.
- Holyrood House, cathedral service maintained there, i. 172. Laud preached there, 173.
- Hooker, Richard, cited, v. 286.
- [Hope, sir Thomas, Lord Advocate, ii. 126 n. vii. 249 n.] xi. 161.
- Hopton, sir Ralph, afterwards lord, vi. 6, 327, 397. vii. 85 n., 101 n., 132, 176, 290, 368. viii. 3, 4, 5, 6, 42, 72. ix. 10, 15, 20, 49, 62, 77, 82 n., 84, 94, 99, 106, 136, 147, 158 n. x. 3.
- Committed to the Tower by the Commons in 1642, iv. 338. sent into the west to assist in forming an army for the King, v. 385, 441 n. 2, 443. arms a troop of dragoons at his own charge, vi. 6. sent into Cornwall, 33, 239. his and sir B. Greenville's progress there, 239-249. vii. 85 n., 86, 98, 101. beats the Parliament's forces at Bradock-down, vi. 248. takes Saltash, 249. defeats the earl of Stamford at Stratton, 87-90. his reputation in the west second to no man's, 98. in the skirmish at Chewton, 101. dangerously wounded in the battle of Lansdown, 101 n., 109. looked upon as the soul of the western army, 110. at Devizes, 113. particulars of his being appointed lieutenant governor of Bristol, 121 n., 144-148, 156. made baron Hopton of Stratton, 159.
- signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 n. 6. sent into Hants and Sussex, vii. 401 n. his character, *ib.* viii. 31.
- Campaign in Hants and Sussex, viii. 1-14. possesses himself of Winchester, 1. takes Arundel castle, 6. joined by the earl of Brentford, 12. the closest friendship between them, *ib.* defeated by sir W. Waller at Alresford, 14. much consulted by the King in military affairs, 28. made general of the ordnance, 96 n., 97. ix. 43. one of the Prince of Wales's council, viii. 180. sent to Bristol, 254, 286. ix. 7. to Pendennis, ix. 104. disparaged by lord Goring, 20, 83. the Prince's Council firm in his favour, 20. ordered by the King to command the forces under the Prince, 44, 83. sir R. Greenville's jealousy of him, 104. who afterwards recommends him to command in chief, 133. he is appointed, 135-6. yet to the dissatisfaction of sir Richard Greenville, 137. his movements, 139, 142. his forces routed at Torrington (where he is wounded) by sir T. Fairfax, 143. his movements afterwards, 144. dissolves his army, 150. goes to Scilly, *ib.* remained in Jersey on the Prince of Wales's departure into France, x. 48. had a particular friendship for sir H. Killigrew, 74. attended the Prince to join the fleet at Helvoetsluys, xi. 32. the only one of the Prince's council of whom nobody spoke ill, 84. but nevertheless a faction against him, *ib.* the King's ambassador in Spain, xii. 103 n.
- Hopton-heath, the battle of, vi. 279-282.
- Horner, sir John, vi. 3, 7. vii. 129.
- Horton, colonel, viii. 151.
- Hotham, sir John, iii. 35. iv. 19. v. 84, 88, 155, 441 n. 4, 445. vi. 203, 268. committed to the Tower in 1640, v. 162. inveighs in Parliament against the earl of

- Strafford, iii. 7. why united with the factious party, 55 *n.* v. 434 *n.* active in Parliament, iii. 157. defended Hyde in the debate on the Remonstrance, iv. 54, 58. appointed by the Parliament governor of Hull, 207, 216. the dispute there respecting his conduct between the King and Parliament, v. 54, 57, 92-97, 102-113, 128, 140, 148, 218, 221, 231, 236-244, 271, 286-8, 308-313, 352, 370, 385, 396, 404, 428, 432. particulars of his refusing the King admittance into Hull, 89-92. his conduct approved of by Parliament, 92, 107. lord Digby's transactions with him at Hull, v. 432 *n.*, 433-7. allows Digby and Ashburnham to escape, 435, 437. his character, 434. the Parliament would have been absolute masters of Yorkshire but for his inactivity, vi. 261. his seizure, trial, and execution, viii. 281-283.
- Hotham, John, the son, iv. 58, 312. sent with his father by the Parliament to Hull, iv. 216. who had more confidence in him than in his father, v. 106, 433. and used him as a spy over him, 433. what his father said against him, 434. he cabals against his father, 437. infested Yorkshire, vi. 257, 259, 261. was against allowing a neutrality in that county, 258. his seizure, trial, and execution, viii. 281-3.
- Hounslow, Middlesex, vi. 126 *n.*, 134. x. 108, 109, 111.
- Howard of Charleton: *see* Berkshire.
- Howard of Charleton, Charles lord, afterwards second earl of Berkshire, signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. and signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6.
- Howard, sir Charles, viii. 135.
- Howard of Escrick, Edward lord, a commissioner to treat with the Scots at Ripon, ii. 107. concurred in the prosecution of Laud and Strafford, iii. 28. one of the committee sent to attend the King in Scotland, 255. iv. 17. married the duke of Buckingham's niece, iv. 17. sent with the Parliament's answer to the King's message concerning Hull, v. 106. one of the few lords who attended Parliament, vii. 369 *n.* 5, 375.
- Howard, Thomas: *see* Arundel.
- Howard, colonel Thomas, vii. 94, 103.
- Howard, William, an Anabaptist, xv. 104, 120. procured a loyal address from the Levellers to Charles II, 103. sends a letter with it, 120-130. comes to the King at Bruges, 131.
- Huddleston, father, assists Charles II in his escape after the battle of Worcester, xiii. 87, 88.
- Hudson, Jeffrey, acted as guide to the King out of Oxford, when going to the Scottish army, x. 33.
- Huet: *see* Hewitt.
- Huguenots in France, xvi. 52. avowed enemies to Charles I, vi. 180. settlement of their congregations in England, 181-5.
- Hulford House, near Exeter, ix. 109.
- Hull, iv. 279, 280. v. 18, 155, 432 *and n.* 445. vi. 203, 257, 259, 261, 297, 397. vii. 177, 201 *n.*, 264 *n.*, 298, 322, 400, 401 *n.*, 415. viii. 84, 86, 201, 281. xvi. 96. sir J. Hotham appointed governor by Parliament, iv. 207, 216. differences between the King and Parliament respecting this appointment, 215, 216. v. 54, 57, 84, 88, 92-97, 102-113, 128, 140, 148, 218, 221, 231, 236-244, 271, 286-8, 308-313, 349, 352, 368, 370, 372 *n.*, 374. 389-398, 404-5, 410, 421, 429. the mayor censured by Parliament, iv. 312. order of Parliament concerning Hull, 352. their petition to the King to remove the magazine, v. 53. his answer, 54. the magazine removed notwithstanding, 57. particulars of sir J. Hotham's refusing the King admittance into Hull, 89-91. his conduct ap-

proved of by Parliament, 92, 95. the King proposes to attempt the recovery of the town, 385, 416. sir H. Slingsby's plot for the King, xv. 99.

Humber, river, v. 372 n., 374, 404, 432 n.

Hungerford, Berks, vii. 207, 209. viii. 164.

Hungerford, sir Edward, vii. 101 n. *bis*.

Huntingdon, iv. 346, 350. v. 20.

Huntingdon, Henry Hastings, fifth earl of, v. 417. vi. 274, 275.

Huntingdon, Ferdinando lord Hastings, afterwards sixth earl of, ix. 33. ran away from the battle of Edge-hill, vi. 101. (as earl of Huntingdon,) signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 n. 6.

Huntingdon, major, one of the best officers the Parliament had, on whom Cromwell relied more than any one, x. 125. remonstrated with Cromwell about the King, and gave up his commission, *ib.* made tender of his services to Charles II, xvi. 151.

Huntingdonshire, vi. 327. vii. 172. viii. 18. xi. 104.

Hurry: *see* Urry.

Hursley, Hampshire, xv. 50.

Hurst Castle, xi. 203, 204, 221, 229.

Hutton, sir Richard, judge, notice of, ix. 125.

Hutton, sir Richard, the son, ix. 124. notice of, 125.

Hyde, captain, v. 173.

Hyde, sir Edward, afterwards earl of Clarendon, i. 125. iv. 22, 36, 163 n., 166 n. v. 432 n. vi. 62 n., 65 n., 66 n., 126 n., 403 n. vii. 85 n., 187, 241, 242, 243, 286, 370 n. 2, 401 n. viii. 179. ix. 53 n., 75, 77, 78, 104, 147, 152, 158 n. x. 23. xi. 23, 39 n., 85, 86, 88, 127, 128, 129, 130, 142, 148, 152. xii. 60. xiii. 43, 62, 150. xiv. 59, 66, 67, 69, 82, 97, 124, 128, 129, 137, 154, 170, 178. xvi. 154, 156, 178.

His object in writing the history of the rebellion, i. 1. ix. 3. his fitness for the undertaking, i. 3.

His speech about a supply to be granted in lieu of ship-money, ii. 74. troubled at the dissolution of the short Parliament of 1640, 77, 78. returned for [Saltash] in the Long Parliament, iii. 3. a meeting with Pym, *ib.* spoke against lord Finch, 15 n. conversation with the earl of Rothes, 41. promotes the borrowing money in the city, 90, 91. opposes the bill against bishops' votes, disagreeing herein with Falkland, 150-2. and Dering's bill for abolishing bishops, &c., 156. chairman of the committee against the Court of York, 157-159. obtains great credit for his speech upon it, 160. but was not thanked as proposed by the northern members, *ib.* attempts to alter the earl of Essex's resolution with respect to Strafford, 161-165. but in vain, 165. how kept from naming the marq. Hamilton as an 'evil counsellor,' 238-9. made chairman of the committee on the bill for abolition of episcopacy, 240. which he materially obstructs, 241-2.

Protests against the Remonstrance of the House of Commons being printed, iv. 52. the northern members prevent his being prosecuted for protesting, 54. 55. his defence of himself, 57. and of Jeffery Palmer, 58. Essex confers with him about the generalship, in 1641, 78 n. opposes the bill for taking away the bishops' votes, 94 n. opposes a committee being appointed respecting the militia, 97. advised the appointment of Falkland as Secretary of State, and of Colepepper as Chanc. of the Exchequer, 122. with difficulty persuaded Falkland to accept office, 124. declined any office for himself, 126. one of those called by the rabble *disaffected to the kingdom*, iv. 129 n. the King declares he would do nothing concerning the House of Commons without his, Falkland's, and Colepepper's advice, 126. lord Digby instru-

Hyde, sir Edward.

mental in promoting these three to the King's favour, 128. the three discouraged, by the King's prosecuting lord Kimbolton and the five members without consulting them, 158. one of those most trusted in the Commons by the King, v. 206. his conversation with the Lord Keeper respecting the King's being dissatisfied with his conduct, 206-8. concerned in inducing the Keeper to join the King at York, with the Great Seal, 203 n., 210-2.

Prepares the King's message for peace to Parliament from Nottingham, vi. 8 n. conversation with the King thereon, *ib.* excepted by Parliament from peace on any terms, 50. joins the King at York, 57 n. (archbishop) Sheldon his friend, *ib.* present at the battle of Edgehill, 79 n. accompanied the Prince of Wales and duke of York from it, when it was doubtful, *ib.* the earl of Lindsey his friend, 90 n. made Chancellor of the Exchequer, vi. 382, 397, 411 n. viii. 213. and a Privy Councillor, vi. 382, 411 n. the marquis of Hertford his friend, vi. 385 n. vii. 177 n. and the earl of Southampton, vi. 386 n. why he entertained great kindness for the earl of Pembroke, 401.

Knew as much as most men about Waller's plot, vii. 54. a friend of sir N. Slanning, 121 n. and of viscount Grandison, *ib.*, 133. seldom spoke without some earnestness, 185. advises that the lords who came over to the King from Parliament should be well received, *ib.* why very civil to the earl of Holland, 189. his advice to the earl, 244-6. with difficulty persuades the King to make sir A. A. Cooper governor of Weymouth as desired by the marq. of Hertford, 199, 200. goes to Oxford, 201 n. his proposals adopted, i. that the Peers about the King should write to the Council in Scotland, 323. the letter, 369 n. 6. drawn up by

him, 323. ii. that a Parliament should be summoned at Oxford of the members who had left Westminster, 326. had a kindness for the earl of Leicester, 324 n. was sure that the King was not concerned in the rebellion of Ireland, 340. one of those appointed to examine the accusations against duke Hamilton, 405.

Active in fortifying Oxford, viii. 73 n. discourses with col. Gage about the relief of Basing House, 123 n. a servant of his killed there, *ib.* appointed one of the Prince of Wales's council, 180. corresponds with the King's commissioners in London, 204 n. advises the King to send archbp. Laud a pardon under the Great Seal, 207. one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, 211. prepared with great fatigue all the papers at the treaty, 221, 252 n. the earl of Loudoun in vain urges him to persuade the King to give up the Church, 222-3. his answer to the earl's speech against episcopacy, 231. his answer to the Parliamentary demands about Ireland, 235-6. the earl of Pembroke in vain tries to persuade him of the reasonableness of consenting to the Parliament's demands, 243-248. unwilling to be one of those in whom the King proposed to vest the power of the militia, 250 n. ordered to attend the Prince of Wales into the West, 254 n. wrote an answer for prince Rupert to a letter from the earl of Essex, 285 n.

Why he resolved never to cooperate with lord Goring, ix. 20 n. charged by him with having said he was not to be trusted, 48. one of the commissioners to inquire into the complaints against sir R. Greenville, 23. at Exeter, 27. unable to wait on the King in Wales by reason of the gout, 73. is sent to Pendennis, 79, 104, 152, 159 n. conference with lord Goring, 83, 84. conference with duke Hamilton at Pendennis, 153-157.

Hyde, sir Edward.

Letter to him from the Queen, x. 6. opposed the Prince's going to France, and Digby's first proposal to go to Ireland, 13. and his second one for France, 19-20. remained in Jersey after the Prince's departure to France, 48. Charles I's opinion of him, 57. sir H. Killigrew his intimate friend, 74, 77 *n.* substance of a letter from the King to him, 120. desired by the King to wait on the Prince when sent for, *ib.* xi. 21. answers the Parliament's Declaration of no more addresses to the King, 151 *n.*

Sent for to the Prince from Jersey, xi. 22-23. goes to France, 23. his misadventures before he joined the Prince, 78, 79. opposes Lauderdale, 89. not to be admitted into Scotland, 88. most esteemed of all the Prince's council by prince Rupert, 152.

Sent by Charles II to confer with the marq. of Montrose, xii. 15. discourse with Lauderdale about Montrose, 18. lady Aubigny his friend, 19. his conference with duke Hamilton concerning the affairs of Scotland, 20-22, 30. and with lord Cottington concerning the King's sending an embassy into Spain, 35. why disposed to go on this embassy, 37. the Queen unfavourable towards him, 37, 54. he and lord Cottington appointed ambassadors, 38. why the Scots rejoiced at his appointment, *ib.* the marquis of Montrose disapproves of it, *ib.* why others were sorry at it, *ib.* appointed to make a Declaration for issue in England, 41. which was laid aside owing to the different opinions upon it, 45, 46. the ambassadors begin their journey to Spain, 49. visit the duke of Lorraine at Brussels, *ib.* proceed to Paris to wait on the King and Queen, 59. Hyde acts as a mediator between the King and Queen, 61-3. her good opinion of his talents, loyalty, and plain dealing, 77 *n.* the ambassadors proceed to Spain,

81-5. arrive at Madrid, 86. account of certain public spectacles at Madrid, 89, 90. their audience with the King and Queen, 100-103. they have a house assigned them, 103. their private audience, 108. Hyde's occupation at Madrid, 109 *n.* begins his book upon the Psalms, *ib.* prince Rupert writes to him, on coming with his fleet to Spain, 110. the ambassadors communicate King Charles' going to Scotland to the Spanish King, 126. at the news of which they are much troubled, *ib.*, 127.

Hyde and Cottington expostulate upon the reception of Ascham as Parliamentary agent in Spain, xiii. 9. they write to de Haro about Ascham's murder, 11. are ordered to leave Madrid, and why, 25, 26. have audience of leave, 29. Hyde is dismissed very courteously, 31. in passing through France waits on Q. Henrietta, 32. she complains to him about the duke of York, 36. he speaks with her about the prohibition of the English Church service in her family at Paris, 44. confers with Mr. Montague about it, 45. goes to Antwerp on his way to the Hague, 43, 46. finds the duke of York at Breda, 46. is sent for by the King to Paris, 108. where he receives from him the account of his escape after the battle of Worcester, *ib.* his friendship with the marquis of Ormonde, 121. sir J. Berkeley tries to prejudice the duke of York against him, 122. appointed one of the King's Privy Council, 123. dissuades sir J. Berkeley from applying for the Mastership of the Wards, 125. who breaks with him in consequence of the King's refusal of it, 127. his opinion as to the duke of York's going into the French army, 128. lives very poorly in Paris, 129. dissuades the King from attending the Huguenot church at Charenton, 133. is equally odious to Presbyterians and Papists, 134. ap-

pointed to make all the King's despatches for Scotland, 139. desires not to be so employed, 140. the King's reply to him, 141. he submits, *ib.* the Queen more prejudiced against him in consequence, 133, 141. his prejudice against Scotland, 134, 140. all failures in soliciting for places are attributed to him, 146. the Queen consults him about a proposed marriage of the duke of York, 151. his advice thereon, 152. communicated constantly with the Dutch ambassador at Paris, 165. is at Antwerp, 178.

Acted as Secretary of State during the King's stay in France, xiv. 59. attempted to dissuade capt. Wogan from going to Scotland, *ib.* his uneasy state in France, 62. the Queen is against him, *ib.* a petition prepared by the Scotch Presbyterians for his removal, 63. and by the Roman Catholics also, 64. the King quashes them both, 65. other designs to mortify Hyde, 69, 72. accused by Mr. Long of having conversed with Cromwell, 73-74. Lord Keeper Herbert accuses him of having spoken ill of the King, 75-6. his defence, 77. acquitted by the King on both charges, 74, 77. forgives Mr. Long, 77. has an audience of the Queen before his departure from France, 93-4. good management of the King's household imputed to him, 104. his discourse with the King about his going into Scotland, 109. the Queen ascribes to him the recall of the duke of Gloucester from her, 119. his wariness with regard to Manning, whose treachery he helps to discover, 138-144.

Wrote an answer to Cromwell's Declaration about the decimation-tax on royalists, xiv. 151 *n.*

Sent to Brussels to confer with don Alonzo de Cardenas, xv. 70, 75. made Lord Chancellor, 83. was against the marquis of Ormonde's going into England, 86. his lodging at Brussels under the King's bed-chamber, 138, 176.

the King every day transacted business there, 138. writes for the King to adm. Montagne, 155. his letters to Sir H. Bennett, xvi. 170.

Death of a son mentioned, vi. 8 *n.* wrote his *History* with the approval of Charles I and by help of papers furnished by him, ix. 3. x. 120. was a fat man, xiv. 67. his wife, xii. 49.

Hyde, sir Robert, sergeant, afterwards C. J. of the King's Bench, xiii. 104.

## I.

Impressing soldiers, opposition to, i. 87. debates on the bill for pressing soldiers for Ireland, iv. 88-93. the bill passes the Lords, 274. passed by the King, 302.

Inchiquin, Murrough O'Brien, lord, afterwards earl of, x. 157. xi. 2, 143, 148. xii. 3, 73, 144. xiii. 114. the English Parliament possessed of Munster through his and lord Broghill's activity, x. 153. was president of that province, 155. holds correspondence with Ormonde, and invites him into Munster, 144, 155. xij. 145. concludes a cessation of arms with the confederate Catholics, xi. 148. xii. 65 *n.* the marquis of Ormonde chiefly depended upon him, xii. 65. is made by him lieutenant general, 65 *n.* goes from Ormonde at Dublin to Munster, 69. confirmed in his intentions of serving the King, 70. Cromwell marches into Munster against him, 117.

Incontri, Jaco, Florentine ambassador at Madrid, xii. 96.

Independents, the, viii. 186. ix. 163, 174, 176. x. 8, 162. xi. 44. xiii. 169. xiv. 1, 2, 41, 150. xv. 103. xvi. 106. they oppose proposals for peace, viii. 190. their party in Parliament, 259-60. ix. 168. the King vainly attempts negotiations with them, ix. 167. comparison of the policy of the English Independents and the Scottish Presbyterians, x. 168-9. more learned and rational than the

Presbyterians, 174. favoured by Cromwell, xiii. 20.

India Company, East, xiv. 33.

India Company, West, iv. 12.

Indies, West, xii. 110. xiv. 68.

Infanta of Spain, treated as Princess of Wales after Charles left Spain, i. 78. the Infanta in 1649, xii. 103.

Ingoldsby, colonel, offered to stand by the protector Richard against the council of officers, xvi. 10. removed from his command by them, 12. sent against Lambert by the Parliament, 148. takes Lambert prisoner, 149, 226. takes Windsor Castle, 226. makes tender of his service to Charles II, 151. why the King was perplexed with his particular case, 224. anecdote of his having signed Charles I's death-warrant by compulsion, 225.

Innocent X, pope, xiv. 66. notice of his death, 120. had fomented the rebellion in England by cherishing that in Ireland, *ib.* his answer to an application for money for Charles II, 121, 122.

Inspruck, archduke of, xii. 97.

[Inverlochy, battle of, xii. 18 *n.*]

[Inverness, xii. 13 *n.*]

Ireland, iv. 191, 204 *n.*, 246, 262, 265, 272, 273, 278. vi. 64, 348. vii. 92, 218. viii. 227. ix. 100, 120, 126, 157. x. 13, 85, 87, 115 *n.*, 163. xi. 1. xii. 35, 130. xiv. 101. xvi. 92, 139.

Mention of, in the communications and proceedings between the King and Parliament, iv. 172, 173, 211, 245, 249, 257, 302, 307, 311, 332, 342, 344, 346, 350, 354. v. 3, 10, 16, 18, 20, 25, 53, 55, 56, 93, 109, 164, 168, 178, 183, 232, 235, 255, 263, 403, 410. vi. 52. vii. 50, 329.

Its prosperous state before the Long Parliament, i. 162. declaration against the Scots, ii. 101. an army proposed to be brought thence against the Scots, ii. 82, 88, 119. Strafford's vindication of his conduct there, iii. 109-120. proposed disbanding of the army, 252. iv. 6. vi. 179. breaking out

of the rebellion, iv. 23-30, 41 *n.* insinuated that it was contrived by the King or the Queen, 31, 41 *n.*, 85, 285. cherished by Pope Innocent X, xiv. 120. slackness of Parliament in sending supplies, iv. 87-8. state of affairs, 87. money raised by Parliament under pretence of relieving Ireland, 313. propositions for Adventurers in Ireland, 355. a commission appointed, 358. the King offers to go in person to Ireland, v. 59. vi. 23. observations on this design, v. 78. references to the Adventurers' scheme, 62, 67, 71, 132, 194. preparations by Parliament for raising an army, 132. money borrowed from the city of London, 319.

The Scotch army sent to Ireland, vi. 108. Spain aided the rebellion there, 177. state of it with respect to the differences between the King and Parliament, 295-315. petition from the Roman Catholics to the King, vii. 330. letter to the Parliament on the miserable condition of the English army there, 331. address of the Lords Justices and Council to the King upon the subject, 334. who is obliged to treat with the rebels, 337, 338. a cessation of arms concluded, 339. disowned by Parliament, 340. the earl of Holland leaves the King on account of it, 308. the letter from Parliament to the Lords Justices and Council on the subject, 342. their answer, 344-366. troops from Ireland sent to the King's assistance in England, 368. troops brought to England by the King after the cessation, 401. the Irish of the Pale, *ib. n.*

Cruelties of sir R. Greenville there, viii. 137. commissioners sent to the King from the confederate Catholics, the Lord Lieut., and the Parliament, 171-174. the King's fruitless discussions with them all, 175-8. discussion respecting Ireland at the treaty of Uxbridge, 234-7. the earl of Antrim's proposals for an

Irish expedition into Scotland, 265-278. the Irish prisoners allowed no quarter by the Parliament, 284.

The King forbids the Prince to go there, ix. 112. lord Digby urges his going, x. 13, 14. the Irish break their peace with the King, and besiege Dublin, in June, 1647, x. 121. marq. of Ormonde leaves Ireland, *ib.* the affairs in Ireland in 1647, x. 153-6. — during lord Lisle's being there, xi. 2. — in 1648, 144-148. the Pale, 145. characters of Preston and O'Neill, 146. the Parliamentary demands in the treaty in the Isle of Wight, 176.

Charles II invited to Ireland, and prepares to go, xii. 28, 29, 31, 33, 36, 39, 54. account of affairs in Ireland after Ormonde's return, 3, 65-8. he blocks up Dublin, 69. Jones sallies out of Dublin, and beats his army, *ib.* Cromwell made by the English Parliament Lord Lieut. of Ireland, 70-1. provides forces for his going thither, 73. arrives at Dublin, 74. state of affairs in 1649, 115, 144-6. Tredagh taken by storm, 116, 144. Cromwell marches into Munster, 117. his success there, *ib.* Charles II gives over the thought of going into Ireland, *ib.* the English Parliament refuses to ratify Monck's treaty with Owen O'Neill, 146. Cromwell gives the Irish leave to enter into any foreign service, 148. xiii. 110. his settlement of Ireland, xvi. 207.

State of affairs in 1651, xiii. 110-6. Ireton made lord deputy by Cromwell, 19, 110. the marquis of Ormonde's condition, 111. the popish bishops publish a declaration against the English and Ormonde, 114. they require him to commit the government to a Roman Catholic, *ib.* he in consequence makes the marquis of Clanricarde his deputy, 115. and goes to France, 116. death of Ireton, who is succeeded by Ludlow, 174. ill condition of the

marquis of Clanricarde's affairs, 176. the Irish resolve to invite the duke of Lorraine, *ib.* commissioners sent to him to Brussels, 178. he sends an agent into Ireland to be informed of its state, 179. the marquis of Clanricarde renounces any consent to the treaty, 180. the agent returns to the duke, who gives over the negotiation, 182. the marquis discovers a correspondence between the popish Irish clergy and Ludlow, 184. he sends the earl of Castlehaven to give an account of all to the King, 185. who sends him leave to retire, *ib.*

State of Ireland under the Protector, xiv. 41. xv. 2. Henry Cromwell made lieutenant, xv. 50. the Irish troops in the French service come over to the Spanish army to join the King, 71-74. Henry Cromwell resigns the lieutenancy of Ireland, and commissioners are appointed by Parliament instead, xvi. 16. Monck's service in Ireland, 96-8. affairs there just before the Restoration, 207-210.

Notice respecting property purchased in Ireland by the city of London, iv. 180.

Papal nuncio in Ireland: see Rinuccini, J. B.

Ireton, Henry, x. 99, 106, 125, 132, 134, 135. xi. 109, 221. xiii. 114, 115, 116. xiv. 59. he, Vane, and Cromwell, the leaders of the Independents, ix. 168. continued a member of the House of Commons notwithstanding the Self-denying Ordinance, x. 82. appears among the council of officers, 93. his behaviour towards Charles I, 95. insulted by Hollis, 104. he and Cromwell design the King's destruction, 147. left by Cromwell in Essex to watch Fairfax and his army, xi. 62. the execution of sir C. Lucas and sir G. Lisle imputed to him, 109. of an unmerciful nature, *ib.*, 258. in favour of a public trial of the King, 217. his hatred against lord Capel, 260. whom, at his trial, he opposed,



255. induces Parliament to spare sir J. Owen, 261. left by Cromwell his deputy in Ireland, xiii. 19, 110. had married his daughter, 19. his severity to the Irish, III, 112. died in Limerick of the plague, xiii. 174. his character, 175.

Ireton, sir John, alderman of London, xvi. 7. lord mayor, 91, 109, 131.

Iron monopoly, ii. 103.

Irun, Spain, xii. 81.

Isabella, archduchess, i. 104. viii. 122.

Isis river, Oxford, viii. 43, 44, 46. ix. 28.

Isleworth, Middlesex, x. III n.

Islington, Middlesex, xiv. 36.

Italy, iv. 259. vi. 384. vii. 216. xi. 148. xii. 86. xiv. 66. xv. 17, 77, 93, 152. xvi. 18.

## J.

Jamaica, xv. 26. xvi. 78. taken by Penn and Venables, xv. 11. Cromwell sends ships and troops there, 13. companies formed for plantation, 15.

James, John, iii. 180.

James I, i. 112, 116, 129, 131, 137, 141, 144, 175. ii. 20. iii. 61, 66, 158, 216. iv. 63, 130 [180 n.], 294. v. 129. vi. 181, 384, 388 *bis*, 403. viii. 86, 134. x. 148, 171. xi. 237, 254. xii. 147. xiii. 30. xiv. 33, 103. his death, i. 5, 47. state of the kingdom at that time, 5. though learned, yet fond of handsome persons and fine clothes, 16. quicksighted in discerning difficulties, and very slow in mastering them, 21. weary of the earl of Somerset, he noticed Villiers, 17. the favours he conferred upon him, 18. allowed him to dispose of public offices, *ib.* many thought that he grew weary of him, 19. why not probable, *ib.* never well pleased with him after Prince Charles's journey into Spain, 20, 31, 41. how his consent to that journey was obtained, 21, 30. his reasons against it, 25. usually called Buckingham

*Stenny*, and his son *Baby Charles*, 29. calls a Parliament after the Prince's return from Spain, 33. offended also with Buckingham, as the cause of the earl of Middlesex's impeachment, 42. his prophetic declaration to Prince Charles and Buckingham concerning parliamentary impeachments, 44. his weakness in listening to Buckingham and deserting the earl of Bristol, 46. libels circulated against him after his death, 47. the earl of Montgomery one of his favourites before the earl of Somerset, 127. jealous at his first coming into England of men of great parts, 128. his partiality for the earl of Carlisle, 133. the earl of Holland got into his grace by the handsomeness of his person, 138. the times before the Long Parl. compared with his reign, 160. he intended to have introduced the English liturgy into Scotland, 172. his observation on the insolence of the Scotch preachers, 182. his motto *Beati pacificti*, v. 388.

James II: *see* duke of York.

James Town, Ireland, xiii. 114.

Jarvis, captain, viii. 124, 129.

Jehoram, king of Judah, xiv. 120.

[Jenkins, David, judge, xi. 185 n.]

Jenkins, or Jenkin, Will., xi. 153 n., 169.

Jennings, Ralph, signed the Levelers' address to Charles II, xv. 118.

Jephson, captain, viii. 129.

Jermyn, Henry, first lord, and afterwards earl of St. Albans, iv. 41 n. vii. 189, 242, 325. x. 2, 7, 176. xii. 49, 54. xiii. 121 n., 122, 138, 170. fled the country on discovery of the correspondence between the Court and army, iii. 182 n., 192 n., 223, 226. notice of his flight in the communications between the King and Parliament, iv. 332, 343. v. 5, 170, 193, 266. induces the Queen to receive the earl of Holland again into favour, vii. 188, 241. valued himself on the impossible

- faculty of pleasing all, and displeasing none, 189. made a baron, 242. wounded at Burnt Chase, 208. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, 369 n. 6. was governor of Jersey, x. 22. xii. 74. sent to Jersey to fetch the Prince of Wales to France, x. 22, 38. his and Digby's arguments in favour of the Prince's going, 41-2. Charles I's opinion of his advice as to the Church, 57. was the chief officer of the Queen's household at Paris, 175. the earl of Holland renews friendship with him, xi. 5. encourages by promises the risings in England in favour of the King, but does nothing, 7, 40. borrowed money to enable the Prince to leave France, 32. seeks to have the command of the fleet, 32, 34. appointed one of Charles II's Privy Council to please the Queen, xiii. 123. lived expensively in Paris, 129. had much of the money given to the King, 130. indifferent as to religion, 131. advises Charles II to attend the Huguenot church at Charenton, *ib.*, 132. active in the design of marrying the duke of York to mad<sup>lle</sup> de Longueville, 150. in opposition to Hyde courts sir E. Herbert, although his avowed enemy, xvi. 69. concerned in Long's charge against Hyde, 72, 74. comes to the King with a message from cardinal Mazarin, 76. advises the duke of York to accept the offer of being made admiral of Spain, *ib.* Mazarin persuades the Queen-mother to send him to invite the King into France, 230. made earl of St. Albans, *ib.*
- Jermyn, sir Thomas, iv. 75. vi. 396. xiii. 93.
- Jeron: *see* Irun.
- Jersey, iii. 57 n., 62. vi. 253. ix. 116, 148, 149, 160 n. x. 3, 6, 7, 10, 12 n., 13-15, 18-22, 36-42, 48, 49, 58, 74, 75, 120, 136, 151 n. xi. 22, 23. xii. 61, 75, 77, 92, 110, 117, 119, 120, 132. xiii. 130. [xiv. 70 n.] the Prince goes there, x. 5. leaves, 44, 48 n.
- reduced by the Parliament forces, xiii. 170-1.
- Jersey, Castle Elizabeth, vi. 1 n., 381 n. portions of the *Hist.* written there, ix. 7 n., 151 n. x. 7 n., 12 n.
- Jesuits, vi. 231. vii. 299. xii. 90. xiv. 113. boldness of English, ii. 98. their influence in Germany, xiv. 122.
- Jesus: *see* Bowing.
- Jewels: *see* Crown.
- Jews, vi. 168.
- John, don, of Austria: *see* Juan.
- John, King, viii. 227.
- Jones, —, xiv. 131.
- Jones, Hen., D.D., his *Remonstrance concerning Ireland* mentioned, v. 68.
- [Jongestall, A., ambassador from Holland, xiv. n.]
- Jordan, capt., afterwards sir John, xi. 36.
- Joyce, cornet, x. 93. seizes Charles I at Holmby, 90-92.
- Juan (John), don, archduke of Austria, xii. 49, 51. xv. 21, 22, 72, 74, 77, 80, 81, 132, 140, 142. made governor of Flanders, xv. 17. besieges Condé, 70. which he takes, 71, 80. the earl of Bristol ingratiates himself with him, notwithstanding great prejudice against him, 78, 79. would not take the prince of Condé's advice, 135. Dunkirk lost in consequence, 137, 138. is recalled to Spain, xvi. 46. notice of him, *ib.*
- Jugurtha, xv. 136.
- Juliers, the town of, xiv. 110. xvi. 62. duchy of, xiv. 113. xvi. 62.
- Juncto, The*, ii. 99.
- Juxon, William, ii. 99. iii. 62, 119. succeeded Laud in the bishopric of London, through his means, i. 192. made Lord Treasurer, 206. offence taken at his appointment, *ib.* opposes the King's making a park, 209. the Scotch liturgy and canons submitted to him, Laud, and Wren, ii. 1, 3, 11. one of the Committee of State, ii. 99. resigns the Treasurership, iii. 84, 191. evidence at Strafford's trial, 119. attended the funeral of the King, xi. 244. his death, iii. 84.

## K.

- Keeble, serj., appointed by Parliament one of the Keepers of the Seal, xi. 249 n.
- Keinton : *see* Edge-hill.
- Kendal, Westmoreland, xi. 72, 92.
- Kendall, major, killed at the siege of Bristol, vii. 132.
- Kenilworth, vi. 76, 274. xvi. 215.
- Kennet, river, viii. 129, 130, 154.
- Kensington, iv. 335. v. 175, 268. the earl of Holland's manor of, i. 139. iv. 14.
- Kent, iii. 64. vi. 45. vii. 59, 85 n., 99, 264 n., 401 n. viii. 9, 15, 37, 66. ix. 7, 20. xi. 44, 62, 110, 120, 153 n. xiv. 85, 124, 130. xvi. 45. petition from the county about the militia and Book of Common Prayer, v. 52, 200, 278, 401, 426. rising there in defence of the laws, and the Book of Common Prayer, vii. 175. commotions there in favour of Charles II, xi. 24-30, 38-39. good fellowship the vice of the county, 26. the earl of Norwich at Maidstone with the Kentish forces, 55. which march towards Blackheath, 56. Fairfax advances against them, 59. the earl of Norwich and some of the forces go into Essex to Colchester, *ib.*
- Kent, Anthony Grey, twelfth earl of, one of the commissioners for the Parliament's Great Seal, vii. 315. one of the few peers who attended Parliament, 369 n. 5, 375.
- Kerr : *see* Carr.
- Kerr, Henry, lord, son of the earl of Roxburgh, iv. 15 n.
- Kerry, Patrick Fitz-Maurice, nineteenth lord, vi. 297.
- Kettleby, or Kitleby, capt., afterwards sir Thomas, v. 377 n., 381. xi. 150.
- Kilby, —, innkeeper at Aylesbury, xiv. 136.
- Kilkenny, vi. 309. vii. 339. xi. 148. xii. 3, 29, 65, 66.
- Kilkhampton, Devonshire, xvi. 99.
- Killigrew, major, killed, viii. 114.
- Killigrew, sir Henry, v. 338. ix. 158. a commissioner for Devon, ix. 17. his death, x. 74-5. his character, 75-7.
- Killigrew, Thomas, the King's resident at Venice, xii. 94.
- Killigrew, sir William, vi. 74.
- Kimbolton, lord : *see* Manchester.
- King, Henry, made bishop of Chichester, iv. 34.
- King, general Jas. [lord Eythin], viii. 75 n. lieutenant-general of the earl of Newcastle's army in Yorkshire, vi. 264. viii. 85. went abroad with the earl, 87. notice of him, *ib.*
- Kingston, Robert Pierrepont, first earl of, anecdote of an application to him for money for the King, vi. 59, 60.
- Kingston, Henry Pierrepont, viscount of Newark, afterwards second earl of, and first marquis of Dorchester, signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. excepted by Parliament from peace on any terms, vi. 50. (as earl of Kingston) signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 n. 6. one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, viii. 211.
- Kingston-upon-Hull : *see* Hull.
- Kingston-upon-Thames, iv. 205, 210 n., 309, 332. v. 236, 237, 271, 310, 426. vi. 134, 136, 139, 140. vii. 165. xi. 103, 104.
- Kinnoull, George Hay, second earl of, vii. 270, 405.
- Kinnoull, William Hay, third earl of, xii. 17.
- Kinsale, xi. 148, 152. xii. 3.
- Kirton : *see* Crediton.
- Kirton, —, ix. 77 n. xiii. 96. [Knaresborough, v. 419 n.]
- Knight, —, a commissioner from Monck to treat with the officers at London, xvi. 95.
- Knighthood, made a source of revenue, i. 147. Act for preventing vexatious proceedings touching knighthood, iii. 267.
- Kniveton, Daniel, one of the King's messengers, executed by Parliament, vii. 318.
- Knox, John, i. 182.
- Knox, —, a Scottish royalist minister, xiii. 138, 140.
- [Krinson, or Krinsen, sir —, xiv. 129 n.]

## L.

Lambert, Charles, vii. 366.  
 Lambert, John, xi. 51, 72, 115. xiii. [52 n.], 63. xiv. 25, 101. xv. 30, 35, 43. xvi. 1, 10, 81, 93, 102, 107, 108, 117, 158, 171, 204, 208, 210. proposed by Cromwell as deputy of Ireland, xi. 3. xii. 70. marches against sir M. Langdale, xi. 54. beats him, 76. and routs duke Hamilton, *ib.* Pontefract castle surrendered to him, 124. sent by Cromwell to follow Charles II from Scotland on his entering England, xiii. 55. follows, but is repulsed, 60, 63. makes the army dissatisfied with Cromwell, xiv. 99. the second in command, but the first in the affections of the army, 101. aided Cromwell in becoming Protector, *ib.* xvi. 78. upon promise of succeeding him, xvi. 78. jealousy between him and Cromwell, xv. 30. opposed Cromwell's being made king, 34. who now looked on him as his mortal enemy, 39. and turned him out of the army, 64. solicitous to have the power of the major-generals confirmed, 65. one of a council of officers who consult about the government, xvi. 6. restored to the army by the council of officers, 12. sent by Parliament against sir G. Booth and sir T. Middleton, 41. routs Booth and takes Chester, *ib.* takes Chirk castle, 42. Parliament votes him £1000, 78. but grows jealous of him, *ib.* petition of his army, 79, 80. Haslerig acquaints Parliament with it, 80. which cashiers Lambert, 82. Lambert restrains the Parliament from meeting, 84. the officers choose Fleetwood general, and Lambert major-general, 86. one of the Committee of Safety, 91. sent against Monck, 94, 95. comes to Newcastle, 104. the Parliament meets again, and orders his troops to separate, 109. they separate, and he is committed to the Tower, 110. his escape, 145, 146. draws troops to him near Daventry,

147. Ingoldsby sent against him, 148, 149. his troops revolt, 149. he and others taken, 150, 226. committed again to the Tower, 150.  
 Lambeth, [vii. 255 n.] xi. 260.  
 — Bridge, i. 92.  
 — Palace, vii. 62. xvi. 139, 140. attacked, ii. 86.  
 Lamborne, Berks, viii. 164.  
 Lamport, Somerset, ix. 20, 49, 100. Fairfax beats lord Goring there, 57, 67, 100, 101.  
 Lanark, earl of: *see* Lanrick.  
 Lancashire, iii. 179. iv. 332. vi. 66 n., 67 *sæpe*, 268-272. vii. 157, 298, 368, 401. viii. 17, 42, 73, 75 n., 79, 86. ix. 118. xi. 51, 75, 92, 220. xiii. 53, 58, 60, 61, 66, 68. condition of, at the end of 1642, vi. 268.  
 Lancaster castle, [iii. 62 n.] xi. 92.  
 Lane, sir George, secretary to the marq. of Ormonde, xv. 80.  
 Lane, sir Richard, Lord Chief Baron of the Excheq., viii. 233. argued the matter of law for Strafford at his trial, iii. 123, 128. one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, viii. 211, 233. was Keeper of the Great Seal to Charles I, xiv. 70. his death, *ib.*  
 Lane, —, Staffordshire, notice of, xiii. 87, 89. Charles II brought to his house after his flight from Worcester, 88. Lane, Mrs., his daughter, 89. the King rides behind her to Mr. Norton's, through Bristol, xiii. 90-96. Lane, col., his son, 89, 90.  
 Langdale, sir Marmaduke, afterwards lord, viii. 148, 162. ix. 30, 33, 37, 67, 127. x. 131, 136. xi. 40, 41, 48, 51, 54, 75, 92, 116, 120, 123, [185 n.] commanded the left wing at the battle of Naseby, ix. 39. the King's horse under him routed by Points, 119. sent on a vain attempt to join Montrose, 123, 124. goes to the Isle of Man and Ireland, 126. he and sir P. Musgrave being invited into Scotland by the Scots go thither, xi. 14, 15. their proceedings and treatment there, 16-18. are required, but refuse, to take

- the Covenant, 43, 45. he surprises Berwick, 48, 50. is ordered by the Scots not to engage the enemy, 51, 54. censured for not taking the Covenant, 52. he marches a day before duke Hamilton, 72. gives him an account of the English army, 73. is beaten by Lambert and Cromwell, 74-6. and taken, 77. escapes out of Nottingham castle, 126. and goes beyond sea, *ib.* accompanies the duke of York to Boulogne, xvi. 35.
- Langford, Wilts, viii. 150.
- Langham, John, Sheriff of London, vi. 143, 145.
- Langhorn: see Laughorne.
- Languard Point fort, xi. 60.
- Languedoc, xv. 153. xvi. 17, 58.
- Lanhidrock, or Lanhetherick, Cornwall, viii. 109. ix. 140.
- Lanrick, (Lanark,) William Hamilton, earl of, afterwards second duke Hamilton, vii. 271, 275. ix. 154, 155, 159. xi. 9, 43, 94, 96, 100. as duke Hamilton, xii. 6, 8, 30, 118. Secretary of State in Scotland to Charles I, vi. 345. vii. 271, 369 *n.* 3. ix. 156. at Oxford in March, 1643, vi. 345. goes thither again in December, vii. 369 *n.* 4, 405, 408; detained in custody, but escapes, *ib.* deprived of the Secretaryship by the King, x. 60; signed the Scottish treaty with Charles I at the Isle of Wight, 166. his character, xi. 10. xii. 5. powerful in the Scottish Parliament and Council, xi. 98. withdraws when Cromwell goes to Edinburgh, 100. is deprived of the Secretaryship by the Scottish Parliament, 101. as duke Hamilton waits on Charles II in Holland, xii. 4, 17. conference between him and Hyde on the affairs of Scotland. 20-22, 30. leaves the King shortly after his arrival in Scotland, xiii. 2. he and the earl of Lauderdale nearest the King's confidence, 49. the duke of Buckingham broke off all friendship with them, *ib.*, 58. died of wounds received at the battle of Worcester, 76, 77. farther notice of his character, *ib.*
- Laosdown, battles of, vii. 101 *n.*, 106-9, 152. viii. 134. xvi. 165.
- Lany, doctor Benjamin, afterwards bishop of Ely, one of the commissioners on ecclesiastical matters at Uxbridge, viii. 226.
- Lathom House, Lancashire, viii. 17, 42, 73.
- Laud, William, bishop of Bath and Wells, then bishop of London, and afterwards archbishop of Canterbury, ii. 24. iii. 62, 66, 83, 89, 119, 133. iv. 4, 14, 33, 38, 68, 133, 134. v. 205. vii. 227. viii. 230, 231. x. 105. the direction of Church affairs intrusted to him by the duke of Buckingham, i. 145, 188. and afterwards by King Charles, 145. how administered, *ib.* his character, *ib.*, 189-191, 196, 207. ii. 100. opposed to the Church of Rome, 163, 196. attends the King into Scotland, to advise respecting introduction of the English liturgy, 173. preaches at Edinb. on the subject, *ib.* his opinion of the matter, 178. ill effects of his views, 181. discountenances Calvinism in his diocese and at Oxford, 187. made archbishop of Canterbury, 188. his rise and character, 189, 196. opposed to the Calvinistic party, 191, 196. procures the see of London for Juxon, 192. enforces removal of the communion table from the body of the church, 200. opposed by bishop Williams, 201. iv. 130, 134. the earl of Portland tried in vain to lessen his influence with the King, i. 203. made a commissioner of the treasury, *ib.* his conduct in that capacity, *ib.*, 213. opposed by lord Cottington, 205. his irascibility, 207. often exposed by lord Cottington, *ib.*, 210. endeavours to dissuade the King from making a park near Richmond, 210. the Scotch liturgy and canons submitted to him, Juxon, and Wren, ii. 1, 3, 11. his direction as to the method of drawing them up, 4. the earl of Traquair the only layman

- consulted by him on these matters, 12. very partial to lord Conway, 84. his palace at Lambeth assaulted by a mob, 86. one of the chief of the Committee of State, 99, 100. advised by Hamilton to leave England, 102. his removal from the King desired by the Scotch commissioners, 109. the Queen hostile to him, 130. accused of high treason by the House of Commons, iii. 15. committed to the custody of the Black Rod, *ib.* accused by the Scotch commissioners, 39, 40. charged lord Say with being a sectary, 103. always treated with respect by the earl of Bedford, 144. lord Falkland contracted some prejudice against him, but nevertheless greatly esteemed him, vii. 227, 228. his trial, viii. 204-206. condemned by an ordinance, 206. the King's pardon of him declared by Parliament of no effect, 207-8. beheaded, 208.
- Lauderdale, John, lord Maitland, earl of, afterwards duke of, x. [125 *n.*], 158. xi. 9, 132. xii. 17, 22, 42, 118. xiii. 47. one of the commissioners for Scotland at Uxbridge, viii. 211. a speech of his in the treaty, 224. signed, as a commissioner, the Scottish treaty with Charles I in the Isle of Wight, x. 166. his character, xi. 10. zealous for the Covenant, 43. sent to demand the Prince of Wales's appearance in Scotland, *ib.*, 71, 79, 86-90. returns to Scotland, 91. waits on the Prince, now King, in Holland, xii. 4, 17. implacably opposed to the marquis of Montrose, 18, 21. departs from the King when in Scotland, xiii. 2. he and duke Hamilton nearest the King's confidence, 49. the duka of Buckingham broke off all friendship with them, *ib.*, 58. taken prisoner after the King's defeat at Worcester, 79. sent to the Tower, 135.
- Laughorne, or Langhorn, colonel, seizes Shrewsbury for the Parliament, viii. 239. notice of him, xi. 40. declares for the King, *ib.*, 56 *n.* taken prisoner in Pembroke castle, 115 *n.*
- Launceston, vi. 240-3, 248. vii. 86, 87. ix. 57, 76, 77, 78, 81, 84, 92, 99, 103, 105, 117, 133, 138, 141, 142, 144, 159 *n.* [Launceston castle, iii. 62 *n.*]
- Lawly, colonel, his death, vi. 291.
- Lawson, vice-admiral, he and the fleet declare for the Parliament, xvi. 106. the Council of State appoint Monck and Montague admirals, to lessen his power, 152. well disposed towards Charles II, 237.
- Lawyers: see Clergy.
- League: Solemn League and Covenant, copy of, vii. 259. confirmed by the King in the Scottish treaty at the Isle of Wight, x. 162.
- Leake, lieut.-col., killed at the second battle of Newbury, viii. 160.
- Le Brun, Ant., ambassador from Spain, xii. 49, 52, 55. notice of, 51.
- Leche, marquis de, son of don L. de Haro, xii. 89, 91.
- Lecturers appointed by Parliament for parishes, iv. 13.
- Leda, marquis of, fruitlessly sent ambassador by Spain to Cromwell, xv. 8. comes to Brussels to solicit for supplies for Dunkirk, but in vain, 134. is slain in a sally out of Dunkirk, 138.
- Lee, sergeant, v. 213.
- Lee, sir Thomas, v. 448.
- Leeds, vi. 261.
- Leeward islands, xv. 9.
- Leganez, marquis of, or Liganesse, one of the Spanish Council of State, xii. 105.
- Legge, captain, iv. 332. v. 4, 101, 169, 193, 237, 265, 446 *n.*
- Legge, colonel William, vii. 158. xii. 18. wounded at Lichfield, vii. 34. much in prince Rupert's confidence, 158, 176 *n.* imprisoned, whilst governor of Oxford, owing to this intimacy, ix. 91.
- Legge, —, aided Charles I's escape from Hampton-court, x. 127, 130. notice of, 130.

- Leicester, v. 446 n., vi. 1, 21, 274. vii. 205. ix. 35, 36, 37, 42. the King there in July, 1642, v. 416-19. stormed and taken by the King, ix. 33, 34. retaken by Fairfax, 67.
- Leicester, Robert Sydney, second earl of, iv. 25, 26, 30, 41 n., 286. vi. 64, 315. vii. 335. viii. 137. xvi. 96. appointed Lord-lieutenant of Ireland, being then ambassador in France, iv. 41 n., 78 n. considered a Puritan, 41 n. made no haste to Ireland, 87. v. 68. vi. 304-6. notice of him, iv. 78 n. courted the Parliament more than the King, *ib.*, 149 n. vi. 305. shewed to Parliament his instructions as Lord-lieut. from the King, 304. his reasons for so doing, 306. jealousies between him and Ormonde, 313. the King summons him to Oxford, 314, 315. his character and employments, iv. 78 n. vi. 387. married the sister of the earl of Northumberland, vi. 305. refuses to sign the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 324. thereby prevents his appointment to be the Prince's governor, *ib.* the marq. of Ormonde appointed Lieutenant of Ireland in his stead, *ib.*
- Leicester, third earl of: *see* lord Lisle.
- Leicester, Dorothy Percy, countess of, iv. 78 n. vi. 305. the princess Elizabeth and duke of Gloucester committed to her care by Parliament, xiv. 85.
- Leicestershire, v. 335, 364 n. vi. 274, 275.
- Leigh, Thomas, lord, signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 n. 6.
- Leinster, v. 55. xi. 145. xiii. 10.
- Leith, ii. 46. xiii. 56.
- Le Neve, sir William, Clarencieux, at the battle of Edge-hill, vi. 79 n., 88.
- Lennox, duke of: *see* Richmond.
- Lenthall, William, ii. 71. vi. 231. vii. 342, 393. xvi. 13, 121, 128. character of, iii. 2. unfortunately chosen Speaker in Nov. 1640, iii. 1 n., 2. made Master of the Rolls by Parliament, viii. 213. withdraws, with other members, to the army, x. 108, 109. believed to have no malice towards the King, and not to be without good inclinations to the Church, 110. conducted back to Parliament by Fairfax, 112. saves lord Goring's life by his casting vote, xi. 259. chosen Speaker of Cromwell's Parliament, 1654, xiv. 44. restored in 1659 as Speaker of the Long Parliament, xvi. 13. all commissions naval and military issued by him, 20. stopped by Lambert from going to Parliament, and sent home again, 84. the soldiers in London resolve to restore the Parliament, and wait on him, 107, 108. he resumes his place, 109.
- Leopold, Archduke of Austria, xii. 51, 57. xiii. 17, 31. xiv. 98. xv. 15, 16, 136. buys many of King Charles's pictures, xi. 251. removed from the government of Flanders, and succeeded by don Juan of Austria, xv. 17, 21. treats with Charles II near Brussels, 18, 20.
- Lesley, Alexander, earl of Leven, ii. 114. ix. 123. general of the Scottish Covenanters, i. 166 n. ii. 21, 114. had served under the King of Sweden, ii. 21. the earl of Holland retires before him at Dunse, 41. made earl of Leven, iv. 23, 46. vi. 108. his professions to the King, iv. 23, 47. vi. 108. sent with the Scottish army into Ireland, vi. 108. vii. 367. accepts the command of a fresh Scottish army against the King notwithstanding his promises, vii. 275, 367. taken prisoner at the battle of Marston-moor, viii. 74. induced to decline the command of the Scottish army raised for the King, xi. 42.
- Lesley, David, ix. 86, 120, 122, 123. x. 34. xi. 72. xii. 13. xiii. 72, 79. takes Carlisle, ix. 72. sent against the marquis of Montrose, xii. 130. his treatment of the marquis when prisoner, 135. made lieutenant-general by Charles II of his

- Scottish army, xiii. 51. his saying concerning this army, 62. xiv. 109. his strange conduct, xiii. 74. defeated at Worcester, 75-6. taken prisoner, 81. opinions for and against his having been unfaithful to his charge, 80, 81.
- L' Estrange, Roger, afterwards sir, engaged in the commotions in Kent for Charles I, xi. 26, 27, 38. escapes into Holland, 39.
- Levellers, xi. 227. xiii. 169. xiv. 150. xvi. 169, 177. rise of, in the army, x. 126, 140. the same as the *Agitators*, 140. Cromwell suppresses their meetings, *ib.* they mutiny, and are suppressed by Fairfax, xii. 151. hostile to Cromwell as Protector, xiv. 41. conspire for his death, 101. Spanish intrigues with them, xv. 19, 20, 75, 133. address of some of them through W. Howard to Charles II, and his answer, 103-131. to what party the name was applied, 125.
- Leven, earl of: *see* Lesley, Alex.
- Levingston, sir William, Scottish governor of Carlisle, xi. 95.
- Lewes, vi. 85.
- Lewis, —, one of the leading men in the House of Commons, 1647, x. 104. conferred with by Monck as one of the heads of the moderate Presbyterian party, xvi. 160.
- Lewis, don: *see* Haro.
- [Lewisham, v. 441 n.]
- Leyda: *see* Leda.
- Leyden, xii. 24. the university, i. 195.
- Libertines, x. 162.
- Liberty of conscience claimed against the Presbyterians, x. 79, 80, 174.
- Lichfield, vii. 46 n., ix. 43, 121, 132. taken by sir J. Gell, vi. 276. by prince Rupert, vii. 31, 34.
- Lichfield, earl of: *see* Stewart, B.
- Liège, xiv. 102. xvi. 62.
- Lifton, Devon, vi. 241.
- Liganesse, marquis of: *see* Leganez.
- Lilburne, col. John, iii. 66 n. x. 106. xiv. 47. some account of him, xiv. 50-1. he is prosecuted by Cromwell, hut acquitted, 52.
- Limerick, xiii. 174. popular tumult there, 113.
- Lincoln, v. 389. the King goes there, 387, 388, 447.
- Lincoln, Theophilus Clinton, fourth earl of, one of the few peers who attended Parliament, vii. 369 n. 5, 375.
- Lincoln, bishops of: *see* Williams; Winniffe.
- Lincolnshire, v. 96, 335, 387, 389, 404, 434 n. vi. 21, 62 n., 97, 261, 268. vii. 172, 264 n., 298, 400, 416 n. viii. 73. ix. 85, 127. xi. 116, 121. xvi. 44.
- Lindsay, David, bishop of Edinburgh, ill-treated by the mob at Edinburgh, ii. 14, 15.
- Lindsay, John Lindsay, earl of, afterwards earl of Crawford, vi. 159.
- Lindsey, Robert Bertie, first earl of, in command of the fleet, i. 95. v. 359 n., 364 n. 5, 11. vi. 62 n., 78 *bis*, 79 n. signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. made general of the King's army, 375, 436, 441 n. 3. killed at the battle of Edge-hill, vi. 79 n., 85, 88 *and note*, 89, 97. his character, 88 n., 90.
- Lindsey, Montague Bertie, lord Willoughby d'Eresby, afterwards second earl of, xi. 23. signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. had served in Hollaod, vi. 62 n. commanded the King's guards in the battle of Edge-hill, *ib.*, 79 n., 82. taken prisoner in endeavouring to rescue his father, 79 n., 85, 94. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 n. 6. was at the battle of Naseby, ix. 37. attended the King at the treaty at Newport, xi. 113. present at his funeral, 244. could not, after the Restoration, find his grave, 245.
- Lionne, or Leon, — de, xvi. 51, 61.
- Lisbon, xii. 110, 111, 113.
- Liskeard, Cornwall, vi. 248, 249. viii. 93, 96 n., 103. ix. 65.
- Lisle, colonel, afterwards sir George, present at the second battle of Newbury, viii. 157. joins the Kentish royalists in Essex, xi. 60. given up at the surrender of Colchester, 105. is shot, 107, 255. his character, 108.



- Lisle, John, was one of the King's judges, xi. 249 *n.* xv. 95. one of the Keepers of the Seal, xi. 249 *n.* an entire confident and instrument of Cromwell's, xv. 95. president of the high court of justice to try Mr. Mordaunt and others, *ib.* acquitted Mordaunt by his casting vote, 98.
- Lisle, Philip Sidney, lord, afterwards third earl of Leicester, sent through Cromwell as Lord-lieutenant into Ireland, xi. 2. xii. 70. his return to England, xi. 144. his influence with Monck, xii. 68. xvii. 97. Cromwell appointed as his successor, xii. 70.
- Listithiel: *see* Lostwithiel.
- Littleton, Edward, lord, iv. 26, 41 *n.*, 139, 142 *bis.* v. 46, 155. vii. 314. viii. 213. made Solicitor-General and Chief Justice, v. 204. made Lord Keeper, iii. 16, 81. v. 205. reason for his being made a baron, iii. 104. v. 205. why he would not vote at Strafford's trial, iii. 104. declines demanding the staff and key of office from the earls of Essex and Holland, v. 34, 116 *n.* particulars of his quitting the Parliament, and joining the King with the Great Seal at York, v. 203-214. reasons for his previous acquiescence in the proceedings of Parliament, v. 203 *n.*, 207. his rise, 204. his character, 204-5. vi. 283. signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. signed the Peers' letter to the Privy Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6. one of those appointed to examine the accusation against duke Hamilton, vii. 405.
- Littleton, —, xvi. 26.
- Liturgy. Charles I's intentions of introducing the English Liturgy into Scotland, how far, and why, opposed, i. 173-181, *and note to* 166. Liturgy and book of canons appointed to be drawn up by some of the Scotch bishops and submitted to Laud, Juxon, and Wren, ii. 1. observations respecting the canons, 3-10. and the Liturgy, 11. how received in Edinburgh, 14-20. the Scotch commissioners' description of the Liturgy and canons, ii. 124. Laud charged with causing the violent outbreak, viii. 230. declaration of Parliament concerning a reformation of the Liturgy, v. 133.
- Liverpool, vii. 360.
- Livy quoted, vii. 310.
- Lockhart, William, xv. 52, 76, 154. xvi. 1, 66. sent by Cromwell, ambassador into France, to make an alliance, xv. 14. made commander of the English army in France, 63. commanded the English at the battle of Dunkirk, 137. The French king delivers Dunkirk to him, 139. continued ambassador in France by the Parliament after Cromwell's death, xvi. 19. Mazarin's promises to him, 53. generally too hard for Mazarin, but cajoled by him respecting the peace between France and Spain, 67. could not be prevailed on to declare for Charles II, 173. refuses to give up Dunkirk and Mardike upon an offer from Mazarin of being made marshal of France, *ib.*
- Loftus, Adam, viscount Loftus of Ely, Lord Chancellor of Ireland, the earl of Strafford's proceedings against him, ii. 101. iii. 107, 111, 115-7.
- London, iv. 15 *n.*, 332. v. 10, *et passim.* its government, iv. 181. common council-men, how chosen, *ib.* notice of its common hall, vi. 222. the sink of the ill humours of the kingdom, iii. 57. Huguenots settled there, vi. 181. money borrowed by the King in 1640 to pay both the English and Scotch armies, ii. 115, 116. people throng to hear the Scottish preachers, 127. iii. 37. in St. Antholin's Church, iii. 37. Strafford's violent language to the Lord Mayor, 45. entry into London of Prynne, Burton, and Bastwick, 57 *n.*, 64. petition against episcopacy, 66. money borrowed of the city by Parliament for the armies in 1640 and 1644, 73, 207. a new Common Council chosen of such as

## London.

were most disaffected to Church and State, 75. iv. 182. money proposed to be borrowed by Parliament, iii. 90-92. the corporation petition the King to reside at Whitehall, iv. 78 n. the city's reception of the King on his return from Scotland, 78. rioters resoused in Cheapside, 120. the committee of the House of Commons that sat in the city well received, 160. the city's petition to the King, 173. his answer, 174. the state and temper of the city at that time, 178-9. questions of their charter and land in Ireland, 180. a guard provided for the Commons, 185. petitions from merchants concerning the Tower, 244. the Common Council's answer to the desire of the Commons to borrow money, 245. petitions to Parliament from the porters and poor of London, 262-4. v. 278. an intended petition from the city against the militia bill considered as a conspiracy by the Commons, iv. 340. v. 278, 401. the person who drew it up impeached by them, v. 51. the train-bands mustered, 139. money borrowed by Parliament, 319. the King writes to forbid the furnishing supplies, 367. arms seized by Parliament, vi. 54. alarm on the King's advance to Brentford, 136-8. the city offers to provide men and money for Parliament, 143. the city assessed for contributions, 189-193. a petition from citizens for peace rejected by the House of Commons, 208. petition of the city to the King for peace, 210. his answer, 215-21. expedients of Parliament to prevent its effect, 224. the city declares for the Parliament, 228. its proportion of the weekly assessment levied on the kingdom, 326. the city fortified, 328. vii. 48. provisions sent from London to the army before Reading, vii. 26. Waller's plot, 54-68. the rich men desired peace, 168. but the Common

Council petition against it, 170. some women petitioning for peace are dispersed by a troop of horse, 171. the Scottish Covenant ordered to be taken by the city, 261. £100,000 lent by the city for the Scots, 264. trade with London forbidden by the King, 369 n. 8. other petitions for and against peace, viii. 188. the city incensed when the King was seized by the army, x. 94. wholly Presbyterian, 106. the temper of the city and the changes of their militia at the time of the army approaching London, 106-8. the city sends six aldermen to the general, and submits, 112. the army marches through the city and quarters about it, 114. commissioners sent to the Prince of Wales, in the river with a fleet, with a petition for restoration of a ship, xi. 64, 65: he writes to the city, 66. the Common Council petition for a personal treaty, 110. a committee of Parliament treats with them about it, *ib.* the Parliament declares for a personal treaty, *ib.* the city invites Cromwell, after being proclaimed Protector, to Grocers' hall, xiv. 25. royalists banished from London, 34. xvi. 21. bullion from the Spanish plate-fleet brought in triumph through the city, xv. 27. plot of the cavaliers discovered by Cromwell, 66. the city militia second the address of the council of officers to the Protector Richard, xvi. 7. a rising of the apprentices for Parliament suppressed by Hewson, 105. the Common Council oppose the committee of safety, *ib.* the city sends a letter to Monck when on his march from the north, 118. and a deputation, 119. the Common Council refuse to submit to the Parliament, 124. Monck sent into the city to reduce it to obedience, 126. he meets the Lord Mayor and Common Council, and they come to agreement, 131. great rejoicings in the city thereupon, *ib.*, 137, 139. Charles II's letter to the

## London.

- city, 201. which is joyfully received, 214. the city send fourteen citizens to the King at the Hague, 240. the King passes through the city to Whitehall, 246.
- Antholin's, St., iii. 37.
- Artillery Garden, iv. 198.
- Bedlam, xiv. 94.
- Bridewell, vii. 318.
- Chancery Lane, Lenthall's house there, xvi. 107.
- Charing Cross, iii. 57 *n.*, 64. xiv. 37.
- Cheapside, xiv. 25. xvi. 1 39.
- Coleman Street, iv. 162.
- Cornhill, vii. 71.
- Covent Garden, iv. 204 *n.* vi. 208. xi. 204.
- Custom House, xi. 20.
- Denmark House: *see* Somerset House.
- Durham House, xi. 204.
- Ely House, vii. 62.
- Essex House, vii. 235, 318.
- Exchange, vii. 71, 318. xiv. 39. xv. 15.
- Exeter House, v. 206.
- Finsbury Fields, v. 139.
- Fleet, the, v. 49. viii. 136.
- Gate House prison, [iii. 226 *n.*] vi. 139.
- Gray's Inn, xi. 220.
- Gresham College, xii. 24.
- Grocers' Hall, iv. 212, 219, 228. xiv. 25.
- Guildhall, iv. 155, 158 *n.*, 164 *n.*, 185, 212. v. 337. xvi. 131. the King goes there, iv. 157. the city convened there to hear the news of the battle of Edgehill, vi. 101.
- Holborn, iv. 204 *n.* vii. 71. x. 144.
- Hyde Park, x. 112.
- King's Bench prison, [iii. 226 *n.*]
- Leaden Hall, vii. 369 *n.* 8.
- Lincoln's Inn Chapel, iv. 9.
- London Bridge, iv. 198. v. 52. x. 111, 114. xi. 59.
- Martin's, St., vi. 208.
- Merchant Tailors' Hall, iv. 158, 160, 194.
- Mews, the, xi. 204.
- Middle Temple, vi. 395.
- New Buildings, iv. 204 *n.*
- Newgate, iv. 120, 353. v. 53. xiv. 40, 52.
- Northumberland House, iii. 229. xvi. 160.
- Piccadilly, iii. 161.
- St. James's, iv. 324. xi. 20, 204, 223, 229, 230, 234, 244, 258, 262. xiv. 85. xvi. 166.
- St. Paul's Cathedral, iii. 144. fines of the High-Commission Court assigned for its rebuilding, i. 196. iii. 259.
- Savoy, the, ii. 98. [vi. 35 *n.*]
- Somerset, or Denmark House. the Queen's Chapel there, and mass celebrated, ii. 98. iii. 15 *n.* vi. 47. vii. 22. xvi. 120.
- Strand, the, x. 114. xvi. 120, 145.
- Temple, the, xi. 260.
- Temple Bar, xvi. 221, 246.
- Tower Hill, viii. 219. xiii. 117. xiv. 38, 40. *See* Tower.
- Tyburn, xiv. 40.
- Wallingford House, xvi. 9.
- See* Westminster; Whitehall.
- London, bishops of: *see* Juxon; Laud.
- Londonderry, xii. 145. Star-chamber suit about the city of London's lands there, iv. 180. besieged, xii. 146.
- Long, —, opposed the Self-denying Ordinance, viii. 260.
- Long, colonel, high sheriff of Wiltshire, routed by sir W. Waller and Cromwell, ix. 9.
- Long, sir Robert, ix. 18, 77 *n.* xiii. 108. being secretary to the Prince is trusted by the Queen to keep him firm to the Presbyterian party, xi. 36. accused of corruption, 82. as secretary to the Prince, had charge of his receipts and payments, 138. on the Prince's becoming King, is sworn on his Council, xii. 2. removed from the King by the marq. of Argyle, on arrival in Scotland, xiii. 4, 108. his scheme for keeping Hyde from the King, 108. removed from being Secretary of State, xiv. 72. petitions the King to be restored, *ib.* is refused, *ib.* whereupon he accuses Hyde of having had an interview with Cromwell, 73. the King acquits

- Hyde, 74. Long asks Hyde's pardon and is forgiven, 77.
- Longueville, duke of, imprisoned, xii. 93, 99.
- Longueville, madlle. de, proposed for the duke of York's wife, xiii. 149-151, 153.
- Looe, Cornwall, ix. 159 n.
- Lord Steward of the King's household; his office to swear in the members of the House of Commons, ii. 66.
- Lords, House of: *see* Parliament.
- Lorne, Archibald Campbell, lord, afterwards ninth earl of Argyle, captain of the guard to Charles II in Scotland, xiii. 23.
- Lorraine, duke of, xii. 47. xiii. 40. lord Cottington and Hyde visit him at Brussels, xii. 54. his character, 50. xiii. 38. why he objected to a project of marrying his daughter to the duke of York, xiii. 42. concludes a treaty with the French court, 143. the Irish rebels invite him into Ireland, 176. and send commissioners to him, 176-8. he sends an ambassador into Ireland to be informed of the state of it, 179. failure of the negotiation, 180-2.
- Lostwithiel, Cornwall, viii. 106, 109, 111, 114, 117, 119. ix. 140.
- Lothian, ix. 123.
- Lothian, William Ker, third earl of, made Secretary of State in Scotland by the Covenanters, xi. 101. xii. 8. his previous part in the rebellion, xi. 101. one of the commissioners sent from the Parliament of Scotland before the death of the King to the Parliament of England, xii. 7. their proceedings, 8-11.
- Loudoun, John Campbell, lord, afterwards earl of, iii. 40, 55 n. vi. 108, 112, 345. x. 60. sent by the Covenanters to account for their proceedings to Charles I, ii. 59. sent to the Tower for signing a letter to the French king, 60, *and note* to i. 166. supposed reasons of his release, ii. 87. iii. 40. one of the Scottish commissioners to treat at Ripon, ii. 108. goes as such to London, iii. 37.
- made Chancellor of Scotland and an earl, iv. 46. wrote to Parliament in behalf of the King, vi. 109. comes to Oxford as a commissioner from the Conservators of the peace in Scotland, 335. his and the other commissioners' proposals at Oxford, to act as mediators, and for a Parliament in Scotland, 359-61, 364. the King's answer in both particulars, 363, 365, 366. the King refuses them a pass for London, 368. they return to Scotland, 369. one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, viii. 211. his private conference with Hyde, 222, 223. his speeches at the treaty about religion, 224, 230. answered by Hyde, 231. urges acceptance of propositions from Parliament on the King, x. 65. his behaviour towards the King as soon as he appeared with some show of liberty, 158. signed as a commissioner the Scottish treaty with the King in the Isle of Wight, 166. his character, xi. 11. zealous for the Covenant, 43. recants his taking duke Hamilton's Engagement, 100. his virulent declamation against the marquis of Montrose at the trial of the latter, xii. 136. pronounces sentence against Montrose, 138.
- Loughborough, Henry Hastings, lord, xiii. 84. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 n. 6. made governor of Leicester, ix. 33.
- Louis XIII, XIV: *see* France.
- Louisa de Guzman: *see* queen of Portugal.
- Love, Christopher, notice of his sermon at Uxbridge before the treaty began there, viii. 219. executed by Cromwell for a plot, xiii. 117, 118.
- Lovel, —, tutor to the duke of Gloucester at Carisbrooke castle, xiv. 86. procures permission for the duke to go abroad, 87. is removed from the duke by his mother, 117.
- Lovelace, John, lord, signed the declaration that the King had

- no intention of war, v. 346. joins the King at Oxford, vii. 174, 187. why he remained in London at first, v. 346. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 n. 6.
- Low, —, sent by the city of London to the Prince of Wales when with his fleet in the Thames, xi. 65, 82. his character, 65.
- Low Countries (see Flanders: United Provinces), v. 429. vi. 181. vii. 26, 230. viii. 134, 268, 269 n. ix. 49. xi. 40, 108. xii. 107. xiii. 17. xv. 16, 82, 152.
- Lowther, sir Ger., [iii. 93 n.]. vii. 366.
- Lucas, sir Charles, successful in a skirmish, vii. 122. taken prisoner in lord Astley's defeat, x. 31. joins in Essex the Kentish royalists, xi. 60. given up at the surrender of Colchester, 105. is shot, 107, 255. his character, 108.
- Lucas, sir Gervas, governor of Belvoir castle, ix. 132.
- Lucas, sir John; his ill treatment in Essex, as a royalist, vi. 37. lord Lucas, xi. 108.
- Lucas, Thomas, vii. 366.
- Lucerne, Cromwell interposes with the duke of Savoy on behalf of the Protestants of the Valley of, xv. 152.
- Ludlow, x. 45. the King there, ix. 72, 85.
- Ludlow, sir Henry, treasonable words spoken by him in Parliament, v. 280. accused for them by the King, 441 n. 4.
- Ludlow, Edmund, xvi. 209. succeeds Ireton in the charge of the army in Ireland, xiii. 174, 183, 184. grants the marquis of Clanricarde a pass to go to England, 186. the Parliament makes him a commissioner [commander-in-chief] for Ireland, xvi. 16, 82. one of seven commissioners appointed by Parliament for the army, 82.
- Lunsford, colonel Henry, vi. 6. killed at the siege of Bristol, vii. 121 n., 133. praised, 133.
- Lunsford, colonel sir Thomas, iv. 155, 205, 210 n. v. 173. made lieutenant of the Tower but resigns, iv. 101, 147. his character, 147. taken prisoner at Edge-hill, vi. 94.
- Lusignon, marquis of, ambassador of the prince of Condé at Madrid, xiii. 18. afterwards beheaded, *ib.*
- Luttrell, Thomas, surrenders Dunster castle to the King's forces, vii. 97.
- Luxemburg, xvi. 62.
- Lydford, Devon, ix. 54.
- Lyme, Dorset, vii. 95, 192, 298. viii. 133, 146. ix. 8, 27, 56, 59. xiii. 97. besieged by prince Maurice, viii. 42. but not taken, 89 n. relieved by the earl of Essex, 51, 61.
- Lynn, Norfolk, besieged by the earl of Manchester, vii. 264 n. design of surprising it for the King, in 1659, xvi. 24.
- Lyons, xvi. 58.

## M.

- Macdonnell, clan of, viii. 265, 266.
- Macdonnell, Alexander [*Colquitto*], viii. 264, 278.
- Macguyre, lord, iv. 41 n.
- Machiavel, Nicholas, sayings of his, x. 168. xv. 156.
- Mackay, lord: see Reay.
- [Mackworth, col., xiii. 64 n.]
- Mackworth, sir Francis, ix. 49.
- Mac Mahon, —, iv. 41 n.
- Mac Mahon, Ewer, titular bishop of Clogher, hanged, xiii. 112.
- Macmahons, the, xi. 146.
- [Madeley, Staffordshire, xiii. 85 n.]
- Madrid, xi. 251. xii. 34, 52, 53, 77, 82, 83, 85, 86, 91 *et seqq. sæpe*, 105, 148. xiii. 8, 10, 12, 13, 14, 15, 18, 24, 26, 27, 28, 29, 33. xv. 16, 67, 81, 133. xvi. 46, 51, 68, 69, 70, 72, 76, 170. ambassadors there receive greater respect than in any other court in Christendom, xiii. 13. the English ambassadors' house in the Calle de Alcalá, xii. 103. xiii. 12.
- Maestricht, xiv. 105. xvi. 62.
- Maguires, the, xi. 146.
- Maidenhead, Berks, i. 125. x. 103.
- Maidstone, Kent, v. 426. xi. 39, 55.

- Maitland, lord: *see* earl of Lauderdale.
- Major generals, military governors of the counties appointed by Cromwell, xv. 24, 25. unpopular, 30, 31. he lessens their power, 65.
- [Maldon, Essex, iii. 5 n.]
- Malignants*; on whom the name was imposed, iv. 120, 279. v. 99, 282. vi. 31, 36.
- Mallet, sir Thomas, judge, committed to the Tower by Parliament, v. 52, 426. vi. 381. redeemed by the King by exchange of prisoners, v. 426.
- Mallory, colonel, xv. 96, 97, 98, 102.
- Malmesbury, Wilts, vi. 292, 322.
- Maltravers, lord: *see* lord Mowbray.
- Man, Isle of, ix. 126. x. 13. xiii. 53, 60.
- Manchester, vii. 403. viii. 73. disaffected to the King, vi. 45 n., 67, 271. vii. 401, 415. lord Strange undertakes in vain to reduce it, vi. 67.
- Manchester, Henry Montagu, viscount Mandeville, first earl of, had been lord treasurer, i. 101, 116. his origin and rise, 116. was Lord Privy-seal, *ib.* vi. 35. his character, i. 117. his death, *ib.*
- Manchester, Edward Montagu, lord Kimbolton, viscount Mandeville afterwards second earl of, iii. 89, 178. iv. 11, 149 n., 150, 154, 175, 192, 218, 310. v. 440, 441, and n. vi. 35, 70. (as earl of Manchester) vi. 223, 231, 264 n. viii. 4, 80, 91, 104, 144, 149, 151, 153, 250, 262. a commissioner to treat with the Scots at Ripon, ii. 107, 108. his character, iii. 27. vi. 406-8. called to the House of Peers by the title of lord Kimbolton, iii. 27. sworn a Privy Counsellor, 50. one of the leaders of the House of Lords, 55 n. an intention of making him Lord Privy-seal after the death of his father, 191. accused of high treason, by order of the King, iv. 148, 149. communications between the King and Parliament on the subject, 332, 335. v. 5, 14, 46, 158, 171, 191, 259, 321, 441 n. 4. has a regiment given him by Parliament, v. 429. present at the battle of Edge-hill, vi. 79. an ordinance for raising an army under him, vii. 172. the violent party wholly depended upon him, 173. one of the few peers who attended Parliament, 369 n. 5, 375. the association of eastern counties formed under him, viii. 18. ordered to march into the north to join the Scots, 19, 34. commanded at the second battle at Newbury, 153, 155, 157. quarrel with Cromwell, 182-5. dispossessed of his command by the Self-denying Ordinance, ix. 4, 5. as Speaker of the House of Lords withdrew from Parliament to the army, x. 108. had all prejudice imaginable against Cromwell, 110. he and the earl of Warwick the two pillars of the Presbyterian party, *ib.* conducted back to Parliament by Fairfax, 112. present at a conference with Monck respecting the restoration of Charles II, xvi. 160. his two marriages, vi. 407.
- Mancini, —, xxv. 139.
- Mandeville: *see* Manchester.
- Mandeville, Robert Montagu, viscount, afterwards third earl of Manchester, one of the committee sent to Charles II at the Hague, xvi. 239.
- Manners, Catherine, married to the duke of Buckingham, i. 71. afterwards to the earl of Antrim, viii. 264. Charles I always heard her with favour on account of her first husband, 277. notice of her, *ib.*
- Manning, Henry, discovery of his treachery in giving information to Cromwell, xiv. 138-144. his uncle, 138.
- Mansell, sir Robert, v. 377.
- Manton, Dr. Thomas, one of the Presbyterian divines who had audience of Charles II at the Hague, xvi. 242.
- Mantua, duke of, ix. 172.
- Manwaring, —, vi. 216, 225.
- Mardike, xv. 14, 134. xvi. 173

- taken from the Spaniards by the French and English, xv. 52, 63.
- Margaret of Austria: *see* queen of Spain.
- Margarita, don Josepho de, xvi. 64.
- Marius, Caius, vii. 279. xv. 1, 136.
- Marlborough, Wilts, garrisoned by Parliament, vi. 156. but taken by the King's forces, 156, 157, 411 *n.* rendezvous of the King's forces there, viii. 22, 25, 34. the King marches there, 164.
- Marlborough, James Ley, first earl of, had been Lord Treasurer, i. 101, 105. why removed, 101.
- Marlborough, Henry Ley, second earl of, general of the artillery in the Western army, vii. 113. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6.
- Marsh, —, ix. 53 *n.*
- Marshall, Stephen, iii. 67. x. 92. his influence in Parliament, iv. 33. notice of his preaching against the royalists, vi. 40. he and Dr. Downing avowed, that prisoners released by the King upon oath not to bear arms against him again, were not bound by that oath, 154. sent as one of the Parliament commissioners to Scotland for relief, vii. 135. was one of the commissioners on ecclesiastical matters at Uxbridge, viii. 226. was chief chaplain in the army, *ib.*
- Marshal's Elm, Somerset, ix. 50.
- Marshfield, Somerset, vii. 105, 106, 109, 110 *bis.*
- [Marston, Long, Warwickshire, xiii. 90 *n.*]
- Marston Moor, battle of, viii. 74. called the battle of York, 167, 186, 201, 262.
- Martin, Anthony, bishop of Meath, vii. 366.
- Martin, sir Henry, i. 11. iii. 70.
- Martin, Henry, words of his in Parliament objected to by the King, v. 280. accused of high treason by the King, v. 441 *n.* 4. fled from Reading, where he was governor, at the King's approach, vi. 125. opened a letter from the earl of Northumberland to his wife, vii. 20, 47, 187. a leader of the Independents in Parliament, viii. 260. his application of the story of Moses to the sitting of Parliament, xiv. 5.
- Mary, Queen of England, iii. 125, 126.
- Mary, Queen of Scots, her death an unparalleled act of blood, i. 160.
- Mary, Princess of Orange, q. v.
- Massey, colonel, afterwards major gen., Edw., vii. 203. viii. 63. x. 94. xiii. 76, 136. governor of Gloucester, vii. 158, 163, 176 *n.*, 201, 205. viii. 51. why he sided with the Parliament, vii. 158. an unsuccessful attempt to gain him over, *ib.* a letter of kindness and £1000 sent him by Parliament for defending Gloucester, 235. deprived of his commission by the Self-denying Ordinance, ix. 5. one of the leading men in the House of Commons, x. 104. committed to prison by the House, xi. 208. but escapes to Holland, *ib.* has the command of a regiment of horse for Charles II, xiii. 58. sent to march before the King into England from Scotland, *ib.*, 59. wounded in a sally from Worcester, 72. taken in his flight thence, and sent to the Tower, 136. escapes, 137. his project of surprising Gloucester for the King, xvi. 25. betrayed by sir R. Willis, 31. seized on, but escapes, 37.
- Massonet, Peter, xiv. 73, 77.
- Maurice, Prince of Nassau, vi. 78. the greatest general of his age, viii. 134.
- Maurice, prince, vi. 291. vii. 116, 197, 289. viii. 1, 26, 60, 71, 115, 145, 150. ix. 54, 61, 120, 121, 122, 128. x. 28. his arrival in England, v. 446 *n.* present at the rencounter at Worcester, where prince Rupert is successful, vi. 44. follows sir W. Waller, 294. vii. 29, 30. notice of his character, vii. 85 *n.* he and the marquis of Hertford sent into the west, 84 *n.*, 93, 94. he is appointed lieutenant gen. under the marquis, 85 *n.*, 94. they join the Cornish forces at Chard, 96. some

- jealousy between them, 98, 144, 148. his skirmish with the enemy near Chewton, 101, 102. wounded there, 102, 103. present at the battle of Lansdown, 101 n., 104, 105. he and the marquis retire to Chippenham and Devizes, 101 n., 110. break through the enemy's quarters with the horse, and reach Oxford, 101 n., 113. he goes to Devizes, 115, 116. and to the siege of Bristol, 121 n., 123. sent into the west with an army, 155, 176. his movements in Dorsetshire, 191, 192. goes to Exeter, 192, 197. Exeter surrenders to him, 198, 237. difference between him and the marq. of Hertford about the governorship of Weymouth, 199. what errors he committed after the reduction of Exeter, 290, 296. besieges Dartmouth, and takes it, 296-7. sits down before Plymouth too late, 297. besieges Lyme, viii. 42. which is relieved by the earl of Essex, 60, 146. lost much reputation by spending nearly two years against Plymouth and Lyme without taking either, 89 n. pursued by the earl of Essex, 92. signed a letter to the earl of Essex urging him to a treaty, 105. present at the second battle of Newbury, 154, 159. and at Naseby, ix. 39. was governor of Worcester, 121. drowned at sea, xiv. 68, 71.
- Maxwell, —, gentleman usher of the Black Rod, iii. 1 n., 11, 15 n.
- May, Baptist, the King's page, v. 377 n., 378, 380.
- Maynard, John, his argument in Parliament against the vote of no more addresses to the King, x. 149. abstained from attending Parliament in consequence of this vote, *ib.* sent to the Tower by Cromwell for questioning the legality of a commitment and of a tax, xv. 150.
- Mazarin, cardinal, vii. 304, 307. ix. 175. x. 6, 12 n., 23, 31, 54, 55, 56, 157. xi. 216. xii. 15, 35. xiii. 33, 153, 170. xiv. 80, 82, 122. xv. 8, 14, 72, 73, 139, 152. xvi. 19, 55, 66. presides over the French councils, vii. 304. notice of him, ix. 172-173. his supposed views with regard to England, viii. 304, 308. ix. 173. why more inclined to aid Charles I after the battle of Naseby, 174. lord Digby's interviews with him, x. 15-17. his views as to the Prince of Wales's going into France, 59. promised to supply the marquis of Ormonde with arms and ammunition on his return into Ireland, 155. but failed to do so, 177. xi. 31, 143. courted Cromwell, 251. bought some of Charles I's rich goods and jewels, *ib.* glad at the departure of Charles II from Paris, xii. 75. the prince of Condé breaks his friendship with him, 76, 78. one of his chief reasons for so doing, 81. the cardinal strongly guarded, 78. Cottington's and Hyde's interview with him before they go to Spain, 80. his message to don L. de Haro by them, which he afterwards disavows, *ib.* the dnks of Espernon his fast friend, 81. causes the imprisonment of the princes of Condé and Conti, &c. 97, 99. engages twenty thousand Irish in the service of France, 149. the English Parliament at first more disposed to peace with Spain than France, from prejudice to him, xiii. 8. suggested the duke of York's entering the French service, 122. is obliged to set the princes at liberty, and to quit France, 142. his goods confiscated, 143. why he does not resent the capture of a French fleet by the English, but sends an ambassador into England, 167. proceeds in a treaty with Cromwell, xiv. 53. pays Charles II the arrears of his allowance from France, 83. buys the cannon of the King's ships, 81, 84. gives the duke of York and the earl of Bristol notice to leave France, 76, 77. Cromwell's influence over him, 155. views about making peace between France and Spain,



- xvi. 50-53. his promises to Lockhart with reference to England, 53. a personal conference between him and don Luis de Haro arranged at Fuentarabia, 55. opposes Charles II's being present at it, 57. account of his negotiation with de Haro, 60-65. deceived Lockhart as to the treaty, who was in general too hard for him, 67. would not see Charles II when he came to Fuentarabia, 71. offered to make Lockhart a marshal of France if he would deliver up Dunkirk and Mardike, 173. persuades the Queen-mother of England to send lord Jermyn to invite the King into France upon the prospect of his restoration, 230. his death, 247.
- Meath, bishop of: *see* Martin.
- Medina Celi, duke de, xii. 105. xiii. 9.
- Medina de las Torres, duke de, one of the Spanish council of state, xii. 105. notice of him, 107.
- Mediterranean, the, xv. 9, 152.
- Meldrum, sir John, vii. 415.
- Melleray, marshal, governor of Nantes, xiv. 78, 79.
- Melo, Francisco de, governor of Flanders, discountenances any preparations in favour of Charles I, vi. 176. one of the Spanish council of state, xii. 105. notice of him, 107.
- Mendip Hill, vii. 101.
- Mennes, sir John, rear-admiral, xiv. 128, 129, 141. his loyalty, v. 377 *n.*, 378. refused to act under the earl of Warwick as admiral, and is discharged, 377 *n.*, 381. commands a ship in the Prince of Wales's fleet, xi. 150.
- Mentz, Elector of, the wisest and most practical prince of the German empire, xiv. 103. a small subsidy granted by the Diet to Charles II chiefly through him, *ib.*
- Merchant Adventurers, company of, xi. 64.
- Merchant-Tailors' hall, the committee of the House of Commons that removed into the city sat there, iv. 158.
- Merrick, sir John, general of the Parliament's ordnance, vii. 26.
- Mervin, colonel Audley, vi. 307. [Messina, xii. 115 *n.*]
- Mexico, xv. 53.
- Mexico, vice-king of, xv. 26.
- [Michell, —, v. 426 *n.*]
- Middelburgh, xi. 79. xiv. 129.
- Middlesex, iv. 109, 110. petition from the county to Parl., 247.
- Middlesex, Lionel Cranfield, first earl of, i. 19. was Lord High Treasurer, *ib.*, 101. both his rise and fall owing to the duke of Buckingham, 42. impeached, 43. unjust sentence against him, 45. James I's prophetic declaration relative to this impeachment, 44. committed to prison by ald. Pennington, vi. 203.
- Middlesex, Lionel Cranfield, third and last earl of, xvi. 239.
- Middleton, colonel, afterwards lieutenant general, Thomas, vii. 368. viii. 132, 144, 151. xiii. 138, 139, 141. xiv. 77. defeated in a skirmish by sir C. Lucas, vii. 122. sent by Waller to follow the King, viii. 113. unsuccessful against Donnington castle, *ib.* his troops defeated by sir F. Doddington, 114. assembles troops in Scotland for the King, xii. 13. had very entire affection for Charles II, xiii. 47. commands the horse of Charles II's Scottish army, 51. D. Lesley jealous of him because he was generally loved, 73. his soldiers made a brave resistance at the battle of Worcester, where he was wounded, 76. taken prisoner and sent to the Tower, 135. designed to be tried by a high court of justice, 136. makes his escape into France, 137. is sent into Scotland, xiv. 57, 58, 61. has at first some success, 108. but is finally defeated, 109. sent to negotiate for the King with Lockhart, xvi. 173.
- Middleton, sir Thomas, of Chirk, xvi. 76. joins sir G. Booth in his attempt on Chester, 26, 38, 44. their declaration, 39. delivers up his castle to Lambert, 42.

- Middlewich, Cheeshire, royalist victory at, vii. 401, 403.
- Milan, xv. 17, 79.
- Milbrook, Cornwall, vii. 93.
- Mildmay, sir Henry, iii. 13. iv. 12. one of the regicides, xi. 237. notice of his rise and conduct, *ib.* the princess Elizabeth and the duke of Gloucester intrusted to his care as governor of Carisbrooke castle, xiv. 86, 87.
- Milford Haven, vi. 288. xii. 73, 74.
- Militia: a bill preferred for settling it, iii. 244, 245. read once, but no more, 246. debates in the Commons about a bill for the militia, iv. 95-100. passed the Commons, 214. petitions from several counties concerning the militia, 247. how the bill passed the Lords, 271. an ordinance agreed on by both Houses for settling the militia, 306-7. the King's answer respecting it, 311. reply of the Commons, *ib.* his farther answer, 317. votes of both Houses upon it, 322. and petition to the King, *ib.* his answer, 326. resolutions of both Houses upon it, 329. votes of both Houses concerning the militia, 350. the King's message to both Houses concerning his refusal to pass the bill, v. 80. declaration of both Houses concerning the militia, 118. the proposals in the treaty in the Isle of Wight, xi. 173-5. (*See* London; Parliament.)
- Minehead, Somerset, vi. 33, 239.
- Mint, the, iv. 183, 244, 248. vi. 58. foreign bullion stamped at the English mint, i. 163.
- Mitton: *see* Mytton.
- Modena, duke of, xv. 79.
- Mohun, lord, viii. 102, 103, 109. ix. 147 *n.* signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. his doubtful conduct, vi. 245. joined in the command of the King's forces in Cornwall, *ib.* not very gracious there, 246. present at the taking of Saltash, 249. and at the battle near Stratton, vii. 88. and at Devizes, 113. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, 369 *n.* 6.
- Molesworth, major-general, ix. 108, 117.
- Monck, George, afterwards duke of Albemarle, xvi. 1, 110, 111, 114, 137, 143, 145, 146, 147, 158, 210, 230. distinguished himself in early life, in the Spanish and Dutch war, xvi. 96. at first served the King, xii. 68. xvi. 96. taken prisoner at Nantwich and imprisoned in the Tower, xvi. 96. prevailed with to serve the Parliament against the Irish, xii. 68. xvi. 98. compelled to surrender Dundalk to Ormonde, xii. 68. treats privately with O. O'Neill, 145. xiii. 112. Parliament refuses to ratify this treaty, xii. 146. left by Cromwell in charge of Scotland, where he made himself terrible, xiii. 56, 138, 174. called out of Scotland by Cromwell, and made one of his admirals, xiv. 27. after the Dutch war returns to the government of Scotland, 41. the state of that kingdom under him, *ib.*, 56. receives the submission of the earl of Glencairne, 57. absolute in Scotland, 101. being Lambert's rival, would not have allowed him to be Protector, *ib.*
- Declares his obedience to Parliament, xvi. 19. appointed by Parliament one of the seven commissioners to govern the army, 82. Cobbett sent into Scotland to him by the committee of safety, 92. writes to the officers of the army declaring for the Parliament, 94. possesses Berwick, and imprisons Cobbett, *ib.* purges his army of fanatics, *ib.* Lambert sent against him, *ib.* they send his wife's brother, &c. to him, 95. his answer to them, *ib.* appoints three commissioners to treat with the officers of the army at London, *ib.* account of him, and of his previous life, 96-100. his jealousy of Lambert before this time, 101. calls together the Convention in Scotland, 102. observations on

his intentions as to Charles II, 114, 115, 134. marches towards London, 116. comes to York, *ib.* addresses to him from all counties, and from London, 118. his manner of receiving these addresses, *ib.* the Parliament and the city send deputations to meet him, 119. arrives at St. Alban's, and desires Parliament to move the other regiments out of town, 120. marches into London, *ib.* is conducted to Parliament, and complimented by the Speaker, 121. his reply, 122. sent by Parliament to reduce the Common Council of the city to their obedience, 126, 139. Parliament resolves to join others in commission with him, 127. his officers greatly dissatisfied at this, 128. and he is alarmed, 129. he marches again into the city, and sends an angry letter to the Parliament, 130. which is printed, *ib.* meets the Lord Mayor and Common Council, and promises to stand by them, and they by him, 131. great rejoicings in the city thereupon, *ib.*, 137, 139. Parliament sends some members to treat with him, 132. he brings them in conference with some of the excluded members, *ib.* returns to Whitehall, 133. sends for members of both parties, and delivers his mind to them in a written paper, *ib.* sends Ingoldsby to pursue Lambert, 148. the Parliament make him and Montagu the admirals, 152. his counsels at this time, 159. had a conference with divers at Northumberland House, about the restoration of Charles II, 160. conversed much with Haslerigg, 161. consults with Mr. Morrice, 162. influenced by the parliamentary elections, 163-4. sends sir J. Greenville to negotiate with the King, 165-168. the King agrees generally to the terms proposed by him, 172. the King's letters to Parliament, &c. submitted to him, 179. the King's letter to him and the army, 181-3. his

loyal behaviour after this time, 204. offered all the authority Cromwell had, and the title of King, *ib.* is elected member for Devon, 211. communicates to the Parliament the letters from the King, 212. jealousies between him and admiral Montagu, 227. the King confers the Garter upon him, and makes him of the Privy Council, 245.

Notice of his wife, Anne Clarges, xvi. 98.

Monck, Nich., notice of, xvi. 98, 99. his effort to gain over his brother, general Monck, to serve the King, 99, 165.

Monmouth, Henry Carey, second and last earl of, signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346.

Monmouthshire, vi. 286. viii. 72. ix. 67.

Monro, sir George, vii. 343. xi. 47, 50, 90, 98. having entered England, upon Duke Hamilton's defeat retreats towards Scotland, 92, 93. is ordered to disband, 100. fights a duel with the earl of Glencairne, xiv. 57.

Monroy, marquis de, xvi. 228 n.

Mons, xii. 57. xiv. 99, 100, 102.

Montagu: *see* Mountague.

Montreuil, *al.* Montreuil, —, x. 12 n., 22, 23, 33, 36, 37, 39, 55. sent from France to negotiate a treaty between the King and the Scots, ix. 169. his negotiation with the King, 175-6. and with the Scots, 177. goes to the Scottish army at Newark, x. 1. a farther account of his negotiation with the Scots, 25-31, 34. notice of him, 23-4. reason for his return to France, 21, 31, 36. the paper he sent to the King, being a promise for the Scots' receiving the King, 27.

Monterey, duke de, one of the Spanish council of state, xii. 105. notice of him, 107.

Montgomery, Philip Herbert, earl of: *see* earl of Pembroke.

Montgomery, sir James, vi. 307.

Montgomeryshire, vi. 23.

Montmedy, xv. 52.

- Montmorency, duke of, ix. 172.
- Montpelier, xv. 154. portions of the *Hist.* written there, x. 13 n. xiv. 151 n. xvi. 247.
- Montpensier, madlle. de, d'Orleans, proposed for marriage to Charles II, xiii. 151-3.
- Montrose, James Graham, fifth earl, afterwards marquis of, viii. 78. ix. 72, 112, 118, 126, 153, 156, 157, 159. x. 10, 25, 29, 33. xii. 24, 30, 32, 39. xiii. 47. transactions in Scotland respecting him, Argyll, and Hamilton, iv. 15 n., 20. the King declines his offer of having Argyll and Hamilton made away with, 20. declared a traitor in Scotland for joining the King, vii. 369 n. 1. offered his services to the King when the King was in Scotland, 404. comes to him at Gloucester, and accuses duke of Hamilton of treason, 369 n. 4, 405. one of those appointed to examine into the charges against the duke, 405. most hated and contemned the marquis of Argyll, viii. 263. his expedition into Scotland, 263-7, 278. which he nearly reduced, ix. 85. took Edinburgh, 86. defeated by David Lesley, 86, 120, 123. the King gives up the idea of joining him, 120, 123. the King sends to him to disband, which he did, x. 52, 60. arrives in France, xii. 15. thence goes into Germany, *ib.* Hyde sent to confer with him in a village near the Hague, 16. he comes to the Hague, *ib.* certain Scottish lords refuse to be in the same room with him, 17. accused of great cruelty by the earl of Lauderdale, 18. conference between duke of Hamilton and Hyde concerning co-operating with him in Scotland, 20, 21. impossible to bring the Hamiltonian party to do so, 29. his feeling with respect to Hyde's going ambassador into Spain, 38. obtains supplies from Denmark, 40, 129. goes to Hamburg, 40, 128. embarks for Scotland, and lands there, 130. publishes a declaration 131. notice of his affairs to his death, 118 n. colonel Straghan sent against him, 133. by whom he is routed, and taken prisoner, 134. brought to Edinburgh, 135-6. brought before the Parliament, 136. his behaviour there, 137. the sentence against him, 138. his discourse with Presbyterian ministers, 139. his execution, 140. execution of some of his officers, 141. xiii. 51. his character, xii. 142. [*Wishart's*] History of him, viii. 278. xii. 15, 140 [141 n.].
- Mora, Juan de, xii. 107.
- Moray, sir Robert: *see* Murray.
- Mordaunt, John, brother of the earl of Peterborough, afterwards viscount Avalon, xi. 6. xvi. 165, 176, 224. active for Charles II, xv. 93. is seized and committed to the Tower, 94. tried, 95. the means by which he escaped conviction, 96-8. goes to Brussels to acquaint the King with royalist designs, 23, 32. the King informs him of sir R. Willis's treachery, 32, 33. known to be entirely trusted by the King, yet not molested, 152. goes over to Brussels with sir J. Greenville, from Monck to the King, 168, 170. and returns with him with despatches to England, 180, 202.
- Moreton, sir Albert, i. 141.
- Moreton: *see* Morton.
- Morgan, sir Charles, i. 125. [his daughter Anna, xii. 3 n.]
- Morgan, major-general, xvi. 103. [*Morland*, Samuel, xv. 152. xvi. 28.]
- Morley, Dr. George, afterwards bishop of Winchester, one of the chaplains allowed to attend the King at Newmarket, x. 93. attended lord Capel to the scaffold, xi. 264.
- Morley, colonel Herbert, viii. 123. xvi. 93. one of seven commissioners appointed by Parliament to govern the army in 1659, 82. goes to Portsmouth for the Parliament against Lambert, 93. he and Haslerigg looked upon as invested with the authority of Parliament, 104. they march towards London, 107.

- Morrice, or Morris, colonel, notice of, xi. 117-118. greatly loved by the governor of Pontefract, 118. seizes Pontefract castle for the King, 118-120. would not accept the command of it, 122. concerned in the murder of Rainsborough, 124. escaped when the castle was delivered up, *ib.* taken in Lancashire and put to death, 126.
- Morrice, William, afterwards sir Will., notice of, xvi. 162. consulted by general Monck concerning the restoration of Charles II, 162-164. introduces sir J. Greenville to Monck, 166. recommended to the King for one of his Secretaries of State, 180. he alone knew of Monck's having received a letter from the King, 204. is elected member for Devon, 211. knighted and made Secretary of State by the King, 245.
- Morton, lady Dalkeith, afterwards countess of, ix. 20 *n.* governess at Exeter to the princess Henrietta, viii. 93. conveyed her into France, x. 115 *n.* xiv. 85.
- Morton, sir William, judge K.B., notice of, viii. 53.
- Morton, Thomas, bishop of Durham; the earl of Essex had a great reverence for him, iii. 145. signed the bishops' protestation in 1641, iv. 140.
- [Moryson, Eliz., daughter of sir Tho., wife of lord Capel, xi. 266 *n.*]
- Moscow, xiii. 130.
- [Moseley, Staffordshire, xiii. 87 *n.*]
- Moses, xiv. 6.
- Moulins: portions of the *Hist.* written there, ix. 178. xi. 268.
- Moulins, —, at Nismes, xv. 154.
- Mountague, colonel, x. 91.
- Mountague, sir Edward, lord chief justice, i. 116.
- Mountague, admiral Edward (afterwards earl of Sandwich), put in command of the fleet with Blake, xv. 26. victory with Blake at Santa Cruz, 53-56. the council of state make him and Monck admirals, xvi. 152, 158. an account of him, 153. the King writes to him, 155. he is sent to the Sound, 153. and returns thence, 157-158. his message to the King, 227. goes with the fleet to Holland, and presents his duty to the King and duke of York, 237. this expedition never forgiven him by some, *ib.* the Garter sent to him by the King, 245.
- Mountague of Boughton, Edward lord, imprisoned by the Parliament, vi. 35. vii. 369 *n.* 6. xvi. 154.
- Mountague, Edward (son of the preceding), vi. 34. succeeds in gaining over his cousin, admiral Mountague, to the King, xvi. 154-157. sent by the admiral to tell the King he would obey his orders, 227.
- Mountague, sir Sidney, committed to prison by Parliament, vi. 204.
- Mountague, Walter, iv. 41 *n.* xvi. 76. comes to England and is sent to the Tower, vii. 305. became a Roman Catholic priest, xiii. 44. had great power with the Queen of France, *ib.* Hyde confers with him about Cosins' being forbidden to officiate to the Protestants in the Queen's family at Paris, 45. the duke of Gloucester committed to his care by the Queen, xiv. 117. is obliged by the King to give him up, 118, 119.
- Mountnorris, Francis Annesley, viscount, the earl of Strafford's arbitrary conduct towards him, ii. 101. iii. 107, 111-114. his rise, 114.
- Mount Stamford taken by the King's forces, vii. 289.
- Mowbray and Maltravers, Henry Frederick Howard, lord, afterwards earl of Arundel, he and the earl of Pembroke committed to the Tower for a quarrel in the House of Lords, iii. 213. vi. 400 *n.* signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6.
- Moyle, lieutenant colonel Nathaniel, killed at the siege of Bristol, vii. 121 *n.*, 133.

Muddyford, —, one of the commissioners for the county of Devon, ix. 17.

Mulgrave, Edmund Sheffield, first earl of, vii. 80. one of the few peers who attended Parliament, 369 *n.* 5. 375.

Munster, treaty of, xiv. 90.

Munster, Ireland, v. 62, 132. vii. 361, 368, 401 *n.* viii. i. x. 154. xi. 2, 144, 145, 148, 149. xii. 3, 49, 51, 65 *n.*, 69, 73, 108, 117, 144. xiii. 110, 114. xvi. 208.

Murray, colonel, ix. 77 *n.*

Murray, Charles, ix. 159.

Murray, or Moray, sir Robert, ix. 175.

Murray, William, of the King's bedchamber, iv. 15 *n.*, 20, 154. v. 91 *n.* much trusted by Charles I, iv. 15 *n.* lord Digby had a great friendship with him, 154. one of those the Parliament wished to be removed from the King, 222.

Musgrave, sir Philip, taken prisoner at Chester, ix. 119. notice of him, *ib.* goes into Scotland with sir M. Langdale, xi. 14, 15. their proceedings there, 16-18, 43, 45. he surprises Carlisle, 48, 50, 51. goes to Edinburgh to remonstrate against imposition of the Covenant, 52, 53. gives up Carlisle to the duke of Hamilton, 72. the Scottish garrison there declines his help, 94, 95. surrenders Appleby castle, and transports himself into Holland, 96.

Muskerry, Charles Macarthy, viscount, married the marquis of Ormonde's sister, xi. 148. was the most powerful person, and of the greatest interest, in Munster, *ib.* commanded an Irish regiment in the service of France at Condé, xv. 70. leaves the French service to join the King, 71-74.

Mutianus, vii. 294.

Mutinios in 1627, i. 87.

Mytton, or Milton, colonel, xi. 40. he and colonel Laughorne seize on Shrewsbury for the Parliament, vii. 239.

## N.

Namur, xiv. 162.

Nantes, xiv. 68, 71, 78, 80, 81, 90.

Nantwich, vi. 272, 278. xi. 221. xvi. 96. surrendered to lord Gran- dison, vi. 67. fortified by sir W. Brereton for Parliament, 270. besieged by lord Byron, vii. 401. who is defeated there by sir T. Fairfax, vii. 401 *n.*, 403, 416 *n.*

Naples, xii. 105, 107.

Naseby, battle of, viii. 276. ix. 37-42, 47, 52, 70, 77, 85, 119, 132, 153, 158, 174. x. 4.

Navigation Act, 1651, xiii. 156. xv. 9.

Navy, very strong before the Long Parliament, i. 163. (*See* Fleet.)

Needwood Forest, ii. 52, 81.

Neile: *see* Neyle.

Nerva, emperor, i. 163.

Nettlebed, Oxon: the King there, vii. 35.

Neuburg, Wolfgang Wilh., duke of, reasons for his turning Roman Catholic, xiv. 113.

Neuburg, Philip Wilh., duke of (the son), xiv. 121. xv. 86. xvi. 62. entertains Charles II at Düsseldorf, xiv. 112-115. his character, 114. a zealous Roman Catholic, 113. twice married, 114. his discourse with Charles II about applying to pope Alexander VII for assistance, 120-122.

Neuburg, duchess of, xiv. 114.

Nevil, sir Henry, ambassador in France, i. 143.

Newark, viii. 74, 86. ix. 33, 37, 85, 86, 96, 120, 121, 127-132, 162, 164. x. 1, 25, 33, 35, 51 *n.*, 61, 92. xi. 41. the King goes there, v. 387. a garrison fixed there by the earl of Newcastle, vi. 168. besieged, vii. 400, 415. relieved by prince Rupert, 416. condition of its garrison at the King's arrival there in 1645, ix. 122. lord Bellasis made governor in place of Willis, 129. ordered by the King to surrender it, x. 21, 34.

Newark, viscount: *see* Kingston.

Newbridge, Oxon, viii. 45, 46, 47.

- Newburgh, James Livingston, viscount, afterwards first earl of, xiii. 138, 139, 141. married lady Aubigny, xi. 221. he and his wife planned an escape for the King, 222-3. they fled to the Hague, xii. 19. notice of him, *ib.* has the command of a regiment raised by the King in Flanders, xv. 68.
- Newburn, ii. 84. battle of, ii. 89. iii. 120.
- Newbury, Berks, vii. 207. viii. 25, 34, 113, 124, 129, 148, 151, 152, 153, 161-164. ix. 30. first battle of, vii. 211-12, 241, 257, 264 *n.*, 298, 308 *n.*, 405. second battle of, viii. 154-160, 183.
- Newcastle, v. 389, 398, 444, 446 *n.* vi. 176, 265, 368, 389, 397. vii. 5, 264, 400. viii. 167. ix. 123. x. 12 *n.*, 21, 22, 31, 34, 36, 37, 39, 51, 54, 58, 61, 67, 69, 78, 115 *n.*, 121, 158, 164, 170, 171. xi. 44. xii. 6, 8, 15. xvi. 95, 102, 103, 104, 117. abandoned to the Scots, ii. 89, 92. secured for the King, v. 372, 385. vi. 262, 263. viii. 83. again taken by the Scots, 262.
- Newcastle, William Cavendish, first earl of, afterwards marquis of, iii. 226. iv. [207 *n.*] 215. v. 88. vi. 159, 266, 274, 324, 327, 357. vii. 31, 45, 49, 172, 265 *n.*, 408. viii. 18, 49, 95, 281, 282. ix. 49. xi. 185. xiii. 67. entertains King Charles on his way to Scotland to be crowned, i. 167. furnished a troop of horse in the Scotch expedition, ii. 53. governor to the Prince of Wales, *ib.* challenges the earl of Holland, *ib.* iv. 293. resigns his place of governor to the Prince, iv. 293. vi. 389. made governor of Newcastle, iv. 215. vi. 262. mention of him in the communications between the King and Parliament, v. 94, 101, 237, 311. vi. 231. secures Newcastle for the King, v. 372. excepted by Parliament from peace on any terms, vi. 50. impeached by Parliament, 262. goes from Newcastle to York, 261, 263. high in the Queen's favour, and his army styled *the Queen's army*, 265. fixes a garrison at Newark, 268. put out a declaration of his reasons for marching into Yorkshire, 336, 338. his success there, 397. vii. 121 *n.*, 176 *n.* notice of his character, vi. 389. imprisoned lord Savile, 393. why he could not march into the associated counties, vii. 177, 201 *n.* made a marquis, 264 *n.*, 322. defeated lord Fairfax, 264 *n.* obliged to raise the siege of Hull, 298, 322. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, 323, 369 *n.* 6. marches to oppose the Scots, 322, 400. retires to York, upon col. Bellasis' defeat, 400, 415. viii. 17, 20. defeated at Marston-moor, viii. 74, 75. quits the kingdom, 75. observations on his conduct and character, 82-7. his house, Welbeck, made one of the King's garrisons, ix. 85. lord Withrington had an entire friendship with him, xiii. 69. at Antwerp, 178.
- New England, colony of, iii. 65. notice of its foundation, 34. mischief done by sir H. Vane when governor, *ib.* gladly submitted to the Parliament, xiii. 172.
- New Forest, x. 127.
- Newgate: *see* London.
- Newmarket, iv. 331, 341, 352. v. 1, 13, 45, 253, 255. x. 91, 93.
- Newport, in the Isle of Wight, [vii. 222 *n.*] x. 145. xi. 229. xii. 9. treaty appointed there between Charles I and the Parliamentary commissioners, xi. 113, 114. particulars of it, 153-188.
- Newport, Mountjoy Blount, first earl of, i. 137. [constable of the Tower, iii. 200 *n.*] signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. and the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6.
- Newport: *see* Nieuport.
- Newport, Francis, vi. 66.
- Newport, sir Richard, made baron Newport of Ercall, vi. 66, 67. ready, with others, to secure Shrewsbury for Charles II, xvi. 26.

- Newport Pagnell, Beds, possessed by both parties in turn, vii. 288.
- Newton, —, iii. 19.
- Newton Bushell, Devon, ix. 94.
- Neyle, Richard, bishop of Durham, i. 61. clerk of the closet to James I and Charles I, iii. 61.
- Nicholas, Edward, afterwards sir Edw., Secretary of State, v. 36. vii. 178, 332, 335. viii. 123 *n.* [x. 27 *n.*], 28, 30, 151 *n.* xii. 63. xiv. [70 *n.*], 128, 145. made Secretary of State to Charles I, iv. 100 *n.*, 167 *n.* signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. excepted by Parliament from peace on any terms, vi. 50. some account of him, 395. one of those appointed to examine into the charges against the duke of Hamilton, vii. 405. one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, viii. 211. at Rouen, xi. 23. notice of his wife's dangerous illness at Caen, *ib.* *n.* is at Antwerp, xiii. 178. goes to Charles II at Aix, who appoints him Secretary of State, xiv. 106. persuades Hyde to accept the Great Seal, xv. 83.
- Nicholas, John, xv. 128, 129, 141.
- Nicipus, vii. 291.
- Nieuport, Flanders, xv. 138, 142.
- Nieuport, Will., Dutch ambassador at London, xi. 89. [xiv. 29 *n.*]
- Nismes, account of a tumult by the Reformed in the election of its consuls, and of Cromwell's interference, xv. 153-4.
- Nithsdale, or Niddisdale, Robert Maxwell, first earl of, one of those who accused the duke of Hamilton of treason, vii. 369 *n.* 4. present with lord Digby when routed at Sherborne, ix. 124. goes into Ireland, 126.
- Norcott, sir John, vi. 33.
- Norfolk, vi. 327. vii. 172, 177. viii. 18. xi. 26. xvi. 24.
- Normandy, x. 151 *n.*, 153. xi. 23. xii. 75. xiii. 105, 106, 116.
- Northallerton, Yorkshire, ix. 123.
- Northampton, v. 416. vi. 1, 8, 17, 21, 30, 43, 274. vii. 49. viii. 70. ix. 37, 132. x. 67.
- Northampton, statute of, iv. 115.
- Northampton, Spencer Compton, second earl of, v. 441 *n.* 2, 446 *n.* signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. put in command of Banbury, vi. 99. relieves Stafford, 278. slain at Hopton-heath, having first vanquished the enemy's horse, 280. his character, 283. his body not given up by the enemy, 284.
- Northampton, James lord Compton, afterwards third earl of, v. 22. vi. 283. viii. 153, 162. xi. 6. wounded at the battle on Hopton-heath, vi. 281. cannot obtain his father's body from the enemy, 284. defeats some forces at Banbury, vii. 49. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, 369 *n.* 6. present at the fight at Cropredy, viii. 64, 67. Banbury castle relieved by him, 152.
- Northamptonshire, v. 339. vi. 34, 80, 155, 274. vii. 288. viii. 64, 148. ix. 36, 44. xvi. 147.
- Northumberland, vi. 262. xi. 93. xiii. 69.
- Northumberland, Henry Percy, ninth earl of, i. 134. imprisoned in the Tower, on suspicion of some knowledge of the Gunpowder treason, vi. 398. released through the earl of Carlisle, who had married his daughter, *ib.*
- Northumberland, Algernon Percy, tenth earl of, ii. 99. Lord High Admiral, iii. 34, 133, 134, 224, 228, 244. iv. 78 *n.*, 140 *n.*, 256, 345. v. 202, 396, 428. vi. 304, 305. vii. 57, 63, 301, 302. xi. 29. appointed general of the second expedition against the Scots, ii. 80 *n.*, 81. generally esteemed, 81. had a high opinion of lord Conway, 83. too ill to take the command, 88. one of the committee of state, 99. his evidence at Strafford's trial, iii. 119. his defection from the King's service, 228. iv. 149 *n.* the honours the King had conferred upon him, iii. 228. iv. 149 *n.* vi. 398. quarrel with his brother lord Percy, iii. 229. resigned his commission as general, 232. da-



clares that whoever of the Lords refused to join with the Commons respecting the militia, was an enemy to the commonwealth, iv. 271. Parliament send to him to provide a fleet, 330. urged by Parliament to appoint the earl of Warwick his admiral of the fleet, v. 36. the King writes to him, that sir J. Pennington should have the command, *ib.* he appoints the earl, 39. why the King did not then revoke his commission, 40, 44. moved for a committee to consider an accommodation with the King, 215. his commission as admiral revoked by the King, 372 *n.*, 376-380. vi. 144. refuses to retain his post at the desire of Parliament against the King's consent, v. 377 *n.*, 380. one of those who presented a petition from both Houses to the King at Colnbrook, vi. 128, 130. sent by Parliament to the King with propositions of peace, Feb. 1, 1643, 230 *bis.* one of those chosen again by Parliament to treat at Oxford with the King, 318, 369. his character, 398. what advantages might have arisen had the King re-appointed him Lord High Admiral, vii. 21-22. he cudgelled Mr. Martin for having opened a letter of his to his wife, 20, 47. which increased the divisions in the Parliament at Westminster, 187. accused of complicity in Waller's plot, but nothing done, 73. one of those who were weary of the war, 121. retires to his house at Petworth, 174, 188. would have joined the King had the other lords who left the Parliament been well received, 188, 244. returns to Parliament, and is received with great respect, 248, 313 *n.* surmises on his not being appointed admiral by the Parliament, 316. one of the few peers who now attended Parliament, 369 *n.* 5, 375. one of the commissioners to treat at Uxbridge, viii. 211. his part in the treaty, 218, 224. his feelings as to the then

state of affairs, 244. was the proudest man alive, *ib.* one of those in whom the militia was proposed to be vested for seven or eight years, 250. the dukes of York and Gloucester, and the princess, committed to his care, x. 103, 115. how treated by him, 103, 115 *n.* are removed from his care, xiv. 85. withdrew with others from Parliament to the army, x. 108, 110. Monck had a conference with him and others concerning the restoration of Charles II, xvi. 160.

Norton, colonel, besieges Basing House, viii. 123, 129.

Norton, —, near Bristol, xiii. 90-96.

Norton, sir Daniel, i. 54. [Norway, x. 52 *n.*]

Norwich, vi. 181, 183.

Norwich, George Goring, first earl of, ambassador in France, vii. 307. ix. 20 *n.*, 177. xv. 92. created earl, ix. 21. heads the rising in Kent in favour of the King, xi. 39, 55. advances to Blackheath, 57. transports himself into Essex to Colchester, 59, 62. taken prisoner there, and sent to the Tower, 109. tried by a high court of justice, 252. his behaviour at his trial, 254. condemned, 257. votes in Parliament for and against his petition for life equally divided, 259. the Speaker gives the casting vote in his favour, and why, *ib.* his character, 55.

Norwich, Charles Goring, second earl of: *see* Goring.

Nottingham, v. 419. vi. 8 *and n.*, 15, 21, 30, 43, 57, 58, 59, 60, 62 *n.*, 71, 73, 126, 301, 304, 306, 386. vii. 84, 415. ix. 127. xi. 77, 121, 123, 126, 231. the King there in July, 1642, v. 416. the standard to be erected there, v. 441 *n.* 3, 443, 444. the King goes there, v. 446 *n.* the standard set up, v. 446 *n.*, 449. vi. 1.

Nottinghamshire, v. 387. vi. 60. vii. 298. ix. 85. xi. 116, 121.

Noy, sir William, Attorney-General, his character, i. 157. framed the

odious project respecting soap, i. 157. drew up the writ for ship-money, 158. vii. 80 n. revived the office of Chief Justice in Eyre, iii. 265.

Nuncio of the Pope in Ireland: *see* Rinuccini.

Nye, Philip, sent by Parliament as a commissioner to Scotland for relief, vii. 135.

O.

Oatlands, iv. 78 n. vi. 140. xv. 83.

O'Connelly, Owen, iv. 25, 41 n., 332.

Octavius, vii. 279.

[Offley, Thomas, vii. 388 n.]

Ogilvie, or Ogilby, lord, one of those who accused the duke of Hamilton of treason, vii. 369 n. 4, 405.

Ogle, sir William, viii. 125, 128. seizes Winchester castle for the King, vii. 401 n. viii. 2.

Ogniate, Mark, serviceable to Charles II at Bruges, xv. 132.

Okehampton [Okington], Devon, vii. 86. ix. 93, 94, 103, 104, 108, 117.

Okey, colonel, xvi. 150.

Olivarez, duke of, xii. 94, 106, 107. particulars of his quarrel with the duke of Buckingham, i. 74.

Olivarez, duchess of, notice of, i. 80.

Oliver, —, receiver to the duke of Buckingham, i. 68.

*One and All*, a loyal union proposed in the western counties, viii. 255-6. ix. 7 n., 17, 50.

O'Neill, or O'Neale, Daniel, nephew of Owen O'Neill, v. 432 n. viii. 273. xv. 87. notice of his character and previous life, viii. 268. taken prisoner by the Scots at Newburn, but released, ii. 111, 112. an enemy to the earl of Strafford, 111. viii. 269. intrigues to become a groom of the bedchamber, 269-276, by going into Ireland with the earl of Antrim, 270. banished from Scotland whither he had accompanied Charles II, xiii. 3. accompanies the King to Fuentarabla, xvi. 58,

68, 69. returns with the King to Brussels, 72.

O'Neill, or O'Neale, general Owen Roe, viii. 275. xii. 35, 108, 148. offered to serve the King, vii. 401 n. his character, viii. 273. xi. 146. had the command of all the Irish in Ulster, and was the best general they had, viii. 273. xii. 29, 35. refused to submit to the articles of peace, though confirmed by the Council at Kilkenny, xi. 148. xii. 29, 66. for what reasons, xii. 67, 145. Monck treats privately with him, by order of the committee at Westminster, 145. but Parliament refuses to ratify the treaty, 146. he thereupon offers his services to the Lord Lieutenant, *ib.* but dies as he was going to join him, xiii. 112.

O'Neill, sir Phelim, leader of the rebellion in Ireland, iv. 28, 41 n.

O'Neills, the, xi. 146.

Onslow, colonel, viii. 123.

Oquendo, —, xiii. 26.

Orange, Henry Frederic, of Nassau, prince of, ii. 111. v. 435. vi. 78, 95 n., 265, 266. viii. 89. xiii. 33. xiv. 112, 113. sent some supplies for Charles I, v. 372 and n. vi. 176. but unable to do much for him, v. 373. accused by Parliament for supplying the King with arms, &c., vi. 172.

Orange, William X, of Nassau, prince of, x. 116. xi. 33, 35, 89, 138, 215. xii. 23, 33, 44, 49, 55, 75, 117, 121, 124. married to princess Mary, iv. 281. received the Prince of Wales and duke of York at the Hague, xi. 80. supplied Charles II with necessaries, xii. 3. advice respecting a proposed declaration by the latter, 41-2. supplies him with twenty thousand pounds, 47-48. advises him to accede to the terms offered by the Scotch, 119, 124. provides a fleet to take him to Scotland, 124. dies of the small-pox, xiii. 33, 34, 154. his character, 33, 35. Charles II lost a sure friend in him, 35.

Orange, William Henry, of Nassau, prince of [afterwards William III

- of England], xiii. 154, 165, 166. his birth, 34. one of the articles of peace between Cromwell and the Dutch was, never to admit him as Stadtholder, xiv. 33.
- Orange, Emilie de Solms, princess of, xiv. 110.
- Orange, Mary, daughter of Charles I, princess of, iv. 224, 311, 314. ix. 171. x. 116. xi. 21, 33, 35, 80. xii. 33, 54. xiii. 33, 154, 164. xiv. 80, 83, 88, 99. xvi. 176. married to the prince of Orange, iv. 281. x. 115 *n.* delivered of a son shortly after her husband's death, xiii. 34. dependent on the States, 46. visits Spa with Charles II, xiv. 102. removes with him to Aix-la-Chapelle, 105. and to Cologne, 110. differences between her and the princess dowager, *ib.* visits the duke of Neuburg, 112. returns to Holland, 115. joins the King at Bruges, xv. 82.
- Orchard, near Taunton, vii. 97.
- Orkney, [xii. 130 *n.*] xiii. 162.
- Orleans, duke of, ix. 172. x. 58. xiii. 143, 144. lord Cottington's interview with him, xii. 78, 79. visited Charles II with civility, xiii. 143. alteration of his conduct, 144. madlle. de Montpensier, his daughter, thought of as a wife for Charles II, 151-153.
- Orleans, duchess of: *see* Henrietta.
- Orleans, mademoiselle d': *see* Montpensier.
- Ormonde, James Butler, twelfth earl of, afterwards marquis and duke of, ii. 82, 88. iii. 252. iv. 41 *n.* vi. 315. vii. 330, 362, 366, 368. viii. 264, 270, 274, 275, 278. ix. 70. x. 13, 14, 17, 121, 154, 160. xi. 150. xii. 29, 35, 39, 72, 74, 116, 117, 144, 145, 149. xiii. 3, 6, 70, 111, 138, 139, 163, 165, 174, 176, 177, 178, 185. xiv. 59, 65, 67, 69, 128, 144. xv. 66, 75, 80, 83, 93, 94, 98. xvi. 35, 96, 138, 139, 178, 209. lieut.-gen. in Ireland, ii. 82. iv. 41 *n.* notice of his character and conduct, vi. 313. created a marquis, 314. agrees to a cessation with the Roman Catholic Irish, vii. 339, 401. sends assistance to the King in England, vii. 401. resolved not to act under the earl of Leicester, who was appointed Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, vi. 313. made Lord Lieutenant in his stead, vii. 324, 401. sends commissioners to the King, viii. 171, 176. contemned the earl of Antrim, who entertained malice against him, 267, 271. constrained to deliver up Dublin to the English rebels, and leave Ireland, x. 121. frequently waits on the King at Hampton-court, *ib.*, 153. secretly leaves England and goes to France, 153. well received by Queen Henrietta, 176. reasons that moved him to return to Ireland, 155. lord Inchiquin invites him into Munster, *ib.* he in vain expects supplies from France, 177. xi. 31, 143. arrives in Ireland without supplies, xi. 31, 148. xii. 65 *n.* the propositions of the Parliament commissioners in the treaty at Newport against him, xi. 176, 178, 179, 185. an account of the affairs in Ireland, after his arrival, xii. 3, 28, 65-9. commissioners sent to treat with him, 65. goes to Kilkenny, 66. peace concluded there, *ib.* O'Neill refuses to submit to it, *ib.* marches towards Dublin, 68. blocks it up, 69. lord Inchiquin departs from him into Munster, *ib.* is defeated by Jones, *ib.* retires on hearing of Cromwell's landing at Dublin, 74. provides for the defence of Drogheda, *ib.* treats with O'Neill, 86. xii. 146. Cromwell tried to hold communication with him, xii. 147. his condition in Ireland, xiii. 111. his orders disobeyed, 113. a mutiny at Lime- rick, *ib.* the Roman Catholic bishops publish a declaration against him, 114. he makes the marquis of Clanricarde his deputy, and leaves Ireland, 115. lands in France, 116. and waits on Charles II at Paris, *ib.* the friendship between him and the Chancellor of the Exchequer, 121.

- appointed one of the Privy Council, 123. lives very poorly in Paris, 129. his opinion on the King's affairs in 1652, 140. his advice about the King's marrying madlle. de Montpensier, 151-2. all who were angry with the Chancellor of the Exchequer were angry with him, xiv. 62. sent into France by the King to fetch the duke of Gloucester, 118-9. has the command of a regiment raised by the King in Flanders, xv. 68. sent to treat with lord Muskerry about transfer of Irish regiments from the French to the Spanish service, 70. his success, 71. goes into England to learn the state of the King's friends, 86, 87. is in London for three weeks in safety, 66, 91. xvi. 28, 29. returns to France, 90. present at an attack upon Mardike, 132. particulars of his attending the King to Fuentarabia, xvi. 58, 59, 66, 68, 69, 70, 72. attends him to Breda, 179. his sister married lord Muskerry, xi. 148.
- Ormonde, Walter Butler, eleventh earl of, xii. 147.
- Orrery, earl of: *see* lord Broghill.
- Osborne, —, [ix. 131 n.], concerned in an attempt for the King's escape from the Isle of Wight, xi. 194-6. accuses Rolph of a design on the King's life, 197-8.
- Ostend, xi. 79. xvi. 139.
- Ottery St. Mary, Devon, ix. [60 n.], 64.
- Overall, John, bishop of Norwich, i. 186.
- Overbury, sir Thomas, notice of his murder, i. 16.
- Overton, colonel, x. 106. [xi. 126 n.] one of seven commissioners appointed by Parliament to govern the army in 1659, xvi. 82.
- Ovid quoted, iii. 155, 231 n. xv. 113.
- Owen, col. sir John, wounded at the siege of Bristol, vii. 133. engaged in an insurrection in Wales, xi. 252. tried before a high court of justice, *ib.* condemned, 256, 257. pardoned by the House of Commons through Ireton, 261.
- Owen, John, bishop of St. Asaph, signed the bishops' protestation in 1641, iv. 140.
- Owen, Morgan, bp. of Llandaff, signed the bishops' protestation in 1641, iv. 140.
- Oxford, v. 203 n., 211 n., vi.-ix. *sepiissime*. xv. 101. xvi. 96. the university contributes plate and money for the use of Charles I, vi. 57-8, 125, 167. the only city entirely at the King's devotion, 99, 125. proceedings at the treaty there in 1643, 369-75. vii. 1-23. Parliament summoned there, vii. 326. proceedings at it, 395-8. mint at Oxford, 395. the Queen leaves Oxford, viii. 21. three regiments formed there, 24. surrounded by Essex's and Waller's armies, 43-50. the King's escape, 49. the town full of lords and ladies, 73 n., 119, 279. ix. 35. fortifications repaired, viii. 73 n., 119. sir A. Aston appointed governor on the death of sir W. Pennyman, 121. resolutions there upon lord Goring's arrival, ix. 28. sir T. Glemham made governor, 121. the King's affection for it, viii. 279. he returns there from Newark, ix. 132. his final departure, x. 33. besieged by Fairfax, *ib.* the King orders its surrender, 62, 103. the dukes of York and Gloucester taken on its surrender, 103, 115 n. Parliamentary visitation, 123. reasons against the Covenant, passed then in convocation, *ib.* Rich. Cromwell made Chanceller, xv. 50. [See Parliament.] Balliol College, vii. 189. Christ Church, i. 143. vi. 91. vii. 370 n. 1, [401 n.]. Magdalen [Hall], iii. 34. Magdalen College, vii. 189. xii. 103 n. Merton College, vii. 242. viii. 226. New College, iii. 33. vi. 409. St. John's College, i. 189. The Schools, vii. 370 n. 1. University College, i. 185. [Wadham College, xv. 57 n.] Oxford, bishop of: *see* Rob. Skinner.

Oxford, Robert de Vere, nineteenth earl of, origin of his enmity with the duke of Buckingham, i. 66.  
 Oxford, Aubrey de Vere, twentieth and last earl of, xvi. 239.  
 Oxfordshire, vi. 36, 155, 237, 322, 390. vii. 298. viii. 58. petitions to the Commons, 1642, iv. 340.

## P.

Pacification, the, between England and Scotland, ii. 49-52. iv. 4. xi. 49.

Pack, alderman Christopher, xv. 41.

Packer, John, Donnington castle belonged to him, vii. 212.

[Padbury, Bucks, vii. 122 n.]

Padstow, Cornwall, ix. 152.

Page, captain, afterwards lieut. col., viii. 109. ix. 33. at the second battle of Newbury, and wounded there, viii. 157, 160.

Paget, William, lord, iii. 55 n. iv. 204 n. concurred in the prosecution of Laud and Strafford, iii. 28. made lord lieutenant of Bucks for his zeal in the Parliament's service, but deserts the Parliament and joins the King, v. 339. vi. 62 n. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 n. 6.

Painted Chamber, the, iii. 161. iv. 26, 30. vii. 47. viii. 202. ix. 4. xv. 36, 59. xvi. 225.

Palatinate, the, xiv. 90. negotiations concerning it, i. 104. vi. 179.

Palatine, Charles Louis, nephew of Charles I, Elector, iv. 152. v. 89, 92. vi. 179, 231. his visit to England, and abrupt departure from the King at York. vii. 414. returns to England, and is well received by the Parliament, *ib.* did not contribute to the subsidy granted to Charles II by the Diet in Germany, xiv. 103. nor notice him whilst resident at Cologne, 116.

Palatine, Frederic, Elector, i. 25.

Pale, the, origin and application of the term in Ireland, xi. 144.

Palmer, sir Henry, v. 377 n., 378, 379.

Palmer, Jeffery, ix. 164. behaved with decency towards the earl of Strafford on his trial, iii. 106. iv. 58. dispute in the House on his protesting against printing the Remonstrance, iv. 52-58, 77 n. one of the King's commissioners at Uxbridge, viii. 211, 233.

Pamphlets complained of by the King, v. 23, 187, 400, 441 n. 4.

[Pangbourne, Berks, viii. 130 n.]

Papists, their boldness and activity, about 1640, ii. 98. collect money towards the war with Scotland, *ib.* iii. 15 n., 180. cashiered out of the army at the demand of Parliament, iii. 23. stories of plots, 179, iv. 41 n. order of Parliament for disarming them throughout England, iv. 3. petition of apprentices against them, 105. forbidden by the King to join his army, v. 441 n. 3. the Parliament desire their disarming and disbanding, vi. 231. (*See Penal Laws; Roman Catholics.*)

Paris, iv. 332, 338. v. 6, 174. vi. 184. vii. 305. ix. 77, 99, 169. x. 5, 9, 11, 13-15, 21, 23, 36, 38, 41, 96, 97, 120, 153, 175. xi. 5, 7, 23, 24, 31, 40, 41, 63, 143, 150 n., 251. xii. 15, 32, 33, 47, 59, 61, 65, 76, 78, 81, 92, 94, 121. xiii. 37, 46, 108, 121, 122, 129, 130, 138, 170, 171, 178, 185. xiv. 36, 55, 60, 68, 71, 72, 74, 77, 80, 81, 84, 88, 89, 91, 95, 97, 117, 119. xv. 73, 77, 154. xvi. 58, 73, 230. siege of Paris, xiii. 143. the Louvre, xii. 77. xiii. 127 n., 143, 144. xiv. 66, 82, 83. the Bastille, xiii. 153. xiv. 66. Palais Royale, xiv. 62, 65.

[Parker, Henry, v. 400 n.]

Parliament.

*House of Lords.*

They offend the House of Commons by advising the giving supplies, ii. 69. they pass the bill for Strafford's attainder, iii. 196. reject a bill for imposing the Protestation on all persons, 231. and the bills against the bishops, 231 n. on the right of protesting there, iv. 254. order of the House for the apprehension of the Lord Keeper,

## Parliament.

who had gone to the King at York with the Great Seal, v. 203 *n.* notice of the few lords who attended Parliament in 1643, vii. 375. the Lords reject the capital charge against the King, and adjourn for a week, xi. 217. the door of their house locked up against the day to which they had adjourned, *ib.* the Commons abolish the House of Peers, 247. but allow the peers to be elected as knights or burgesses, *ib.* Cromwell re-assembles a House of Peers 1657, xv. 59. its authority disputed by the House of Commons, 61. carried in the Commons that the House of Peers should be allowed, xvi. 5. (*See also* House of Commons.)

*House of Commons.*

Certain days at the beginning of a session spent in formalities, i. 34. ii. 67. old hours of sitting, ii. 67. the members sworn by the lord steward of the King's house, 66. all supplies must originate there, 69. unless in cases of urgent necessity, 119. the Speaker usually a lawyer, iii. 2. his election had always been by designation of the King, 1 *n.* not usual for the Attorney-General to be a member of Parliament, 82. forty members of the Commons required to make a House, iv. 10. contrary to order that a rejected bill should be preferred again the same session, 33, 94 *n.* its privileges not meant to screen its members from being punished for treason, felony, or breaches of the peace, 166, 175. made to do so by the Commons in 1642, 204. observations on the privilege of freedom from arrest, 233-236. no act done at a committee may be divulged before it be reported to the House, 190.

King Charles's declaration in 1629 concerning Parliament, i. 6. precipitate dissolutions one cause of the future calamities, *ib.* temper and proceedings of the first Parliaments, 7, 8. particularly against the duke of Buckingham, 49. good consequences had Par-

liament been allowed to impeach any of the King's ministers, 11. resolutions in 1628 for war against Spain, after Buckingham's statement of the Prince's journey, 39.

A Parliament summoned in April 1640, ii. 62, 66. narrative of its proceedings, i. 166 *n.* Serg. Glanville chosen Speaker, ii. 66. Pym's and others' speeches concerning grievances, 68. the Peers advise the Commons to give a supply, 69. this voted a breach of privilege, *ib.* the King proposes to give up ship-money for twelve subsidies, 70. the proposal debated, 71-76. Parliament dissolved owing to misrepresentations, 76. public regrets at this step, 77. the King petitioned to summon Parliament, 93.

Parliament summoned to meet on 3 Nov. 1640, ii. 107. meets on that day, iii. 1. its temper different from the last, 3. Lenthall made Speaker, 2. Pym opens the debate of grievances, 3. the earl of Strafford's impeachment resolved on, 3-7. illegal proceedings of the Commons respecting elections, 12. certain severe acts passed, 14, 22. Laud accused of high treason, 15. charge against lord Finch, *ib.* and secretary Windebank, 16. unprecedented proceedings against the earl of Strafford, 21. the temper of both Houses then, and the characters of the leading men, 24-36, 55 *n.* a committee appointed to treat with the Scotch commissioners, 39. they call the Scotch our *Brethren*, 42. debate on episcopacy, 66. proceedings respecting the earl of Strafford's trial, 21, 43-46, 93, 122. disingenuity used in procuring petitions, 67. the new Canons condemned by the Commons, 72. money borrowed of the city by the two Houses, for supplying the two armies, 73-4. the Commons, why backward in voting money, 73 *n.* appoint commissioners to dispose of the subsidies voted by

## Parliament.

them, 77. bill for tonnage and poundage passed, 78, 217. bill for a triennial Parliament passed, 79-80, 256. a proposition for borrowing money in the city, 90-92. bill of attainder passed against the earl of Strafford, 128-140. those who voted against it placarded as 'Straffordians, or enemies to their country,' 141. a bill passed by the Commons to take away the bishops' votes, 148-152. but rejected by the Lords, 153, 231 n. bill brought in to abolish bishops, deans, and chapters, 155, 231 n. referred to a committee, 240. laid aside, 156, 231 n., 242. a vote passed by both Houses against the court of York, 157, 159. the Protestation made by both Houses, 186. the part inferring the maintenance of the Church is explained away by the Commons, 189. a bill passed to compel all the subjects to take the Protestation, 190. the Commons resent the King's declaration that he could not sign the bill for Strafford's attainder, 195. the bill is passed, 196, 201. the bill that the Parliament should not be dissolved except by itself, introduced and passed, 206-210, 271. its effects on the Commons, 230. their bill respecting tonnage and poundage, 217. a gratuity voted to the Scottish army, 219. a vote passed in favour of imposing the Protestation, in opposition to the Lords, 231. proposal for discovery of 'evil counsellors,' 236-9. the King is petitioned to defer his visit into Scotland, 243. Hasle-*rig's* bill for the militia, 244-6. the House sits on a Sunday, 247. proposes appointment of a *Custos Regni* while the King is in Scotland, 248. bills passed in 1641, 256-71. amongst which one for triennial Parl., 256. the Commons prevent foreign enlistment of disbanded Irish soldiers, 252. committees of both Houses appointed to attend the King in Scotland, and to sit during the adjournment, 254-5; iv. 16.

House adjourned, iv. 5, 10. powers intrusted to the two committees, 11. the business before the committee of the Commons, 12, 13. order of both Houses to disarm all Papists, 3. proposals about the Prayer Book and arrangement of chancels, 7, 8. rejected by the Lords, who order the Prayer Book to be obeyed, 8. but whose order is countermanded by the Commons, *ib.* an ordinance of both Houses for a thanksgiving for the pacification with Scotland, 9. a guard appointed for the security of Parliament on its meeting again, 15 n., 22. the Irish rebellion referred to Parliament by the King, 29, 41 n. a committee revived for drawing up a Remonstrance, 32, 48 n. [cf. ii. 86]. a motion that the King be desired to appoint no Privy-councillor without the approbation of Parliament, 32. a new bill brought in to take away bishops' votes, 33, 94 n. the Commons offended at the King's filling up vacant bishoprics, 35, 36. the committee for the Remonstrance make their report, 48 n., 49. debate thereon, 50-52, 73 n. the Remonstrance carried by nine voices, 52. debates on protests against its being printed, 52-58, 77 n. ordered to be printed, 58. substance of it, 59. how the factious party grew in the Commons, 74. the King dismisses the guard, 79. the Remonstrance and a petition presented to the King, 80. v. 257. his answer to the petition, iv. 82-84. a bill prepared in the Commons for pressing men for Ireland, 88. the preamble of the bill excepted against by the Lords, 89. the King's interference in any bill whilst pending declared a breach of privilege, 92. the bill concerning pressing passed, 93. debates concerning the militia, 95-100. St.-John to bring in a bill to settle it, 98. the Commons petition for the renewal of

## Parliament.

a guard, 107. tumults of the mob about the House of Lords against the bishops, 111, 129 *n.* encouraged by the Commons, 114. watches appointed by the Lords, 115. but dismissed by the Commons, 116. all the bishops and many others intimidated from attending, 119. the Commons accuse of treason all the bishops who protested respecting their constrained absence from Parliament, 142. censure of this measure, 143-146. five members of the Commons accused of treason by order of the King, 148-151. the King demands them in person, 152. reason for their taking refuge in the city, 156. and for concealing themselves for a time, 162. the Commons adjourn, and appoint a committee to sit in the city, 159. the Lords adjourn, but appoint no committee, *ib.* the committee of the Commons well received in the city, 160. its transactions, 161-163, 184-5, 204. the King's going to the House of Commons voted the highest breach of privilege, 164, 166. the King's answer to the former Remonstrance of the Commons, 167. declaration of the Commons respecting the five members, 186-189. the five members required by the Commons to resume their seats, 194. they are brought in triumph to Westminster, 197-9. the Buckinghamshire petition to the Commons, 200-1. and to the Lords, 203. the Commons review the votes passed by their committee in the city, and add more, 204. accuse lord Digby of high treason, 205. orders of both Houses respecting the Tower, Hull, and Portsmouth, 207. the Commons vote a charge against, and impeach, the Attorney-General for impeaching their five members, 208-310. *v.* 45. message from the King to both Houses, *iv.* 211. unnoticed by them, 212. fresh committees of both Houses appointed to sit in the city, *ib.*

motive for removing there, 213. the Commons pass St.-John's militia bill, 214. both Houses move the King that the magazine at Hull may be removed to the Tower, 216. they send both the Hothams to Hull, *ib.* a new Remonstrance prepared by the committee at Grocers' Hall, 219-228. the King's proposition and message to both Houses, Jan. 20, 229. both Houses petition him concerning the accused members, 230. his answer, *ib.* their reply, 232. the Commons, without the concurrence of the Lords, petition the King to intrust the Tower of London and other forts to persons recommended by them, 238. his answer, 239-43. they desire to borrow money of the city for Ireland, 245. petitions from several counties, 247. conference thereon with the Lords, 247-52. the Commons attack the duke of Richmond for language used in the House of Lords, 254-61. a petition to the Commons from the porters of London, 262. and from the poor people of London, 264. the militia bill passed by the Lords, 271. and the bills touching the bishops' votes and pressing, 274. petition from Surrey, 272. both Houses adjourn again into London, 274. and petition the King touching the Tower of London, forts, and militia, 275. his answer concerning the militia, 283. the Commons return him thanks, and request that sir J. Conyers be made lieutenant of the Tower, 284. which is granted, *ib.* the King's demand of reparation for an expression in Pym's speech, 287. their answer, 288. his reply, 290. they persist in defending the expression, 292. the ordinance agreed on by both Houses for settling the militia, 306-7. the King's answer concerning the militia, 311. reply of the Commons, *ib.* the twelve imprisoned bishops bailed by the Lords, 312. but recommitted by



## Parliament.

the Commons, 312. the Commons raise money under pretence of relieving Ireland, 313. and endeavour to prevent the Prince of Wales from removing from Hampton-court to Greenwich to meet his father, 314. the King's farther answer respecting the militia, 317. votes of both Houses upon it, 322. and petition to the King, *ib.* his answer, 326. resolutions of both Houses upon it, 329. they order a fleet to be prepared, 330. their declaration of March 9, 1642, to the King, 331-7. and their reasons for his continuance near the Parliament, 341. his answer, 344. instances of illegal proceedings of the Commons against individuals, 338-40. the King's message to both Houses on his way to York, 346. votes of both Houses concerning the militia, 350. order concerning Hull, 352. they make propositions for adventurers in Ireland, 355. to which the King consents, *ib.* and passes a bill to that purpose, 358.

Petition of the Lords and Commons to the King, March 26, 1642, v. 14. his answer, 19. its effect, 30. both Houses vote that whoever accepted the offices from which the earls of Essex and Holland were removed by the King, should be reputed enemies of their country, 35, 116 *n.* the Commons desire to have an admiral of the fleet appointed without applying to the King, 36. he interferes, *ib.* the message of both Houses to him upon the matter, 37. his answer, 38. the earl of Warwick appointed notwithstanding, 39. the bill of tonnage and poundage suffered by Parliament to expire, 41. their method of screening the collectors from a *præmunire* till a new bill passed, 41-2. object of these measures, 43. trial of the Attorney General on impeachment, 45-9. the Commons impeach G. Binion for drawing up the

London petition against the militia bill, 51. a petition from Kent concerning the militia and the Book of Common Prayer, how received by Parliament, 52. petition of both Houses to the King to remove the magazine from Hull, 53. his answer, 54. the magazine removed notwithstanding, 57. the King's message to both Houses offering to go in person to Ireland, 59. their answer, 64. his reply, 68. his message to both Houses concerning his refusal to pass the bill for the militia, 80. their exultation at the failure of the King's design of securing Hull, 92. his message to them concerning Hull, *ib.* his second message about it, 93. their declaration and votes upon the matter, 94, 95. his answer, 97. they appoint the younger Hotham governor of Hull, in case of any accident to his father, 106. the bearers of their answer to the King designed as a committee to remain at York, *ib.* their answer to his messages, 107. his reply, 111. declaration of both Houses concerning the militia, 118. which was circulated without being sent to the King, 121. his declaration in answer to it, 122. their declaration concerning a reformation of the liturgy, 133. they nominate the Assembly of Divines, 135. they enforce the ordinance respecting the militia by calling out the train-bands of London, 139. votes of both Houses in consequence of the King appointing a guard for his person, 142. their petition to him to dissolve his guards, 144. his answer, 147. observations on their declaration and vote that the King intended to make war upon them, 150-2. they forbid Skippon from repairing to York in obedience to the King's warrant, 155. and counter-order the King's adjournment of the term to York, *ib.* declaration of both Houses, May 19, 1642, of what had been done

## Parliament.

amiss throughout the King's reign, 157. a fresh remonstrance of both Houses, May 26, 217-48. many members of both Houses either absent themselves, or join the King, in consequence of it, 249. the King's answer to their declaration of May 19, 250-279. and to their remonstrance of May 26, 280-317. money borrowed from the city for Ireland, 319. the nineteen propositions sent to the King by both Houses, 320-22. his answer to them, 326-32. their order against pawning the crown jewels, 323-25. their proceedings against such members as had absented themselves, 334, 362. their propositions and orders for bringing in money and plate for maintaining horse, &c., 335. immense sums brought in, 338. why those members of both Houses who were favourable to the King absented themselves, instead of remaining to oppose the others, 357. the King's commissions of array declared illegal by Parliament, 364 and *n.* their petition to the King in favour of the Yorkshire petition which he had refused, *ib. n.* 5. his answer, *ib. n.* 9. their declaration to the city upon the King's letter to the lord mayor and aldermen, 368. his reply, 369. they appoint the earl of Warwick Lord High Admiral, on the King's revoking the earl of Northumberland's commission, 377 *n.*, 380. votes of both Houses for raising an army, 388. the earl of Essex appointed general, *ib.* petition of both Houses to the King at Beverley, 389. his answer, 394. his refusal to return a more gentle reply, 412. their replication to his answer, 421. proofs that if the King were more loved, the Parliament was more feared, 417. each party prepares for war, 423. unjust proceedings of both Houses against the lord mayor of London, 425. and against judge Mallet, 426. their preparations for war, 424.

427. their declaration to the people as to their objects in raising an army, 428.

The King's message to them for peace, *vi.* 11. how received, 12. their answer, 14. his second message, 16. their answer, 18. and their declaration to the kingdom, 20. advantageous to the King, 21, 57. his third message in answer to their last reply, 22. reasons of their being backward in beginning the war, 30, 31. their cruelty towards such as were inclined to the King, 34-8. they send out of the country the Queen's Capuchin friars, 47. their instructions to their general, 49. their petition to the King sent to their general to be presented, 52, 66 *n.* never formally delivered, 66 *n.*, 70. vote that all who did not contribute to the charge of the commonwealth should be disarmed and secured, 54. both Houses how affected by the accounts of the battle of Edgehill, 101. they appoint a thanksgiving day, *ib.* resolve to send an address to the King, 102. apprentices invited by them to take arms, 103. a declaration sent to Scotland, 105. declaration in reply to one from Scotland about religion, 122. they send a petition to the King, 127-130. his answer, 133. their peaceable intentions set aside by his advance to Brentford, 136, 142. his message to them, 141. their ordinance for raising money upon the public faith, 144. their declaration of their general's acceptable service, 147. another petition from them to the King, 149. his answer, 151-3. they declare all whom the King appointed sheriffs to be delinquents, 169. they propose to make a Great Seal, *ib.* *vii.* 48. issue counter-proclamations to those of the King, *vi.* 170-1. their declaration to the States General, 173-5. the inclinations of foreign states towards them or the King, 177-9. their new ordinance for raising money,

## Parliament.

188. the King's declaration thereupon, 196. their humble desires and propositions to the King, 231. his answer, 233. they disown the articles of neutrality agreed on in Yorkshire, 258. they make lord Fairfax their general there, 262. communications between the King and Parliament about Ireland, 297-301. some Irish lords imprisoned by Parliament, 302. negotiations between Parliament and the King concerning a treaty, 316-20. the majority of members, though outwitted, are in favour of peace, 317. their terms for a cessation of arms, 320-2. different opinions of the Privy Council as to the King's acceptance, 323-8. Parliament passes an ordinance for a weekly assessment on the whole kingdom, 326. the King's proposals of alterations in the articles of cessation, 329-33. the treaty at Oxford begins upon the proposals of cessation, but takes no effect, 370-5. the Parliament's desires to the King respecting the next assizes, 378. his answer, 379. their ordinance forbidding them, 380. account of the Privy Councillors who stayed with the Parliament, 398-411.

Debates upon the first articles of the treaty at Oxford, vii. 1-15. the King's message to Parliament thereon, 15-29. who return no answer, but relinquish the treaty, 20. Parliament dissatisfied about the taking of Reading, 46. some proposals of the Commons not concurred in by the Lords, 48. message from the King, 50. his messenger committed by the Commons, 51. and the Queen impeached of high treason for assisting him in the war, 52. the plot of Mr. Waller and others in favour of the King, 54-67, 72, 84 *n.* the vow and covenant taken by Parliament in consequence, 67, 68, 84 *n.* and throughout the city and army, 70. the Parliament send sir W. Waller

they send commissioners into Scotland for relief, 135. alarmed by the capture of Bristol, 165. propositions for peace given by the Lords to the Commons, 166. debate thereon, 167. assented to by the Commons, 168. if sent to the King would have produced peace, 169. preached against in London, *ib.* Common Council petitions against them, 170. they are in consequence rejected by the Commons, *ib.* women petition for peace, but are dispersed by soldiers, 171. an ordinance passed for raising an army under the earl of Manchester, 162. certain lords and some of the Commons go over from the Parliament to the King, 174, 187, 188. certain counties associated to serve the Parliament, 177. Parliament resolves to relieve Gloucester, 190. commits the custody of the Tower to the lord mayor Pennington, 202. transactions of the committee of both Houses in Scotland, 249-52. the Covenant proposed by the Scots for the two kingdoms, and agreed to, 251. taken and subscribed by the two Houses and their Assembly of Divines, 257. copy of it, 259. Parliament prevails with the city to advance £100,000 to the Scots for their co-operation, 264. substance of the treaty between the English commissioners and the Scots, 274. proceedings with regard to comte d'Harcourt, ambassador from France, 302-3. the taking the Covenant enjoined, 313. Parliament votes a new Great Seal, 313-4, 369, viii. 213. which is delivered to six commissioners, vii. 315-6. Parliament disowns the cessation agreed to by the King with the rebels of Ireland, 340. its letter to the Lords Justices and Council on the subject, 342. their answer, 344-366. the King's message to both Houses for a treaty, 390. their answer, 392. they impose an excise, 396. reception of the Elector Palatine, 414.

## Parliament.

The Commons form an association of eastern counties under the earl of Manchester, viii. 18. write to the earl of Essex in expectation of the King's surrendering, 41. write to blame him for going westwards, 52. the King sends a message of peace to the Parliament, which was not noticed, 133. divisions in the Parliament, 181-5, 259. many desire peace, 187-9, 198. the Independents are against peace, 190. the Self-denying Ordinance, 193-7, 201. reception of messengers from the King for a treaty, 202-3. the trial of archbishop Laud, 205-8. Parliament agrees to a treaty at Uxbridge, 210. names of their commissioners, 211. and of the King's, *ib.* meeting of the commissioners, 215-18. particulars respecting it, first, of religion, 221-32. secondly, of the militia, 233, 249-50. thirdly, of Ireland, 234-7. the end of the treaty without effect, 251-2, 259. the Self-denying Ordinance debated in and passes the Commons, 259-61. (where it was proposed by Vane and Cromwell, 193.) and the Lords, ix. 4. dispute with the House of Peers about a reprieve for the Hothams, viii. 283. after the loss of Leicester Parliament begins to wish for peace, ix. 34. neglect of, and replies to, the King's messages for a treaty, 163-5. ordinance upon the renewal of his request, 166.

Bellièvre's fruitless negotiation with the King and Parliament, x. 54. order made for the King's being sent to Warwick Castle, 61. the Parliament, upon the Scots' request, send propositions of peace to him, while with the Scots, 63. his answer, *ib.* they demand his surrender, and the Scots comply, 67-69. they appoint a committee and servants to attend him, 69. refuse to let any of his own chaplains attend him, 71. differences arise between the Parliament and

army, 79-85. their declarations in consequence of the proceedings of the army, 85-7. the second declaration afterwards raised out of their journal book, 87. they appoint a committee to treat with a committee of the army, *ib.* their intention of seizing Cromwell frustrated by his returning to the army, 88-9. alarmed at the seizure of the King by the army, 90, 91. their alarm at the approach of the army towards London, 92. they issue declarations against the army, 94. the different designs of the Parliament and army relating to the King, 101-2. eleven members of the Commons impeached by the army, 105. intimidated by the London apprentices, Parliament alters the ordinance of militia, 107. Fairfax's sharp letter to them in consequence, 108. the two Speakers, with other members of the two Houses, join the army, 108-111. both Houses choose new Speakers, 108. but Fairfax brings back the two Speakers and other members, 112, 113. Presbyterians prevalent in Parliament, 122. the Parliament's action on the news of the King's escape from Hampton Court, 138. they send to him to pass four bills, 141. the Scotch commissioners protest against them, 142. the King's answer, 143. how received by Parliament, 146. who vote that no more addresses should be sent to him, *ib.* their declaration to the same effect, 148. passed not without opposition, 149. proved odious to the people in general, 151. answered by Hyde, *ib.* n. Parliament apprehensive of Scotland, 157. rivalry of parties in Parliament, 174.

They send commissioners into Scotland, xi. 16. the city petitions Parliament for a personal treaty with the King, 110. a committee of Parliament treats with them about it, *ib.* the Parliament declares for a personal treaty, *ib.* a committee

## Parliament.

sent to Carisbrooke, 111. substance of the message to the King, 112. his answer, 113. the vote of no more addresses repealed, 114. the treaty to be at Newport, *ib.* whither the Parliament commissioners arrive, 153. [See Charles I; Newport.] a sharp debate in the House of Commons on the commissioners' report of this treaty, 199-200. remonstrance of the army presented to Parliament, 202. vote of the Commons upon the King's being removed from Carisbrooke castle to Hurst, 204. another declaration of the army to them, *ib.* they vote that the King's answer was a ground for peace, 205. many of the members seized by the soldiers when entering the House, 206. the remaining members vote the contrary to former votes, *ib.* vote that those who were absent at the negative vote should sit no more in the House, 207. the vote of no more addresses renewed, 208. the protestation of the secluded members voted against by both Houses, 209. vote of the Commons about settling a form of government, 210. a committee appointed to prepare a charge of high treason against the King, 211. the charge approved by the Commons, 217. rejected by the Lords, *ib.* the ambassador sent from Holland to intercede for the King, not admitted to audience till after the tragedy was acted, 216. the Queen sent a paper to the same effect to Parliament, but it was laid aside, *ib.* the Commons constitute a high court of justice for the trial of the King, 218. their proclamation against proclaiming the Prince of Wales king, 246. they abolish the House of Peers, 247. and the office of kingship, 248. they make a new great seal, 249, 252. six of their own judges resign, 249. they give the name of the *Upper Bench* to the King's Bench, *ib.* a new oath imposed by them,

called the Engagement, 252. they appoint a high court of justice for the trial of duke of Hamilton, the earls of Holland and Norwich, lord Capel, and sir J. Owen, *ib.*

Their answer to the protest of the Scotch commissioners against the King's trial, xii. 10. whom they imprisoned, but afterwards freed, 11. they appoint Cromwell lord-lieutenant of Ireland, 70. they refuse to ratify Monck's treaty with O'Neill, 146.

More inclined to make a peace with Spain than France, xiii. 8. whither they send Ascham as their agent, *ib.* resolve to send Cromwell into Scotland against the King, 19. send ambassadors into Holland to invite the States to a strict union, 154. without effect, 155. they thereupon pass the Navigation Act, 156. the Dutch order their ships not to strike to the English, 158. a war is begun on this account, 159. the Parliament's answer to a message from the States, 161. who send again to them for peace, 169.

The Parliament not so obedient to Cromwell as he expected, xiv. 1, 2. the army desires them to dissolve, 3. they debate thereon, 4-7. Cromwell dissolves the Parliament, 8. he chooses a new one, 14. conditions and qualifications of the persons nominated, 15. nicknamed Praise-God Barebone's Parliament, *ib.* called together by Cromwell's warrant, 16. who also delivers to them an instrument for their authority, 17. they choose Rouse their Speaker, 18. their proceedings, 19, 20. they dissolve, and give up their authority to Cromwell, 21. who calls another Parliament after a new method, 43. his speech to them, 44. Lenthall chosen Speaker, *ib.* they discuss the government, 45. the Protector reproaches them, 46. admits none into the House but such as subscribe an engagement to him, *ib.* dissolves them, 47. Cromwell

## Parliament.

in 1645 prevented the prosecution of Lilburne by the Parliament, 51.

Cromwell again summons a Parliament, 1656, xv. 28. imposes a subscription upon the members, *ib.* proceedings of this Parliament, 29. proposition to make Cromwell king, 31, 41. discussions thereon, 32-38. he is confirmed Protector by the *Humble Petition and Advice*, 43-4. Parliament adjourned, 49. re-assembled in two Houses, Lords and Commons, 58. the Commons re-admit certain members that had been excluded, 60. dispute the authority of the Other House, 61. dissolved for presuming to question the Protector's authority, 62.

A Parliament called by the Protector Richard, xvi. 3. debates in the Commons about the revenue and about the Other House, 4. carried that the Other House should be allowed, 5. votes of Parliament on the address of the council of officers to the Protector, 8. the Protector dissolves the Parliament, 11. the Long Parliament restored by the council of officers, 12. some of the old excluded members enter the House, but are excluded again, 13. Richard and Henry Cromwell submit to the Parliament, 15, 16. Monck from Scotland declares his obedience to them, 19. and the navy, *ib.* they continue Lockhart as ambassador in France, *ib.* send ambassadors to mediate peace between Sweden and Denmark, *ib.* pass an act of indemnity for the army, *ib.* appoint all commissions to be signed by the Speaker, 20. banish all the cavaliers from London, 21. send Lambert against sir G. Booth and sir T. Middleton, 41. transport royalist families to the Plantations, 78. grow jealous of Lambert's army, *ib.* petition and proposals of that army, 80. with which Haerlig acquaints the

House, 80. they vote to have no more general officers, *ib.* they make void the custom and excise acts, that there may be nothing to maintain the army, 82. and cashier Lambert and eight other chief officers, *ib.* they make seven commissioners to govern the army, *ib.* and send for forces to defend them, 84. Lambert, with some troops, stops the Speaker, and prevents the House from meeting, *ib.* a committee of safety constituted by the army, 90. Monck declares for the Parliament, 94. Lawson and the fleet also, 106. and Desborough's regiment, 108. the Parliament meets again, 109. they revive the custom and excise acts, *ib.* they order Lambert's troops to their quarters, *ib.* commit him to the Tower, 111. and confine to their houses such of their members as had concurred with the committee of safety, *ib.* would gladly have sent Monck back to Scotland, 116. send Scot and Robinson to meet him, 119. at his demand they send the other regiments out of London, 120. his complimentary reception by Parliament, 121. his reply, 122. the Common Council of the city refuses to submit to the Parliament, 124. Monck sent by Parliament to reduce it to obedience, 126. Parliament offends Monck and his officers by receiving a petition from Barebone and by proposing to join others in commission with him, 127-9. he writes to them an angry letter, and desires them to dissolve, 130. he delivers his mind to them at a conference, 133. the secluded members return to the House, 135. the change of action in Parliament, *ib.* it appoints a new Council of State, and dissolves itself, 136. some members attempt to prevent a new Parliament, 144-5. the Council of State's prudent actions, 151. character of the elections, 163. the new Parliament meets and chooses sir H. Grim-

- stone Speaker, 211. the King's letter to the Commons, 184. and to the Lords, 198. which, with his Declaration, they receive with great joy, 213. a committee appointed to prepare an answer, *ib.* the answer, 216-19. the House rewards the King's messenger, 220. both Houses proclaim the King, 221. a committee of both Houses wait on the King at the Hague, to invite him to return to the throne, 239.
- Parliament at Oxford, viii. 198. summoned by the King, vii. 326-8, 369 *n.* 7. both Houses meet, 370. substance of the King's speech to them, 371. they send a letter to the earl of Essex, 370 *n.* 2, 372. his answer directed to the earl of Forth, 377. means agreed on by both Houses to raise money, 394. they follow the example of the Parliament at Westminster in imposing excise, 396. issue a Declaration, 397-8. the Parliament prorogued, viii. 23.
- Parliament of Scotland: *see* Scotland.
- Parry, sir George, one of the commissioners for the county of Devon, ix. 7.
- Parsons, sir William, removed by the King from being a lord justice in Ireland, iv. 41 *n.* vi. 314.
- Paterculus, Velleius, quoted, ix. 19. xv. 1, 136, 147. xvi. 98.
- [Paulden, Tho., Tim., and Will., xi. 126 *n.*]
- Paulet, lord Edward, viii. 139.
- Paulet, sir John, viii. 1.
- Paulet, or Poulett, John, lord, viii. 148. ix. 27 *n.* a commissioner to treat with the Scots at Ripon, ii. 107. signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. accompanied the marq. of Hertford into the west, 385, 441 *n.* 2, 443. vi. 6. and thence into Glamorganshire, vi. 33. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6. [his widow married John Ashburnham, x. 132 *n.*]
- Pauw, Adrian, sent by the States of Holland to the English Parliament to intercede for Charles I, xi. 214-6. sent to ask for peace, xiii. 160.
- Pawlet: *see* Paullet.
- Peard, —, inveighs in Parliament against ship-money, i. 166 *n.* ii. 61.
- Peers in council at York set down in writing the affronts offered to them at London, v. 341. their declaration that the King had no intention of war, 346. Peers at Oxford write to the Privy Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6.
- Pembroke: col. Poyer, the Parliamentary governor, xi. 40. the castle taken, 115 *n.*
- Pembroke, William Herbert, third earl of, the most beloved and esteemed of any man of the age, i. 120. married one of the heiresses of Shrewsbury, *ib.* his character, 121-6. his vices, 123. unhappy in his marriage, *ib.* made Lord Chamberlain, and afterwards Lord Steward, 124. his death, *ib.* anecdote respecting its being foretold, 125. succeeded in his title by his brother, 127.
- Pembroke, Philip Herbert, fourth earl of, previously earl of Montgomery, iii. 234. iv. 256, 344. v. 35, 428. vi. 288, 403 *n.* viii. 150. made Lord Chamberlain, i. 125. succeeded his brother as earl of Pembroke, 127. one of King James's favourites, *ib.* superseded by Carr, earl of Somerset, 128. his character, *ib.* vi. 399-401. averse from the war with Scotland, ii. 48. a commissioner to treat with the Scots at Ripon, 107. one of the King's council at York, 113. sent to London to obtain money from the city, 115. his interest great enough to command many boroughs, iii. 1 *n.* his quarrel with lord Mowbray in the House of Lords, 213. vi. 400 *n.* sent to the Tower and deprived of his staff of Lord Chamberlain, *ib.* v. 35. voted against Strafford, iii. 214. Lord Warden of the Stannary courts, 269. one

- of those sent by Parliament with a petition to the King at Colnbrook, vi. 128, 129. and with propositions of peace, 230. fear induced him to side with the Parliament, 400. gave himself up into the hands of lord Say, *ib.* made governor of the Isle of Wight, 401, 441 *n.* 1. why Hyde always entertained a great kindness for him, 401. one of the few peers who attended Parliament, vii. 369 *n.* 5, 375. one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, viii. 211, 215, 232. tries to persuade Hyde to consent to all the Parliament demanded, 243, 248. totally without credit or interest in the Parliament or country, 245. Chancellor of Oxford, when the University was visited, x. 123.
- Pembroke, Philip Herbert, fifth earl of, and second earl of Montgomery, xiv. 139, 140, 142.
- Pembrokeshire, vi. 288. vii. 131, 287, 298.
- Penal laws: a repeal expected by foreign R. Catholics on Charles I's proposed marriage with the Infanta of Spain, i. 25. they were rigidly executed by Lord Treasurer Weston, 107. complained of by the duke of Neuburg, xiv. 121.
- Pendennis castle, vi. 239, 244, 252, 397. vii. 87, 121 *n.*, 132, 369 *n.* 4, 408. ix. 79, 83, 104, 115, 147, 148, 150-153, 157, 158, 159 *n.*, 160. x. 2, 3, 45, 158. bravely defended against the Parliament forces, x. 73. surrendered on honourable terms, *ib.*
- Penkarvan, Edward, signed the Levellers' address to Charles II, xv. 118.
- Penn, admiral, a fleet sent out under him, with a land army under Venables, xv. 5-7. their orders, 10. they go to Barbadoes, 9. thence to Hispaniola, *ib.* unsuccessful there, 10. successful in a descent upon Jamaica, 11. they return to England, *ib.* are committed by Cromwell to the Tower, 13. he held communication with the King, 6.
- Pennington, Isaac, alderman, iv. 12. v. 441 *n.* 4. vi. 145, 191, 203, 204, 216, 225, 228. vii. 170. presents a petition to Parliament against episcopacy, iii. 66. opposes Hyde about borrowing money in the city, 92. made lord mayor in the room of sir R. Gurney, deposed by the Lords, iv. 182. chosen lord mayor a second time, vi. 143. the custody of the Tower committed to him by Parliament, vii. 202.
- Pennington, sir John, iv. 332. v. 382, 436. the King desires his appointment as admiral, v. 36-8. he is objected to by Parliament, 39, 372 *n.*, 374. the King proposes to appoint him to take charge of the fleet in the room of the earl of Northumberland, 376. his objections to being appointed, 377. alters his mind, and offers to accept the appointment, 378. how far concerned in the King's losing the fleet, 377 *n.*, 378-380, 382.
- Pennyman, sir William, vi. 62 *n.*, 257. notice of him as governor of Oxford, viii. 121. his death, *ib.*
- Penrhyn, Cornwall, ix. 158 *n.*
- Penrith, Cumberland, xi. 72.
- Penruddock, John, concerned in the rising at Salisbury for Charles II, xiv. 131-2. taken prisoner and beheaded, 134.
- Peushurst, Kent, xiv. 85, 86.
- Percy, Henry, afterwards lord, iv. 41 *n.* xi. 63, 137. xiv. 89, 90, 93. concerned in the alleged plot in 1641 between the Court and the army, iii. 174, 192 *n.*, 223, 226, 228. v. 162, 193, 202. escaped beyond sea, iii. [182 *n.*], 192 *n.*, 229. after concealment in his brother's house, 223-4, 229. is created a baron at the Queen's intercession, viii. 96 *n.*, 97, 269, 275. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6. removed from the office of general of the ordnance, viii. 96 *n.*, 97.
- Pericles, i. 163.
- Pernon Fort, Cornwall, viii. 109.
- [Perre, P. van de, ambassador from Holland, xiii. 160 *n.*]



- Pershore, Worcestershire, the King there, vii. 209 *n.*, viii. 50.
- Perth, or St. Johnstone's, xiii. 23, 48, [56 *n.*]
- Peru, xv. 53.
- Peterborough, John Mordaunt, first earl of, xv. 93.
- Peterborough, Henry Mordaunt, second earl of, xv. 93. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6. prepares to rise with the earl of Holland in favour of the King, xi. 6.
- Peterborough, bishop of: *see* J. Towers.
- Peters, Hugh, viii. 282, 283.
- Petherton Bridge, royalist troops attack each other at, ix. 45, 100.
- Petition of right, v. 54. its origin, i. 8. not prejudicial to the crown, *ib.*
- Petitions, mode of falsification of, iii. 67. petition intended to be subscribed by the officers of the army, 170. a petition of the London apprentices against Papists and prelates, 105. petition and protestation of bishops on their constrained absence from the House of Lords, 140. petition of the poor in and about the city to the Commons, 264. from the Common Council of London against peace, vii. 170. a tumultuous petition of apprentices and others to Parliament concerning the militia, x. 107. the *Humble petition and advice* to Cromwell, xv. 43-44.
- Petworth, Sussex, vii. 174, 188, 248, 313 *n.*
- Pezenas, in Languedoc, part of Clarendon's *Life* written there, vi. 411 *n.* the property of the prince of Conti, xvi. 17.
- Pharaoh, xiv. 6.
- Pheasant, sergeant, vi. 231.
- Philip II, IV: *see* Spain.
- Phillips, colonel Robert, assisted Charles II in his escape after his defeat at Worcester, xiii. 103-5.
- Phillips, father, the Queen's confessor, iv. 41 *n.* notice of his death and character, xiii, 44.
- Picardy, xii. 121.
- [Piedmont, vii. 299 *n.*]
- Pierce, Will., bishop of Bath and Wells, complaints against, iii. 68. signed the bishops' protestation in 1641, iv. 140.
- Pierrepont, W., one of the Parliament commissioners to treat with the King at Oxford, vi. 318, 369. and at Uxbridge, viii. 211. notice of him and his bitterness against the King, 248. was in favour of the Self-denying Ordinance, 261.
- Pignoranda, conde of, one of the Spanish council of state, xii. 105, 108. he and Fuensaldagna governed the councils at Brussels, 51. notice of him, *ib.*, 108. governed by Le Brune, 52. waited on Charles II at Brussels, 57.
- Pimentel, don Antonio, xvi. 51, 53, 61.
- Pinckney, Leonard, quartermaster general, ix. 110.
- Pistoia, xii. 94.
- Pius V, pope, published a bull against the *toros* in Spain, xii. 90.
- Plague in London, 1641, iv. 5. at Bristol and in Somerset in 1645, ix. 44.
- Plantations, the foreign, subdued to the Parliament, xiii. 172.
- Plate, brought in for the use of Parliament, v. 339. for the King, vi. 57-8.
- Plato, vii. 224.
- Playford, John, printer, xvi. 133.
- Plessis Praslin, marshal de, xii. 81.
- Plot, John, vi. 238.
- Plunket, sir Nicholas, sent from Ireland to treat with the duke of Lorraine, xiii. 176.
- Plutarch, quoted, i. 163. iii. 205. vi. 42. vii. 131, 279.
- Plymouth, vi. 242, 243, 246, 247, 249, 250. vii. 90, 93, 103, 151, 152, 194, 197, 298. viii. 1, 96 *n.*, 99, 117, 118, 131, 139, 144, 145. ix. 8, 25, 27, 43, 52, 54-56, 60-62, 64, 65, 92, 94, 103, 109, 113, 117, 133. xiv. 143. xv. 57. xvi. 26. prince Maurice's unsuccessful siege, vii. 290, 296-7. viii. 89 *n.* Mount-Stamford taken by

- ool. Digby, vii. 289, 296. sir R. Greenville appointed to block it up, viii. 133. pledged himself to take it very soon, ix. 22. the siege assigned to sir J. Berkeley, 26. to gen. Digby, 93, 108. battle with the Dutch fleet near Plymouth, xiii. 163.
- Poino en Rostro, conde de, xii. 85.
- Pointz, —, routs the King's horse at Chester, ix. 118-9, 120. his movements, 127, 128, 132.
- Poland, xiii. 130.
- Poland, John Casimir, king of, xii. 95. Vladislaus, king of, *ib.*
- Poland, Anna Catherine, daughter of Sigismund, king of, married the duke of Nemburg, xiv. 114.
- Poleron, island of, xiv. 33.
- Pollard, —, v. 432 *and n.* xvi. 26. concerned in the alleged army-plot, iii. 224, 226. iv. 4. v. 169. imprisoned in consequence, iii. 192 *n.*
- Pollard, sir Hugh, ix. 48. xiv. 143. xvi. 26, 99. accompanied the marq. of Hertford into the west, v. 385. had a friendship with general Monck, xvi. 99.
- Pompey, iv. 20. xiv. 12.
- Pontefract castle, vi. 268. xi. 115 *n.*, 153 *n.* besieged by the Scots, ix. 29. surrendered, 85. an account of the re-taking for the King, xi. 41, 56, 58, 97, 115-121. delivered up to Lambert, 124-6.
- Pontoise, xiv. 119.
- Poole, Dorset, vii. 95, 192, 298. viii. 118.
- Popham, Alexander, vi. 3, 7. vii. 101, *and n.*
- Popham, colonel Edward, a commander in the Parliament's fleet, xii. 112. follows prince Rupert to Lisbon, 112-5. one of the Independent party, viii. 240.
- Porridge, captain, ix. 99.
- Porter, Endymion, ix. 158 *n.* Parliament desires his removal from the King, iv. 222. selected to attend Prince Charles in his journey to Spain, i. 28. what situations he had filled, *ib.* excepted by Parliament from peace on any terms, vi. 50.
- Porter, lieutenant-general, ix. 47, 57, 99, 100. charges lord Goring with treachery, 20 *n.*, 21. Goring's countercharges against him, *ib.*, 83. joins the Parliament, 99.
- Portland, castle and island, Dorset, viii. 239. ix. 7, 8. surrendered to the King's forces, vii. 191. garrisoned by col. Ashburnham, viii. 60. besieged, but relieved by the King, 148.
- Portland, Rich. Weston, first earl of, i. 10. iii. 216. advised the dissolution of the third Parliament of Charles I, i. 9. to escape impeachment, *ib.* what effect the public odium had upon him, *ib.* such advice not to have been expected from him, 10. made Lord Treasurer through the duke of Buckingham, 101, 105. but probably would have been removed had the duke lived, 101. his rise and character, 101-115. first sent as ambassador into Flanders, 104. suspected of favouring the Roman religion, 107. yet never trusted by the Catholics, *ib.* against whom he enforced the penal laws, *ib.* his debts twice paid by the King, 108. who gave him Chute forest, *ib.* anecdote respecting him and Mr. Cæsar, 112. honours conferred upon him, 115. the earl of Holland made continual war upon him, 140. ii. 101. iv. 14. tried in vain to weaken Laud's influence with the King, i. 203. his death, 115, 203. ii. 100.
- Portland, Jerome Weston, second earl of, vii. 63. [appointed ranger of Richmond New Park, i. 212 *n.*] notice of his wife, i. 115. removed by Parliament from the government of the Isle of Wight, v. 136. vi. 401. and imprisoned, v. 136. and why, 440 *n.* I. Mr. Waller his intimate friend, vii. 57. charged with complicity in Waller's plot, but released on bail, 73. joins the King at Oxford, 174, 187. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6.

- Portland, Frances Stuart, countess of, i. 115.
- Portman, sir —, vii. 97.
- Portsmouth, iv. 207, 279, 280. v. [136 n.], 440. vi. 8, 34. vii. 4, 7, 85 n., 100. viii. 135 n., 149. xi. 71, 84. xv. 27. xvi. 94. under colonel Goring declares for the King, v. 439, 441 n., 443. besieged by the Parliament's forces, vi. 2, 8 n. surrendered to them, 32. the soldiers at Portsmouth adhere to the Parliament against Lambert, xvi. 93, 164.
- Portugal, iii. 181, 182. iv. 6. vi. 177. xii. 105, 106, 107, 110, 113, 148. xiii. 10, 16. xv. 26, 37, 53. how disposed towards Charles II, xii. 115. compelled by Cromwell to make peace, xiv. 34. the Portuguese ambassador's brother, don Pantaleon Sa, beheaded by Cromwell for murder, 39, 40. difficulty as to Portugal in the treaty between France and Spain, xvi. 54, 60-63.
- Portugal, John IV, king of, duke of Braganza, xii. 114. xv. 37.
- Portugal, Theodosius, prince of, xii. 114, 115.
- Portugal, Louisa de Guzman, queen of, xii. 114.
- [Postcombe, Oxon, vii. 76 n.]
- [Potley, colonel, xii. 129 n.]
- Potter, Christopher, dean of Worcester, one of the commissioners in ecclesiastical matters at Uxbridge, viii. 226.
- Poulett, lord : *see* Paulet.
- Poundage, *see* Tonnage.
- Powderham castle, Devon, ix. 109.
- Powell, colonel, commanded in South Wales for the Parliament, xi. 40. but declares for the King, *ib.*, 56 n. taken prisoner in Pembroke castle, 115 n.
- Poyer, colonel, raised himself from a low trade, xi. 40. made governor by Parliament of Pembroke, *ib.* declares for the King, *ib.*, 56 n. taken prisoner and shot, 115 n.
- Poyning's Act, iii. 109.
- Poyntz : *see* Pointz.
- Prado, near Madrid, i. 75.
- Prayer-Book : *see* Common-Prayer.
- Preaching, great license in, iii. 56, 65. vi. 40-42.
- Presbyterians, ix. 167. x. 8, 174. xiii. 19, 20, 169. xiv. 1, 2, 35, 51, 150. xvi. 5, 24, 26, 31, 91, 93, 106, 159, 160, 169, 209, 210, 215, 242. their clergy preach up rebellion, vi. 39. the Presbyterian party in Parliament, viii. 259-60. they oppose liberty of conscience, x. 80. comparison of the policy of Scottish Presbyterians and English Independents, 168-9, 171. Presbyterians discountenanced by Cromwell, xiii. 117. xv. 1. ministers dispute with Charles I about the bishops, xi. 168. divers divines went to Charles II at the Hague, xvi. 242. their public audience, *ib.* their private discourses with him, 243. how far the Presbyterians contributed to the overturning of the constitution, xi. 208. the Scottish Presbyterians desire Hyde's removal from the King, xiv. 63.
- Pressing : *see* Impressing.
- Preston, Lancashire : sir M. Langdale and the duke of Hamilton routed there, xi. 75, 76, 92.
- Preston, general John, xii. 67, 145. xiii. 112. his character, xi. 146.
- Pretty, or Pritty, captain, vi. 7.
- Price, Herbert, xvi. 141.
- Prideaux, Edmund, xi. 254. one of the six commissioners for the new Great Seal, vii. 315. one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, viii. 211. he, Vane, and St. John were but spies on the rest, 241.
- Prideaux, John, made bishop of Worcester, iv. 34.
- Prince, *the*, a ship so called, xvi. 245.
- Printing, great license in, iii. 56.
- Privilege, the House of Peers' recommending the Commons to begin with a supply, voted by the Commons a breach of, ii. 69. the King's interference whilst the bill concerning pressing was pending, voted such, iv. 92. as also his going to the Commons to demand the five members accused of treason, 186.

- Privy-Council, 'Committee of Council' [the original Cabinet Council], ii. 61. the powers of the Council enlarged, i. 149. Lord Keeper Finch's declaration in its favour, 158. prejudicial to it, *ib.* fixed days for meeting, ii. 99. a venerable board, vii. 279.
- Privy-Councillors, to be examined on oath, iii. 45, 46. divers new, of the popular party, sworn, 50. proper qualifications and duty of a Privy-Councillor, 51-55. an account and character of those attending the King in 1643, and of those who stayed with Parliament, vi. 382, 383. some sworn in by Charles II at Paris, xiii. 123.
- Progers, Henry, v. 378 n. x. 5. xiii. 11.
- Projects of all kinds, i. 147. of knight-hood, 148. of reviving forest laws, *ib.* of ship-money, *ib.* projectors excluded from Parliament, iii. 12, 13.
- Protector, *the*, a ship so called, xvi. 245.
- Protests: debate in the Commons against the right of entering a protest against any measure of that House, iv. 55, 78 n. origin of the custom of protesting in the House of Lords, 254. abuse of this custom, 1642, *ib.* protest of certain peers about a speech by the duke of Richmond, 256. taken notice of in the Commons, 257. (*See* Bishops.)
- Protestants of Germany and France received into England in the time of Edward VI, vi. 182. encouraged by queen Elizabeth, *ib.* discountenanced in the time of Charles I, *ib.*
- Protestation taken by Parliament on discovery of the alleged army-plot, iii. 186, 187. explanation of it by order of the Commons, 189 [*see* Parliament]. a protestation by the two parties in Devon and Cornwall, previous to a treaty, vi. 255. the protestation of the secluded members of the Commons, xi. 209. protestation of the royalists before the Restoration, xvi. 205-6.
- Providence*, a ship, v. 372 n., 374, 428, 430, 432 and n., 433, 444-vii. 24.
- Provisors of benefices, a clause from the preamble of the statute of, v. 225.
- Prynne, William, his prosecution in the Star-Chamber, i. 197. his character, iii. 57. punished for libel, 57 n.-62. petitions on his behalf, 63. his entry into London on his return from prison, 57 n., 64. prosecuted colonel Piennes for the surrender of Bristol, vii. 320. one of the commissioners to reform the University of Oxford, x. 123.
- [Pudsey, —, ii. 114 n.]
- Puleston, John, vi. 231.
- Puritans, iv. 204 n. v. 290.
- Purpoint: *see* Pierrepont.
- Pye, sir Robert, commanded the Parliament garrison in Leicester, ix. 33.
- Pym, John, ii. 86, 93. iii. 3, 34, 128. iv. 12, 32, 55, 76, 94 n., 114, 286. vi. 202. vii. 173. opens the debate in Parl. April 1640. concerning grievances, ii. 68. and again in the new Parliament in November, iii. 3. part of his speech, *ib.* conversation with Hyde, *ib.* his part in the proceedings against the earl of Strafford, iii. 1 n., 3, 5, 8-11, 106, 131-4. notice of his character, 30. a leader in the House of Commons, 55 n. a design of making him Chancellor of the Exchequer, iii. 84, 191, 192 n. iv. 122. vii. 411. supported the bill for tonnage and poundage, iii. 88. not hostile to the Church, 147. alleges discovery of a plot between the Court and the army, 181-3, 223, 226, 229. proposes the Protestation, 184. said to have been bribed to hinder Irish troops from enlisting in the service of Spain, 253. vii. 412. chairman of the committee of the Commons that sat during the recess in 1641, iv. 13, 15. of what advantage it might have been to have gained him and others over, 76. articles of treason charged against him

and others by order of the King, 148-149 [see Parliament]. speech on delivering certain petitions to the House of Lords, 247. thanked for it by the Commons, who order it to be printed, 252. the King demands reparation for an expression in it, 287. the answer of the Commons, 288. the King's reply, 290. farther communications respecting it, 344. v. 14, 22. the King cites his speech against Strafford, v. 56, 97. vi. 202. cites other words of his, v. 105. charges him with treason, 441 n. 4. part of his speech on the King's answer to the petition of the city of London, vi. 224-7. informed of Waller's plot, vii. 62. his death, 409. his character and conduct, 409-413. buried at Westminster, 413.

Pyne, John, a letter of his intercepted, viii. 240.

Pyrrhus, vii. 131.

## Q.

Quakers, x. 174. xiv. 1. xv. 103.

Quartermaine, Dr., the King's physician, xv. 90.

Queen of England: see Henrietta.

Queen regent of France: see France.

## R.

Raby, barony of, ii. 101.

[Radcot, Oxon, ix. 28 n.]

Radnor, ix. 72.

Radnor, earl of: see lord Roberts.

Ragland castle, the King there, ix. 67, 73, 87, 88, 89. besieged by Fairfax, xi. 177.

Rainsborough, colonel, x. 32 n. xi. 115. the army at Hounslow-heath send him to take possession of the city, x. 111, 112. made an admiral, xi. 23. part of his fleet revolt to the King, 24, 28. from what causes, 24. he and some officers put on shore by some seamen, 30. sent by Cromwell against Pontefract castle, 97, 122. part of the garrison attempt to seize him, 123. he is killed at Doncaster, *ib.*

Ramekins, the, xi. 79.

Ramsey, —, commanded a troop of the Parliament horse at the battle of Edge-hill, vi. 81. made governor of Marlborough, 156. taken prisoner there by Wilmot, 158.

Ramsey, David, ii. 103.

Rantzaw, marshal, governor of Dunkirk, xi. 78.

Ratcliffe, sir George, xiii. 40, 42. accused of high treason in order to prevent his giving evidence in favour of Strafford, iii. 93. had great interest with the duke of York, xiii. 38. recommends to the duke the pattern of the duke of Lorraine, *ib.* proposes a match for him with the duke of Lorraine's daughter, 41. the Queen complains of him and sir E. Herbert, 43, 122.

Ratishon, Diet at, xiv. 54, 55, 57, 77, 103, 112, 116, 127.

Reading, vi. 127, 134, 140, 141, 207, 235, 397. vii. 30, 45, 46 and n., 49, 74 and n., 94, 121 n., 135, 298, 401 n. viii. 5, 14, 15, 22, 25, 26, 58, 121, 124, 130, 139, 149, 279. ix. 11. x. 103. quitted by the Parliament forces, and taken possession of by the King, vi. 125. sir A. Aston made governor, 126 n., 155. fortified by the King, 155. besieged by the earl of Essex, vii. 24-8. the King attempts in vain to relieve it, 35. articles upon which it surrendered, 36. the breach of them gave rise to similar breaches in future, 37, 130. possessed again by the King's forces, 212, 214, 236. quitted by them, viii. 34, 36. occupied by Essex's army, 36, 39. the clothiers at Reading, vii. 369 n. 8.

Reay, Mackay, lord, ii. 103. vii. 369 n. 4.

Recruiting, opposition to, in 1627, i. 87.

Reeve, or Reeves, justice, v. 417, 419. vi. 231. vii. 317.

Religion, committee of House of Commons for, iii. 56, 66.

Remonstrance against the King debated in the Commons, and carried by eleven voices, iv. 49-52,

- 73 *n.* ordered to be printed, 58, 78 *n.* substance of it, 59-73. the King's answer, 167-72. the committee at Grocers' hall design a new remonstrance, 219. the matter they prepared for it, 220. the declaration or remonstrance of the Lords and Commons of May 19, 1642, v. 157. their remonstrance of May 26, 217. what effect it had, 249. the King's answer to that of May 19, 250. and to that of May 26, 280. the large remonstrance of the army brought to the Commons by six officers, xi. 201.
- Reprin Bridge, Cornwall, viii. 109.
- Retz, cardinal de, friendly discourse with Charles II, xiv. 66. is sent to the Bastille, *ib.*
- [Reynell, sir Richard, and his daughter Jane, vii. 100 *n.*]
- Reynolds, Richard, signed the Levellers' address to Charles II, xv. 118.
- Reynolds, Richard, one of the Presbyterian divines who had audience of the King at the Hague, xvi. 242.
- Reynolds, Robert, he and Mr. Goodwyn sent by Parliament as a committee into Ireland, vi. 315. vii. 363. commanded the English in the service of France, xv. 52. was cast away, coming out of Flanders, 63.
- Rhé, isle of, unsuccessful attempt against, i. 5, 51. vii. 121 *n.* viii. 134. bitter feeling on account of it, i. 86, 87. ix. 171.
- Rhine, the, xiv. 111. xvi. 62.
- Rhodes, sir Edward, vi. 258 *bis.*
- Rich, colonel, xi. 104. xv. 42.
- Rich, Henry: *see* earl of Holland.
- Rich, Robert, third lord Rich, and first earl of Warwick, i. 137.
- Rich, Robert, lord, afterwards third earl of Warwick, signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. and the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6.
- Rich, Robert, grandson of the earl of Warwick, married Frances Cromwell, xv. 51, 145. his death, 145.
- Richard II, iii. 125. v. 142, 148. xi. 218.
- Richard III, v. 247.
- Richaute, —, viii. 99-101.
- Richelieu, cardinal, i. 53. encourages the disaffected in Scotland, ii. 55. vi. 178. ix. 171, 174. mention of his death, vii. 299. ix. 172. reasons of his hatred against the English, ix. 171. why he raised cardinal Mazarin, 172.
- Richmond, iv. 23, 215. v. 89. Park made by Charles I, i. 208-212.
- Richmond, Esmé Stewart, second duke of, and third duke of Lennox; his daughter married to lord Portland's son, i. 115.
- Richmond, James Stewart, third duke of, and fourth duke of Lennox, vi. 89. vii. 401 *n.* viii. 15, 222. ix. 69, 70, 164. xi. 113. High Steward and High Admiral of Scotland by descent, i. 169. sells land to the King for endowment of the see of Edinburgh, 182. the only trusty counsellor about the King in Scotland, ii. 47. iv. 42. with the King at York, ii. 113. notice of his character and conduct, 47, 113. iii. 87, 237. made Steward of the Household, vi. 401. Warden of the Cinque Ports, vii. 7. compelled to give up the wardenship, iii. 237, 239. certain expressions of his, the subject of debate in both Houses of Parliament, iv. 255-61. v. 116 *n.* his character defended, iv. 259. farther notice of his character, vi. 384. married the duke of Buckingham's daughter, *ib.* signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. one of those excepted against by Parliament from making peace with them on any terms, vi. 50. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6. one of the council for the Prince of Wales, viii. 180. sent to the Parliament with a message for a treaty, 199, 202, 204. one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, 211, 216, 222, 224. excused himself from leaving the King to attend the Prince, 280. attended the King

- at the treaty at Newport, xi. 113.  
 attended the King's funeral, 244.  
 died before the Restoration, 245.
- Richmond, Mary Villiers, duchess of, vi. 384.
- Richmondshire, vi. 263.
- Riuccini, J. B., nuncio in Ireland, vi. 309. x. 154. xi. 148. xii. 3, 65 n. xiv. 120.
- Ripon, negotiations there in 1640 between the English and Scotch commissioners, ii. 107-116.
- Rivers, John Savage, second earl of, signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. excepted by Parliament from peace with them, vi. 50. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 n. 6.
- Rivers, countess of, her house plundered by the rabble, because she was a Papist, vi. 38.
- Robartes, or Roberts, lord, afterwards earl of Radnor, viii. 109. refuses to take the protestation imposed by the Commons, iii. 187, 231. present on the Parliament side at the battle of Edge-hill, vi. 79. one of the few lords who attended Parliament, vii. 369 n. 5, 375. notice of him, viii. 92. pressed the earl of Essex's advancing into Cornwall, 91, 92. escapes thence by sea to Plymouth, 117. appointed governor of Plymouth by Essex, 133. his estate in Cornwall granted by the King to sir R. Greenville, ix. 62, 140.
- Robinson, —, sent by Parliament to meet Monck, marching towards London, xvi. 119, 129.
- Robinson, colonel, ix. 25. governor of Launceston, 141. assists lord Byron to gain Anglesea, xi. 41.
- Rochelle, i. 95. iv. 60. vi. 181. vii. 121 n. ix. 171. x. 148. xvi. 45. besieged by cardinal Richelieu, i. 53. the duke of Buckingham assassinated when going to its relief, 53-55.
- Rochester, xi. 55. xvi. 246.
- Rochester, earl of: *see* Wilnot.
- Rochford, John Carey, viscount, afterwards earl of Dover, present on the Parliament side at the battle of Edge-hill, vi. 79. one of the few lords who attended Parliament, vii. 369 n. 5, 375.
- Rocroi, battle of, xii. 107.
- Roe, or Rowe, sir Thomas, vi. 179.
- Rogers, Richard, M.P. for Dorset, notice of his death and character, vii. 95.
- Rogers, —, ix. 53.
- Rolle, or Rolles, Henry, Chief Justice of K. B., vi. 231. seized at Salisbury by the royalists and narrowly escaped hanging, xiv. 131, 132. turned out of his office by Cromwell for refusing to act as judge against those who had spared him, 134.
- Rolph, or Rolfe, captain, his rise and character, xi. 195. accused of a design on the King's life, 193 n., 194, 196, 197. how tried and acquitted, 198.
- Roman Catholic priests, six, condemned but reprieved, v. 53, 56, 57. the goods of R. Catholics seized, vi. 36. R. Catholics advance money to the King, 65. very few in the King's army, 75, 287. commissions given them by the earl of Newcastle, 336, 338, 357. the French ambassador endeavoured to induce them to join the Parliament, vii. 299. they desire Hyde's removal from the King, xiv. 63, 64. the duke of Neuburg complains to the King of the laws against them, 121. [*See* Papists.]
- Rome, iv. 332. v. 6, 174, 441 n. 3. vi. 309. vii. 310. xi. 148. xii. 107. xiv. 66, 120. xv. 152. — Church of, v. 136 n. vi. 169.
- Romulus, vii. 224.
- '*Root and Branch*,' iii. 147.
- Roscarrock, or Roscarroth, —, one of the commissioners for the county of Cornwall, ix. 17.
- Roscommon, James Dillon, first earl of, iv. 41 n. vii. 366.
- Rosetti, or Rozetti, count, the Pope's agent at London, ii. 98. iii. 15 n. iv. 66, 332. v. 3, 168, 441 n. 3.
- Rosewell, or Rosenvinge: *see* Wilmsen.
- Rospiglioso, Julio, afterwards pope Clement IX. notice of, as nuncio at Madrid, xii. 94. xiii. 14, 27.

Ross, battle of, in Ireland, vii. 330, 362.  
 Rossiter, colonel, ix. 123, 132. x. 92.  
 Rotherham, Yorkshire, ix. 86, 123.  
 Rotherham, Thomas, vii. 366.  
 Rothes, John Leslie, sixth earl of, iii. 55 *n.* greatly disliked by Charles I, i. 171. one of the Scotch commissioners sent to London to treat of peace, iii. 37. his character, 38. iv. 23. conversation with Hyde, iii. 41. promises support to the King in Scotland, 250-1. his death, 251. iv. 23.  
 Rotterdam, v. 18, 349. xi. 35, 64. xii. 48, 49.  
 Rouen, x. 97, 175. xiii. 106. xiv. 72, 77. many English noblemen there, xi. 23.  
*Roundheads*, origin of the term, iv. 121.  
 Roundway-down, battle of, wherein sir W. Waller is routed, vii. 101 *n.*, 119, 213, 320.  
 Rouse, Francis, Speaker of Barebone's Parliament in 1653, xiv. 18, 21.  
 Rouswell, colonel, defended Lichfield against prince Rupert, vii. 34.  
 Rovill, col., ix. 135.  
 Roxburgh, Jane, countess of, her funeral, vii. 269, 369 *n.* 4.  
 Roxburgh, Will. Kerr, first earl of, [ii. 30 *n.*] iv. 15 *n.*  
 Royston, v. 46.  
*Rump*, *the*, the nickname given to the remains of the Long Parliament in 1659-1660, xiv. 129, 131, 152, 153, 174, 208, 210.  
 Rupert, Prince, vi. 1, 43, 44. 62, 63, 74, 76, 166. vii. 35, 46 *n.*, 53, 115, 123, 158, 164, 204, 308 *n.*, 403 *n.* viii. 17, 26, 30, 42, 62, 86, 98, 149, 159, 162, 166, 169, 254, 269. ix. 7 *n.*, 13, 16, 20 *n.*, 21, 28, 31, 44, 48, 49, 68, 87, 88, 89, 120, 121, 130. xi. 128, 152, xii. 112-114. xiv. 34, 68, 70, 78. xv. 57. made general of the King's horso, v. 375, 441 *n.* 3. his arrival, 446 *n.* disapproved of the King's first message to Parliament for a treaty, vi. 21. successful in an en-

agement at Worcester, 45-6. his independent commission the cause of faction in the King's army, 78. too much listened to by the King, *ib.* particulars of the battle of Edge-hill as far as he was concerned, 79 *n.*, 80, 82, 84, 86. the earl of Lindsay offended at the prince's being exempted from his command, vi. 88 *n.*, 90. contracted a prejudice against Wilmot, 126 *n.* vii. 121 *n.*, 238. frightens the Parliament garrison away from Reading, vi. 126 *n.* advances to Hounslow, 134. takes Cirencester, 237-8. and Birmingham, vii. 32. and Lichfield, 34. and returns to the King, *ib.* successful in skirmishes, especially at Chalgrove field, vii. 74 *n.*, 75-7. his jealousy of the marquis of Hertford, 85 *n.*, 144. takes Bristol, 121 *n.*, 124-130. desires to make himself its governor, 121 *n.*, 144. the Queen jealous of his lessening her interest with the King, 182. he beats the earl of Essex at Auburn Chase, 207-8. his part in the battle of Newbury, 211, 212. censured for letting the earl of Essex escape him in Gloucestershire, 238. notices of his character, 156, 279. viii. 168. takes Bedford and fortifies Towcester, vii. 288. relieves Newark, 416. viii. 17. raises the siege of Lathom House, viii. 17, 42. ordered to join the marq. of Newcastle at York, 20. one of those chiefly consulted by the King on military affairs, 28. successful at several places in the north, 73. defeated at Marston-moor, 74-5. quits the north in consequence, 75, 78. observations on his conduct, 79. made general of the King's army, 95, 163, 253. thereupon resigns the command of the horse, 98. gives the King an account of the battle of Marston-moor, 148. goes to Bristol, *ib.* was not generally liked, 168. withdraws his favour from O'Neale, 279. answers a letter from the earl of Essex about prisoners, 285. advised the King



- to march northwards, ix. 29, 30. why he forwarded lord Goring's views, though no friend to him, 30. present at the taking of Leicester, 32. his part in the battle of Naseby, 37-42. retires to Bristol, 42, 66, 67. advises treating for peace, 69. the King's letter to him against it, 70. he delivers up Bristol, 84, 89, after professions of ability to keep it, 81, 87, 90. the King's letter to him upon this surrender, 90. his commissions revoked by the King in consequence, 91, through lord Digby's influence, 121. a reconciliation between him and Goring, 102. visits the King at Newark to explain his conduct at Bristol, 128. absolved from disloyalty or treason, but not from indiscretion, *ib.* desires a pass from Parliament to go beyond seas, 131. the King reconciled to him, x. 28. attends the Prince of Wales to the fleet at Helvoetsluys, xi. 32. entirely influenced by sir E. Herbert, 63. engaged in the factions in the Prince's court, 81. not to be admitted into Scotland, 88. causes the Prince to undervalue lord Hopton, 84. well inclined to Hyde, 127, 152. xiv. 69. his enmity to lord Colepepper, 63, 127. who quarrels with him, 128-30. takes the command of the Prince of Wales's fleet, 142, 149, 150. unpopular, 149 *n.* goes with the fleet to Ireland, xii. 3. and then to the coast of Spain, 110. enters the river of Lisbon, 111. escapes thence from the Parliament's fleet, 115. arrives with his fleet at Nantes, xiv. 68. invited by Charles II to Paris, *ib.* gives an ill account of his fleet, 71, 81. sells the ships, etc., 78-9. leaves the King and goes into Germany, 90. resigns his place of Master of the Horse, *ib.* [mention of his journal, x. 33 *n.*]
- Russell, sir William, treasurer of the navy, iii. 34. viii. 194.
- Ruthven, —, the Parliament governor of Plymouth, vi. 247.
- beaten by sir Ralph Hopton at Bradock-down, 248. who drives him also from Saltash, 249.
- Ruthven, Patrick: *see* earl of Brentford.
- Rutland, John Manners, eighth earl of, excused from going as a Parliament commissioner to Scotland, vii. 135. declined being one of the six commissioners for the new Great Seal, 315. one of the few lords who attended Parliament, 369 *n.* 5. 375.
- Ruvigny, —, x. 2.
- Ryves, —, one of the commissioners for the county of Dorset, ix. 17.
- S.
- Sa, don Pantaleon, brother of the Portuguese ambassador, beheaded by Cromwell for a murder, xiv. 39, 40.
- Sacheverel, —, unwilling to lend money to the King, vi. 61.
- Sackville, sir Edward: *see* earl of Dorset.
- Sacraments. Petitions against going to the altar to receive the Communion, iii. 56.
- St. Alban's, vi. 79 *n.*, 101. vii. 85, 288, 321. viii. 37, 62. x. 92, 94. xiv. 61. xvi. 108, 120.
- St. Alban's, Richard de Burgh, earl of, [fourth earl of Clanricarde], ii. 101.
- St. Alban's, earl of: *see* marquis of Clanricarde.
- St. Alban's, earl of: *see* Jermyn.
- St. Andera's, xii. 112.
- St. Andrew's, archbishop of: *see* J. Spottiswood.
- St. Austell, Cornwall, viii. 111.
- St. Blaise, Cornwall, viii. 111, 132.
- St. Christopher, island of, xv. 9.
- St. Domingo, unsuccessful attack of the English on, xv. 9-11.
- Saint-George, colonel, killed at the taking of Leicester, ix. 33.
- St. Germain's, xi. 148. xii. 47, 56, 59, 61, 75, 77. xiii. 144.
- St. Ghislain recovered to the Spaniards through the earl of Bristol, xv. 80.
- Saint-Hill, Peter, one of the commis-

- sioners for the county of Devon, ix. 17.
- St. Ives, Cornwall, ix. 76, 141.
- St. Jean de Luz, France, xii. 81.
- St. John, Oliver, ii. 78, 93. iii. 191. iv. 12, 76, 204 *n.* seldom known to smile, ii. 78. pleased at the dissolution of the Short Parliament of 1640, *ib.* his character, iii. 32. a leader in the House of Commons, 55 *n.* made Solicitor General, 85, 191. defends Strafford's attainder before the Lords, 140. drew the bill for abolishing bishops, &c., 156. seconds Haslerig's bill for the militia, 245. chief instrument to devise the propositions and acts of undutifulness towards the King, iv. 75. advises the King to go to Parliament about the bill for pressing men for Ireland, 91. bad consequences of this step, 92-3. declares the power of the militia not to be in the King, 97. introduces a bill thereon, 99. the King proposed to deprive him of office, 126. one of the commissioners for the new Great Seal, vii. 315. his Solicitorship revoked by the King, *ib.* viii. 213. he and Hampden much governed Pym, vii. 411. one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, viii. 211. he, Vane, and Prideaux, acted as spies on the rest, 241. was in favour of the Self-denying Ordinance, 261. the Parliament's chief ambassador to the Dutch, to invite them to a strict union, xiii. 154. but unsuccessfully, 155. Cromwell never zealous for the Dutch war, but governed in it by him, 169.
- St. John, Oliver lord, present on the Parliament side at the battle of Edge-hill, vi. 79. killed there, 93. his character, *ib.*
- St. Johnstone's: *see* Perth.
- St. Leger, sir William, lord president of Munster, iv. 41 *n.* viii. 1 *n.* killed at the second battle of Newbury, viii. 160.
- St. Lucar, Spain, xii. 105.
- St. Malo, Franco, x. 5, 74, 75. xii. 75, 117. xvi. 45.
- St. Michael's Mount, Cornwall, ix. 138, 150, 152, 158-160.
- St. Neot's, Huntingdonshire, xi. 104.
- St. Omer's, xv. 139.
- St. Paul's cathedral: *see* London.
- St. Sebastian's, Spain, xii. 77, 81, 83 *n.*, 84, 85.
- Salamanca, Spain, xii. 107, 108.
- Salisbury, vii. 94. viii. 1, 150, 160. ix. 7, 13, 20 *n.*, 31. xiii. 102, 103, 104. the King there, viii. 149. the rising there in 1655, xiv. 130-134, 147.
- Salisbury, William Cecil, second earl of, a commissioner to treat with the Scots at Ripon, ii. 107. one of the King's council at York, 113. Lord Lieutenant of Dorsetshire, iv. 329. signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. sent by Parliament to the King with propositions of peace, vi. 230. his character, 403. one of the few lords who attended Parliament, vii. 369 *n.* 5, 375. one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, viii. 211. totally without credit or interest in the Parliament or country, 245. when the House of Peers was put down, got himself chosen a member of the House of Commons, vi. 403.
- Salisbury, bishop of: *see* B. Duppa.
- [Salmon, col., xvi. 106 *n.*]
- Saltash, Cornwall, iii. 3 *n.* vi. 247. vii. 93. taken by the King's forces, vi. 243, 249. taken again by them, viii. 131.
- Saltpetre, an Act for the free making of, iii. 268.
- [Salway, major, xvi. 106 *n.*]
- Sanderson, Dr. Robert, afterwards bishop of Lincoln, one of the chaplains allowed to attend the King at Newmarket, x. 93.
- Sandford, —, prognosticated the earl of Pembroke's death, i. 125.
- [Sandown, Kent, xi. 67 *n.*]
- Sandwich, earl of: *see* Edward Mountague.
- Sandys, colonel, killed in a fight at Worcester, vi. 45, 63.
- Santa Cruz, defeat of the Spanish plate-fleet at, xv. 53-56.

Santen : *see* Xancten.

Saragossa, Spain, xvi. 68, 69.

Saumur, France, xiii. 133.

Savile, John lord, a rival of the earl of Strafford, who bereaved him of all power, iii. 204.

Savile, Thomas lord, afterwards earl of Sussex, v. 359 n., 364 n. 5, 11. his character, ii. 107. vi. 393. a bitter enemy to Strafford, *ib.* held correspondence with the Scots, ii. 107. one of the commissioners to treat with the Scots at Ripon, *ib.* sworn a Privy Councillor, iii. 50. made treasurer of the household, iv. 79, 100 n. signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. advised a civil reception of those lords who came over to the King from Parliament, vii. 185. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 n. 6.

Savoy, Charles Emanuel II, duke of, xvi. 75. Cromwell's interposition with him for the Valley of Lucerne, xv. 152.

Say, Will. Fiennes, first visc., iii. 10, 178. iv. 134, 204 n., 340. v. 441 n. 2. vi. 79 n., 83, 98, 127, 400, 401. vii. 173, [319 n.] viii. 148. xi. 114. refuses to make the protestation of loyalty against the Scots, i. 166 n. ii. 36. not at York with the King on his Scotch expedition, being ill, ii. 107. sworn a Privy Councillor, iii. 50. one of the leaders in the House of Lords, 55 n. Master of the Wards, 86, 138, 191, 192 n., 213. notice of his speech on Laud's calling him a sectary, 103. an entire enemy to the Church, 146. promised the King to save Strafford's life, in hope of obtaining the Treasurership, 192 n., 193. advised the King to interfere in the bill against Strafford while pending in Parliament, 194. advised the King to consult the bishops as to signing the attainder against Strafford, iv. 136. is refused a safe conduct by the King, when appointed by Parliament a commissioner to treat with

him at Oxford, vi. 318. observations respecting this refusal, 319. the earl of Pembroke gave himself up into his hands, 400. one of the few lords who attended Parliament, vii. 369 n. 5, 375. supposed to be the only one of the Independent party in the House of Peers, viii. 260. why he tried to prevail on the King to consent to the Parliament's demands in the treaty at Newport, xi. 155, 160. notice of his character and life, iii. 26. vi. 409-10.

'*Scandalous ministers*:' who were so called, iv. 104, 345.

Scarborough, viii. 75 n., 77. xi. 131. the castle delivered up by sir H. Cholmely to the King, vi. 268.

Scarsdale, earl of : *see* lord Deincourt.

Scawen, —, one of the commissioners for the county of Cornwall, ix. 17.

[Schaep, G., ambassador from Holland, xiii. 160 n.]

Schestedt, or Zested, Hannibal, Danish ambassador at Madrid, xii. 98.

Scheveling, Holland, xv. 87. xvi. 237.

Schomberg, Frederic, afterwards first duke of, xiv. 111. xv. 80.

Schnut, Theodore, vii. 347.

Schwarzenburgh, or Swassenburgh, count, archduke Leopold's ambassador at Madrid, xiii. 17, 18. who is obliged to dismiss him, xv. 16.

Scilly, iii. 57 n., 62, 64. ix. 116, 158. x. 6, 7, 12 n., 13, 45. xi. 149. xvi. 165. the Prince goes there, ix. 148-151, 160. x. 2. the island likely to be attacked, 3. the Prince leaves, 5. after being vigorously defended by sir J. Greenville, is delivered up to sir G. Ayscue, xiii. 173.

Scotland [*see* Liturgy], iii. 158. iv. 78 n. v. 263, 373. vi. 201, 334. vii. 158, 168, 298, 328. viii. 227. ix. 118, 120, 153, 159. xi. 200. xiv. 72, 73, 77, 101. xvi. 116.

The wilderness of England, i. 162. little visited by travellers, iii. 33. its happy state before the

## Scotland.

Long Parliament, i. 162. the King's visit there to be crowned, 166. magnificence of his reception, 168, 169. some laws passed restraining the nobility, 169, 174. his warm feeling for Scotland, 179. ii. 17. state of the Church there, i. 172. the King erects the bishopric of Edinburgh, 182. and prefers some bishops to secular offices unseasonably, 183. the bishops had little influence in Scotland, *ib.* but their preferment seemed to be approved, ii. 2.

Fear of popery alone led the nation into rebellion, hatred of it being their whole religion, ii. 6. Scottish affairs never thought of in England, 18. ladies side with the lower orders against the bishops before their husbands, *ib.* violence of the people against the bishops, *ib.* Tables of delegates formed, and a General Assembly called, 19, 20. the bishops excommunicated, 20. the Covenant renewed, with a clause for extirpation of episcopacy, *ib.* Lesley chosen general of the Covenant, i. 166 *n.* ii. 20. the King raises an army and fleet against them, 25, 28. the war if vigorously pursued would have been ended at once, 23, 32. the insolences of the Scots, 21, 47, 125. Hyde calls them 'vermin,' 23. the Covenanters write to the English generals, 43. a treaty concluded, 49-50. false account of it published, 51. consequences of their success, 55. they are joined by the earl of Argyll, 58. they communicate with France, 55. xi. 101. their letter to the French king intercepted, i. 166 *n.* ii. 60. the renewed war, ii. 80-90. the Scots petition the King, 107. commissioners appointed to treat at Ripon, *ib.* error in this point, 123. the proceedings there, 108-116, 123-125. Strafford advises the King to prosecute the war, 114. a cessation agreed on, 116. the treaty adjourned to London, *ib.* where the Scottish preachers attract great crowds, 127. the

mutual confidence of the nobility, and their deference to their clergy, 128.

The Scottish commissioners' reception in London, iii. 37, 42. they accuse Laud and Strafford, 39, 43. influence of the Scots in England, 50. difficulty of raising money for payment of their army, 73-76. they are resolved to destroy the government of the Church, 149. anxious to despatch Strafford's business, 160 *n.* more care taken to pay the Scottish army than the English, 168. the King desires the disbanding, and proposes to go to Scotland, 232, 236. the disbanding mentioned, vii. 75. ten thousand men sent to Ulster, iv. 87, 285. vi. 311. a gratuity voted by Parliament to the Scottish army, iii. 219, 235. the King sets out for Scotland, 247. the Act of Pacification between England and Scotland passed, 248.

A public thanksgiving for the Pacification, iv. 9. account of the 'Incident,' 15 *n.*, 20. vii. 369 *n.* how the King was treated in Scotland, iv. 42. divers acts assented to by him, 43-46. episcopacy abolished, 44. the King's power during his absence vested in the Secret Council, 45.

Declaration of the English Parliament, after the battle of Edgehill, inviting the Scots to assist them, vi. 102, 104-7. condition and inclinations of Scotland, 108-112. declaration of the General Assembly, 113-118. reply of the King to a proposal in 1641 for uniformity, 114-116. the French encouraged the commotions in Scotland, 178. substance of the King's message to the Privy Council of Scotland on occasion of Parliament's declaration to that kingdom, 160. commissioners from Scotland come to Oxford, 335. petition from the General Assembly to the King, 337-344. his answer, 346-358. negotiations of the Scottish commissioners with the King, that they might be

## Scotland.

mediators, and for a Parliament in Scotland, 359-366. a pass for the commissioners to go to London refused by the King, 368. notice of the Act for triennial Parliaments, 365.

The Parliament of England sends a committee to Scotland to ask for help, vii. 135. transactions in Scotland with the committee, 249, 250. a covenant for the extirpation of prelacy proposed by the Scots between the two kingdoms, and agreed to, 251-257. copy of it, 259. £100,000 paid by the English Parliament for the co-operation of the Scots, 261, 264. viii. 235. a Parliament summoned against the King's will in 1643, vii. 268, 269, 369 n. 2, 407. proceedings at it, 271-275. substance of the treaty between the two nations, 274. a French agent in Scotland, 307. the Scots enter England, 322, 400. a letter from the Peers on the King's side to the Council in Scotland, 323-4, 369 n. 6. an extract of the Declaration of the kingdom of Scotland, 379-81. an extract of the Declaration of England and Scotland, 383-5. the Scottish Declaration condemned by the Parliament at Oxford, 398.

The English bound to assist the Scots on their entering England, viii. 19. the Scottish commissioners dissatisfied with the English Parliament, 186. in favour of a treaty with the King, 201-2. commissioners for the treaty at Uxbridge, 211, 212. the Scots march to Newcastle and York, 262. account of the earl of Montrose's expedition into Scotland, 263-7, 278.

The Scots besiege Pontefract, ix. 29. march towards Worcester, 67. besiege Hereford, 71. take Carlisle, 72. march northwards against Montrose, 86, 87. the King forbids the Prince to go to Scotland, 97, 112. treaty between the King and the Scots set on foot by the interposition of

France, 169. they cannot agree on the point of Church government, 176-7.

Further account of the negotiation between the King and the Scots, x. 23-31. the King renders himself to the Scottish army at Newark, 33. their treatment of him, 34. he orders Newark to be surrendered, whereupon the army marches with him to Newcastle, *ib.* transactions relating to him in the Scottish army, 50. at their desire he orders the surrender of Oxford and all his other garrisons, 62. the English Parliament upon the Scots' request sends propositions of peace to him, 63. the Scots urge these propositions, 65. his answer, 66. the English Parliament demands the King, and the Scots deliver him up, 67-69. the Scotch commissioners make great professions to the King at Hampton Court, 121. affronted by Parliament, 125. they protest against the bills sent by Parliament to the King, 142. their private treaty with him at Hampton Court, 125, 160. observations on it, 161. substance of it, 162-167. remarks on the Scottish policy, 171-2.

Preparations for an expedition into England in 1648, xi. 9, 42. the Scottish Parliament summoned, 9. their deliberations, 12-13. commissioners sent into Scotland from the English Parliament, 16. commissioners from Scotland sent to the Prince of Wales, 44. defeat of the Scottish army in England, 76-7, 85, 86, 89, 90, 92. letter of the Scottish Parliament to the Prince of Wales, 87. deliberations in the Prince's council about it, 89. Cromwell marches into Scotland, 97. is received at Edinburgh, 99. the committee of the Scottish Parliament order Monro to disband, 100. the Scottish Parliament condemns Hamilton's Engagement, 101. the Prince urged by the Queen to go to Scotland, 132. the King proposes to include Scotland in the

## Scotland.

treaty in the Isle of Wight, 158. the Parliament's proposal there concerning Scotland, 187.

Charles II proclaimed in Scotland, and commissioners sent thence to him, xii. 4. state of Scotland in 1649, 6. commissioners sent from the Scottish Parliament to the English Parliament in behalf of Charles I, 7. their private instructions from Argyll's party, 8. they enter their protest against the King's trial, 9. the Parliament's answer to it after the King's murder, 10. the commissioners reply, and are imprisoned, but afterwards freed, 11. the marquis of Argyll clogs the proclaiming Charles II with a clause for the Covenant, 12. Middleton assembles troops for the King, 13. factions in the King's court with reference to Scotland, 14. the parties among the Scots at the Hague, 17. the King's representation of the state of Scotland, 27. the King invited to Scotland again upon the old conditions, 118, 123. his answer, 120. Scottish commissioners meet him at Breda, 122. he resolves to go into Scotland, 124. arguments of some against this step, 125.

Charles II arrives in Scotland, and takes the Covenant, xiii. 2. the clergy always about him, 4. their sermons, *ib.*, 23. the Scots raise an army against Cromwell, 20. he routs them at Dunbar, 21-2. he enters Edinburgh, 22. his victory is an advantage to the King, 23, 39. state of the King's affairs in Scotland, 47. a Parliament summoned in his name in 1650, 48. it meets at Stirling and reconciles the lords, *ib.* his coronation, 50. an army raised of which he is general, 49. defeated at Worcester, 74. messages from Scotland brought to him at Paris, by—Knox, a Scottish minister, 138. the Chancellor of the Exchequer appointed to make all despatches for Scotland, 139-141. Scotland ruled

by Monk with a rod of iron, 174. xiv. 41.

The state of Scotland under the Protectorate, xiv. 56. xv. 1. many of the preachers continued to pray for the King, xiv. 56. Middleton and Glencairne in arms for the King, 57, 58, 61. Wogan goes from Paris to the Highlands, 59-61. proposal that the King should again go to Scotland, 108.

Monck summons the Convention of Estates in 1659, xvi. 102. they grant him money for his army, 102-3.

Scott, —, sent by Parliament to meet Monck marching towards London, xvi. 119, 129.

Scrope, colonel, xi. 104.

Scrope, Emanuel lord, (afterwards earl of Sunderland), president of the court of York, iii. 158.

Scrope, sir Gervase, his recovery from wounds received at Edgemoor, vi. 97. his son, *ib.*

Scudamore, lord, ambassador at Paris, furnished his chapel with ornaments, vi. 184.

Seaforth, George Mackenzie, second earl of, xii. 17, [130 n.]

Seal: *see* Great Seal.

[Searle, col. Dan., governor of Barbadoes, xiii. 172 n.]

Secretaries of state: the inferiority of their office in the beginning of the reign of Charles I, i. 141, 142.

Sects, divers, increase in the army, x. 79.

Seekers, x. 162.

Selby, Yorkshire, vi. 264, 268. battle there, vii. 400, 401 n., 415.

Selden, John, much assisted lord Littleton, having a great friendship for him, v. 204. Charles I once thought of making him Lord Keeper, but he would have refused, 209. his opposition to commissions of array, 265.

Self-denying Ordinance, x. 82. proposed in Parliament by Vane and Cromwell, viii. 193. passes the Commons, 259-261. and the Lords, ix. 4.

Seneca quoted, vi. 403. xiv. 12. Sevenbergh, Flanders, xii. 15.

- Severn, the, vi. 23, 43, 62 *n.*, 64, 288, 291, 292, 397. vii. 30, 157, 176 *n.*, 201 *n.*, 298. ix. 67, 88, 120. xiii. 65. xvi. 25.
- Seville, xiii. 9, 10.
- Sexby, col. Edw., originally a common soldier, xv. 133. one of the Agitators of the army, *ib.* so intimate with Cromwell as often to be his bedfellow, *ib.* negotiation for the Levellers with Charles II, *ib.*
- Seymour, Francis lord, insisted on his right of voting on Strafford's trial, iii. 104. signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. accompanied the marq. of Hertford into the west, 385, 441 *n.* 2, 443. and into Glamorganshire, vi. 33. his character, 392. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6. one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, viii. 211.
- Seymour, colonel, governor of Dartmouth, vii. 297.
- Seymour, Harry, vii. 185. xi. 69. xiii. 108. sent to Charles II from his friends in England, xiv. 82.
- Seymour, Queen Jane, xi. 244.
- Seymour, sir John, vii. 129.
- Shaftesbury, Dorset, viii. 149. ix. 12.
- Shaw, Berks, viii. 154, 155, 157, 159, 163.
- Sheffield, colonel, taken prisoner at Chalgrove, vii. 80.
- Sheldon, Gilbert, afterwards archbishop of Canterbury, whilst warden of All Souls, Oxford, informs Hyde that the University was ready to contribute its plate to the King, vi. 57 *n.* one of the commissioners in ecclesiastical matters at Uxbridge, viii. 226. allowed to attend the King at Newmarket as one of his chaplains, x. 93.
- Sheldon, major Thomas, died of wounds received in the battle of Lansdown, vii. 101 *n.*, 109.
- Sheldon or Shilton, Richard, Solicitor General, succeeded by Littleton, v. 204 *n.*
- Shelford House, Notts, ix. 132.
- Shepton Mallett, Somerset, vi. 6.
- Sherborne, Dorset, viii. 114, 148, 239, 240. ix. 8, 10, 76, 100.
- Ship-money, levied by the King's writ, i. 148. pronounced legal by the judges, *ib.* ii. 68. evil consequences of this decision, i. 150. made most odious by lord Finch's speech, 153. writ for it drawn up by Noy, 158. vii. 80 *n.* the King offers to give up his claim to it for twelve subsidies, i. 166 *n.* ii. 70. but dissolves the Parliament whilst debating on it, i. 166 *n.* ii. 76. votes of Parliament against all who collected it, iii. 14, 21, 22. Act annulling it, 270.
- Shirburn, Durham, marq. of Hertford besieged there, vi. 2, 7, 8, and *n.*, 33. vii. 185. lord Digby routed there, ix. 125.
- [Shoreham, Sussex, xiii. 105 *n.*]
- Shrewsbury, the two heiresses of the family of, i. 119, 120.
- Shrewsbury, vi. 21, 23, 30, 45 *n.*, 62 *n.* *saxe*, 64 *bis*, 66 and *n.* 67 *saxe*, 69, 70, 71, 72, 101, 126, 127, 269, 272, 286, 304, 306. vii. 31, 157, 401 *n.*, 416. xiii. 64. the King there in Sept. 1642, vi. 29. leaves it in Oct., 75, 76, 269. taken by Parliamentary forces, viii. 239, 253. prisoners hung there by prince Rupert in retaliation for murder of Irish prisoners, 285. proposed to be secured for the King in 1659, xvi. 26.
- Shropshire, vi. 29, 65, 73, 268, 270, 274. vii. 298, 401 *n.* viii. 17, 239. ix. 85, 89. xvi. 26. lord Capel made lieut.-general of the county, vi. 272.
- Shurley, George, vii. 366.
- [Sibbald, col., xii. 141 *n.*]
- Sidney, Algernon, xvi. 153.
- Six Clerke's offices, the, in the gift of the Master of the Rolls, i. 112.
- Skinner, Robert, bishop of Oxford, signed the bishops' protestation in 1641, iv. 140.
- Skippon, captain Philip, iv. 205, 207. v. 306, 441 *n.* 4. ix. 5 *n.* notice of him, iv. 198. appointed major-general of the London militia, *ib.* v. 138. ordered to attend Westminster with a guard, iv.

199. summoned to York by the King, but forbidden by the Parliament to go, v. 155. employed in the siege of Reading as serg.-major-general, vii. 26. makes conditions for surrender of Essex's foot in Cornwall, viii. 96 n., 117-119.
- Skipton, Yorkshire, ix. 125, 126.
- Slanning, sir Nicholas, vii. 111. governor of Pendennis castle, vi. 239, 244. assists sir Ralph Hopton in securing Cornwall, 244, 249, 397. present at the battle near Stratton, vii. 88. and at Lansdown, 106. and at the siege of Bristol, 127. where he fell, 121 n., 132. his character, 132. his wife and son, 121 n.
- Slannings, the, x. 77.
- Slaves, royalist soldiers sold for, in 1651, xiii. 82.
- Slingsby, sir Harry, tried for participation in a royalist plot, xv. 95. condemned and executed, 99. an account of him, 100.
- Slingsby, lieut. col. Richard, vii. 127. ix. 147 n.
- Slingsby, capt. Rob., refuses to obey the earl of Warwick as admiral, in compliance with the King's command, v. 381. active and diligent, and recommended by lord Digby to the Queen, 432 n. had been secretary to the earl of Strafford, *ib.*
- Sluys, Flanders, v. 372 n.
- Smith, Mrs., Bristol, ix. 43.
- Smith, major, defeats the Scots in Durham, ii. 114.
- Smith, Dudley, slain in the battle of Roundway-down, vii. 119.
- Smith, captain John, rescued the royal standard at the battle of Edge-hill, vi. 85.
- Smith, sir John, brother of lord Carrington, died of wounds received in the battle of Alresford, viii. 15. notice of him, 16.
- Soap, the project of, chiefly framed by sir W. Noy, i. 157. and executed by papists, ii. 98.
- Socinius, x. 162.
- [Somershill, near Tunbridge, Kent, xiii. 186 n.]
- Somerset, v. 441 n. 2. vi. 2, 3, 7, 33, 36, 246, 327. vii. 85 n., 86, 93-99, 101, 102, 110, 131, 298, 320. viii. 91, 111, 114, 132, 145, 147, 179, 240, 255, 256. ix. 7 n., 8, 10, 11, 16, 17, 56, 57, 80, 88. xiii. 30.
- Somerset, duke of: *see* marq. of Hertford.
- Somerset, Robert Carr, or Kerr, earl of, i. 121. the only one of the favourites of James I who did not incur public odium, i. 16. privy to the murder of sir J. Overbury, *ib.* condemned for this crime, *ib.* why he was disliked at Court, 17.
- Somerset, Frances Howard, countess of, instigated her husband to be privy to the murder of sir J. Overbury, i. 16. condemned for the murder, *ib.*
- Somerset, lord John, son of the marquis of Worcester, vi. 291, 292.
- Somerton, Somerset, vi. 7. vii. 101.
- Soubize, M. de, i. 55.
- Sound, the, xvi. 153, 158.
- Southampton, iii. 64. viii. 118, 119.
- Southampton, Thomas Wriothesley, fourth earl of, ix. 164. x. [32 n.], 132. xiv. 82. refuses to take the protestation imposed by the Commons, iii. 187, 231. gains over to the King his nephew lord Spencer, v. 339. signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, 346. urges the King to send a message of peace to Parliament, vi. 8, *and n.* one of those who carried the message, 8 n., 10, 12. how received in the House of Lords, 12. his character, 386. opposed the prosecution of Strafford, although no friend to him, *ib.* married lord Dunsmore's daughter, 391. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 n. 6. one of the Prince of Wales's council, viii. 180. sent to the Parliament with a message for a treaty, 199, 202. one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, 211. excused himself from quitting the King to attend the Prince of Wales, 280.



- Titchfield one of his seats, x. 127. attended the King in the treaty at Newport, xi. 113. present at his funeral, 244. could not afterwards find the grave, 245. desired to aid the escape of Charles II after the battle of Worcester, xiii. 106. received the Garter from Charles II on his restoration, xvi. 245.
- Southampton, Elizabeth Leigh, countess of, vi. 391.
- Southampton, Elizabeth Vernon, countess of, received Charles I at Titchfield, x. 127.
- Southwark, ii. 86. iii. 64. vi. 191. x. 111, 114. xi. 253. a riot there, iv. 117.
- [Southwell, Notts, x. 33 n.]
- Spa, xiv. 80, 83, 99, 102, 103, 105.
- Spain, iv. 257, 259. vi. 384, 388, 406, 409. vii. 216. viii. 134. xii. 34, 78, 79, 81, 92, 93, 103 n. xiii. 130. xiv. 74. xv. 152. xvi. 4, 13 n., 19, 46, 112. its counsels always influenced by the clergy, i. 25. account of Prince Charles's journey into Spain, 20. peace between England and Spain, and why, 5, 146. notice respecting the war, 40, 47. its origin a private quarrel of the duke of Buckingham's, 74. the feeling of the English with respect to this war, 84. Parliament hinders the enlisting of Irish soldiers for Spain, iii. 252-3. iv. 6. vi. 179. Spain favoured the rebellion in Ireland, vi. 177, 309. particulars of lord Cottington's and Hyde's embassy, xii. 35-39, 81, 99, 126. xiii. 7, 25, 29. account of some state loans, and their unjust management, xii. 87. account of the masquerade exercise, 89. of running the course, *ib.* and of the *toros*, 90. state of the Court in 1649, 104. many Irish enlist in the Spanish service, 148. ambassadors treated with more respect at Madrid than at any other Court, xiii. 13. Spanish fleet defeated by the Dutch in 1639, 26. treatment by Spain of the prince of Orange, 33. joy at his death, 34. Spain
- sues for alliance with Cromwell, xiv. 34, 41. sends an ambassador to Cromwell to no purpose, xv. 8. war avowed, 11, 26. a treaty between Spain and Charles II, 21. two plate fleets beaten by Blake, 26, 53-6. observations on the war between Spain and France, xvi. 47-8. account of the treaty settled by Mazarin and de Haro, 48-55, 60-65.
- Spain, Philip III, King of, xiii. 28.
- Spain, Philip IV, King of, i. 25, 74, 75, 78. iv. 332. v. 6, 349. viii. 273. ix. 172. xii. 34, 35, 50, 89, 91, 94, 100, 107, 112, 113. xv. 16, 17, 22, 67. xvi. 61, 64, 70, 72, 75. kept his ambassador at London throughout the rebellion, xi. 251, who bought for him many of King Charles's pictures, *ib.* his audience of Charles II's ambassadors, xii. 100-102. his answer to a communication from them, 126. he desires them to depart, xiii. 25. his aversion to Cottington, 27. dismisses Hyde courteously, 31. contends with France for Cromwell's friendship, xiv. 54. wasted by debauchery, xii. 102 n.
- Spain, Margaret of Austria, Queen of, i. 78. xii. 106.
- Spain, Mary Anne of Austria, Queen of, xii. 83, 85, 88, 103.
- Spain, Infanta of, xii. 103. xvi. 49, 51.
- Speaker of the House of Commons : *see* Parliament.
- Speen, Berks, viii. 154, 155, 156, 159, 163.
- Spiller, sir H., i. 11.
- Spinola, marquis, i. 37.
- Spotswood, sir Robert, [iv. 43 n.] made Secretary of State for Scotland by the King in the room of the earl of Lanrick, x. 60. taken prisoner and put to death by the Covenanters, *ib.*
- Spottiswood, John, archbishop of St. Andrew's, consents to the erection of the see of Edinburgh, i. 182. notice of, 183. made Chancellor of Scotland, *ib.* present in Edinburgh cathedral when the liturgy was read, ii. 14.

- Spurstow, Dr. Will., xi. 153 *n.*, 169.
- Stacy, —, executed in 1658, xv. 102.
- Stade, Hanover, i. 125.
- Stafford, vi. 62 *n.*, 279, 281. garrisoned for the King, vi. 278.
- Stafford, sir Edward, vice-chamberlain to Q. Eliz., and ambassador in France, xiii. 30.
- Stafford, William Howard, viscount, vii. 369 *n.* 6.
- Staffordshire, vi. 21, 29, 62 *n.*, 65, 274, 275. vii. 400, 403. ix. 32. xiii. 84, 88.
- Staines, Middlesex, viii. 139.
- Staines, Dr., quartermaster-general, x. 135.
- [Stamford, iv. 353 *n.*]
- Stamford, Henry Grey, first earl of, v. 416, 417, 418, 441 *n.* 4. vi. 238, 247-250, 274. vii. 103, 158, 290. xiii. 136. makes a treaty with the King's forces in Devon and Cornwall, vi. 254. marches into Cornwall with an army, vii. 87. beaten near Stratton, 89. how he attempted to exculpate himself, 91. goes to Exeter, 89, 93. besieged in Exeter, 192. surrenders, 198. one of the few lords who attended Parliament, 369 *n.* 5, 375.
- Stamford, Anne Cecil, countess of, xiii. 136.
- Stanhope, Charles lord, vii. 369 *n.* 6.
- Stannary-courts; Act against encroachments and oppressions in them, iii. 269.
- Stapleton, —, York, v. 446.
- Stapleton, sir Philip, iii. 35. iv. 54. active in Parliament, iii. 157. one of the committee to attend the King into Scotland, [iii. 255 *n.*] iv. 17. notice of him, 19. defended Hyde in the debate on the Remonstrance, 54. sent with the Parliament's answer to the King concerning Hull, v. 106. and with their petition to him at Beverley, 388. opposed the Self-donating Ordinance, viii. 260. one of the leaders of the Presbyterian party in the House of Commons, x. 104. withdrew be-
- yond sea, when the Speaker and others repaired to the army, x. 110. married sir J. Hotham's daughter, v. 106. died at Calais, x. 110.
- Stapley, John, his engagement with Mordant and Hewitt for Charles II, xv. 92. discovers the plot, 94, 98.
- Star-Chamber, iv. 180. vi. 400. viii. 136, 137. ix. 55. xiv. 50. its powers enlarged, i. 149. its proceedings under Q. Elizabeth rigorous, but orderly and grave, 155. its errors under Charles I, chiefly owing to the lawyers, 156. its sentences condemned, iii. 14, 20, 21. it is dissolved, 211, 262. its exorbitances, 262. its origin, 264. its abolition a popular measure, *ib.*
- Start, the*: Charles II's withdrawal to the Highlands so called, xiii. 48.
- States General: see Holland.
- Stayner, captain, assisted in the defeat of the Spanish fleet at Santa Cruz, xv. 55.
- Stephens, sir John, [xiv. 99 *n.*] xvi. 139, 140.
- Stevens, Edward, vii. 129.
- Steward, Dr. Richard, clerk of the closet to Charles I, x. 151 *n.* one of the commissioners for ecclesiastical matters at Uxbridge, viii. 221, 226. his answer to Henderson, 228. recommended by Charles I to the prince of Wales to instruct him in matters relating to the Church, xi. 36. xii. 44. objects to a proposal for admitting foreign divines to a synod, xii. 45. his death, xiii. 131.
- Stewart, lord Bernard, afterwards earl of Lichfield, viii. 108. commanded the King's troop of guards, vi. 74. was at the battle of Edge-hill, 91. in the fight at Cropredy-bridge, viii. 65, 67. notice of his being made earl of Lichfield, ix. 37. at the battle of Naseby, *ib.* fell at Rowton Heath, [*ib.* *n.*], 119, 120. his character, 119.
- Stewart, lord George: see lord d'Aubigny.

Stewart, lord John, was at the battle of Edge-hill, vi. 91. died of wounds received in the battle of Alresford, vii. 401 *n.* viii. 15. his character, vii. 401 *n.* viii. 16. Stirling, ix. 123. xiii. 1, 48, 56. the records of Scotland deposited there, xiii. 56.

Stockdale, —, iii. 15 *n.*, 19 *n.*

Stonehenge, xiii. 105.

Stoneleigh, Warwickshire, v. 446 *n.*, 448.

Storm, a terrible, on the day of Cromwell's death, xv. 146.

Stowell, or Stawel, sir John, vi. 6. vii. 177 *n.* viii. 146. ix. 10, 17, 49, 50. accompanied the marquis of Hertford into the west, v. 441 *n.* 2, 443. the government of Taunton committed to him, vii. 98. pressed the association of the four western counties under the Prince of Wales, viii. 257. notice of him, *ib.*

Strachan, col. —, sent against the marq. of Montrose, whom he routs and takes prisoner, xii. 133, 134.

Strachan, or Straughan, capt. —, v. 372 *n.*, 374.

Stradling, sir Edward, taken prisoner at Edge-hill, vi. 94.

Stradling, captain J., deprived of his ship for his loyalty, v. 377 *n.*, 381.

Strafford, Thomas Wentworth, earl of, lord lieutenant of Ireland, i. 166 *n.* 6. ii. 120. iii. 15 *n.*, 55 *n.*, 66, 83, 89, 155, 160, 174, 191, 218, 226, 252. iv. 14, 19, 41 *n.*, 68, 78 *n.* *bis.* 100 *n.*, 102, 133, 135, 147, 182, 257. v. 58, 205. vi. 305, 314, 387. x. 105. xvi. 207.

The earl of Holland hostile to him, ii. 48, 81, 107. he opposes the removal of sir J. Coke from the Secretaryship, 54. is made earl of Strafford, *ib.* advised King Charles to call a Parliament about the Scots, i. 166 *n.* contemned sir H. Vane, who became an implacable enemy, ii. 54, 76, 101. iii. 34. vi. 411. why he preferred being lieutenant general in the second expedition against the Scots to being general, ii. 80 *n.*,

88. lord Conway very dear to him, 83. the earl of Essex his enemy, and why, 81, 101. the army incensed against him, 91. his not inquiring into the defeat at Newburn much wondered at, 92. one of the chief of the Committee of State, 99. notice of his government in Ireland and his many enemies, 101. advised by Hamilton to leave England, 104. lord Savile his bitter enemy, 107. vi. 393. his removal from the King desired by the Scottish commissioners, ii. 109. Wilmot and O'Neale his enemies, 111. viii. 95, 269. with the King at York, ii. 113. advises the prosecution of the war with the Scots, 114. remains at York when the King leaves, 117. the Queen hostile to him, 130. president of the court of York, iii. 157, 158.

Debate in the Commons concerning him, begun by Pym, ended in his impeachment, iii. 1 *n.*, 3-11, 105, 111, 116, 138. his reply in the H. of Lords to the announcement of impeachment, 11. committed to the Black Rod, 11 *n.*, 11. proceedings of the Commons against him, 21, 44, 45. sent to the Tower, 15 *n.* the Scottish commissioners' charges against him, 39, 43-45. his threats against the Scots in Ireland, 5, 45. preparations for his trial, 93-102. his trial, 105-128. bill of attainder passed by the Commons, 128-140. those who voted against it placarded as 'Straffordians, or enemies to their country,' 141. the King willing that he should be exiled, or imprisoned for life, but declares he could not give assent to an Act of attainder, 161. Hyde in vain endeavours to dissuade the earl of Essex from voting against him, 163. the bill delayed in the House of Lords, 166. two accidents contributed to its passing, 167, viz., a correspondence between the Court and certain officers in the army, 168-183, and the death of the earl of

- Bedford, 191. Goring offers to attempt his rescue, 177. lord Say induces the King to declare in Parliament that he could not sign the bill of attainder, 193-4. Strafford in vain sends his brother to him to dissuade him from doing so, 194. the House of Lords pass the bill, intimidated by the mob, 196. the Privy Council and archbp. Williams advise the King to assent to it, 197, 198. iv. 136. Strafford writes to urge it, iii. 200. the King at length passes it by commission, 201. the earl is beheaded, 203. his character, ii. 101. iii. 204-5. a committee had been sent by the Irish Parliament to assist in any complaint against him, iv. 41 n. 2. he foresaw and advertised the King of the rebellion in Ireland, *ib.* n. 6. sir J. Hotham his enemy, 216. viii. 281. lady Carlisle his constant friend, iv. 149 n. the duke of Richmond vehemently opposed his attainder, 257. the marquis of Hertford did not concur in his prosecution, 294. vi. 385 n. nor the earl of Southampton, though not his friend, 386. lord Falkland severe against him, vii. 222. Slingsby was his secretary, v. 432 n. he obtained a peerage for lord Seymour, being his great friend, vi. 392. Pym accused of acting with personal animosity against him at his trial, iii. 178. vii. 411, 412. married Denzil Hollis' sister, iii. 35.
- Straghan, colonel: *see* Strachan.
- Strange, lord: *see* Derby, earl of.
- Strangeways, sir John, iii. 90. one of those styled by a mob *persons disaffected to the kingdom*, iv. 129 n. one of the commissioners for the county of Dorset, ix. 17.
- Stratford-on-Avon, viii. 50.
- Stratton, Cornwall, ix. 143, 144. the earl of Stamford beaten near there, vii. 87-90, 101 *bis*, 119, 294.
- Straughan, capt.: *see* Strachan.
- Streater, colonel, xvi. 148.
- Strickland, sir Robert, xi. 94.
- Strickland, Walter, the Parliament's agent in Holland, vi. 176, 204. xii. 3. [xiii. 154 n.]
- Strode, —, Dorsetshire, vii. 191.
- Strode, *or* Stroud, sir George, wounded at the battle of Edgehill, vi. 94.
- Strode, *or* Stroud, William, iii. 35, 55 n. iv. 12, [35 n.], 58, 192. vii. 101. one of those who most avowed the curbing of majesty, ii. 86. moved that the committee for drawing up a remonstrance be revived, iv. 32. one of the five members of the Commons accused of high treason by order of the King, 148, 149. again charged, v. 441 n. 4. his evil character, iv. 192. gives a relation in Parliament of the battle of Edgehill, vi. 101.
- Struther, Will., first dean of Edinburgh, i. 182.
- Stuart: *see* Stewart.
- Sturghion, John, signed the Levelers' address to Charles II, xv. 118.
- [Suckling, Sir John, iii. 182 n.]
- Sudely castle, Glouc., viii. 57. the King there, vii. 206. surrendered to sir W. Waller, viii. 53.
- Suffolk, vi. 327. vii. 172, 177. viii. 18.
- Suffolk, Thomas Howard, first earl of, viii. 135. Lord Treasurer, i. 101.
- Suffolk, Theophilus Howard, second earl of, viii. 136. ix. 55.
- Suffolk, James Howard, third earl of, one of the few lords who attended Parliament in 1643, vii. 369 n. 5, 375.
- Sunday, House of Commons sits on a, iii. 247. the Privy Council used to do so, vii. 170. meeting of the Common Council of London, *ib.*
- Sunderland, earl of: *see* Scroope.
- Sunderland, Henry lord Spencer, afterwards first earl of, gained over from the Parliament by his uncle, the earl of Southampton, v. 339. slain in the first battle of Nowbury, vii. 215.
- Sunderland, Rob. Spencer, second earl of, xiv. 86.
- Sura, Licioius, vi. 23.

Surrey, iii. 64, 179. vii. 85 n. ix. 7. petitions to the Lords and Commons from people of Surrey, iv. 272.

Sussex, iii. 223, 229. iv. 147. vi. 235. vii. 85 n., 174, 264 n., 368, 401 n. viii. 2, 3, 4, 5, 9, 37, 123. ix. 7, 13, 20, 21. x. 153. xiii. 102, 105. xv. 90, 92, 94. xvi. 93, 94.

Sussex, earl of: *see* lord Savile.

Sutherland, John, seventeenth earl of, xii. 133.

Swaffenburgh or Swassenburgh: *see* Schwarzenburgh.

Swallow, the, a ship, xi. 150. xiv. 68, 71, 78, 79, 81.

Sweden, ii. 55. xii. 40, 129. xvi. 3, 4, 10, [19], 76, 153. *See* Christina; Gustavus.

Switzerland, iii. 33. the Protestant cantons, xv. 24.

[Sydserrf, Tho., dean of Edinburgh, i. 182 n.]

Sylla, iii. 205.

Symms, —, at Taunton, most unjustly treated by sir R. Greenville, ix. 24.

[Symons or Symonds, —, xiii. 105 n.]

Syndercomb, —, xv. 131. his plot against Cromwell, 144. his death, *ib.*

Syon House, Middlesex, x. 115.

## T.

Taaffe, Theobald viscount, afterwards earl of Carlingford, vi. 300, 302. [xiii. 178 n.]

Tacitus quoted, i. 163. iii. 36. vi. 168. vii. 226, 231, 232, 294. xi. 258, 268. xv. 127.

Tadcaster, Yorkshire, vi. 268.

[Talbot, col., xvi. 95 n.]

Talbot, Peter, an Irish Jesuit, [afterwards R. C. archbp. of Dublin], xv. 19, 75, 133.

Talmud quoted, vii. 312.

Tamar, the, vi. 247. vii. 90. ix. 103.

[Tanfield, Sir Laurence, vii. 218 n.]

Tarab, lord, xv. 22.

[Tattersall, capt., xiii. 105 n.]

Taunton, Somerset, vi. 33. vii. 101. viii. 147, 179, 286. ix. 5, 7-17,

27 n., 30, 31, 44, 47-52, 56, 57, 59, 66, 80, 92, 100, 102. taken by the marquis of Hertford, vii. 97. sir John Stowell appointed governor, 98. surrendered to the earl of Essex, viii. 146. relieved when besieged by Goring, ix. 45. Tavistock, vi. 241, 249, 250, 252, 254. ix. 61, 105-111, 113, 117, 133, 140, 145, 146.

[Taylor, Jeremy, bishop of Down and Connor, vi. 345 n.]

Terne, —, one of the Six Clerks, i. 112.

[Tew, Great, Oxfordshire, vii. 220 n.]

Tewkesbury, viii. 57. taken by sir W. Waller, vi. 294. the earl of Essex there, vii. 206. again taken from the King, viii. 50.

Texel, the, xiv. 28, 30, 31.

Thame, Oxon, the earl of Essex there, vii. 38 n., 74, 75, 76, 80, 115. he leaves it, 85, 122.

Thames, the, iv. 195, 198 n. vi. 36. viii. 130. xi. 37, 64, 138.

Thanet, John Tufton, second earl of, vii. 369 n. 6.

Thelwell, colonel, viii. 64, 157.

Theobald's, Hertfordshire, iv. 322, 331. v. 8, 256.

Thomas of Savoy, prince of Carignano, xv. 79.

Thornhill, colonel, ix. 45.

Throgmorton, sir William, severely wounded in the fight at Wigan, xiii. 67. escapes into Holland, *ib.*

Thucydides quoted, i. 149, 150.

Thurloe, John, secretary to Cromwell, xiv. 142, 145. xv. 96. xvi. 28.

Tichborne, —, alderman of London, xvi. 7, 91.

Tichborne, sir Henry, vii. 366. made by the King a Lord Justice in Ireland, vi. 314.

Tildesley, sir Thomas, raises forces for the King in the North, xi. 92. killed in the fight at Wigan, xiii. 67. his character, 70.

Tirenes, Anthony, vii. 347.

Titchfield, Hants, xiii. 106. a seat of the earl of Southampton's there, x. 127-130.

Tithes, x. 174. condemned by Barebone's Parliament, xiv. 20. by the Levellers, xv. 119.

- Titus, captain Silas, xiii. 50.
- Tiverton, Devon, vii. 93. viii. 132, 144. ix. 22, 27, 48, 59, 60, 81, 84, 92, 99.
- To your tents, O Israel*, a seditious pamphlet, v. 23, 187.
- Tobacco in Ireland, iii. 109.
- Toledo, xii. 86.
- Tomkins, —, plot by him, Waller, and others, on London, on behalf of the King, vii. 54-68. he is tried and executed, 71, 171. xi. 222.
- Tomlinson, colonel: Charles I committed to his custody at St. James's, xi. 230.
- Tonnage and poundage, i. 147. v. 14. origin and custom of, iii. 215-6. re-granted by Parliament, 78, 217. a new Act for it, v. 41-3, 180. levied by ordinance of Parliament, 424. forbidden by the King, vi. 171. granted to Cromwell for his life, xv. 29.
- Topping, lieut.-col., killed in the second battle of Newbury, viii. 160.
- Topsham, Devon, vii. 193.
- Torre, don Diego de la, Spanish envoy in Ireland, xii. 108.
- Torre, don Geronimo de la, xiii. 25 n.
- Torrington, Devon, ix. 58. sir J. Digby routs the Parliament forces there, vii. 194-5. lord Hopton defeated there by Fairfax, ix. 142-3.
- Totness, Devon, vii. 193. ix. 99, 106, 109, 117.
- Toulon, xiv. 71.
- Toulouse, xvi. 59, 66, 68.
- Towcester, Northamptonshire, fortified by prince Rupert, vii. 288.
- Tower of London, ii. 60. iii. 200, 203, 213, 218, 225, [226 n.]. iv. 130, 142, 173, 174, 248, 275, 312, 338. v. 47, 52, 53, 88, 89, 289, 390, 425, 426. vi. 35, 36, 388, 390, 397, 400 n. vii. 6, 24, 66, 135, 202, 262, 305. viii. 53, 205, 208, 269 n., 281, 282, 283, x. 88, 132, 136. xi. 109, 174, 253, 260. xii. 68. xiii. 135, 136, 137, 138. xiv. 36. xv. 13, 27, 66, 88, 94, 95, 96, 98, 99, 144, 150. xvi. 96, 97, 109, 110, 126, 145, 150. sir W. Balfour dismissed by Charles I from being lieutenant, iv. 101, 147. col. Lunsford put in his place, *ib.* who resigns, and sir J. Byron is appointed, 102, 147. interference of the House of Commons respecting it, 183, 205, 237-8, 244, 284. the King is prevailed upon by them to remove sir J. Byron and appoint sir J. Conyers, 205 n., 284. vii. 202. a guard appointed to watch it, iv. 205, 207. the custody of the Tower committed by Parliament to the Lord Mayor Pennington, 202.
- Towers, John, bishop of Peterborough, signed the bishops' protestation in 1641, iv. 140.
- Townsend, sir Horatio, xvi. 117. a design of surprising Lynn by him and lord Willoughby of Parham, 24. both apprehended, 38. he is one of the committee sent to Charles II at the Hague, 239.
- Trajan, emperor, vi. 23.
- Traquair, John Stuart, first earl of, ii. [30 n.], 50. High Treasurer of Scotland, ii. [30 n.], 50. [iv. 43 n.] xii. 30. the only layman consulted by Laud about introducing the liturgy into Scotland, ii. 12. holds the Scotch Parliament as the King's commissioner, i. 166 n. why the King should not have appointed him, *ib.* his wisdom and loyalty, ii. 12.
- Treaty of Pacification with Scotland, 1639, ii. 49. a treaty appointed at Ripon, 107. adjourned to London, 116. the Parliament agrees that there should be a treaty at Oxford upon proposals for a cessation, vi. 317, 320, 328, 370. which comes to nothing, 370. the sum of the demands and concessions of both sides upon the treaty, vii. 1-19. the treaty expires, 20. substance of the treaty between the English commissioners and the Scots, 274. particulars of the treaty at Uxbridge, viii. 211-251. a treaty between the King and the Scots set on foot by the interposition of France, ix. 169. the commissioners of Scotland's private

- treaty with the King at Hampton Court, x. 160. which was renewed and signed by him in the Isle of Wight, *ib.* the substance of it, 162. particulars of the treaty at Newport, xi. 153-188. treaty signed April 1657, between Spain and Charles II, xv. 21. particulars of the treaty of the Pyrenees between France and Spain, xvi. 49-55, 60-65.
- Tredagh, [Drogheda], taken by Ormonde, xii. 68. garrisoned by him, 74. taken by storm by Cromwell, 116, 144.
- Trelawney, —, xvi. 26. unjustly expelled the House of Commons and imprisoned in 1642, iv. 339.
- Tremouille, duc de la, xiii. 68.
- Trent, river, ix. 124, 128.
- [Trent, Somerset, xiii. 95 *n.*, 102 *n.*]
- [Trethewy, John, xii. 121 *n.*, 130 *n.*]
- Trevanion, sir Charles, vii. 121 *n.*
- Trevanion, colonel John, vi. 249, 397. undertakes to raise volunteers for the King in Cornwall, 244. present at the battle near Stratton, vii. 88. and at the siege of Bristol, 127. where he was killed, 121 *n.*, 132. notice of him, *ib.*
- Trevisions, the, x. 77.
- Trevor, Thomas, baron of the Exchequer, fined, vii. 262, 317.
- Trim, Meath, xii. 73.
- Truro, Cornwall, vi. 239. ix. 99, 104, 105, 108, 139, 141, 145, 147, 152, 159 *n.*
- Tullibardine, William Murray, second earl of, i. 113, 114.
- Tunis, Blake enters the harbour of, and burns the fleet, xv. 12, 23, 26.
- Turenne, marshal, xiii. 143. xiv. 98. xv. 14, 134. escaped into Flanders from Paris, xii. 93, 99. receives the duke of York in his army with all respect, xiii. 128. the Spaniards often forewarned by Condé of what plan he would adopt, xv. 135-6. and he forewarned the French of the conduct of the Spaniards, 136. he defeats the Spaniards at Dunkirk, 137. offers assistance to the duke of York, xvi. 45.
- Turenne, madame, xv. 155.
- Turkey, vii. 216. Turkish pirates, iv. 63.
- Tuxford, Notts, the King there, ix. 122.
- Twickenham, Middlesex, x. 111.
- Tynemouth, Northumberland, v. 389, 398. x. 164.
- Tyrone, xii. 145.
- Tyrone, family of, xi. 146.

## U.

- Udall, sir William, vi. 8 *n.*, 10.
- Ulster, iv. 25, 28, 29, 41 *n.*, 87. v. 55, 62. vi. 108. vii. 401 *n.* viii. 265, 267. xi. 146, 148. xii. 29, 35, 145, 146. xiii. 6, 112, 176, 181. xvi. 209.
- United Provinces (*see* Low Countries), v. 321. vi. 231, 387. xi. 140. xiv. 105. declaration to them from Parliament, vi. 173-5. States General of: *see* Holland.
- Urban VIII, pope, i. 25.
- Urry, col. sir William, viii. 160. served in the Parliament army at the battle of Edge-hill, but then goes over to the King, vii. 74 *n.*, 75. guides prince Rupert to the enemy's quarters near Thame, 74 *n.*, 75, 76. knighted by the King, vii. 74 *n.*, 78. notice of him, 78. deserts back again to the Parliament, viii. 153. being taken with the marquis of Montrose he is executed, xii. 141. his death, a palliation of his tergiversations, viii. 160.
- Usher, colonel, killed at Lichfield, vii. 34.
- Usher, James, archbishop of Armagh, vii. 254.
- Utopia, v. 328.
- Uttoxeter, Staffordshire, the duke of Hamilton's defeat at, xi. 76.
- Uxbridge, vii. 122. viii. 285. ix. 20 *n.*, 21, 34, 70, 82, 148. x. 108. xiii. 117. particulars of the treaty at, viii. 210-252. *See* Parliament.

## V.

- Valenciennes, xii. 57, 58. xv. 70.
- Valladolid, xii. 91. xiii. 28, 29.

- Vall-Periso, marquis de, one of the Spanish Council of State, xii. 105. notice of him, 107.
- [Van de Perre, Paul, ambassador from Holland, xiv. 29 *n.*]
- Vandruske, —, ix. 7, 9, 21, 49.
- Vane, sir Henry, the elder, ii. 70, 79. iii. 20, 47, 69, 205. iv. 6, 12, 122. v. 428. vii. 225. notice of him, ii. 48. Comptroller of the Household, *ib.* made Secretary in the room of sir J. Coke, 54. his declaration in the House of Commons concerning the proposed supply in May, 1640, 75. misrepresents the proceedings to the King, and thereby caused the dissolution, i. 166 *n.* ii. 76. what his motives might be, *ib.* an implacable enemy to the earl of Strafford, *ib.* ii. 101. iii. 34. vi. 411. one of the Committees of State, ii. 99. with the King at York, 113, 135. his part in Strafford's trial, iii. 118, 120, 127, 130-136, 139. deprived of his offices, iv. 79, 100 *n.*, 167 *n.* vi. 393. vii. 225. notice of his character and conduct, iv. 75. vi. 411.
- Vane, sir Henry, the younger, iii. 55 *n.* xvi. 106. his character, education, and early life, iii. 34. vii. 266-7. the mischief he did in New England, iii. 34. his part in Strafford's trial, 131-136. for 'root and branch' as to the Church, 147. made Treasurer of the navy, iv. 198 *n.* was the chief instrument of his father's destruction, vi. 411. one of the commissioners sent by Parliament into Scotland for relief, vii. 135. chiefly instrumental in establishing the Scottish Covenant in England, 266, 273-4. one of the committee who attended the earl of Manchester's army, viii. 19. hated above all men by the earl of Essex, 92. the Scottish commissioners jealous of him, 186. one of the leaders of the Independents, *ib.*, 260. ix. 168. his influence in the city of London, viii. 189. his speech proposing the Self-denying Ordinance, 193-4. one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, 211. he, St. John, and Prideaux acted there as spies on the rest, 241. withdraws with the Speaker of the Commons to the army, x. 108, 110. the marquis of Argyle made fast friendship with him and Cromwell, ix. 4. xi. 9. xii. 9. used all his arts to obstruct the treaty at Newport, 114. desired a republic, 153 *n.* the only one that did not desire a peace, 155. his speech upon the commissioners' report, 200. thinks Cromwell's power too great, xiv. 2. reproached by Cromwell with breach of faith and corruption, 9. his conduct upon Cromwell's violent dissolution of Parliament, 41. re-admitted into Parliament by virtue of a clause in the *Humble Petition and Advice*, xv. 60. he and Haslerig govern the Parliament in 1659, xvi. 82. notice of him and his views, 88-9. one of the Committee of Safety, 91. Lawson one of his dependents, 106. confined to his house by Parliament, 110.
- Van Tromp, Marten, the Dutch admiral: is ordered not to strike his flag to the English, xiii. 158. his fleet worsted by Blake, 159. comes to sea with another fleet, xiv. 29. is beaten and slain, 31, 32.
- Varney: *see* Verney.
- Vaudois, the, xv. 152.
- Vaughan, baron: *see* earl of Carbery.
- Vaughan, sir George, wounded in the battle of Lansdown, vii. 109.
- Vavasour, sir Charles, viii. 1.
- Vavasour, sir William, taken prisoner at Edge-hill, vi. 94. commanded the forces in South Wales, vii. 164, 176 *n.* assisted at the siege of Gloucester, vii. 164.
- Venables, general Robert, commanded the army sent by Cromwell with Penn's fleet, xv. 5-7, 10. held communication with the King, 6. unsuccessful at Hispaniola, 10. succeeds at Jamaica, 11. committed to the Tower by Cromwell, 13.



- Venice, i. 143. iv. 332, 338. v. 6, 174. xii. 94.
- Venn, capt. John, iv. 12, 120. v. 441, n. 4. vi. 216, 225. member for the city of London, iv. 120. charged with high treason by the King, v. 441 n. 4.
- Vere, Anne, married sir T. Fairfax, xi. 235: *see* lady Fairfax.
- Vere, Horatio lord, ii. 83. viii. 134. xi. 235. xvi. 96.
- Vere, lady, the Commons vote that two of the King's children be intrusted to her care, x. 103.
- Vere, Susan, married the earl of Montgomery and Pembroke, i. 127.
- Verney, *or* Varney, sir Edmund, knight-marshal, the King's standard-bearer at Nottingham, v. 449. bore the standard at the battle of Edge-hill, vi. 82, 88 n. where he was killed, 85, 88 n., 89, 92.
- Vic, sir Henry de, the King's resident at Brussels, xiii. 41. xv. 81.
- Victor, Aur., quoted, vi. 23.
- Vieu Ville, marquis of, killed in the conflict at Auburn Chase, serving as a volunteer, having attended the Queen out of Holland, vii. 208.
- View Hall, Cornwall, viii. 109.
- Villa Magna, marquis of, xii. 103.
- Villiers, family of, its extraction, i. 15.
- Villiers, Edward, sent with despatches to the fleet in 1642, v. 377 n., 378-80, 436.
- Villiers, lord Francis, joins the earl of Holland in his rising, xi. 5. goes to Kingston, 102. is killed there, 104.
- Villiers, sir George, father of the first duke of Buckingham, notice of his marriages and offspring, i. 15. story of the appearance of his ghost, predicting his son's death, 89-91.
- Villiers, George: *see* duke of Buckingham.
- Vilvord, near Brussels, xv. 19.
- Vines, Richard, one of the commissioners on ecclesiastical matters at Uxbridge, viii. 226.
- Viole, president, xvi. 64.
- Virgil quoted, i. 161.
- Virginia delivered up to the Parliament forces, xiii. 173.
- Vittoria, Spain, xii. 82 n., 83 n.
- Vlie, the, Holland, xiv. 28.
- Volunteers, v. 45.
- Vowell, Peter, tried for holding correspondence with Charles II, xiv. 36. condemned and executed, 37.

## W.

- Wagstaffe, colonel sir Joseph, ix. 100. wounded at Lichfield, vii. 34. assisted at the siege of Bristol, 127. sent to Taunton, ix. 15. attends the earl of Rochester into England to aid any rising in favour of Charles II, xiv. 127. goes into the west for that purpose, 130. notice of him, 131. heads the rising at Salisbury, 131-2. escaped abroad again, 134.
- Wake, captain Baldwin, ix. 148. refuses by the King's command to obey the earl of Warwick as admiral, v. 381.
- Wales, iv. 307. v. 139. vi. 21, 33, 62 n., 66 n., 67, 237, 239, 285, 286, 322 *bis*, 377. vii. 29, 148, 157, 176 n., 298. viii. 149. ix. 35, 158, 161. xi. 7, 56, 58, 252, 256. xiii. 65. a Welsh regiment at Edge-hill and Brentford, vi. 135.
- North, vi. 64, 67, 270, 272, 274, 286. vii. 401, 416. viii. 17, 239. ix. 118, 120. xi. 41. xvi. 26.
- South, vi. 286. vii. 164, 176 n. viii. 72. ix. 42, 67, 89. xi. 40.
- Walker, Clement, vii. [319 n.], 320.
- Walker, sir Edward, Garter King at arms, xvi. 245. sent with an offer of pardon to Waller's army at Cropredy, viii. 69. removed from Charles II when in Scotland, xiii. 4.
- Waller, Edmund, vii. 187. xi. 222. his plot in London on behalf of the King, 54-68, 72, 85 n. he is banished in consequence, 73.
- Waller, sir Hardress, vi. 307. vii. 401 n. ix. 109.
- Waller, sir William, vi. 34, 84, 316. vii. 29, 84 n., 121, 123, 135, 138, 167, 187, 203, 213, 249, 264 n.

- 265, 320, 368. viii. 1, 3, 4, 5, 6, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 22, 25, 34, 35, 52, 66, 69, 71, 90, 91, 109, 110, 112, 120, 123, 138, 144, 148, 149, 153, 179, 180, 190, 254, 286. ix. 10, 30, 31, 41. x. 94. sent by the Parliament against Portsmouth, v. 439, 441 n. 1, 442. vi. 32 n. takes Farnham castle, vi. 158. takes Chichester, 235, 236. surprises and routs lord Herbert's little army, 292. takes Hereford and Tewkesbury, 294. takes Hereford again, vii. 29. comes before Worcester, and is repulsed, 30. sent into the west, 93, 94, 99, 101, 102, 103, 105, 106. some account of him, 100. his wife, *ib.* called by his party William the Conqueror, *ib.* his forces defeated at Chewton, 101-2. and at Lansdown, 101 n., 106, 107. his farther movements, and siege of Devizes, 110-115. routed at Roundway-down, 101 n., 117, 118. an enmity in consequence between him and the earl of Essex, 120. reconciliation with him, 236. made governor of the forces and militia of London, 172. sent into Hants to oppose lord Hopton, vii. 401 n. viii. 9. retakes Arundel castle, vii. 401 n. viii. 10. defeats Hopton at Alresford, vii. 401 n. viii. 13, 14. his movements round Oxford, viii. 36-50. disagreement with the earl of Essex, 52, 112. marches towards Worcester after the King, 53. follows him thence, 62, 63, 73 n. worsted in the fight at Cropredy bridge, 64-70, 73 n., 112. defeated at Andover, 150. his part in the second battle of Newbury, 155. opposed the Self-denying Ordinance, 260. deprived of his commission by it, 286. ix. 5, 16. marches into Wiltshire, ix. 9. his movements in the west and round Taunton, 11-14. one of the leading men in the House of Commons, x. 104. his being made Lord Lieutenant of Ireland opposed by Cromwell, xi. 3. xii. 70. imprisoned by the Commons, xi. 208. one of those who con-
- ferred at Northumberland House about the restoration of Charles II, xvi. 160. Winchester castle was his inheritance, viii. 14.
- Wallingford, vii. 174, 178, 183, 186, 188, 189, 201 n., 210. viii. 5, 9, 25, 26, 126, 130, 159. garrisoned for the King, vi. 126 n., 155. still in his hands, x. 45.
- Walloon congregations in England, vi. 182.
- [Walmer, Kent, xi. 67 n.]
- Walsh, sir Robert, ix. 47 n. a known cheat, xi. 128. but favoured by prince Rupert, *ib.* banished the Hague [and the Court] for assaulting lord Colepepper, 130.
- Walsingham, —, xiv. 65.
- Walton, col. Valentine, taken prisoner at Worcester, vi. 45 n. one of seven commissioners appointed by Parliament to govern the army, xvi. 82. he, Haslerig, and Morley go to Portsmouth, which declares for the Parliament against the army, 93.
- Wandesford, sir Rowland [and sir Christopher], iv. 41 n.
- Wantage, Berks, viii. 37, 39.
- Warbeck, Perkin, v. 246, 315.
- [Warburton, Will., bishop of Gloucester: his notes quoted, iv. 126, 280. vi. 409. xiv. 95.]
- [Wardlaw, col. James, vii. 297 n.]
- Wards, Court of, odious to the nobility and gentry, ii. 102. xiii. 125.
- Ware, colonel, vii. 93.
- Ware, sir James, vii. 366.
- Wareham, Dorsetshire, viii. 60.
- Warminster, Wilts, vii. 129.
- Warneford, capt., vi. 238.
- Warren, col. Henry, notice of, xvi. 96.
- Warrington, Lancashire, xiii. 60, 61. xiv. 109.
- Warrington, or Werrington, Cornwall, ix. 62, 65, 76, 104, 133 n.
- Warwick, v. 441 n. 2, 446 n. vi. 83, 96, 97, 100, 101, 125, 126, 274, 276. vii. 101. viii. 61, 63, 70. x. 31. the castle, vii. 31. x. 61. [xi. 104 n. 7.]
- Warwick, Robert Rich, second earl of, iii. 244. iv. 11, 204 n. v. 372 n., 374, 376, 377 and n., 378, 381, 282. 204. 206. 441 n. 1. 4. vi. 73.

- 405, 407. vii. 22. xi. 24, 37, 69, 73, 84, 123, 136. a great patron of the Puritans, iii. 27. yet showed no aversion from episcopacy, 146. concurred in the prosecution of Laud and Strafford, 28. sworn a Privy Councillor, 50. one of the leaders in the House of Lords, 55 *n.* made Warden of the Cinque Ports, iii. 237, 239. appointed admiral of the fleet without the King's consent, v. 37-39, 44. ordered by the Parliament to transport the magazine from Hull to London, 57. appointed by the Parliament Lord High Admiral, upon the King's revocation of the earl of Northumberland's commission, 377 *n.*-380. appointed to command an army, but resigned upon the Parliament's resolving that Essex should be the only general, vi. 146. his character, 404. sent by Parliament to the Devonshire coast, vii. 103. attempts with his fleet the relief of Exeter, but does not succeed, 193. his patent of Lord High Admiral, the first thing sealed with the Parliament's new Great Seal, 316. one of the few Peers who attended Parliament, 369 *n.* 5, 375. has great influence in Essex, viii. 18. one of those proposed to be intrusted with the power of the militia for a time, 250. his cruel treatment of Irish prisoners, 284. dispossessed of his command by the Self-denying Ordinance, ix. 4. he and the earl of Manchester were the two pillars of the Presbyterian party, x. 110. they withdraw from the Parliament to the army, *ib.* he promised to aid his brother, the earl of Holland, in his rising, xi. 5, 69. and why, 24. the Parliament prepare a fleet under him against the royalist fleet, 68. the Prince of Wales writes to him, 69. his answer, *ib.* the Prince goes towards Holland, avoiding to fight him, 71. he follows him, *ib.* comes upon the coast of Holland and summons the Prince's fleet to surrender, 133. unable to save the life of his brother, the earl of Holland, 259. his part in the inauguration of Cromwell as Protector, xv. 47. his death, 145. much lamented by Cromwell, who was his fast friend, *ib.* his daughter married to lord Mandeville, iii. 27. and his heir to Cromwell's daughter Frances, vi. 404. xv. 51.
- Warwick, Charles Rich, fourth earl of, xvi. 239.
- Warwickshire, v. 441 *n.* 2. vi. 274, 283. viii. 63, 148, 226.
- Washington, colonel, at the siege of Bristol, vii. 128.
- Waterford, xi. 148.
- Watson, —, scout-master, x. 135, 147.
- Webb, —, secretary to the duke of Richmond, viii. 204.
- Webb, colonel William, viii. 123 *n.*, 126, 129. (as major-general), ix. 108, 150.
- Weelings, the: *see* Wieringen.
- Welbeck, Notts, the King there, ix. 85, 122.
- [Wellingborough, Northants, xii. 151 *n.*]
- Wellington, Shropshire, the King there, vi. 23.
- Wellington, Somerset, vi. 33.
- Wellington House, near Taunton, ix. 15, 24, 25.
- Wells, Somerset, v. 441 *n.* 2. vi. 3, 5, 6, 7. vii. 101-5, 192. ix. 11, 13, 50.
- Welsh, sir Rob.: *see* Walsh.
- Wemyss, Weemes or Wemmes, —, made master-gunner of England by Charles I, viii. 66, 73 *n.* yet sided with the Parliament, *ib.* taken prisoner in the fight at Cropredy, *ib.* commanded the artillery in the Scottish army of Charles II, xiii. 51. a good officer, *ib.*
- Wenman, sir Francis, viii. 131.
- Wenman, captain Samuel, notice of, vii. 131. his death, *ib.*
- Wenman, Thomas lord, one of the commissioners at Uxbridge, viii. 211.
- Wentworth, George, vii. 366.
- Wentworth, colonel Henry, vi. 74.
- Wentworth, Peter, v. 289.
- Wentworth, Thomas lord, ix. 20 *n.* 94, 99, 100, 108, 109, 133. xiii.

123. with Goring at Portsmouth, vi. 32 *n.* signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6. sent by lord Goring to the Prince of Wales with certain demands, ix. 78, 83. which he is persuaded not to deliver, 79. not willing to give up the command devolved to him by Goring, 107, 110. his horse beaten at Ashburton, 117. appointed to command the horse under lord Hopton, 135, 137. he submits to this charge, contrary to expectation, 136, 139. sent with others to fetch the Prince of Wales from Jersey to France, x. 22, 38. concerned in the factions in the Prince's fleet, xi. 63. resolved to attend Charles II into Scotland, xii. 124. had the command of a regiment of guards raised by the King in Flanders, xv. 68.
- Wentworth: *see* earl of Strafford.
- Werrington: *see* Warrington.
- Westfield, Thomas, made bishop of Bristol, iv. 34.
- Westminster, iii. 1. iv. 15 *n.*, 195-8, 201 *n.* v. 52, 91 *n.*, 155, 203 *n.*, 261, 273, 333, 340, 364 *n.* 16, 426, 441. vi. 12, 191, 193, 199, 208, 218. vii. 48, 68, 253, 317. x. 114. xi. 204. xii. 7. xiv. 34. xvi. 11, 83, 84, 108, 120, 145. tumults there, iii. 192 *n.*, 196. iv. 120, 173, 175, 301. v. 5, 8, 14, 173, 267, 341, 359. St. Margaret's Church, vii. 62. King Street, xvi. 84. Palace Yard, xiv. 25. xvi. 84, 85, 221.
- Abbey, attacked, iv. 111, 119. Pyy buried there, vii. 413. the dean's house given to Bradshaw, xi. 220. Henry VII's Chapel, 245. [lord Cottington's monument, xiii. 29 *n.*] Blake buried there, xv. 57.
- Hall, iii. 3, 41, 96, 105, 139, 180. iv. 106, 160, 165, 184, 204, 267. vi. 334. vii. 100. xi. 207, 220, 231, 262, 264. xiv. 23. xv. 74, 151. xvi. 221.
- Westmoreland, ix. 119, 126. xi. 14. 51, 92.
- Westmoroland, Mildmay Fane, second earl of, signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. in confinement for his loyalty, vii. 369 *n.* 6.
- Weston, Richard: *see* earl of Portland.
- Weston, Thomas, vi. 32 *n.*
- Wexford, vii. 360.
- Weymouth, vii. 216, 369 *n.* 8. viii. 148. ix. 11, 100. surrendered to the King's forces, vii. 191, 192, 199. sir A. A. Cooper appointed governor, 200. delivered to the earl of Essex, viii. 60. surprised by the King's party, 239. ix. 7. lost again through lord Goring's neglect, viii. 253. ix. 8, 21.
- Whalley, or Whaley, col. Edward, x. 91. commanded the guards in custody of the King at Hampton Court, 126. opposed Cromwell's being made king, xv. 34. promises to support the Protector Richard against the council of officers, xvi. 10. is deprived by them of his command, 12.
- Wharton, Philip lord, iii. 55 *n.* iv. 11. vi. 297-9. xi. 194, 197. a commissioner to treat with the Scots at Ripon, ii. 107. concurred in the prosecution of Laud and Strafford, iii. 28. proposed by Parliament for command of an army in Ireland, v. 132. present at the battle of Edge-hill, vi. 79. carried intelligence of it to the House of Lords, 101. one of the few lords who attended Parliament, vii. 369 *n.* 5, 375.
- Wharton, sir Thomas, vii. 355.
- Wheatley, Oxfordshire, vi. 322.
- Wheeler, —, account of his being forbidden the Prince's Court at Barnstaple, ix. 53 *n.*
- Whetcomb, Tristram, iv. 332. v. 3. 168.
- Whetham, col. Nathaniel, governor of Portsmouth, received Haslerig and Morley there, xvi. 93. and declared for the Parliament against the army, *ib.*
- [Whetstone, sir Thomas, xvi. 155, 156, 157.]
- Whiccoots, col. Christopher, governor of Windsor castle, would not allow the Prayer-Book to be used

- at the burial of Charles I, xi. 244.
- Whitaker, Laurence, iii. 13.
- White, —, servant to Charles I, vi. 139.
- White, John, a grave lawyer, chairman of the committee of the Commons about religion, iii. 56.
- Whitehall, ii. 86, 87. iii. 135, 172, 192 *n.*, 197. iv. 78 *and n.*, 86, 119, 120, 121. 139, 154, 157, 173, 175, 197, 210 *n.*, 286, 328, 332, 334, 335, 338. v. 4, 5, 8, 14, 31, 32, 116 *n.*, 173, 197, 267, 396. vi. 30, 125, 221. vii. 414. x. 101. xi. 204, 206, 244, 245. xiv. 16, 21, 23, 25, 74. xv. 43, 51, 146. xvi. 9, 14, 120, 126, 128, 130, 133, 147, 221, 246, 247.
- [Whitehall, —], a puritan minister killed at Birmingham, vii. 33.
- Whitehead, colonel, viii. 123.
- Whitford, colonel, taken with the marquis of Montrose, but not executed, xii. 141. had been one of the murderers of Dorislaus, *ib.*
- [Whitgreave, —, Moseley, xiii. 87 *n.*]
- Whitlocke, Bulstrode, one of the Parliament commissioners to treat with the King at Oxford, vi. 318, 369. and at Uxbridge, viii. 211. reasons for his adhering to the Parliament, 248. was in favour of the Self-denying Ordinance, 261. appointed by the Parliament one of the Keepers of the Seal, xi. 249 *n.* his part in the inauguration of Cromwell as Protector, xv. 47. the Committee of Safety make him Keeper of their Great Seal, xvi. 91.
- Wibrant, Daniel, vii. 347.
- Wich: *see* Wych.
- Widdrington: *see* Withrington.
- Wieringen, Holland, xiv. 29.
- Wigan, Lancashire, xi. 75. xiii. 66.
- Wight, Isle of, v. 136, 441 *n.* i. vi. 2, 401. vii. 121 *n.* x. 128–133, 136, 145–7, 150, 160, 162. xi. 4, 9, 28, 33, 55, 83, 110–114, 116, 131, 153, 204, 212, 224. xii. 20, 151. xiv. 86, 87. xv. 119. xvi. 22, 141, 159, 211. (*See* Newport.)
- Wilde, sergeant John, the Parliament desire the King to make him Chief Baron of the Exchequer, vi. 231. one of the commissioners for the new Great Seal, vii. 315. made Chief Baron of the Exchequer by the Parliament, x. 145. presided at the trial of captain Burley, in the Isle of Wight, *ib.* his instructions to the grand jury to acquit Rolph, when tried for a design on the King's life, xi. 198.
- Wildman, John, a Leveller, xiv. 47. account of him, 48–9. he is imprisoned by Cromwell, 49. signed the Levellers' address to Charles II, xv. 118.
- Wilkes, col. Timothy, one of the commissioners appointed by Monck to treat with the officers of the army at London, xvi. 95. cashiered by him for having consented to something contrary to his instructions, 103.
- Willemsen or Williamson, Heinrich, afterwards called Rosewell or Rosenvinge, Danish resident at Madrid, notice of, xii. 96, 98.
- Williams, John, bishop of Lincoln, afterwards archbishop of York, i. 11, 19. v. 173. Keeper of the Great Seal, but unfit for the office, i. 96. generally abominated while holding it, 201. removed from it through the duke of Buckingham, 96. takes the lead against Laud's ritual alterations, 201. iv. 130. his treatise, *The Holy Table*, i. 201. imprisoned by the Star-Chamber, iii. 103. iv. 131. proposed that the bishops be excused from attending Strafford's trial, iii. 102. iv. 135. a mortal enemy to Laud, iii. 103. praised lord Say, *ib.* made archbishop of York, iii. 192 *n.* his ignominious advice to the King to consent to Strafford's attainder, *ib.*, 198–9. iv. 136, 138. appointed a thanksgiving-prayer to be used in Westminster, as dean, for the peace with Scotland, which the House of Commons disliked, iv. 9. in danger of his life from a mob, 119, 138. his pride and ostenta-

- tion, 130. his conduct with regard to his trial in the Star-Chamber, 131-2. with regard to Laud, 134. to the trial of Strafford, 135. preaches before the King as dean of Westminster, 134. fought against the King, 137. his insolent conduct as archbishop of York provoked great hatred, 138. advised the bishops to protest against the proceedings of the House of Lords in their absence, 139. the protest drawn up by him, 140.
- [Williamscoote or] Wilscot, Oxfordshire, viii. 67.
- Willis, sir Richard, governor of Newark, ix. 128. why the King resolved to remove him from this charge, 129. his resistance to this intention, 130. ordered by the King never to come into his presence again, *ib.* a petition and remonstrance in his favour by several officers, *ib.* his treachery in betraying royalist plans to Cromwell, xv. 91. xvi. 28-33. his character, xvi. 29.
- Willoughby, Francis, vii. 366.
- Willoughby d'Eresby, lord : *see* earl of Lindsey.
- Willoughby of Parham, Francis lord, executes the ordinance of the militia in Lincolnshire, v. 387. one of the few lords who attended Parliament, vii. 369 *n.* 5, 375. was of great esteem amongst the Presbyterians, though not tainted with their principles, xi. 35. left the Parliament and went to Holland, *ib.* appointed vice-admiral of the royal fleet, *ib.*, 36, 134. retained the post out of duty to the King against his inclination, 139. succeeded by prince Rupert, 149. removed by Parliament from the government of Barbados, xiii. 172. a design of surprising Lynn by him and sir H. Townsend, xvi. 24. both apprehended before they effected it, 38.
- Wilmot, Henry, afterwards lord, and subsequently earl of Rochester, iii. 109. v. 432 *and n.*, 446 *n. save*, 448. vii. 28, 204. xiii. 108, 138. xiv. 141, 143. xv. 99. taken prisoner by the Scots at Newburn, but released, ii. 111, 112. opposed to the earl of Strafford, 111. concerned in the alleged army-plot, iii. 224, 226. iv. 4. v. 169. imprisoned in consequence, iii. 192 *n.* made commissary-general of the King's horse, v. 441 *n.* 3. want of courage imputed to him, v. 446 *n.*, 448. vii. 238. present and wounded in the rencounter at Worcester, vi. 44, 45. commanded the left wing of horse at the battle of Edge-hill, 79 *n.*, 82, 85. prince Rupert exceedingly prejudiced against him, 126 *n.* vii. 121. viii. 30. was not fast in the King's favour, vii. 121. and why, viii. 95. made lieutenant-general, vi. 155. takes Marlborough, which had been garrisoned by the Parliament, 156-7. sent to Devizes and routs sir W. Waller at Roundway-down, vii. 101 *n.*, 115-119, 121. retires to Oxford to attend the King, 123. signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, 369 *n.* 6. much consulted by the King on military affairs, viii. 28. his character, 30, 94, 169. hostile to the Secretary of State and Master of the Rolls (lord Digby and sir J. Colepepper), 30, 61, 94-5. charged with ill-humour and negligence in not beating up the enemy's quarters near Oxford, 38. advises that the King should march towards London, 62. present at Cropredy, 64, 73 *n.* urged peace, 95. arrested for high treason, against the wishes of the army, 96, 98. upon lord Goring's being put in command over him, he obtains leave to retire into France, 98. made a baron through the Queen's interest, 94 *n.*, 269, 275. sent with others to fetch the Prince of Wales out of Jersey to France, x. 22. concerned in the factions in the Prince's fleet, xi. 63. resolved to attend Charles II into Scotland, xii. 124. assists him to escape out of England after the battle of Worcester, xiii. 87-90.

- 95-99, 103-105. appointed one of the Privy Council, 123. solicits the King to make him an earl, 147. who makes him earl of Rochester, and sends him to the Diet at Ratisbon, xiv. 55, 57. his return, 103. goes into England to aid a rising in favour of the King, 126-7, 129. he designs for the north, 130. goes there without success, 135. narrowly escapes capture at Aylesbury, 136. deceived by Manning, 138-140. has the command of a regiment raised by the King in Flanders, xv. 68.
- Wilscof: see Williamscof.
- Wilton, Wilts, viii. 150, 245. xiv. 139.
- Wiltshire, vi. 128, 156, 196, 237, 292, 392. vii. 94, 110, 207, 298. viii. 148. ix. 9, 11, 13, 120. xiii. 102. xiv. 131, 134.
- Wimbledon, Edward Cecil, viscount, murmurs against him for the failure at Cadiz, i. 85. had served in Holland, *ib.*
- [Winceby, Linc., engagement there, vii. 322 *n.*]
- Winchester, vi. 158, 411 *n.* vii. 401 *n.* viii. 1, 4, 5, 9, 12, 13, 126, 127, 128. xi. 198, [221 *n.*]. xiii. 102. taken by Cromwell, ix. 162. the castle, vii. 401 *n.* occupied by sir W. Ogle, *ib.* viii. 2. had been granted by the King to Waller, 14.
- Winchester, John Paulet, fifth marquis of, commanded the garrison in his own house at Basing, viii. 123, 139. relieved from a siege by colonel Gage, 123-130. again besieged and relieved, 164.
- Winchester, Honora de Burgh, marchioness of, viii. 123.
- Windebank, Christopher, son of sir Francis, bred at Magdalen College, Oxford, xii. 103 *n.* notice of him at Madrid, *ib.*
- Windebank, sir Francis, Secretary of State, iii. 86, 119. iv. 68, 100 *n.*, 167 *n.* vi. 395. xii. 103 *n.* one of the Committee of State, ii. 99. being accused by the House of Commons, withdrew beyond sea, iii. 15 *n.*, 16. anecdote concerning him and a Roman Catholic priest, iii. 15 *n.*, 19. accused of favouring the Roman Catholics, 15 *n.*-19. other charges, 20.
- Windham, colonel Edmund, ix. 13, 14, 49. accompanied the marquis of Hertford into the west, v. 443. high sheriff of Somersetshire, vii. 98. made governor of Bridgewater, *ib.* notice of him, *ib.* the blockade of Taunton intrusted to him, viii. 147. ix. 7. which he is forced to raise, ix. 7, 49. particulars of a design of making him Secretary of State, xii. 60-63. the King diverted from appointing him by lord Cottington, 64.
- Windham, colonel Francis, procures the surrender of Dunster Castle to the King's forces, vii. 97. is made governor of it, *ib.* which he surrendered upon fair conditions at the end of the war, xiii. 95. notice of him, *ib.* assisted Charles II in his escape out of England after the battle of Worcester, 96, 97, 102, 103.
- Windham, sir Hugh, ix. 53 *n.*
- Windham, Mrs., Charles II's nurse, ix. 18. xii. 60. diverted him from business, and prejudiced him against his council, xi. 18. took undue familiarities with him, 19.
- Windsor, vi. 154, 207, 322 *ter.* vii. 24, 46 *n.*, 213, 288. viii. 34, 36. x. 108, 147. xi. 202.
- Castle, iv. 210, 217, 229, 275, 297, 301, 308. v. 116 *n.*, 432. vi. 126 *n.*, 133, 134. xi. 104, 109, 221, 223, 229, 260. xvi. 226. the burial of Charles I there, xi. 244, 245.
- Wine monopoly, ii. 103.
- Wingate, captain, member of the House of Commons, taken prisoner in the rencontre near Worcester, vi. 45.
- Winnibank: see Windebank.
- Winniffe, Thomas, made bishop of Lincoln, iv. 34.
- Winter, sir John: Parliament desires his removal from the King, iv. 222.
- Wise, —, mayor of Gloucester, vii. 163.
- Wishart, Dr. Geo., bishop of Edinburgh, his *Life of Montrose*, viii.

278. xii. 17. excommunicated for not taking the Covenant, xii. 17. preaches before the King, *ib.*
- Withrington, *or* Widdrington, sir Thomas, Speaker of the House of Commons, 1656, xv. 29, 43. his part in the inauguration of Cromwell as Protector, 47.
- Withrington, *or* Widdrington, William lord, signed the Peers' letter to the Council in Scotland, vii. 369 *n.* 6. goes with the earl of Derby to support Charles II's cause in Lancashire, xiii. 61. killed in the fight at Wigan, 67. his character, 69. had quitted the kingdom with the marq. of Newcastle, and had returned to Scotland with Charles II, *ib.*
- Witney, Oxfordshire: the King there, viii. 57, 61.
- [Woburn, Beds., x. 122 *n.*, 125 *n.*]
- Wogan, captain: account of him, xiv. 59. goes from Paris to Scotland to fight for the King, 60, 61. where he is killed, 61.
- [Wolfe, —, Madeley, xiii. 85 *n.*]
- Wolfe, father, raises a tumult in Limerick against Ormonde, xiii. 113.
- Wolfelt, *or* Uhlfeld, Cornifix, ambassador from Denmark to the States General, assists the marq. of Montrose, xii. 40, 129.
- Wolsey, cardinal, iii. 126.
- Wolverhampton, vi. 76.
- Wood, sir Henry, the Queen's treasurer, xiii. 129.
- Woodstock, Oxfordshire, vi. 99. viii. 47, 73 *n.* ix. 28. [x. 32 *n.*]
- Worcester, vi. 23, 66 *n.*, 70, 76, 77, 238, 294. vii. 157. viii. 50, 73 *n.*, 278, ix. 16, 28, 32, 36, 67, 87, 118, 120, 121, 127, 161, 164. x. 31, 45. xiii. 73, 83, 108, 119, 130, 131, 135, 170. xiv. 1, 36, 64, 70, 72, 73, 84. xv. 98. xvi. 25. prince Rupert successful in an engagement there, vi. 45-6. Essex enters it, 63. sir W. Waller repulsed there, vii. 30. the King goes there, followed by Waller, viii. 50, 53-55, 63. Charles II is gladly received there, xiii. 64, 65, 183. xiv. 17. is defeated there by Cromwell, xiii. 75-6.
- Worcester, Henry Somerset, first marquis of, vi. 286. xiv. 138. generally reputed the greatest monied man in the kingdom, vi. 288. garrisoned his house, Ragland castle, ix. 67. the King there, *ib.*
- Worcester, second marquis of: *see* lord Herbert.
- Worcestershire, vii. 174. viii. 62, 239. ix. 32, 43, 89.
- Wren, Matthew, bishop of Norwich, and afterwards of Ely, notice of, ii. 1. the Scottish liturgy and canons submitted to him, Land, and Juxon, 1, 3, 11. complaints against his pride and insolence, iii. 68. signed the bishops' protestation in 1641, iv. 140. proceeded passionately against foreign artisans in the diocese of Norwich, vi. 184.
- Wright, sir Benj., xii. 77, 82, 83, 85, 103 *n.* xiii. 27. some account of him, xii. 86-7.
- Wright, Robert, bishop of Lichfield and Coventry, signed the bishops' protestation in 1641, iv. 140.
- Wyatt, sir Dudley, ix. 143. x. 2, 11, 37.
- Wych, sir Peter, Comptroller of the King's Household, signed the declaration that the King had no intention of war, v. 346. had been ambassador at Constantinople, vi. 396. notice of him, *ib.*
- Wycombe, Oxon, vii. 76.
- Wykeham, William of, founder of New College, Oxford, vi. 409.
- Wyndham, —, a Parliament officer taken prisoner in the rencontre at Worcester, vi. 45 *n.*
- Wyndham: *see* Windham.
- [Wynram, *or* Windram, George, xii. 119 *n.*]
- Wyverton, Notts, ix. 131.

## X.

Xancten, in the duchy of Clèves, xiv. 115.

## Y.

Yeomans, —, alderman of Bristol, hanged for correspondence with prince Rupert, vii. 53.



York, iii. 40, 110. iv. 281. v. 30, 36, 41, 43, 46, 53, 67, 89, 91, 92, 104, 116, 118, 137, 140, 143, 144, 148, 155, 156, 203, 209, 211, 213, 236, 249, 283, 310, 313, 314, 318, 323, 326, 333, 343, 361, 370, 372, 374, 376, 377 n., 384, 385 *and n.*, 419, 432 n. *sæpe*, 434 n., 435, 436, 437, 438, 439, 441 n. 2, 444, 446 *and n.*, 449. vi. 1, 8 *and n.*, 21, 57 n., 62 n., 109, 110, 245, 257, 260-64, 274, 302, 368, 385, 386, 388, 392, 393, 397, 403. vii. 31, 86, 101 n., 158, 187, 314, 322, 400, 405, 408, 414, 415, 416. viii. 17, 20, 73, 75 n., 79, 88, 262. ix. 126. xi. 41, 123, 126 n., 231. xiv. 130. xvi. 102, 110, 116, 117. the King there in 1639, i. 166 n. ii. 35. — in 1640, ii. 91, 93. — in 1641, iv. 1, 2. — in 1642, iv. 346, 352, 358. v. 1, 31. an occurrence there which was a sad presage of misfortunes, v. 446. a printing press set up by the King at York, v. 159, 254. the earl of Newcastle goes there, vi. 263. the Queen goes there, 268. delivered up to the Parliament forces, viii. 78. (See Council.) — the Court of, vote passed in Parliament against, iii. 157-60. iv.

54

York, duke of, afterwards James II, v. 430. vi. 49. viii. 179. x. 118, 133, 160. xi. 33, 202. xii. 59. xiii. 129, 143, 178. xiv. 69, 73, 85, 98. xv. 81, 132. xvi. 27, 73, 155, 176, 177, 229, 235. sent to Hull by Charles I, and well received by sir J. Hotham, v. 89, 91. installed knight of the Garter, v. 116 n. was present at the battle of Edge-hill, vi. 79 n., 85. signed the letter sent by the Parliament at Oxford to the earl of Essex, vii. 375. left by the King at Oxford, viii. 48, 73 n. ix. 35. x. 62, 115 n. fell into the Parliament's hands at the surrender of that place, x. 103, 115 n. was committed to the care of the earl of Northumberland, *ib.* how treated by him, *ib.* the King's conversation with him at Hampton Court, 116. who recommended

him, if possible, to escape to Holland, *ib.* whither he escapes by the assistance of Bampffield, xi. 19, 20. well received by the princess of Orange, his sister, 21. sir J. Berkeley made his governor in the absence of lord Byron, *ib.* intended by the King to be Lord High Admiral, 29. intrigues made in the fleet on his behalf, 33, 35. goes to the English fleet at Helvoetsluys, 32. appoints lord Willoughby of Parham his vice-admiral, 35. sent to the Hague by the prince of Wales, who assumes command of the fleet himself, 35, 80. his condition there, 127. desired to have command of the fleet, but was at length convinced that it could not be given him, 141. sent for by the Queen to Paris, 150 n. mismanagement of his household there, xiii. 36-7. sir E. Herbert and sir G. Ratcliff recommend to him the pattern of the duke of Lorraine, 38. he goes to Brussels in order to visit the duke, 40. his two counsellors propose a match for him with the duke's daughter, 41. he visits his sister at the Hague, 42. the factions in his household at Breda, 46. he returns to Paris to the Queen, *ib.* the necessities and factions of his family, 122. urged to enter into the French service, *ib.* deliberations in the Council thereon, 128. he enters the army, *ib.* his governor, lord Byron, dies, 148. he is pleased with war, *ib.* sir J. Berkeley proposes madlle. de Longueville for his wife, 149. he was not averse, but would not act without the King's and Queen's consent, *ib.* discussions thereon, and failure of scheme, 150-51, 153. cardinal Mazarin gives him notice that he must quit France, xv. 76. leaves Paris, and goes to the King at Bruges, 82. present at the siege of Arras, 136. fought at the battle of Dunkirk, 137. retired to Nieuport, 138, 142. goes to Boulogne, xvi. 35. confers with

- Tursne, who offers assistance, 45. returns to Brussels, 46. the King of Spain offers to make him his admiral, 13 *n.*, 75, 76. which he accepts, 75, 112. takes command of the English fleet which convey Charles II to England, 238. ten thousand pounds sent him by the English Parliament, 239. gives new names to some ships, 245.
- York, archbishop of: see J. Williams.
- Yorkshire, iv. 329. v. 96, 310, 336, 377, 434 *n.*, 441 *n.* 2, 5. vi. 62 *n.*, 73 *bis*, 110, 257, 261-3. vii. 121 *n.*, 176 *n.*, 298, 400, 416 *n.* viii. 19, 84, 86, 201. ix. 29, 85, 124. xi. 14, 51, 97, 116, 117, 121, 122. xiii. 61. xiv. 135. xv. 51, 95, 99, 101. xvi. 44. petition to the King from gentlemen of Yorkshire about Hull, v. 89, 102, 236, 312. the King's convention of the county, 364 *n.* 4. petition to him from sir T. Fairfax and others, *ib.* *n.* 4, 10. the command of the county given to the earl of Cumberland and sir T. Glemham, 441 *n.* 5, 445. articles of neutrality agreed on for the county, but annulled by Parliament, vi. 257-8.
- Ypres, xv. 138.

## Z.

- Zealand, iv. 205. x. 120. xiv. 28, 128, 137, 141, 143, 145. xvi. 169.
- Zested, Hannibal: see Schestedt.
- Zouch, Edward lord, vi. 395.

# Clarendon Press, Oxford.

## STANDARD HISTORICAL WORKS.

### **A Manual of Ancient History.**

By GEORGE RAWLINSON, M.A.  
*Second Edition.* 8vo. 14s.

### **A History of Greece from its Conquest by the Romans to the present time, B.C. 146 to A.D. 1864.**

By GEORGE FINLAY, LL.D. A new Edition, revised throughout, and in part re-written, with considerable additions, by the Author, and edited by H. F. TOZER, M.A., 7 vols. 8vo. 3l. 10s.

### **Italy and her Invaders,**

A.D. 376-476. By T. HODGKIN, D.C.L. 4 vols. 8vo. 3l. 8s.

### **Clinton's Epitome of the Fasti Hellenici.**

8vo. 6s. 6d.

### **Clinton's Epitome of the Fasti Romani.**

8vo. 7s.

### **Chapters of Early English Church History.**

By W. BRIGHT, D.D. 8vo. 12s.

### **Registrum Sacrum Anglicanum.**

An attempt to exhibit the course of Episcopal Succession in England. By W. STUBBS, D.D. Small 4to. 8s. 6d.

### **History of the Norman Conquest of England; its Causes and Results.**

By E. A. FREEMAN, D.C.L. 6 vols. 8vo. 5l. 9s. 6d.

### **The Reign of William Rufus**

and the Accession of Henry the First. By E. A. FREEMAN, D.C.L. 2 vols. 8vo. 1l. 16s.

### **The Constitutional History**

of England, in its Origin and Development. By WILLIAM STUBBS, D.D., Lord Bishop of Chester. *Library Edition.* Three vols. 8vo. 2l. 8s.

Also in 3 vols. crown 8vo. price 12s. each.

### **Select Charters and other**

**Illustrations of English Constitutional History, from the Earliest Times to the Reign of Edward I.** Arranged and Edited by W. STUBBS, D.D. *Fourth Edition.* Crown 8vo. 8s. 6d.

### **Seventeen Lectures on the**

**Study of Medieval and Modern History, and Kindred Subjects,** by W. STUBBS, D.D. *Second Edition.* Crown 8vo. 8s. 6d.

### **History of Agriculture and**

**Prices in England, A.D. 1259-1793.** By JAMES E. THOROLD ROGERS, M.A.

Vols. I and II (1259-1400). 8vo. 2l. 2s.

Vols. III and IV (1401-1582). 8vo. 2l. 10s.

Vols. V and VI (1583-1702). 2l. 10s.

### **Gascoigne's Theological Dictionary**

("Liber Veritatum"): Selected Passages, illustrating the condition of Church and State, 1403-1458. With an Introduction by JAMES E. THOROLD ROGERS, M.A. Small 4to. 10s. 6d.

**The Governance of England:**

otherwise called, *The Difference between an Absolute and a Limited Monarchy.* By Sir JOHN FORTESCUE, Kt., sometime Chief Justice of the King's Bench. A Revised Text, edited with Introduction, Notes, and Appendices, by CHARLES PLUMMER, M.A. 8vo. 12s. 6d.

**A History of France.** With

numerous Maps, Plans, and Tables. By G. W. KITCHIN, D.D. *Second Edition.* 3 vols. Crown 8vo. each 10s. 6d.

**Burnet's History of the Re-**

formation of the Church of England. *A new Edition.* Carefully revised, and the Records collated with the originals, by N. POCOCK, M.A. 7 vols. 8vo. 1l. 10s.

**Records of the Reformation.**

*The Divorce, 1527-1533.* Mostly now for the first time printed from MSS. in the British Museum and other Libraries. Collected and arranged by N. POCOCK, M.A. 2 vols. 8vo. 1l. 16s.

**Burnet's History of James II,**

with additional Notes. 8vo. 9s. 6d.

**Burnet's History of His Own**

Time, with the suppressed Passages and Notes. 6 vols. 8vo. 2l. 10s.

**The First Nine Years of the**

Bank of England: An Enquiry into a Weekly Record of the Price of Bank Stock, from August 17, 1694, to September 17, 1703. By JAMES E. THOROLD ROGERS. 8vo. 8s. 6d.

**A History of England, princi-**

pally in the Seventeenth Century. By LEOPOLD VON RANKE. Translated by Resident Members of the University of Oxford, under the superintendence of G. W. KITCHIN, D.D., and C. W. BOASE, M.A. 6 vols. 8vo. 3l. 3s.

**Calendar of the Clarendon**

State Papers, preserved in the Bodleian Library. 3 vols. 8vo. 2l. 8s.

**Calendar of Charters and**

Rolls preserved in the Bodleian Library. 8vo. 1l. 11s. 6d.

**Carte's Life of James Duke**

of Ormond. *A new Edition,* carefully compared with the original MSS. 6 vols. 8vo. 1l. 5s.

**Clarendon's Life, including a**

Continuation of his History. 2 vols. medium 8vo. 1l. 2s.

**Luttrell's (Narcissus) Diary.**

A Brief Historical Relation of State Affairs, 1678-1714. 6 vols. 1857. 8vo. cloth, 1l. 4s.

**Sprigg's England's Recovery,**

being the History of the Army under Sir Thomas Fairfax. 8vo. 6s.

**Whitelock's Memorials of**

English Affairs from 1625 to 1660. 4 vols. 8vo. 1l. 10s.

**Protests of the Lords, includ-**

ing those which have been expunged, from 1624 to 1874; with Historical Introductions. Edited by JAMES E. THOROLD ROGERS, M.A. 3 vols. 8vo. 2l. 2s.

Oxford

AT THE CLARENDON PRESS  
LONDON: HENRY FROWDE

# CLARENDON PRESS BOOKS

## HISTORY

### Greece, Italy, Egypt, etc

- Clinton's Fasti Hellenici**, from the LVith to the CXXIIIrd Olympiad. Third edition. 4to. £1 14s. 6d. net. From the CXXIVth Olympiad to the Death of Augustus. Second edition. 4to. £1 12s. net. Epitome. 8vo. 6s. 6d. net.
- Clinton's Fasti Romani**, from the death of Augustus to the death of Heraclius. Two volumes. 4to. £2 2s. net. Epitome. 8vo. 7s. net.
- Greswell's Fasti Temporis Catholici**. 4 vols. 8vo. £2 10s. net. Tables and Introduction to Tables. 8vo. 15s. net. *Origines Kalendariæ Italicae*. 4 vols. 8vo. £2 2s. net. *Origines Kalendariæ Hellenicae*. 6 vols. 8vo. £4 4s. net.
- A Manual of Greek Historical Inscriptions**. By E. L. HICKS. New edition, revised by G. F. HILL. 8vo. 10s. 6d. net.
- Latin Historical Inscriptions**, illustrating the history of the Early Empire. By G. M<sup>c</sup>N. RUSHFORTH. 8vo. 10s. net.
- Sources for Greek History** between the Persian and Peloponnesian Wars. By G. F. HILL. 8vo. Reissue, revised. 10s. 6d. net.
- Sources for Roman History**, B.C. 133-70. By A. H. J. GREENIDGE and A. M. CLAY. Crown 8vo. 5s. 6d. net.
- A Manual of Ancient History**. By G. RAWLINSON. 2nd ed. 8vo. 14s.
- A Junior History of Rome**. By M. A. HAMILTON. Crown 8vo, with illustrations and maps. 4s. 6d.
- Finlay's History of Greece** from its Conquest by the Romans (B.C. 146) to A.D. 1864. A new edition, revised, and in part re-written, with many additions, by the Author, and edited by H. F. TOZER. 7 vols. 8vo. 63s. net.
- The History of Sicily** from the earliest times. By E. A. FREEMAN. 8vo. Vols. I and II. The Native Nations: The Phœnician and Greek Settlements to the beginning of Athenian Intervention. £2 2s. net. Vol. III. The Athenian and Carthaginian Invasions. £1 4s. net. Vol. IV. From the Tyranny of Dionysios to the Death of Agathoklēs. Edited from posthumous MSS, by A. J. EVANS. £1 1s. net.
- Italy and her Invaders** (A.D. 376-814). With plates and maps. Eight volumes. 8vo. By T. HODGKIN. Vols. I-IV in the second edition. I-II. The Visigothic, Hunnish, and Vandal Invasions, and the Herulian Mutiny. £2 2s. III-IV. The Ostrogothic Invasion. The Imperial Restoration. £1 16s. V-VI. The Lombard Invasion, and the Lombard Kingdom. £1 16s. VII-VIII. Frankish Invasions, and the Frankish Empire. £1 4s.
- The Dynasty of Theodosius**; or, Seventy Years' Struggle with the Barbarians. By the same author. Crown 8vo. 6s.
- Aetolia; its Geography, Topography, and Antiquities**. By W. J. WOODHOUSE. With maps and illustrations. Royal 8vo. £1 1s. net.
- The Islands of the Aegean**. By H. F. TOZER. Crown 8vo. 8s. 6d.
- Dalmatia, the Quarnero, and Istria**; with Cettigne and Grado. By T. G. JACKSON. Three volumes. With plates and illustrations. 8vo. 31s. 6d. net.
- Cramer's Description of Asia Minor**. Two volumes. 8vo. 11s.
- Description of Ancient Greece**. 3 vols. 8vo. 16s. 6d.

- The Cities and Bishoprics of Phrygia.** By W. M. FLEMING. Royal 8vo. Vol. I, Part I. The Lycos Valley and South-Western Phrygia. 18s. net. Vol. I, Part II. West and West Central Phrygia. £1 1s. net.
- Stories of the High Priests of Memphis, the Sethon of Herodotus, and the Demotic Tales of Khamnas.** By F. LL. GRIFFITH. With Portfolio containing seven facsimiles. Royal 8vo. £2 7s. 6d. net.
- The Arab Conquest of Egypt.** By A. J. BUTLER. 8vo. 16s. net.
- Baghdad during the Abbasid Caliphate, from contemporary sources.** By G. LE STRANGE. With eight plans. 8vo. 16s. net.
- Scripta Minoa.** By A. J. EVANS. Royal 4to. Vol. I. Hieroglyphic and Primitive Linear Classes. With plates, figures, and many other illustrations. £2 2s. net.

## Archaeology

- Ancient Khotan.** Detailed report of Archaeological explorations in Chinese Turkestan carried out and described under the orders of H.M. Indian Government by M. AUREL STEIN. Vol. I. Text, with descriptive list of antiques, 72 illustrations in the text, and appendices. Vol. II. 119 colotype and other illustrations and a map. 2 vols. 4to. £5 5s. net.
- Catalogue of the Coins in the Indian Museum, Calcutta, including the Cabinet of the Asiatic Society of Bengal.** (Published for the Trustees of the Indian Museum.) Royal 8vo, with numerous colotype plates. Vol. I, by V. A. SMITH, 30s. net; or Part I (Early Foreign Dynasties and Guptas), 15s. net, Part II (Ancient Coins of Indian Types), 6s. net, Part III (Persian, Mediaeval, South Indian, Miscellaneous), 10s. 6d. net. Vol. II, by H. N. WRIGHT (the first section of Part II by Sir J. BOURDILLON), 30s. net (Sultans of Delhi, Contemporary Dynasties in India). Vol. III, by H. N. WRIGHT, 40s. net (Mughal Emperors).
- Ancient Coptic Churches of Egypt.** By A. J. BUTLER. 2 vv. 8vo. 30s.
- A Catalogue of the Cyprus Museum.** By J. L. MYRES and MAX OHNEFALSCH-RIECHTER. 8vo. With eight plates, 7s. 6d. net.
- A Catalogue of the Sparta Museum.** By M. N. TOD and A. J. B. WACE. 8vo. 10s. 6d. net.
- Catalogue of the Greek Vases in the Ashmolean Museum.** By P. GARDNER. Small folio, linen, with 26 plates. £3 3s. net.
- The Cults of the Greek States.** By L. R. FARNELL. 8vo. Five volumes, 207 plates. I-II, 32s. net; III-IV, 32s. net; V, 18s. 6d. net.
- The Stone and Bronze Ages in Italy and Sicily.** By T. E. PEET. 8vo, illustrated. 16s. net.
- Classical Archaeology in Schools.** By P. GARDNER and J. L. MYRES. 8vo. Second edition. 1s. net.
- Introduction to Greek Sculpture.** By L. E. UPCOTT. Cr. 8vo. 4s. 6d.
- Marmora Oxoniensia, Inscriptiones Graecae ad Chandleri exempla editae, cur. GUL. ROBERTS, 1791.** Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.
- De Antiquis Marmoribus, Blasii Caryophyll.** 1828. 7s. 6d. net.
- Fragmenta Herculaniensia. (Oxford Fragments.)** By W. SCOTT. Royal 8vo. £1 1s. Engravings from the Fragments. Folio. 10s. 6d., large paper £1 1s.
- Herculaniensium Voluminum Partes II.** 1824. 8vo. 10s.

# English History : Sources

- Baedae Opera Historica**, edited by C. PLUMMER. Two volumes. Crown 8vo, leather back. £1 1s. net.
- Asser's Life of Alfred, with the Annals of St. Neot**, edited by W. H. STEVENSON. Crown 8vo. 12s. net.
- The Alfred Jewel**, an historical essay. With illustrations and a map, by J. EARLE. Small 4to, buckram. 12s. 6d. net.
- Two of the Saxon Chronicles Parallel**; with supplementary extracts from the others. A Revised Text; edited by C. PLUMMER and J. EARLE. Two volumes. Crown 8vo. Vol. I. Text, appendices, and glossary. 10s. 6d. net. Vol. II. Introduction, notes, and index. 10s. 6d. net.
- The Saxon Chronicles (787-1001 A.D.)**. Crown 8vo, stiff covers. 3s.
- Handbook to the Land-Charters**. By J. EARLE. Crown 8vo. 16s.
- The Crawford Collection of early Charters and Documents**, now in the Bodleian Library. Edited by A. S. NAPIER and W. H. STEVENSON. Small 4to, cloth. 12s. net.
- The Chronicle of John of Worcester, 1118-1140**. Edited by J. R. H. WEAVER. Crown 4to. 7s. 6d. net.
- Dialogus de Scaccario**. Edited by A. HUGHES, C. G. CRUMP, and C. JOHNSON, with introduction and notes. 8vo. 12s. 6d. net.
- Passio et Miracula Beati Olavi**. Edited from the Twelfth-century MS by F. METCALFE. Small 4to. 6s.
- The Song of Lewes**. Edited from the MS, with introduction and notes, by C. L. KINGSFORD. Extra fcap 8vo. 5s.
- Chronicon Galfridi le Baker de Swynebroke**, edited by Sir E. MAUNDE THOMPSON, K.C.B. Small 4to, 18s.; cloth, gilt top, £1 1s.
- Chronicles of London**. Edited, with introduction and notes, by C. L. KINGSFORD. 8vo. 10s. 6d. net.
- Gascoigne's Theological Dictionary ('Liber Veritatum')**: selected passages, illustrating the condition of Church and State, 1403-1458. With an introduction by J. E. THOROLD ROGERS. Small 4to. 10s. 6d.
- Fortescue's Governance of England**. A revised text, edited, with introduction, etc, by C. PLUMMER. 8vo, leather back. 12s. 6d. net.
- Stow's Survey of London**. Edited by C. L. KINGSFORD. 8vo, 2 vols., with a folding map of London in 1600 (by EMERY WALKER and H. W. CRIER) and other illustrations. 30s. net.
- The Protests of the Lords, from 1624 to 1874**; with introductions. By J. E. THOROLD ROGERS. In three volumes. 8vo. £2 2s.
- Historical Evidence**. By H. B. GEORGE. Crown 8vo. 3s.

## The Clarendon Press Series of Charters, Statutes, etc

From the earliest times to 1307. By Bishop STUBBS.

Select Charters and other illustrations of English Constitutional History.  
Eighth edition. Crown 8vo. 8s. 6d.

From 1558 to 1625. By G. W. PROTHERO.

Select Statutes and other Constitutional Documents of  
the Reigns of Elizabeth and James I. Third edition.  
Crown 8vo. 10s. 6d.

From 1625 to 1660. By S. R. GARDINER.

The Constitutional Documents of the Puritan Revolution. Third edition. Crown 8vo. 10s. 6d.

### Calendars, etc

Tudor and Stuart Proclamations, 1485-1714. Calendared  
by ROBERT SREELE under the direction of the Earl of CAWFOED, K.T. Royal  
4to, two volumes. [In the press.]

Calendar of Charters & Rolls in the Bodleian Library. 8vo. 31s. 6d. o.

Calendar of the Clarendon State Papers preserved in the  
Bodleian Library. In three volumes. 1869-76.

Vol. I. From 1523 to January 1649. 8vo. 18s. net. Vol. II. From 1649  
to 1654. 8vo. 16s. net. Vol. III. From 1655 to 1657. 8vo. 14s. net.

Hakluyt's Principal Navigations. (See p. 12.)

Aubrey's 'Brief Lives,' set down between the Years 1669 and 1696.

Edited from the Author's MSS by A. CLARK. Two volumes. 8vo. £1 5s.

Whitelock's Memorials. (1625-1660.) 4 vols. 8vo. £1 10s.

Ludlow's Memoirs. (1625-1672.) Ed. C. H. FIRTH. 2 vols. 8vo. £1 16s.

Luttrell's Diary. (1678-1714.) Six volumes. 8vo. £1 10s. net.

Burnet's History of James II. 8vo. 9s. 6d.

Life of Sir M. Hale, with Fell's Life of Dr. Hammond. Small 8vo. 2s. 6d.

Memoirs of James and William, Dukes of Hamilton. 8vo. 7s. 6d.

Burnet's History of My Own Time. A new edition, based on  
that of M. J. ROUTH, by OSMUND AIRY. Two vols., each 12s. 6d. net.

Supplement, derived from Burnet's Memoirs, Autobiography, etc., all  
hitherto unpublished. Edited by H. C. FOXCROFT, 1902. 8vo. 16s. net.

The Whitefoord Papers. (1739-1810.) Ed. W.A.S. HEWINS. 8vo. 12s. 6d.

### History of Oxford

A complete list of the Publications of the Oxford Historical Society  
can be obtained from Mr. FROWNE.

Manuscript Materials relating to the History of Oxford;  
contained in the catalogues of the Oxford libraries. By F. MADAN. 8vo. 7s. 6d.

The Early Oxford Press. A Bibliography of Printing and Publishing  
at Oxford, '1468'-1610. By F. MADAN. 8vo. 18s.

### Bibliography

Cotton's Typographical Gazetteer. First Series. 8vo. 12s. 6d.



## Bishop Stubbs's and Professor Freeman's Books

**The Constitutional History of England**, in its Origin and Development. By W. STUBBS. Library edition. Three volumes. Demy 8vo. £2 8s. Also in three volumes, crown 8vo, price 12s. each.

**Seventeen Lectures** on the Study of Mediaeval and Modern History and kindred subjects, 1867-1884. By the same. Third edition, revised and enlarged, 1900. Crown 8vo, half-roan. 8s. 6d.

**History of the Norman Conquest of England; its Causes and Results.** By E. A. FREEMAN. Vols. I, II and V (English edition) are out of print.

Vols. III and IV. £1 1s. each. Vol. VI (Index). 10s. 6d.

**A Short History of the Norman Conquest of England.** Third edition. By the same. Extra fcap 8vo. 2s. 6d.

**The Reign of William Rufus and the Accession of Henry the First.** By the same. Two volumes. 8vo. £1 16s.

## School Books

**Companion to English History (Middle Ages).** Edited by F. P. BARNARD. With 97 illustrations. Crown 8vo. 8s. 6d. net.

**School History of England** to the death of Victoria. With maps, plans, etc. By O. M. EDWARDS, R. S. RAIT, and others. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**Perspective History Chart.** By E. A. G. LAMBORN. 8s. 6d. net.

## Oxford County Histories

Crown 8vo, with many illustrations, each 1s. 6d. net. (Also in superior bindings, 2s. 6d net.)

**Berkshire**, by E. A. G. LAMBORN.

**Durham**, by F. S. EDEN.

**Essex**, by W. H. WESTON.

**Hampshire**, by F. CLARKE.

**Oxfordshire**, by H. A. LIDDELL.

Others in preparation.

---

**Leeds and its Neighbourhood.** By A. C. PRICE. 3s. 6d.

**A History of Southampton.** By F. J. C. HEARNshaw and F. CLARKE. 2s. net.

Also, for junior pupils, illustrated, each 1s.

**Stories from the History of Berkshire.** By E. A. G. LAMBORN.

**Stories from the History of Oxfordshire.** By JOHN IRVING.

## Special Periods and Biographies

- Ancient Britain and the Invasions of Julius Caesar.** By T. RICE HOLMES. 8vo. 21s. net.
- Life and Times of Alfred the Great, being the Ford Lectures for 1901.** By C. PLUMMER. 8vo. 5s. net.
- The Domesday Boroughs.** By ADOLPHUS BALLARD. 8vo. 6s. 6d. net.
- Villainage in England.** *Essays in English Mediaeval History.* By P. VINOGRADOFF. 8vo. 16s. net.
- English Society in the Eleventh Century.** *Essays in English Mediaeval History.* By P. VINOGRADOFF. 8vo. 16s. net.
- Oxford Studies in Social and Legal History.** Edited by PAUL VINOGRADOFF. 8vo. Vol. I. *English Monasteries on the Eve of the Dissolution.* By ALEXANDER SAVINE. *Patronage under the Later Empire.* By F. DE ZULUETA. 12s. 6d. net.
- The Gild Merchant: a contribution to British municipal history.** By C. GROSS. Two volumes. 8vo, leather back, £1 4s.
- The Welsh Wars of Edward I; a contribution to mediaeval military history.** By J. E. MORRIS. 8vo. 9s. 6d. net.
- The Great Revolt of 1381.** By C. OMAN. With two maps. 8vo. 8s. 6d. net.
- Lancaster and York. (A. D. 1399-1485.)** By Sir J. H. RAMSAY. Two volumes. 8vo, with Index, £1 17s. 6d. Index separately, 1s. 6d.
- Life and Letters of Thomas Cromwell.** By R. B. MERRIMAN. In two volumes. [Vol. I, *Life and Letters, 1523-1535, etc.* Vol. II, *Letters, 1536-1540, notes, index, etc.*] 8vo. 18s. net.
- Edward Hyde, Earl of Clarendon.** A lecture by C. H. FIRTH. 8vo. 1s. net.
- A History of England, principally in the Seventeenth Century.** By L. VON RANKE. Translated under the superintendence of G. W. KIRCHEN and C. W. BOASE. Six volumes. 8vo. £3 3s. net. Index separately, 1s.
- Sir Walter Raleigh, a Biography,** by W. STEBBING. Post 8vo. 6s. net.
- Henry Birkhead and the foundation of the Oxford Chair of Poetry.** By J. W. MACKAIL. 8vo. 1s. net.
- Biographical Memoir of Dr. William Markham, Archbishop of York,** by Sir CLEMENTS MARKHAM, K.C.B. 8vo. 5s. net.
- The Life and Works of John Arbuthnot.** By G. A. AYKEN. 8vo, cloth extra, with Portrait. 16s.

- Life and Letters of Sir Henry Wotton.** By L. PEARSALL SMITH. 8vo. Two volumes. 25s. net.
- Great Britain and Hanover.** By A. W. WARD. Crown 8vo. 5s.
- History of the Peninsular War.** By C. OMAN. To be completed in six volumes, 8vo, with many maps, plans, and portraits. Already published: Vol. I. 1807-1809, to Corunna. Vol. II. 1809, to Talavera. Vol. III. 1809-10, to Torres Vedras. 14s. net each.
- Anglo-Chinese Commerce and Diplomacy:** mainly in the nineteenth century. By A. J. SARGENT. 12s. 6d. net.
- Frederick York Powell.** A Life and a selection from his Letters and Occasional Writings. By OLIVER ELTON. Two volumes. 8vo. With photogravure portraits, facsimiles, etc. 21s. net.
- David Binning Monro:** a Short Memoir. By J. COOK WILSON. 8vo, stiff boards, with portrait. 2s. net.
- F. W. Maitland.** Two lectures by A. L. SMITH. 8vo. 2s. 6d. net.

## European History

- Historical Atlas of Modern Europe.** (See p. 59.)
- Genealogical Tables illustrative of Modern History.** By H. B. GEORGE. Fourth (1904) edition. Oblong 4to, boards. 7s. 6d.
- The Life and Times of James the First of Aragon.** By F. D. SWIFT. 8vo. 12s. 6d.
- Documents of the Continental Reformation.** Edited by B. J. KIDD. [In the press.]
- The Renaissance and the Reformation.** A textbook of European History, 1494-1610. By E. M. TANNER. Crown 8vo, with 8 maps. 3s. 6d.
- The Fall of the Old Order.** A textbook of European History, 1763-1815. By I. L. PLUNKET. Crown 8vo, with 10 maps and plans. 4s. 6d.
- From Metternich to Bismarck.** A textbook of European History, 1815-1878. By L. CECIL JANE. Crown 8vo, with maps. 4s. 6d.
- A History of France.** By G. W. KITCHIN. Cr. 8vo; revised, Vol. I (to 1453), by F. F. URQUHART; Vols. II (1624), III (1795), by A. HASSALL. 10s. 6d. each.
- De Tocqueville's L'Ancien Régime et la Révolution.** Edited, with introductions and notes, by G. W. HEADLAM. Crown 8vo. 6s.
- Speeches of the Statesmen and Orators of the French Revolution, 1789-1795.** Ed. H. MORSE STEPHENS. Two vols. Crown 8vo. £1 1s.
- Documents of the French Revolution, 1789-1791.** By L. G. WICKHAM LEGG. Crown 8vo. Two volumes. 12s. net.
- Napoleonic Statesmanship: Germany.** By H. A. L. FISHER. 8vo, with maps. 12s. 6d. net.
- Bonapartism.** Six lectures by H. A. L. FISHER. 8vo. 3s. 6d. net.
- Thiers' Moscow Expedition,** edited by H. B. GEORGE. Cr. 8vo, 6 maps. 5s.

# History and Geography of America and the British Colonies

For other Geographical books, see page 59.

- History of the New World called America.** By E. J. PAYNE.  
Vol. I. 8vo. 18s. Bk. I. The Discovery. Bk. II, Part I. Aboriginal America.  
Vol. II. 8vo. 14s. Bk. II, Part II. Aboriginal America (concluded).
- A History of Canada, 1763-1812.** By Sir C. P. LUCAS, K.C.M.G.  
8vo. With eight maps. 12s. 6d. net.
- The Canadian War of 1812.** By Sir C. P. LUCAS, K.C.M.G. 8vo.  
With eight maps. 12s. 6d. net.
- The Union of South Africa.** By the Hon. R. H. BRAND (1909).  
8vo. 6s. net.
- Historical Geography of the British Colonies.** By Sir C. P.  
LUCAS, K.C.M.G. Crown 8vo.
- Introduction.** New edition by H. E. EGERTON. 1903. (Origin and  
growth of the Colonies.) With eight maps. 3s. 6d. In cheaper binding,  
2s. 6d.
- Vol. I. The Mediterranean and Eastern Colonies.**  
With 13 maps. Second edition, revised and brought up to date, by  
R. E. STUBBS. 1906. 5s.
- Vol. II. The West Indian Colonies.** With twelve  
maps. Second edition, revised and brought up to date, by C. ATCHLEY,  
I.S.O. 1905. 7s. 6d.
- Vol. III. West Africa.** Second Edition. Revised to the  
end of 1899 by H. E. EGERTON. With five maps. 7s. 6d.
- Vol. IV. South and East Africa.** Historical and Geo-  
graphical. With eleven maps. 9s. 6d.  
Also Part I. Historical. 1898. 6s. 6d. Part II. 1903. Geographical.  
3s. 6d.
- Vol. V. Canada, Part I.** 6s. Part II, by H. E. EGERTON. 4s. 6d.  
Part III (Geographical), and Part IV, Newfoundland, by J. D.  
ROGERS, in the press.
- Vol. VI. Australasia.** By J. D. ROGERS. 1907. With 22 maps.  
7s. 6d. Also Part I, Historical, 4s. 6d. Part II, Geographical, 3s. 6d.
- History of the Dominion of Canada.** By W. P. GRESWELL. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.
- Geography of the Dominion of Canada and Newfoundland.** By the same author.  
With ten maps. 1891. Crown 8vo. 6s.
- Geography of Africa South of the Zambesi.** By the same author. With maps.  
1892. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.
- The Claims of the Study of Colonial History upon the  
attention of the University of Oxford.** An inaugural lecture  
delivered on April 28, 1906, by H. E. EGERTON. 8vo, paper covers, 1s. net.
- Historical Atlas. Europe and her Colonies.** 27 maps. 35s. net.
- Cornwall-Lewis's Essay on the Government of Depen-  
dencies.** Edited by Sir C. P. LUCAS, K.C.M.G. 8vo, quarter-bound, 14s.

# Rulers of India

Edited by Sir W. W. HUNTER. Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d. net each.  
(There is also a special Indian Edition.)

- Bábar. By S. LANE-POOLE.  
Albuquerque. By H. MORSE STEPHENS.  
Akbar. By Colonel MALLESON.  
Aurangzáb. By S. LANE-POOLE.  
Dupleix. By Colonel MALLESON.  
Lord Clive. By Colonel MALLESON.  
Warren Hastings. By Captain L. J. TROTTER.  
Mádhava Ráo Sindhia. By H. G. KEENE.  
The Marquis of Cornwallis. By W. S. SETON-KARR.  
Haidar Ali and Tipú Sultán. By L. B. BOWRING.  
The Marquis Wellesley, K.G. By W. H. HUTTON.  
Marquess of Hastings. By Major ROSS-OF-BLADENBURG.  
Mountstuart Elphinstone. By J. S. COTTON.  
Sir Thomas Munro. By J. BRADSHAW.  
Earl Amherst. By ANNE T. RITCHIE and R. EVANS.  
Lord William Bentinck. By D. C. BOULGER.  
The Earl of Auckland. By Captain L. J. TROTTER.  
Viscount Hardinge. By his son, VISCOUNT HARDINGE.  
Ranjit Singh. By Sir L. GRIFFIN.  
The Marquess of Dalhousie. By Sir W. W. HUNTER.  
James Thomason. By Sir R. TEMPLE.  
John Russell Colvin. By Sir A. COLVIN.  
Sir Henry Lawrence. By Lieut.-General J. J. M<sup>c</sup>LEOD INNES.  
Clyde and Strathnairn. By Major-General Sir O. T. BURNE.  
Earl Canning. By Sir H. S. CUNNINGHAM.  
Lord Lawrence. By Sir C. AITCHISON.  
The Earl of Mayo. By Sir W. W. HUNTER.

---

Asoka. By V. A. SMITH. Second edition, 1909. 3s. 6d. net.

Sketches of Rulers of India. Abridged from the *Rulers of India* by G. D. OSWELL. Vol. I, The Mutiny and After; Vol. II, The Company's Governors; Vol. III, The Governors-General; Vol. IV, The Princes of India. Crown 8vo. 2s. net each. Also in two vols., 7s. 6d. net; separately, each 4s. net.

**The Imperial Gazetteer of India.** New edition, 1908. The entire work in 26 vols., cloth £5 net, morocco back £6 6s. net. The 4 vols. of 'The Indian Empire' separately, cloth 6s. net each, morocco back 7s. 6d. net; Atlas, cloth 15s. net, morocco back 17s. 6d. net; the remaining 21 vols., cloth £4 4s. net, morocco back £5 5s. net.

Vol. I. Descriptive.

Vol. II. Historical.

Vol. III. Economic.

Vol. IV. Administrative.

Vol. V-XXIV. Alphabetical Gazetteer.

Vol. XXV. Index.

Vol. XXVI. Atlas.

Each volume contains a map of India specially prepared for this Edition.

Reprints from the Imperial Gazetteer.

A sketch of the Flora of British India. By Sir JOSEPH HOOKER. 8vo. Paper covers. 1s. net.

The Indian Army. A sketch of its History and Organization. 8vo. Paper covers. 1s. net.

---

A Brief History of the Indian Peoples. By Sir W. W. HUNTER. Revised up to 1903 by W. H. HUTTON. Eighty-ninth thousand. 3s. 6d.

The Government of India, being a digest of the Statute Law relating thereto; with historical introduction and illustrative documents. By Sir C. P. ILBERT. Second edition, 1907, with a supplementary chapter on the Indian Councils Act of 1909 (also separately, 1s. net). 10s. 6d. net.

The Early History of India from 600 B. C. to the Muhammadan Conquest, including the invasion of Alexander the Great. By V. A. SMITH. 8vo. With maps, plans, and other illustrations. Second edition. 14s. net.

The Oxford Student's History of India. By V. A. SMITH. Crown 8vo. Second Edition. With 7 maps and 11 other illustrations. 2s. 6d.

The English Factories in India: By W. FOSTER. Med. 8vo. (Published under the patronage of His Majesty's Secretary of State for India in Council.)

4 Vols., 1618-21, 1622-3, 1624-9, 1630-1633. 12s. 6d. net each.

(The six previous volumes of Letters received by the East India Company from its Servants in the East (1602-1617) may also be obtained, price 15s. each volume.)

Court Minutes of the East India Company. By E. B. SAINSBURY. Introduction by W. FOSTER. Med. 8vo. 12s. 6d. net each.

Two Vols., 1635-39, 1640-43.

The Court Minutes previous to 1635 have been calendared in the Calendars of State Papers, East Indies, published by the Public Record Office.

Wellesley's Despatches, Treaties, and other Papers relating to his Government of India. Selection edited by S. J. OWEN. 8vo. £1 4s.

Wellington's Despatches, Treaties, and other Papers relating to India. Selection edited by S. J. OWEN. 8vo. £1 4s.

Hastings and the Rohilla War. By Sir J. STRACHEY. 8vo. 10s. 6d.

# GEOGRAPHY

**Historical Atlas of Modern Europe**, from the Decline of the Roman Empire. 90 maps, with letterpress to each: the maps printed by W. & A. K. JOHNSTON, Ltd., and the whole edited by R. L. POOLE.

In one volume, imperial 4to, half-persian, £5 15s. 6d. net; or in selected sets—British Empire, etc., at various prices from 30s. to 35s. net each; or in single maps, 1s. 6d. net each. Prospectus on application.

**Economic Atlas**. By J. G. BARTHOLOMEW. Introduction by L. W. LYDE. 4to, with over 180 coloured maps. 3s. 6d. net.

**The Dawn of Modern Geography**. By C. R. BEAZLEY. In three volumes. £2 10s. net. Vol. I (to A.D. 900). Not sold separately. Vol. II (A.D. 900-1260). 15s. net. Vol. III. 20s. net.

**Regions of the World**. Geographical Memoirs under the general editorship of H. J. MACKINDER. Medium 8vo. 7s. 6d. net per volume.

**Britain and the British Seas**. Ed. 2. By H. J. MACKINDER.

**Central Europe**. By JOHN PARTSCH.

**Nearer East**. By D. G. HOGARTH.

**North America**. By J. RUSSELL.

**India**. By SIR THOMAS HOLDICH.

**The Far East**. By ARCHIBALD LITTLE.

**Frontiers: Romanes Lecture (1907)** by LORD CURZON OF KEDLESTON. 8vo. 2s. n.

**The Face of the Earth**. By EDUARD SUESS. See p. 92.

## The Oxford Geographies

**The Oxford Geographies**. By A. J. HERBERTSON. Crown 8vo.

Vol. I. **The Preliminary Geography**. Ed. 3, 72 maps, 1s. 6d.

Vol. II. **The Junior Geography**. Ed. 2, 166 maps and diagrams, 2s. With *Physiographical Introduction*, 3s. With *Questions and Statistical Appendix*, 2s. 6d. (*In preparation.*)

Vol. III. **The Senior Geography**. Ed. 3, 117 maps and diagrams, 2s. 6d. With *Physiographical Introduction*, 3s. 6d. With *Questions and Statistical Appendix*, 3s. With both, 4s.

**Physiographical Introduction to Vols. II and III**. With 63 maps and diagrams. 1s. 6d.

**Questions on the Senior Geography**. By F. M. KIRK, with *Statistical Appendix* by E. G. R. TAYLOR. 1s.

**The Elementary Geographies**. By F. D. HERBERTSON. With maps and illustrations from photographs. Crown 8vo. I: *Physiography*. 10d. II: *In and About our Islands*. 1s. III: *Europe*. 1s. IV: *Asia*. 1s. 6d. VII: *The British Isles*. 1s. 9d. Others in preparation.

**Practical Geography**. By J. F. UNSTEAD. Crown 8vo. Part I, 27 maps, Part II, 21 maps, each 1s. 6d.; together 2s. 6d.

**Relations of Geography and History**. By H. B. GEORGE. With two maps. Crown 8vo. Fourth edition. 4s. 6d.

**Geography for Schools**, by A. HUGHES. Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d.

**School Economic Atlas**. By J. G. BARTHOLOMEW. Introduction by L. W. LYDE. 4to, with over 189 coloured maps. 2s. 6d. net

# Anthropology

**Transactions of the Third (1908) International Congress for the History of Religions.** Royal 8vo. 2 vols. 25s. net.

**Anthropological Essays** presented to EDWARD BURNETT TYLOR in honour of his seventy-fifth birthday. Imperial 8vo. 21s. net.

**The Evolution of Culture, and other Essays,** by the late Lieut.-Gen. A. LANE-FOX PITT-RIVERS; edited by J. L. MYRES, with an Introduction by H. BALFOUR. 8vo, with 21 plates, 7s. 6d. net.

**Anthropology and the Classics.** Six lectures by A. EVANS, A. LANG, G. G. A. MURRAY, F. B. JEVONS, J. L. MYRES, W. W. FOWLER. Edited by R. R. MARETT. 8vo. Illustrated. 6s. net.

**Folk-Memory.** By WALTER JOHNSON. 8vo. Illustrated. 12s. 6d. net.

**Celtic Folklore: Welsh and Manx.** By J. RHŶS. 2 vols. 8vo. £1 1s.

**Studies in the Arthurian Legend.** By J. RHŶS. 8vo. 12s. 6d.

**Iceland and the Faroes.** By N. ANNANDALE. With an appendix on the Celtic Pony, by F. H. A. MARSHALL. Crown 8vo. 4s. 6d. net.

**Dubois' Hindu Manners.** Translated and edited by H. K. BEAUCHAMP. Third edition. Crown 8vo. 6s. net. On India Paper, 7s. 6d. net.

**The Melanesians, studies in their Anthropology and Folk-Lore.** By R. H. CODRINGTON. 8vo. 16s. net.

**The Masai, their Language and Folk-lore.** By A. C. HOLLIS. With introduction by Sir CHARLES ELIOT. 8vo. Illustrated. 14s. net.

**The Nandi, their Language and Folk-lore.** By A. C. HOLLIS. With introduction by Sir CHARLES ELIOT. 8vo. Illustrated. 16s. net.

**The Ancient Races of the Thebaid: an anthropometrical study.** By ARTHUR THOMSON and D. RANDALL-MACIVER. Imperial 4to, with 6 collotypes, 6 lithographic charts, and many other illustrations. 42s. net.

**The Earliest Inhabitants of Abydos. (A craniological study.)** By D. RANDALL-MACIVER. Portfolio. 10s. 6d. net.

**Bushman Paintings.** Copied by M. H. TONGUE, and printed in colour. With a preface by H. BALFOUR. In a box, £3 3s. net.



# LAW

## Jurisprudence

**Bentham's Fragment on Government.** Edited by F. C. MONTAGUE. 8vo. 7s. 6d.

**Bentham's Introduction to the Principles of Morals and Legislation.** Second edition. Crown 8vo. 6s. 6d.

**Studies in History and Jurisprudence.** By the Right Hon. JAMES BRYCE. 1901. Two volumes. 8vo. £1 5s. net.

**The Elements of Jurisprudence.** By T. E. HOLLAND. Eleventh edition. 1910. 8vo. 10s. 6d. net.

**Elements of Law,** considered with reference to Principles of General Jurisprudence. By Sir W. MARKBY, K.C.I.E. Sixth edition revised, 1905. 8vo. 12s. 6d.

## Roman Law

**Imperatoris Iustiniani Institutionum Libri Quattuor ;** with introductions, commentary, and translation, by J. B. MOYLE. Two volumes. 8vo. Vol. I (fourth edition, 1903), 16s. ; Vol. II, Translation (fourth edition, 1906), 6s.

**The Institutes of Justinian,** edited as a recension of the Institutes of Gaius. By T. E. HOLLAND. Second edition. Extra fcap 8vo. 5s.

**Select Titles from the Digest of Justinian.** By T. E. HOLLAND and C. L. SHADWELL. 8vo. 14s.

Also, sold in parts, in paper covers : Part I. Introductory Titles. 2s. 6d.  
Part II. Family Law. 1s. Part III. Property Law. 2s. 6d. Part IV.  
Law of Obligations. No. 1. 3s. 6d. No. 2. 4s. 6d.

**Gai Institutionum Iuris Civilis Commentarii Quattuor :** with a translation and commentary by the late E. POSTE. Fourth edition. Revised and enlarged by E. A. WHITTUCK, with an historical introduction by A. H. J. GREENIDGE. 8vo. 16s. net.

**Institutes of Roman Law,** by R. SOHM. Translated by J. C. LEDLIE : with an introductory essay by E. GRUEBER. Third edition. 1907. 8vo. 16s. net.

**Infamia ;** its place in Roman Public and Private Law. By A. H. J. GREENIDGE. 8vo. 10s. 6d.

**Legal Procedure in Cicero's Time.** By A. H. J. GREENIDGE. 8vo. 25s. net.

**The Roman Law of Damage to Property :** being a commentary on the title of the Digest 'Ad Legem Aquilianam' (ix. 2), with an introduction to the study of the Corpus Iuris Civilis. By E. GRUEBER. 8vo. 10s. 6d.

**Contract of Sale in the Civil Law.** By J. B. MOYLE. 8vo. 10s. 6d.

**Trichotomy in Roman Law.** By H. GOUDY. 8vo. 4s. net.

---

**The Principles of German Civil Law.** By ERNEST J. SCHUSTER. 1907. 8vo. 12s. 6d. net.

## English Law

**Principles of the English Law of Contract, and of Agency in its relation to Contract.** By Sir W. R. ANSON. Twelfth edition, 1910, revised by M. L. GWYER. 8vo. 10s. net.

**Law and Custom of the Constitution.** By Sir W. R. ANSON. In two volumes. 8vo.

Vol. I. Parliament. Fourth edition. 1909. 12s. 6d. net.

Vol. II. The Crown. Third edition. Part I, 1907. 10s. 6d. net. Part II, 1908. 8s. 6d. net.

**Introduction to the History of the Law of Real Property.**

By Sir K. E. DIOBY. Fifth edition. 8vo. 12s. 6d.

**Legislative Methods and Forms.** By Sir C. P. ILBERT, K.C.S.I. 1901. 8vo. 16s.

**Modern Land Law.** By E. JENKS. 8vo. 15s.

**Essay on Possession in the Common Law.** By Sir F. POLLOCK and Sir R. S. WRIGHT. 8vo. 8s. 6d.

**Outline of the Law of Property.** By T. RALEIGH. 8vo. 7s. 6d.

**Law in Daily Life.** By RUD. VON JHERING. Translated with Notes and Additions by H. GOUDY. Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d. net.

**Cases illustrating the Principles of the Law of Torts, with table of all Cases cited.** By F. R. Y. RADCLIFFE and J. C. MILES. 8vo. 1904. 12s. 6d. net.

**The Management of Private Affairs.** By JOSEPH KING, F. T. R. BISHAM, M. L. GWYER, EDWIN CANNAN, J. S. C. BRIDGE, A. M. LATTER. Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d. net.

---

**Calendar of Charters and Rolls, containing those preserved in the Bodleian Library.** 8vo. £1 11s. 6d. net.

**Handbook to the Land-Charters, and other Saxon Documents.** By J. EARLE. Crown 8vo. 16s.

**Fortescue's Difference between an Absolute and a Limited Monarchy.** Text revised and edited, with introduction, etc, by C. PLUMMER. 8vo, leather back, 12s. 6d. net.

**Villainage in England.** By P. VINOGRADOFF. 8vo. 16s. net.

**Welsh Mediaeval Law: the Laws of Howel the Good.** Text, translation, etc, by A. W. WADE EVANS. Crown 8vo. 8s. 6d. net.

## Constitutional Documents

**Select Charters and other Illustrations of English Constitutional History, from the earliest times to Edward I.** Arranged and edited by W. STUBBS. Eighth edition. 1900. Crown 8vo. 8s. 6d.

**Select Statutes and other Constitutional Documents, illustrative of the reigns of Elizabeth and James I.** Edited by G. W. PROTHERO. Third edition. Crown 8vo. 10s. 6d.

**Constitutional Documents of the Puritan Revolution, selected and edited by S. R. GARDINER.** Third edition. Crown 8vo. 10s. 6d.

## International Law

**International Law.** By W. E. HALL. Sixth edition by J. B. ATLAY. 1909. 8vo. £1 1s. net.

**Treatise on the Foreign Powers and Jurisdiction of the British Crown.** By W. E. HALL. 8vo. 10s. 6d.

**The European Concert in the Eastern Question,** a collection of treaties and other public acts. Edited, with introductions and notes, by T. E. HOLLAND. 1885. 8vo. 12s. 6d.

**Studies in International Law.** By T. E. HOLLAND. 1898. 8vo. 10s. 6d.

**The Laws of War on Land.** By T. E. HOLLAND. 1908. 8vo. 6s. net.

**Gentilis Alberici de Iure Belli Libri Tres** edidit T. E. HOLLAND. 1877. Small quarto, half-morocco. £1 1s.

**The Law of Nations.** By Sir T. TWISS. Part I. In time of peace. New edition, revised and enlarged. 8vo. 15s.

**Pacific Blockade.** By A. E. HOGAN. 1908. 8vo. 6s. net.

## Colonial and Indian Law

**The Government of India,** being a Digest of the Statute Law relating thereto, with historical introduction and illustrative documents. By Sir C. P. ILBERT, K.C.S.I. Second edition. 1907. 8vo, cloth. 10s. 6d. net.

**British Rule and Jurisdiction beyond the Seas.** By the late Sir H. JENKYNs, K.C.B., with a preface by Sir C. P. ILBERT, and a portrait of the author. 1902. 8vo, leather back, 15s. net.

**Cornwall-Lewis's Essay on the Government of Dependencies.** Edited by Sir C. P. LUCAS, K.C.M.G. 8vo, leather back, 14s.

**An Introduction to Hindu and Mahommedan Law** for the use of students. 1906. By Sir W. MARKBY, K.C.I.E. 6s. net.

**Land-Revenue and Tenure in British India.** By B. H. BADEN-POWELL, C.I.E. With map. Second edition, revised by T. W. HOLDERNESS, C.S.I. (1907.) Crown 8vo. 5s. net.

**Land-Systems of British India,** being a manual of the Land-Tenures, and of the systems of Land-Revenue administration. By the same. Three volumes. 8vo, with map. £3 3s.

**Anglo-Indian Codes,** by WHITLEY STOKES. 8vo.

Vol. I. Substantive Law. £1 10s. Vol. II. Adjective Law. £1 15s.

1st supplement, 2s. 6d. 2nd supplement, to 1891, 4s. 6d. In one vol., 6s. 6d.

**The Indian Evidence Act,** with notes by Sir W. MARKBY, K.C.I.E. 8vo. 3s. 6d. net (published by Mr. Frowde).

**Corps de Droit Ottoman :** un Recueil des Codes, Lois, Règlements, Ordonnances et Actes les plus importants du Droit Intérieur, et d'Études sur le Droit Coutumier de l'Empire Ottoman. Par GEORGE YOUNG. 1905. Seven vols. 8vo. Cloth, £4 14s. 6d. net; paper covers, £4 4s. net. Parts I (Vols. I-III) and II (Vols. IV-VII) can be obtained separately; price per part, in cloth, £2 17s. 6d. net, in paper covers, £2 12s. 6d. net.

# Political Science and Economy

For Bryce's *Studies* and other books on general jurisprudence and political science, see p. 61.

**Industrial Organization in the 16th and 17th Centuries.**

By G. UNWIN. 8vo. 7s. 6d. net.

**Relations of the Advanced and Backward Races of**

**Mankind, the Romanes Lecture for 1902.** By J. BRYCE. 8vo. 2s. net.

**Cornwall-Lewis's Remarks on the Use and Abuse of some Political Terms.** New edition, with introduction by

T. RALEIGH. Crown 8vo, paper, 3s. 6d.; cloth, 4s. 6d.

**Adam Smith's Lectures on Justice, Police, Revenue, and Arms.**

Edited with introduction and notes by E. CANNAN. 8vo. 10s. 6d. net.

**Bluntschli's Theory of the State.** Translated from the sixth

German edition. Third edition. 1901. Crown 8vo. 8s. 6d. net.

**Second Chambers.** By J. A. R. MARRIOTT. 8vo. 5s. net.

**Biological Analogies in History: the Romanes Lecture for 1910.**

By THEODORE ROOSEVELT. 8vo. 2s. net.

**A Geometrical Political Economy.** Being an elementary

Treatise on the method of explaining some Theories of Pure Economic Science by diagrams. By H. CUNYNGHAME, C.B. Cr. 8vo. 2s. 6d. net.

**The Elements of Railway Economics.** By W. M. ACWORTH.

Crown 8vo. Second impression. 2s. net.

**Elementary Political Economy.** By E. CANNAN. Third edition.

Extra fcap 8vo, 1s. net.

**Elementary Politics.** By Sir T. RALEIGH. Sixth edition revised. Extra

fcap 8vo, stiff covers, 1s. net.

**The Study of Economic History.** By L. L. PRICE. 1s. net.

## Economic Documents

**Ricardo's Letters to Malthus (1810-1823).** Edited by J. BONAR.

8vo. 7s. 6d. Letters to Trower and others (1811-1823). Edited by J. BONAR and J. H. HOLLANDER. 8vo. 7s. 6d.

**Lloyd's Prices of Corn in Oxford, 1583-1830.** 8vo. 1s.

**First Nine Years of the Bank of England.** By J. E. THOROLD

ROGERS. 8vo. 8s. 6d.



## History of Agriculture

**The History of Agriculture and Prices in England,**

A.D. 1259-1793. By J. E. THOROLD ROGERS. 8vo. Vols. I and II (1259-1400). 84s. net. Vols. III and IV (1401-1582). 32s. net. Vols. V and VI (1583-1702). 32s. net. Vol. VII. In two Parts (1702-1793). 32s. net.

**History of English Agriculture.** By W. H. R. CURTIS.

Crown 8vo. 6s. 6d. net.

**The Disappearance of the Small Landowner.** By A. H.

JOHNSON. Crown 8vo. 5s. net.







